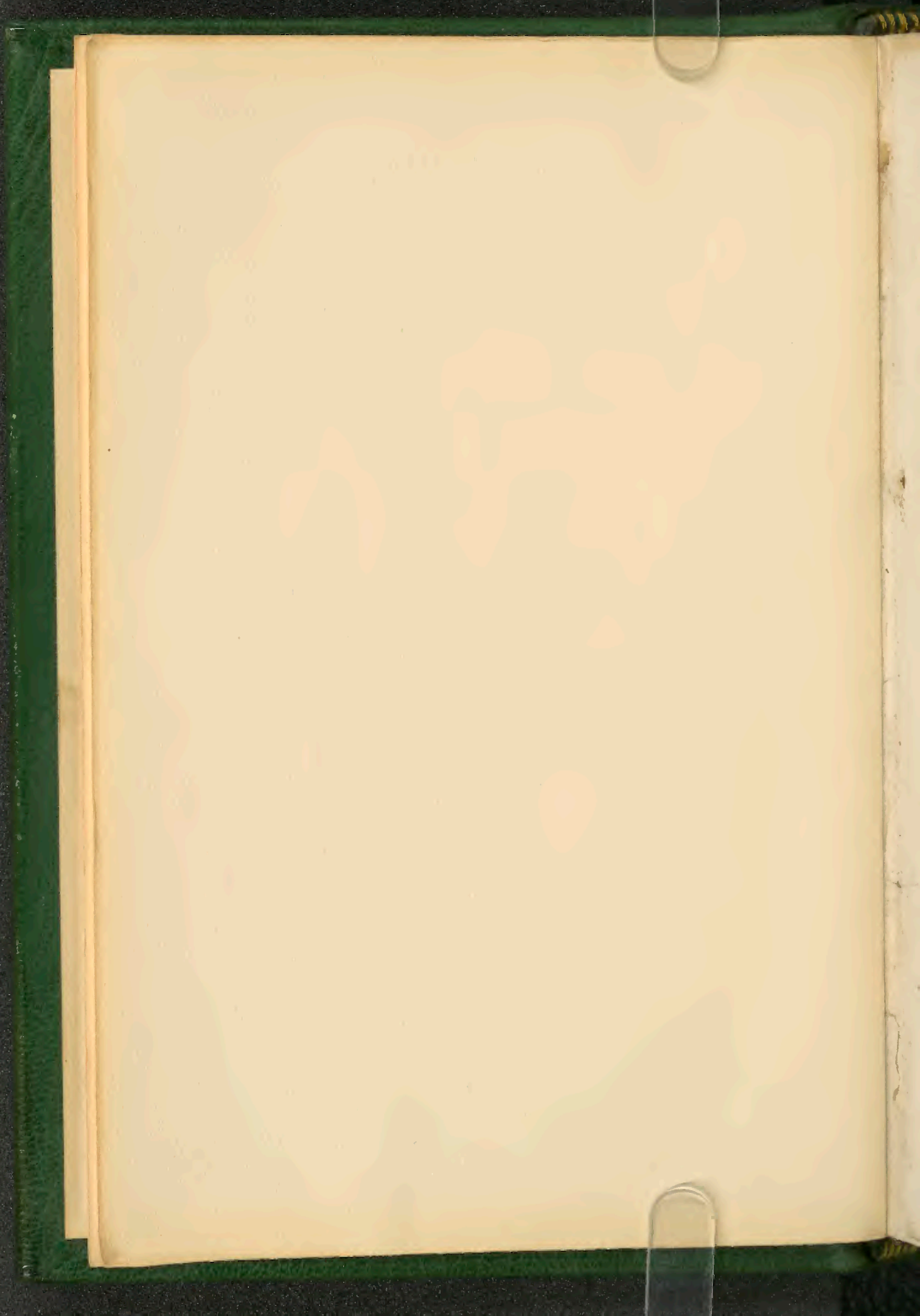




18.6.7



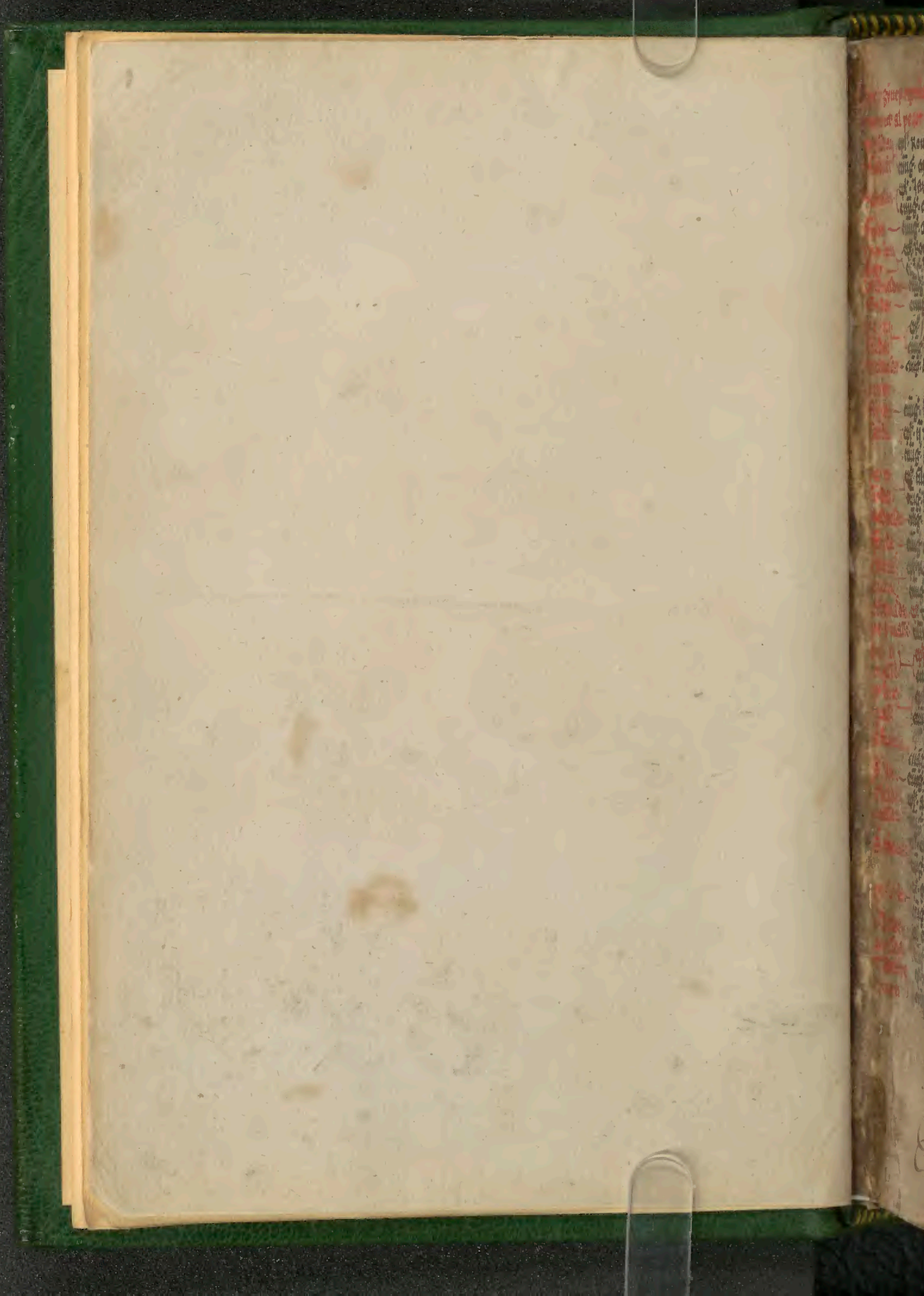




A. 6. 34

18. 6. 7.

Ex Libris
Bibliothecae Facultatis
Juridicae Edinburgi



Tuesdye day	Aug. luke. ii.	e It is don lhanne alle ye ende	e tnode ayeu fro
at matyng	Aug. luke. ii.	a lhanne the lbas boru	e bi auoy lhey in
in d at masse	Aug. math. ii.	d the comynge to hyu	e for pis il ve lo
lindai i oct	Aug. joon. i.	f the cam fro galilee	e in ve lhanne i
oct of ry day	Aug. math. ii.	f the cam fro galilee	e in ve lhanne i
pe i ludar	epi. romanus. xii.	a brwen lileche zou	e in ve lhanne i
after oct	Aug. luke. ii.	s lhanne the lbas maad	e in ve lhanne i
Wednesdai	epi. romanus. x.	a pe lile of myn her to	e in ve lhanne i
	Aug. math. ii.	c lhanne the hade lere	e in ve lhanne i
	epi. romanus. xii.	a eay loulle be loget to	e in ve lhanne i
friday	Aug. luke. ii.	b the turnode ayeu i tti	e in ve lhanne i
	epi. romanus. xii.	c hauringe ut to dailige	e in ve lhanne i
pe ii ludar	Aug. joon. ii.	a lbeddinges be maad in	e in ve lhanne i
	epi. i. timothe. i.	f atwylde lword i lhour al	e in ve lhanne i
Wednesdai	Aug. marke. v.	g the gon out peneu lke	e in ve lhanne i
	epi. romanus. xii.	e lwor it tute in pe	e in ve lhanne i
friday	Aug. luke. ii.	e And he ca dou to calar	e in ve lhanne i
	epi. romanus. xii.	f lylze be prudent a	e in ve lhanne i
pe iii ludar	Aug. math. vi.	a lhanne the hade comyn	e in ve lhanne i
	epi. romanus. xv.	g brwen lileche by	e in ve lhanne i
Wednesdai	Aug. marke. ii.	a he entrede of tlooue	e in ve lhanne i
	epi. i. corinth. ii.	e lbat z enot pat ze be pe	e in ve lhanne i
friday	Aug. math. ii.	f the euycomynge of ga	e in ve lhanne i
	epi. romanus. xii.	d to noma olbe ze ony pig	e in ve lhanne i
pe iii ludar	Aug. math. viii.	c the ftyng up to alreil	e in ve lhanne i
	epi. i. corinth. vi.	d It il gnos to ama for	e in ve lhanne i
Wednesdai	Aug. luke. ii.	g it il don he lallpunge	e in ve lhanne i
	epi. i. corinth. vi.	d ech mo i what deynge	e in ve lhanne i
friday	Aug. marke. r.	b pe offreden to hy lreil	e in ve lhanne i
	epi. colofener. ii.	c dope ze zou as pe dhor	e in ve lhanne i
pe v ludar	Aug. math. xii.	c pe lryngda of heuene	e in ve lhanne i
	epi. i. timothe. ii.	a lbedde tirst of alle pi	e in ve lhanne i
Wednesdai	Aug. math. xii.	e luma hade tibeys lo	e in ve lhanne i
	epi. i. corinth. ii.	g lbat ze not pat pa p	e in ve lhanne i
pe vi ludar	Aug. math. xii.	a pe lryngda of heuene	e in ve lhanne i
	epi. ii. corinth. iii.	b for it alloure golpel il	e in ve lhanne i
Wednesdai	Aug. marke. ii.	e pe gon to peneu lken	e in ve lhanne i
	epi. ii. corinth. iii.	c haurng pe lanne lpart	e in ve lhanne i
friday	Aug. math. xii.	d he f il not lwy me is	e in ve lhanne i
	epi. ii. corinth. iii.	d ze luffen gladly yulki	e in ve lhanne i
pe vii ludar	Aug. luke. viii.	a lwha til muche copanwe	e in ve lhanne i

bedneſday	epi. i. cornuth. i. g.	In depe god ſbitueſſe	ende	ſe vnknoſen
Friday	epi. i. cornuth. v.	ſhe bigan forto teche at	ende	he pat har ceris
an ageſime	epi. i. cornuth. v.	ſhe bigan forto teche at	ende	and roos agen
bedneſday	epi. i. cornuth. vi.	he alid of phariſees	ende	to gude and pe
Friday	epi. i. cornuth. vi.	he alid of phariſees	ende	pe more of peſe
bedneſday	epi. i. cornuth. vi.	he alid of phariſees	ende	pat heriunge to
Friday	epi. i. cornuth. vi.	he alid of phariſees	ende	pe 4 pui herte
bedneſday	epi. i. cornuth. vi.	he alid of phariſees	ende	was nichid fro p
Friday	epi. i. cornuth. vi.	he alid of phariſees	ende	ſchal zeide to pee
bedneſday	epi. i. cornuth. vi.	he alid of phariſees	ende	there maad laif
Friday	epi. i. cornuth. vi.	he alid of phariſees	ende	elſeldyrnge alle
bedneſday	epi. i. cornuth. vi.	he alid of phariſees	ende	and ſerueden to
Friday	epi. i. cornuth. vi.	he alid of phariſees	ende	ſuto euſtalyng
bedneſday	epi. i. cornuth. vi.	he alid of phariſees	ende	taut he of pe
Friday	epi. i. cornuth. vi.	he alid of phariſees	ende	brof ſutter 4
bedneſday	epi. i. cornuth. vi.	he alid of phariſees	ende	heren pe lword
Friday	epi. i. cornuth. vi.	he alid of phariſees	ende	thu pat made lu
bedneſday	epi. i. cornuth. vi.	he alid of phariſees	ende	lure winge of
Friday	epi. i. cornuth. vi.	he alid of phariſees	ende	manys ſone rſe
bedneſday	epi. i. cornuth. vi.	he alid of phariſees	ende	but into holi c
Friday	epi. i. cornuth. vi.	he alid of phariſees	ende	was nichid fro p
bedneſday	epi. i. cornuth. vi.	he alid of phariſees	ende	pat ben pſet
Friday	epi. i. cornuth. vi.	he alid of phariſees	ende	ſchal be euſtalynd
bedneſday	epi. i. cornuth. vi.	he alid of phariſees	ende	redepon for man
Friday	epi. i. cornuth. vi.	he alid of phariſees	ende	bilene to my lbor
bedneſday	epi. i. cornuth. vi.	he alid of phariſees	ende	pe haden he as
Friday	epi. i. cornuth. vi.	he alid of phariſees	ende	he perolend 4 is
bedneſday	epi. i. cornuth. vi.	he alid of phariſees	ende	and rſchlyſueſſe
Friday	epi. i. cornuth. vi.	he alid of phariſees	ende	reſhold of god 4
bedneſday	epi. i. cornuth. vi.	he alid of phariſees	ende	lente bi pe myd
Friday	epi. i. cornuth. vi.	he alid of phariſees	ende	ſeugiti liue le
bedneſday	epi. i. cornuth. vi.	he alid of phariſees	ende	deſoule pnot amā
Friday	epi. i. cornuth. vi.	he alid of phariſees	ende	ſchal neu pſte
bedneſday	epi. i. cornuth. vi.	he alid of phariſees	ende	vilpe ſauour
Friday	epi. i. cornuth. vi.	he alid of phariſees	ende	ſal pou do lue
bedneſday	epi. i. cornuth. vi.	he alid of phariſees	ende	ſit hap maad vs
Friday	epi. i. cornuth. vi.	he alid of phariſees	ende	to come ſto pſ
bedneſday	epi. i. cornuth. vi.	he alid of phariſees	ende	he lſite what
Friday	epi. i. cornuth. vi.	he alid of phariſees	ende	ſſay ſileneſe
bedneſday	epi. i. cornuth. vi.	he alid of phariſees	ende	and he ſalving

pur dai	—	eiug. 1000. v.	e	my fadir borcher til nof	ende	into rilyg. azen
friday	—	eiug. 1000. vi.	a	was afeck mā lazar	ende	what rige he
sat dai	—	eiug. 1000. vii.	b	iam lgt of re world	ende	his hour came
passion	—	epi. matth. x.	c	crut being abichay	ende	of eulaftege cri
lundai	—	eiug. 1000. viii.	e	who of ion thal reque	ende	wente out of re
mondai	—	eiug. 1000. ix.	f	princis & barilees sette	ende	bilouyng ito in
tyedai	—	eiug. 1000. x.	a	the thallrede into galil	ende	for drede of ieluy
thens dai	—	eiug. 1000. xi.	d	festis of haleluyng of	ende	and i in re fadir
pur dai	—	eiug. 1000. xii.	f	lhan pei haden herd	ende	edi to his olue
friday	—	eiug. 1000. xiii.	f	re bishops & re fari	ende	he dyllelled luy
sat dai	—	eiug. 1000. xiiii.	f	but re schyle etc re fl.	ende	lha he lhas oon
palme	—	eiug. 1000. xv.	b	amylhe aipany y ca	ende	lo alpe lbold in
lundai	—	epi. philipes. ii.	b	fele re vis ruyg i ion	ende	in re glorie of
passion	—	eiug. math. xvi.	a	lhte re pat at tibo	ende	marlyuge re
mondai	—	eiug. 1000. xvi.	a	the bifore lye daies	ende	lente & lude
tyedai	—	eiug. mark. xii.	a	forloze palte & re f.	ende	at re dote of re
thens dai	—	eiug. luk. xxi.	a	re halidai of re f lo	ende	re ony lhas put
pur dai	—	epi. i. corinth. x.	d	ou conyuge to gidre i	ende	dapued luy re
friday	—	eiug. 1000. xvii.	a	bifore re fest dai of pal	ende	so and re don
Good Friday	—	eiug. 1000. xviii.	a	he lente out luy hyl dil	ende	re putteden to
altreuen	—	epi. colofene. ii.	a	if re le rilen to gidre	ende	luy hy i glorie
thens dai	—	eiug. math. xx. viii.	f	forloze i re enenye of	ende	thave bifore loid
mondai	—	epi. i. corinth. v.	d	deute re ont re olde lout	ende	of demene &
tyedai	—	eiug. mark. x. vi.	a	marie malk deley n	ende	and he lende to
mondai	—	epi. aplys dedis. x.	f	re lhte re lword pat	ende	remiffion of f.
tyedai	—	eiug. luk. xxiii.	b	tibo of he lente in p	ende	in breluyge of
thens dai	—	epi. aplys dedis. xii.	d	men briferen lones of	ende	azen re luyge
mondai	—	eiug. luk. xxiii.	f	the ftood i re myddyl	ende	in his name to
tyedai	—	epi. aplys dedis. xiii.	d	god of alham & god of	ende	re lye lye ben
mondai	—	eiug. 1000. xxi.	a	the eft lone lye lbed hi	ende	lha he roos
tyedai	—	epi. aplys dedis. xiv.	a	an angel of re loid luy	ende	til he cam to w
mondai	—	eiug. 1000. xx.	c	marie god at re graue	ende	and vele ruyge
friday	—	epi. i. petir. iii.	f	et am dyed for oure	ende	in re rithalt of
tyedai	—	eiug. math. xxv.	f	elloung dylaplis lben	ende	til re endyuge
mondai	—	epi. i. petir. ii.	a	re lye puttyge albey	ende	nolt forloze ha
tyedai	—	eiug. 1000. xx.	a	in ood day of re lalteth	ende	luy for to rife
mondai	—	epi. i. 1000. v.	b	alle ruyg pat lout if of	ende	lbatuelle of god
tyedai	—	eiug. 1000. xx.	c	lhan enene lhas i y day	ende	hauel luy i luy
mondai	—	epi. i. corinth. x.	b	if crut il pchid y he roo	ende	ech mā in his
tyedai	—	eiug. mark. xvi.	d	the rilyge erly i re fir	ende	re l gonyng to lde

friday	epi ebrells. xij.	c	obere ze to zoure pnoctis	ende	into world is of
friday	epi math. xviij.	c	mary malbdelevn. x. an	ende	at ye selfis til vis
friday	epi i. petri. ij.	f	Crut luffrede for ous	ende	bilcop of 10 soules
friday	epi i. petri. ij.	b	I am a good shepherde	ende	oo foold 100 sch
friday	epi i. petri. ij.	e	lunge y not bi corrupt	ende	into luy oute. e.
friday	epi i. petri. ij.	a	moon of ye luke fulerly	ende	loundryge y was
friday	epi i. petri. ij.	f	It me ge gite of oon in to	ende	enlastyge luyt by
friday	epi i. petri. ij.	c	pane ye dilaphe of loon	ende	and bore be bepte
friday	epi i. petri. ij.	c	I bledie you as comelun	ende	but also to terna
friday	epi i. petri. ij.	c	altil 1 nolb ze schule not	ende	schal take fro you
friday	epi i. petri. ij.	c	my lyl lowes sibrte to you	ende	brei lut nolb schy
friday	epi i. petri. ij.	f	aquisition if meed of loon	ende	
friday	epi i. petri. ij.	b	looly alle ze ben soues of	ende	and edetie ze ech
friday	epi i. petri. ij.	g	and luyt cam ito vis world	ende	seyde come lo luy
friday	epi i. petri. ij.	v	ech best ymg zouen	ende	yat may saue 10
friday	epi i. petri. ij.	v	I go to humpre lute me	ende	schal take 10
friday	epi i. petri. ij.	a	nyl 1e m accepton of pla	ende	aboue resley dom
friday	epi i. petri. ij.	c	holi fadyr bepe he m y	ende	be m he 1 m he
friday	epi i. petri. ij.	g	ze seen for amia if iustifi	ende	luy oute luyt
friday	epi i. petri. ij.	f	litle lones zit altil	ende	you schalt luyne
friday	epi i. petri. ij.	f	be ze doers of ye luyd	ende	vndetouid fro
friday	epi i. petri. ij.	f	truly truly sley to you	ende	you luyt out
friday	epi i. petri. ij.	f	knobledie ze oen to an	ende	penititide of 1
friday	epi i. petri. ij.	a	lho of you schal haue a	ende	to me aluyng hi
friday	epi i. petri. ij.	g	of ye multatide of me	ende	to ech m as 10
friday	epi i. petri. ij.	a	yele ymiges the luyt	ende	and 1 come to ye
friday	epi i. petri. ij.	a	forsoye you twofile first	ende	hy geynge nito
friday	epi i. petri. ij.	e	ellenene restyuge the	ende	luyt luyne
friday	epi i. petri. ij.	c	he ze prudet 1 luyt ze	ende	by 1 m et out
friday	epi i. petri. ij.	g	lhan ye ofortour schal	ende	1 luyt mude 1
friday	epi i. petri. ij.	d	1e n don lhan appho	ende	of ye luyngda of
friday	epi i. petri. ij.	d	1e our mon luyne me	ende	comaudeniet come
friday	epi i. petri. ij.	a	lhan ye daies of pette	ende	ye greete ymiges
friday	epi i. petri. ij.	c	1e ze louen me bepe ze	ende	schelke to luyt m
friday	epi i. petri. ij.	e	he comaudide us to pte	ende	in ye name of
friday	epi i. petri. ij.	e	God louede to ye world	ende	for ye ben don in
friday	epi i. petri. ij.	c	Whane aplis yat luyt	ende	receptned. ye ho
friday	epi i. petri. ij.	a	Truly sley to you	ende	and hanc more
friday	epi i. petri. ij.	b	petit loundryge luyt	ende	of ye luyd schal be
friday	epi i. petri. ij.	e	stoma may come to	ende	for luyt of ye luyt

puerday	epi aphs dedis. vii	ffilipe conyngre dou	ende is maad in pat e.
freday	epi aphs dedis. ii	albeclue apostelis de	ende and helynge.
Saturday	epi aphs dedis. i	men of israhel here is p	ende anre wip vi f.
Trinite	epi aphs dedis. i	te it don i oon of daies	ende meruelous vii.
Sundai	epi aphs dedis. i	alre cte cam to gide	ende wip ioye ri ye h.
corpus	epi apocalyp. vii	the rhyngre of re lmag	ende in re lmagog.
ysidai	epi apocalyp. vii	isra adre opened i heu	ende lwyngre in to ly.
Sundainert	euangel. ioon. iii	isbas aman of re fa	ende but haue enlast.
Wednes	epi i. i. i. xj.	e i haue taken of re lord	ende uot wilely deu.
Thurs	euangel. ioon. vii	e ay flesche if vely metz	ende schall lue wip o.
Friday	epi i. i. i. xj.	e for god if charite in p	ende loue ius brayer
Saturday	euangel. i. xvi.	e amian was rich and	ende yet schiden bil.
Wednes	epi i. i. i. xj.	f lbe hau maad b uolb	ende sprunge i iourel.
Thurs	euangel. math. v.	c dyl ze gelle pat i cam	ende greet in yelungd.
Friday	epi i. i. i. xj.	d uyl ze londre re welbondende	ende but in lberbat.
Saturday	euangel. i. xvi.	d aman made a gret top	ende schal taite my.
Wednes	epi i. i. i. xj.	d ris pyng. i. l. i. i. i.	ende in holynesse ri.
Thurs	euangel. math. vii.	f lhan lre lalkid to re f.	ende in lshat polber.
Friday	epi i. i. i. xj.	d beze melked yuder re uende	ende and schal make.
Saturday	epi i. i. i. xj.	a publicane re lymful in	ende lymful man do.
Wednes	epi i. i. i. xj.	f re lord stood up to me	ende in to lboardis of.
Thurs	euangel. math. vii.	d be pou gentyngre to yru	ende al vi bodi go in.
Friday	epi i. i. i. xj.	d truly i denue pat re pat	ende azen byngre of.
Saturday	euangel. i. xvi.	e beze uerchul as ioure f.	ende of vi broperys.
Wednes	epi i. i. i. xj.	a in vis pyngre lre litten	ende walke as he l.
Thurs	euangel. math. vii.	c te it dou in oon of daie	ende and yet obeye.
Friday	epi i. i. i. xj.	c alle of oon lre i. i. i.	ende crut in ioure lris.
Saturday	euangel. i. xvi.	a lha cupanye of peple	ende yet lueden hyu.
Wednes	epi i. i. i. xj.	a lueche first of alle yu	ende in fery re trupe.
Thurs	euangel. i. xvi.	c forlope re it doon i oon	ende and yet obereu.
Friday	epi i. i. i. xj.	a lher lre ven ze vnt no	ende forlope luyru.
Saturday	euangel. math. vii.	c but zo rre lueche l.	ende schalt offre p.
Wednes	epi i. i. i. xj.	e lbroc not to you as	ende euerlastyngre l.
Thurs	euangel. math. vii.	c and lre was go out in	ende not ane lre god.
Friday	epi i. i. i. xj.	f lre wip rhyngre for	ende in crut lre ourel.
Saturday	euangel. math. vii.	a lhan muche cupamole	ende and he lefte.
Wednes	epi i. i. i. xj.	g noyng of dapaucion	ende of lre lre.
Thurs	euangel. math. vii.	a lre lre lre lre lre	ende neuere damed.
Friday	epi i. i. i. xj.	b lre lre lre lre lre	ende enen enes of.
Saturday	euangel. math. vii.	d pleyue re lre lre f.	ende in to yelungd.

okal

Wednesday

epi. romayus. v.

b God comendey his charite

ende bi oure lord ihu crist

Thursday

epi. i. corinth. i.

b be the not conueters of

ende ye fier if not quen

Wednesday

epi. romayus. vi.

e write ze not for. i. y. m.

ende eulachunge tabbi

Thursday

epi. i. corinth. ii.

e he pat if trewe in ye lest

ende abhominacion wone

Wednesday

epi. i. corinth. iii.

e whare the naxede ierusal

ende ech day in ye temple

Thursday

epi. i. corinth. iv.

e Not ech flesche ye same

ende before manys longe

Wednesday

epi. i. corinth. v.

e pleyue ze to you self

ende was not voyde or

Thursday

epi. i. corinth. vi.

e the laide to su. menmen y

ende schal be entailed

Wednesday

epi. i. corinth. vii.

e write ze not pat to bodys

ende beze ye god your

Thursday

epi. i. corinth. viii.

e he laide to his discipulis

ende of his cholen enyng

Wednesday

epi. i. corinth. ix.

e forsope the ben such crist

ende is plenteuous in

Thursday

epi. galat. i.

e the goyng out of ye co

ende and doute to spee

Wednesday

epi. galat. ii.

e the pchen not us self

ende be schelbed four

Thursday

epi. galat. iii.

e the pchinge penes alky

ende alle sekacelle

Wednesday

epi. galat. iv.

e biheestes ben seide to ab

ende to cristen me wileu

Thursday

epi. galat. v.

e blessid be pzen pat seen

ende do you outhepe in

Wednesday

epi. galat. vi.

e brisen ze ben mynde

ende bocher in you pat

Thursday

epi. galat. vii.

e fardles goyng out

ende schulen hope in his

Wednesday

epi. galat. viii.

e handre ze in wret. i.

ende wynges. i. conu

Thursday

epi. galat. ix.

e whan the ibente to ierul

ende nter hap maad

Wednesday

epi. galat. x.

e yrl. i. led. i. shup. i. vif.

ende iure drede of ye

Thursday

epi. galat. xi.

e lu. n. a. of ye curuare

ende and god. i. d. a. be

Wednesday

epi. galat. xii.

e ut the iuuen bi spirit

ende to hous. i. d. a. way

Thursday

epi. galat. xiii.

e nom. i. may. i. fue. to. i. wof.

ende whateu be. i. d. a. e

Wednesday

epi. galat. xiiii.

e the write pat ye lalve

ende pat. i. d. a. in. i. d. a. crist

Thursday

epi. galat. xv.

e if. i. d. a. in. i. d. a. of. d. a. e

ende iusthat. i. d. a. e

Wednesday

epi. galat. xvi.

e faule ze not in my. i. d. a. e

ende genacon. of. ye. i. d. a. e

Thursday

epi. galat. xvii.

e the. i. d. a. e. in. i. d. a. e. p.

ende har. i. d. a. e. his. i. d. a. e

Wednesday

epi. galat. xviii.

e he. i. d. a. e. to. bet. i. d. a. e. i. d. a. e

ende for. i. d. a. e. i. d. a. e. ze. i. d. a. e

Thursday

epi. galat. xix.

e wonden in. i. d. a. e. i. d. a. e. b. i. d. a. e

ende by. i. d. a. e. i. d. a. e. i. d. a. e

Wednesday

epi. galat. xx.

e wha. i. d. a. e. i. d. a. e. e. i. d. a. e

ende an. i. d. a. e. i. d. a. e. i. d. a. e

Thursday

epi. galat. xxi.

e i. d. a. e. i. d. a. e. i. d. a. e. i. d. a. e

ende con. i. d. a. e. i. d. a. e. i. d. a. e

Wednesday

epi. galat. xxii.

e oon. of. i. d. a. e. i. d. a. e. of

ende to. i. d. a. e. i. d. a. e. i. d. a. e

Thursday

epi. galat. xxiii.

e i. d. a. e. i. d. a. e. i. d. a. e. i. d. a. e

ende god. of. i. d. a. e. i. d. a. e

Wednesday

epi. galat. xxiiii.

e i. d. a. e. i. d. a. e. i. d. a. e. i. d. a. e

ende whete. i. d. a. e. i. d. a. e

re xij. iudai. ep. effeas. m. f. be re maad nelbe azen bende to a man luffry
wednesday. ep. math. ix. a. sic goringe in to aboot ende luche polber to u
xij. iudai. ep. math. ix. g. er polber to us pis pa ende and inuance of
wednesday. ep. math. ix. d. leze holi warty re ho ende of heringe here
xij. iudai. ep. math. ix. a. the anseharig fode et ende in ye drede of gult
wednesday. ep. math. ix. na. be cofernd in gre v. il ende but selbe chosen
wednesday. ep. math. ix. c. wha you maket a fest ende in alle ringes v.
wednesday. ep. math. ix. e. heron be re anseharig ende iure rellime. o.
xij. iudai. ep. math. ix. f. per was alrtul kyng. w. ende rat if re lboard
wednesday. ep. math. ix. b. luel bytinge ye inooft ende and al his hous
wednesday. ep. math. ix. a. it if don an of labodh ende fto dede me ihu
xij. iudai. ep. math. ix. b. anseharig pis yng for ende schulde don of a
wednesday. ep. math. ix. c. re kyng of heue ende to herynges
wednesday. ep. math. ix. d. ife if you to what eu ende to his broy of
wednesday. ep. math. ix. e. truly. j. lere to you rat ende ye fep of ihu
wednesday. ep. math. ix. f. beze to lere byr. i. lere ende foneue you zo
wednesday. ep. math. ix. c. pane farisees goringe ende alle yunge fo
wednesday. ep. math. ix. f. if ipe gut of oon dey ende po yunges rat
wednesday. ep. math. ix. f. whar. he ca to casarn ende in et ihu oure
wednesday. ep. math. ix. e. the coelen not for you ende zeue to he for
wednesday. ep. math. ix. d. the luekyng. re. f. sig ende longe abidige
wednesday. ep. math. ix. e. stole you not to he ende maad laaf fof
wednesday. ep. math. ix. c. ishat lencey to youf ende into re glorie
wednesday. ep. math. ix. a. wha ilic hade lift up ende rat xebileued
wednesday. ep. math. ix. e. and oon of ye curture ende to comen into
wednesday. ep. math. ix. f. oon of ye farisees pre ende but in preiere
wednesday. ep. math. ix. a. re tabuade was maad ende go you in pees
wednesday. ep. math. ix. b. a man hade a fige. r. ende eulathunge re
wednesday. ep. math. ix. a. foon faly re holi ate ende gloriously don
wednesday. ep. math. ix. a. the goringe in lualke. r. ende lo I make alle
wednesday. ep. math. ix. g. re. rat comey romey ende yng rat pifeli
wednesday. ep. math. ix. d. a lue feths of haley ende is maad greet
wednesday. ep. math. ix. a. wha ihu wente to re ende and i ipe fadu
wednesday. ep. math. ix. e. a faw re holi ates of re ende I make alle yu
wednesday. ep. math. ix. f. a faw re holi ates of re ende y faw har ma
wednesday. ep. math. ix. e. a faw re holi ates of re ende up on manys
wednesday. ep. math. ix. d. a faw re holi ates of re ende of re arpe her
wednesday. ep. math. ix. a. a faw re holi ates of re ende rei fueden hi
wednesday. ep. math. ix. e. a faw re holi ates of re ende rei fueden hi
wednesday. ep. math. ix. f. a faw re holi ates of re ende

Conuision of epl apostles dede. **malaul** in brye or bloth **ende** after myge pat ps
seynt poule eung. math. xij. **gloske** han forsake alle **ende** heelde euilathunge
candilmasda eung. luk. ij. **after** pat ye daies of **ende** of ye people of isra
petur i chaper epl. i. petur. i. **a petur** ye apostel of ih **ende** reuelacon of ihu
seint mathi eung. mathi. xvi. **d ihc** ca into ye ptes **ende** vnboude i u he
vladi d i lew eung. luke. i. **e in** vo daies petur ty **ende** ihu reueit apol
seint george epl. i. lamp. i. **a brisen** gelle or deuie **ende** to mcy louunge
g. marke epl. ezeles. iij. **a iam** a bren vme r. **ende** and so iove be f.
philip i iacob eung. loon. xij. **b to** ech of us if ioue g. **ende** of plente of crist
holi rode day epl. galatas. v. **a be** not so lites distur **ende** ischal do it
trinitie liden **c** triste of you i ye lou **ende** i was euilathunge
and liden eung. luke. i. **a iwas** li ier iadi **ende** apfite peple to
and liden eung. luke. i. **f ye** trine of child herig **ende** redepon of he p.
speturen epl. aplis dedis. iij. **a petur** i loon thede in **ende** in pat pat bifel
spetir day epl. aplis dedis. xij. **d ihc** seide to petur ihu **ende** to glouefie god
spoule day epl. galatas. i. **a heroude** ye kyng seir **ende** of ye people of ie
octauys of eung. luk. i. **d ihc** ca into ye ptes **ende** vnboude i u he
seuen bryen epl. ezeles. x. **f of** many martiris **ende** among men
lauree euen epl. i. corinth. x. **g it** hym spekyunge to **ende** he ilmy beoper
seint iane eung. math. xx. **d god** louet aglad so **ende**
lamal day epl. aplis dedis. xij. **d** yeie ye wood of **ende** maad red of
allipe euen eung. luke. xij. **d** ca to ye hous of **ende** ihc into anoy
allipe day eung. luke. x. **d** golpel of seir petur **ende** after word lower
thymie o. g. eung. math. i. **d** si i boma of ye cyp. **ende** and pepen it
burthol euen eung. luk. xij. **g** he entrede into si cast **ende** be take n alber f
decoll of loon eung. marke. vi. **c** and stryf il maad a **ende** he schal not leie
nat of ur ladi eung. math. i. **c** heroude seir a hadc **ende** e mredis of ihu
exaltacoe of eung. loon. xij. **c** i booke of geniacoe **ende** and put it ito a
ye golpel on eung. luk. v. **e** holicode day. uols il dender ye be lones of **ende** pat il depud ihc
ye golpel on eung. math. x. **f** s. math. euil ihc say ay **ende** si ful men in ye
mydwallis epl. apocalyps. i. **b** s. math. dailie passige **ende** but si ful men
s. deys epl. aplis dedis. xij. **a** god made oppy pger **ende** si othere frues
s. deys epl. math. viij. **a** discipis came in to **ende** of my fad pat
s. deys epl. math. viij. **c** ihu poul ahood hy **ende** and deys aro

mael i re	epi apocalyp. vii	agret batel if maad	eude	and ze pat d'belien
combe	epi. romans. viii	ze waten pat to men	eude	in ihu est oure
synodre iude	enig. comou. i	vis if my maide met	eude	
alle halle	epi. apocal. vi	claz p'lo i pe middel	eude	and wiber into ly.
euene	enig. loon. vii	v'holi vader key he i pi	eude	and i in hem
alle hale	epi. apocal. vii	claz an op' angel th	eude	to oure load into
the day	enig. math. v	a ihu seunge aymes w	eude	plentuous in h
s demet	epi. mattheus. iij	a my most d'ren most	eude	ben in pe book
	claz. comou.	a comou	eude	comou
of oon apil	enig. loon. xv	a i am a v'rey v're	eude	and it schal be d.
	epi. mattheus. vi	bipe hand is of pe ap	eude	likliche thereu
off tyue	epi. mattheus. ij	g'zols ze be not her	eude	by god in pe h.
	enig. loon. xv	d'p' if my maide met	eude	and it schal
	enig. loon. xv	e i am a v'rey ze pe b	eude	
engelust	enig. luk. x	a the ordines of seucti	eude	albert man is
	epi. q. mattheus. i	a blisid be god i fad of	eude	ben of cont.
	epi. q. mattheus. i	a be pou myndful p'el	eude	
	epi. q. mattheus. i	ib'walle to fore god r	eude	pat louep his
	enig. loon. xij	a but pe oon of w'her f.	eude	antidur schal
of amartir	enig. luk. x	d'he pat herep zoul herep	eude	
	enig. math. xvi	c'if eny ma' wole come	eude	
	enig. luk. xij	f'if eny ma' willep to me	eude	may not be m.
	enig. math. x	f'no pig i' belid pat	eude	bisdae my fad.
	epi. q. mattheus. i	e'romid holdig' p'v'z	eude	in crist ihu i' h.
amartir	epi. ebreys. v	a ecbisshop taken of	eude	pe ordre of a.
bulcohy	epi. ebreys. xij	c'zyl be lad alker w'	eude	by luche oostis
	enig. math. x	g'he alpalid cures a cal	eude	and simple as d.
avilchay	enig. luk. xij	b'auoble man w'ere ito a	eude	avunge to ieru.
erlyd	epi. ebreys. x	b'haue ze mynde of fouli	eude	my iuste man ly.
	epi. j. corinth. iij	d'beben maad alpeccade	eude	most derber.
	epi. ebreys. x	f'haue ze mynde of fouli	eude	my iuste man i'
of many	apocalyp. vii	c'	eude	
martari	enig. luk. vi	c'hozeu castup in his	eude	zoute mede if m.
	enig. math. v	a the seunge ed'p'v'e	eude	made it p'ent.
	enig. luk. xxi	c'wha ze schule here ba	eude	in zoure pacie
	enig. luk. vi	c'his ien castup i his	eude	is muchel i heuene
	enig. math. x	d'lossende zoul achesp	eude	vis schal be saaf
	enig. math. x	c'	eude	
	enig. math. x	b'leze pat no ma' discoue	eude	vis schal be saaf
many m'is	enig. luk. xxi	b'wha ze schule here bat	eude	

ening: luk. xij. a be ze war & fleze fro
 ening: math. xij. a the litynge oure hal of
 ening: math. xij. a & uyl ze deue pat y cam
 ening: math. xij. a ihu litynge oure hal of
 ening: luk. xij. g wo to ion pat biden bi
 ening: math. xij. a and whane he went out
 Confellon: ening: math. xij. a fone thalke ze for ze w
 and lufchop: ening: math. xij. v and goyng for in pyl
 ofello & doot: ening: math. xij. g le ze wate ze & pyc ze
 ofello & ablot: ening: luk. xij. e ze ben lalt of re erve
 many ofello: ening: math. xij. e no man tender a laltre
 ugn & n: ening: math. xij. e and be maid pates after
 ugn & n: ening: math. xij. e he zoure lendes gurd by
 many ugn: ening: math. xij. e re byngd of heuenes
 of our ladi: ening: luk. xij. g he glorie glorie in
 comen: ening: math. xij. a re byngd of heuenes
 on of re tunc: ening: math. xij. e of uirgine i haue not
 of re aolle: ening: luk. xij. d it is don wha he thak
 of re holigost: ening: math. xij. e bide re aros of ihu
 for pces: ening: math. xij. g re ge of oure lord ihu
 for der wed: ening: math. xij. g of re byuente of re r
 for corn: ening: math. xij. g wha re confort schalw
 for batel: ening: math. xij. g hemakd hy self ma
 of augeles: ening: math. xij. d ihu ftinge up to ic
 apt for hi lalt: ening: math. xij. g wha aplis pat were
 for potil of base: ening: math. xij. g not hyu fpekinge w
 for weryng me: ening: math. xij. g lo re how comey tuob
 for io lynes: ening: math. xij. c to it am in oon of dave
 for luke men: ening: math. xij. g uyl ze be byli litynge
 ening: math. xij. e whoeu ley to pis hil
 ening: math. xij. c apocalips. xij. c
 ening: math. xij. a per lhas afeft day of
 ening: math. xij. b idelte to gidre to re l
 ening: math. xij. b at ze schule dycle in
 ening: math. xij. b alkeze wit schal be zo
 ening: math. xij. b regoyng fche f lei
 ening: math. xij. c wha we were at lins
 ening: math. xij. e the wente out re la a
 ening: math. xij. e any of you is forgetful y rade
 ening: math. xij. f the rlyng of re lyna g
 ende before re augeles of
 ende pis schal be lalt
 ende he schal not lese h
 ende he pis schal be lalt
 ende pat re schal de ac
 ende he yf schal be lalt
 ende he schal cideyne
 ende futo re ioye of
 ende y lere to alle wate
 ende zeue lrt to pce
 ende onys offi ige hi
 ende ammyf loue schal
 ende nelbe ruyge & o
 ende to oo man crist
 ende re day ne re hour
 ende holi i bodi & lurt
 ende welbord of god & re
 ende tok hit into hyr
 ende be lhyr ion alle a
 ende glorie into woul
 ende for fseide to ion
 ende in glorie of god
 ende re fridre day he l
 ende re luyge & re h
 ende broyer lityr i mod
 ende lhaue oncoule re
 ende and rei obien to
 ende schulen he cast to
 ende to ion io lynes
 ende
 ende he lhas holden lhyr
 ende by ihu crist oure l
 ende zoure ioye re fultald
 ende to men a litynge
 ende frely zeug ze
 ende in re lurt of hy
 ende luyful men po pe
 ende pat ze ben lalt
 ende he lede hem

for. **W**eddiges. **E**ph. 1. cor. 13. **W**at is niet verzoenende bere is god in zo.

ende of alpha

epi. tellar. mye. iweibole not ion finto eudito gydre i vele
apocalyps. rmye. iherda a vois fro ye. eude ye iherles of

Mass of requiem
 euuig. loon. vi. d. **Mass of requiem**
 euuig. loon. vi. d. **Mass of requiem**
 euuig. loon. vi. d.

cūng. ioun. v. **d** he þat herey my l̃s. **ende** into r̃fuge a.
 cūng. ioun. vi. **f** þan q̃lke b̃red f̃ al. **ende** reule bi in re.

leuing loou di. **f** vint ze schule etc my ende supelste day.
adichet parthas. **H**ere bigynen pe prologe bisona pe ge

of iudee. al he il set first
in ordre of ye gospeleris.

to he broot first pe gol-
pel in iudee & firo pe office
of hys chelliege clowd m

god. Whanne pis mattheu hade prechid
in yherusalem in iudee et in galilee. And

he broote first the gospel
in elden. and left it to many to tary

men of pe'elsis. for ve whiche he deya
de head. for ve m'as nedful nat is

gospel were prechid to ye conferuynge
of feyn: so it was needful yat it were

Writen also azeimes cretytes pour mo
ny men han writen ye gospel: four

only par it. mattheu. mark. luk. & john. han ye knoweinge of anou
he was an egre: in a
ye wanted of criss

re / for per tellen ye fey of ye tute:
by fourt yris of ye world / and per
yeu as fourt yris of ye fourt hon:

ben as thoue becom in ve thoue be-
 sid earte of ve lord: pat beery hym
 a'oute by wreching of ve cōsol'

and mākynde that was slayn by fou
re daem-schulde ven quykend by

ye prechinge of hem / and refoze ye
apostles of ouer kyngdoms felden don

and beu not reseyued: for ye lord
wolds rat ys for seide noumbre thei

dutyed for vs uerta of sacramentz and doop after his

Also ye four gospeleris ben vndur
den bifoure figuris of godis priuies
antheu if vndurftonden by man
he diueller pryncpali aboute ye ma
hed of crist / dark if vndurftonden
a lyon : for he trect of cristis rylng
a yern / Luk if vndurftonden by a calf
trect of presthod / Joou if vndur
ftonden by an egle : and writteþ y
ye sacramentis of holi priuies
of ye godhed / forloke crist / Whom
yele gospeleris duruen was annu
boren of ye virgine / he has a calf
in offsprunge eyer dyunge our crod
he has a lion : in rylng a yern / and
he has an egle : in ascension / ch
ye manhed of crist if signified in
man / presthod if signified in ye calf
relyng if signified in ye lyon / and
ye sacrament of godhed if signi
fied in ye egle / pat if yele four
beings declarid : pat ihu crist is
god and man / kyng / and prest

Jerom in hile theynic prologis
matheu: seip plentyly vs / and
uolk here byginnet ye gospell
matheu / he is bleissd that heret h
and doop after his tokene ~ ~

Te boke of pe ge-
neracioun of
ihū crist pe sone
of damp pe sone
of abraham/ abra-
ham forsope gen-
drid or bigate ysa-
ac ysaac forsope ia-
cob/ iacob forsope bi-
gat iudas and his lu-
peren/ iudas forsope
bigate phares & zaram
of thamar/ phares for-
sope bigat efrome from
forsope bigate aram/ ara-
forsope bigate amynadab/
amynadab forsope bigat
naason/ naason forsope bi-
gate salmon/ salmon for-
sope bigate booz of raab/
booz forsope bigate obeth
of rith/ obeth forsope bi-
gate iesse/ iesse forsope bi-
gate dauid pe kyng da-
uid forsope pe kyng bi-
gate salomon of pat wo-
man pat was aries wif/
salomon forsope bigate

roboam/ roboam forsope
bigate abias/ abias for-
sope bigate asa/ asa forso-
pe bigate iosaphath/ io-
saphath forsope bigate
ioram/ ioram forsope bi-
gate ofias/ ofias forsope
bigate ioathan/ ioathan
forsope bigate achas ac-
has forsope bigate eze-
chie/ ezechie forsope bigat
manesses/ manasses for-
sope bigate amon/ amor
forsope bigate iosias/ io-
sias forsope bigate iechi-
nyas & his bruperen in
to pe transmygracioun
of babuloyne/ And after
pe transmygracioun of
babuloyne/ jechonias
bigate salatiel/ salatiel
forsope bigate sorobabel
sorobabel forsope bigate
abynuth/ abynuth forsope
bigate eliachim/ elia-
chim forsope bigate asor
asor forsope bigate sa-
dok/ sadok forsope bigat

Puo

achyuu achym forsope
bigate elynth elynth for
sope bigate eleazar elea
zar forsope bigate ma
than mathan forsope
bigate iacob iacob forso
pe bigate ioseph pe hose
boud of marie of which
marie iesus is born pat
is clepid crist And so alle
generaaciouns from abra
ham til to dauid ben fo
urtene generaaciouns
And fro dauid til to pe
tismigraaoun of babu
loyne ben fourtene ge
neraaciouns. And fro pe tism
migraaoun of babuloy
ne til to crist ben four
tene generaaciouns for
sope pe generacioun of
crist was thus Whanne
marie his modir was
spoused to ioseph before
pat pei shulden come
to gader she is founden
hauiunge in pe wombe
of pe holy goost ioseph

forsope hir houseboud
Whanne he was iust ma
orritful And wolde not pu
plische hire or lede hire
ferper. Wolde priuynly
forsake hire. Sope he
penkyng pe pestynges
do pe aungel of pe lord
appered in sleep or swe
uene to hym seiynge
ioseph pe sone of dauid
myl you drede to take ma
rie in wyf forsope pat
yng pat is borne in
hir. is of pe holy goost
Sope she shal bere a
sone. And you shalt clepe
his name ihu for he shal
make his puple saaf
fro her synnes forsope
al this yng was don
it shulde be fulfilled
yng pat was seid by a
pphete seiynge. Loo a
virgine shal haue in
wombe. And she shal bere
a sone. And his name shal
be clepid emanuel pat

is interpreted or expounded
 ed god wry us! sopeh 10
 seph r. i. ynge up fro sleep
 dide as ye aimgel of pe
 lord comamdid hym.
 & toke his wif & he line
 we hir not til she hadde
 boren hir first bigeten
 sone. & clepid his name
 iesus.

Therfore whane
 he was boren in
 bethlem of iuda
 in pe dayes of kyng
 eroude. To kynges. or
 wise men. comen fro pe
 east to ierusalem seynge
 where is he pat is born
 kyng of ierlis. forsope
 we han seen his sterre
 in pe east. and we come
 for to worship hym/
 Sovely kyng eroude he
 ryng is trubblid and
 al ierusalem wry hym/
 And he gaderynge to
 gider alle pe pryncis
 of prestis & scribis of

of pe puple. enguered
 of hem. where crist sch
 ulde be boren. and pey
 seiden to hym. in beth
 leem of iuda. for so it is
 writen by a prophet. & p
 bethleem ye lond of
 iuda. pou art not pe
 lest in pe pryncis of iuda/
 for of pee a duk schal go
 out. pat schal gouerne
 my puple of yrael/
 yanne heroude pryncly
 pe kyngis clepid to hy.
 bisshy serued of her
 pe tyme of pe sterre
 pat apperide to hem. &
 he sendynge hem into
 bethleem. seide. go ze
 & aye ze bisshy of pe ch
 ild. & whanne ze han
 founden telle aen to
 me. pat & y comynge
 worship hym. pe whi
 ch whanne yei hadde
 herd pe kyng. wente
 alwey. and lo pe sterre
 pe which yei seen in

ve eest wente bifore he
 til pat it comynge stode
 aboue where ve childe
 was / for sope vei seeyge
 ve sterre / ioyeden wip
 a ful greet ioye / & vei
 entrynge ve hous / foun
 den ve childe wip marie
 his modur / & vei fallynge
 toln worshipiden hym /
 & her tresour is openyd /
 vei offriden to hy ziftis
 gold / encense & myrrer /
 & answere taken i sleep
 pat vei schulden not tur
 ne azen to eroude / vei be
 turnyd by anoy weye
 in to her cuntree / and
 whaime vei hadden gon
 alwey / so ve aungel of
 ve lord awperide i sleep
 to ioseph seynge / ryse
 up & take ve childe & his
 modur & flee in to egypt
 and be pou pere til pat
 y seie to pee / sopeh it
 is to come / pat eroude
 seke ve childe for to seeke

hym / ve which ioseph hi
 synge up / toke ve childe
 & his modur by nyzt &
 wente in to egypt / & was
 y til to ve deye of erou
 de / pat it schulde be ful
 fillid pat pyng pat was
 seide of ve lord by ve pro
 fete seynge / fro egypt y
 haue clepid my sone / pa
 heroude seynge pat he
 was sworned of ve ephas
 was greetly wroop / and
 he sendynge s lowy alle
 ve children pat weren i
 berthlem & in alle ve ende
 of it fro two zeer age &
 wip inne / aftar ve tyme
 pat he hadde souyt oute
 of ve kyngis / vame it
 was fulfillid pat pyng
 pat was seide by ieremie
 ve pphete seynge / a noy
 ce is herd an hy wepyng
 & myche weylsynge rachel
 wepyng her sones and
 she wolde not be confor
 tid / for vei ben not / sope

si eroude ded: so ve ann
gel of pe lord apperid in
sleep to ioseph in egipt
seyng: rise up & take pe
child & his modur: & go
in to pe lond of israel for
pei pat sauten pe hys of
pe child: Ben ded: pe wshi
ch ioseph risyng up toke
pe child & his modur: & came
in to pe lond of israel for
sope he heryng pe pat arche
laus regned in iude for
heroude his fadir: & dedde
for to go yder: & he mones
tid in sleep: Wente in to
pe parties of galilee: and
he comyng dwelte in a
cite pat is clepid nazareth
pat it schulde be fulfilled
pat pyng pat is seide by
pphetis for wshi he schal
be clepid of nazareth: **m^o**

In pe ilke dayes came
ioon baptist: & pchysse
in pe disert of iude
seyng: doye penance
for pe kyngdom of heue

nes schal neye forsope
pis is he of wshom it is
seide by ysane pe pphetisainge
a uoyce of a cryng in desert
maky redy pe weies of
pe lord: maky rytful pe
papes of hym: forsope p
ilke ioon hadde clou of pe
heer is of chamelis: and
a girdle of skyn aboute
his leendis: forsope hys
mete weren locustis and
hony of pe wode: panne
jerusalem wente oute to
hym & al iude and al pe
countre aboute iordan: and
weren cristenyd of hym
in iordan knouleschyng
here hymes: & sope he se
yng many of farisees &
of saduceis comysse to his
baptym: seide to hem: ge
neraciouns of eddis: wsho
schelwde to zou for to fle
fro wraye to come: yfore
do ze woryn frinyas of pe
nauice: & wyl ze sey wry
tme zolb: we han pe fadir

Abraham/ soþely y feye
to you. for wh̄ god is myz
ti to reise up of yre stony
pe sones of abraham/ for
noll þe axe. is put to þe
ve rote of þe tree/ soþely
eily tree þat maky not
good fruyt. shal be l̄yt
toun and shal be sente in
to þe fyer/ soþely I t̄ste
ne zolb in watur in to þe
nauuæ. forsoþe he þat is
to come aftir me is stren
ger þāne I. whos s̄hone
y am not worþi to bere/
he shal baptise you in
þe holi goost and fyer/
whos wynde wyngt̄op
or fan in his hond. & he
shal fully c̄ense hys
corne flore & shal gedre
his corn in to his berne.
but chaffis he shal be
ne wy fyer onquēche
able or þat uelie shal
be quenched. þāne ih̄c
came fro galilee in to ior
dan to ioun. for to be c̄

tened of hym/ soþely
ioun forþede h̄y seyrnge/
y olbe for to be c̄stend
of yee. and you comest
to me. forsoþe ih̄c an
sberyngē seide to h̄y/
Suffre noll/ for so it by
comep us noll for to ful
fille alle rytyuynesse/
þāne ion lere h̄y or l̄ef
te hym/ forsoþe ih̄c t̄ste
nyd. steyr up anon fro
þe watur. & lo heuenes
ben openyd to hym. &
he sally þe spirit of god
comyngē down as a au
uer. & comyngē upō h̄y/
and lo a voice fro heue
nes seyrngē/ þis is my
loued sone. in þe which
y hane plesid to me.
þāne **my** **a**
ih̄c was led to
desert of a spirit.
þat he shulde be temptid
of þe deuyl. & whanne
he hadde fastid forty
dayes. and forty nyght.

my
f

afterward he hymgride. ⁊
 pe temptere comynge nyz.
 seide to hym. if you be go
 des sone. seie pat yes stones
 be maad looues. ⁊e whiche
 ansuerynge seide to hym.
 it is writū. a man lyueth not
 in bred alone. but in euery
 word pat cometh forth fro
 ⁊e moup of god. þanne pe
 deucl toke hym in to an
 holy cite. ⁊ sette hym ou
 pe pyname of pe temple.
 ⁊ seide to hym. if you be
 goddes sone. sende pe dū.
 Sopoh it is writū. for to
 his anzelis he comādid
 of pee. ⁊ pei shulde take
 pee in hondis. lest þat
 ture you hurte in foot at
 a stoon. eftsone ihs seip
 to hym. it is writū. you
 shalt not tempte pe lord
 in god. eftsone pe deucl
 toke hym in to a fil hys
 hil. ⁊ shewide to hym alle
 pe reynes of pe world.
 ⁊ pe storie of he. and

seide to hym. alle pese þi
 gis þi shal zyeue to pee.
 if you fallynge tollne.
 shalt worsscipe me. þā
 ne ihs seide to hym. go sata
 nas. forsowe it is writū.
 you shalt worsscipe pe
 lord in god. and to hym
 aldone you shalt serue.
 þanne pe deucl lefte hym.
 ⁊ lo anzelis comen nyz.
 and serueten to hym. Sope
 hy whāne ihs hadde herd
 pat icoon was takū. he
 wente in to galilee. and
 pe cite of nazareth. last.
 he came. ⁊ dwelte in pe
 cite of capharnaū. bi sidē
 pe see. in pe endis of za
 bulon. ⁊ neptalim. pat
 it shulde be fulfilled pat
 wyng. pat was seide by
 ysac pe pphete. pe lond
 of sabulon. ⁊ pe lond of
 neptalim. pe wey of pe
 see. on jordan of galilee
 of hepen men. pe puple
 pat dwelte in derknessis.

sana greet hit / & me sitt
 se in pe amtre of shademe
 of det^h hit is sprungeu
 to hem / fro peim / ist / bis
 for to fische and seye to ze
 penance / forsope pe kyng
 tam of hevenes shal come
 nyz / Sopely / ist / Wallfye
 bishpis pe see of galilee
 say also bryven symon
 pat is clepid petre / & andre
 w his brop sendyng a net
 in to pe see / forsope pep
 weren fischeris / and he
 seide to hem / come ze aft
 me / & y shal make you to
 be made fischeris of men
 & anon pe nettis forsaft
 pei sueten hym / & he goy
 ze forp fro pat place / say
 also of bryven james of
 zebede & wou his brop
 in pe ship wip zebede her
 fadir / makynge azen or
 betyng her nettis / & he
 clepid hem / Sopely / anon
 pe nettis forsaft / & pe fad
 pei sueten hym / And ist

ment a barote

emyroumed al galilee te
 chynge in pe synagogy
 of he / & pchyng pe gospel
 of pe kyngdom / & helynge
 al sorwe or ache / & al sik
 nesse in pe puple / and his
 opp myom or fame / Wente
 in to al cite / & pe offide
 to hym alle me / hanys
 puel taken wip dynse for
 wes / & turnetis / & he pat
 hadde denelis / & limat^h me
 & me in paleste / & he heli
 de hem / & pere sueten hym
 many cūpanyes of galilee
 & of decapoly / and of ierusa
 lem and of iudee / & of byzon
 de iordan / **W**o
 he forsope sefge
 cūpanyes / Wente
 up in to an hyl / &
 whanne he hadde seerhis
 discipulis camen nyz to hy
 and he openyng his moup
 tanzte hem seynge / blessid
 be pore in spirit / for pe
 kyngdom of hevene is heru
 blessid be milke men / for

ver schulen welcke pe erpe
 Blesid be ver pat mornē
 for ver schulen be cōfesse
 tid/ Blesid be ver pat hā
 gren/ & purken rāttis
 uelle/ for ver schulen be
fulfild/ Blesid be mīn
ful men/ for ver schulen
gete, wīp/ Blesid be ver
pat ben of clene herte/ for
ver schulen see god/ Blesid
be pēhble men/ for ver schu
len be cōfēd pe sones of
god/ Blesid be ver pat
suffren pēnāciō for rūt
wisdēsse/ for pe kīngdom
of heuenes is hern/ & schu
len ben blesid wīhamme mē
schulen cōfēzeou/ & pēne
zon/ & schule seie al ynel
zen/ & zon hīnge for me/
iope ze wīp me forp and
stāde ze wīp outen forp/
for zoure mede is plente
nouse in heuenes/ for sope
so ver han purfued and
profētis pat weren bīfor
zon/ ze ben salt of pe erpe/
pat zif pe salt schal coa
nysthe alwey/ wīher yne
schal it be saltid/ to no pīg

it is worp oner/ no but y
 it be sent out/ & defoulid
 of men/ ze ben līt of pe
 world/ a cire put on an
 hīl/ may not be hid/ ne p
 men tenden a lāntē &
 putten it vnder a bushel
 but on a candilstīke/ pat
 it ȝyue līt to alle pat
 ben in pe house/ so schyne
 zoure līt bīfore men p
 ver see zoure gode werke
 & glōrīfīen zoure fadir y
 is in heuenes/ nyl ȝesē
 se or deue pat y came to
vnto or dīstruie pe lawe
or pe pphētis/ y came not
to vnto pe lawe/ but to
fulfille/ for sope y seie to
zon treupe/ tīl heuene &
erpe passe oon y/ pat is
pe leest lete/ or a tītīl
schal not passe fro pe lāke
tīl alle yungis be don/ ver
fore he pat cōdōp or lūck y
oon of ves leste māde
mentis/ & techy pus mē
schal be cōfēd pe leeste
in pe kēlme of heuenes/
for sope pus pat dōp and
techy/ schal be cōfēd

kingdom

greet in pe kyngdom of he
uenes/ forsope y seie to
you/ But zif youre rytty
shesse shal be more ple
teuouse/ pame of strabis
z farisees/ ze shule not
entre in to pe kyngdom
of heuenes/ ze han herd
pat it is seid to olde men
pon shalt not slee/ forso
pe he pat slee/ shal be
gilty of dome/ But y seie
to you/ pat einge pat is
brooy to his broper/ shal
be giltty of dome/ forsope
he pat shal seie to his
broper racha/ pat is a word
of stom/ shal be giltty of
conscience/ sope he y shal
seie fool/ pat is a word of
dispylynge/ shal be giltty
of pe fyier of helle/ per
fore if pon offist yzifte
at pe anter/ z pe shalt
bypenke/ pat in broper
hay subbat agens pec
leene ye yzifte bifore
pe anter/ z so firste for
to be reconseilid or wordid
to in broper/ and pame
pon comynge shalt offte
in nite/ we pon consen

tynge to ym aduisarie sone
while you art in pe weye
by hy/ lest paventure
ym aduisarie take yee to pe
domesman/ z pe domesma
take yee to pe mynystre/
and you be sent i to pson/
trensly y seie to yee/ you
shalt not go yemyn/ til
you zelte pe last fer y
se/ ze han herte for it
was seide to olde men/ you
shalt not do lecherie/ for
sope y seie to you/ for whi
einy man yat seep a wo
man for to conerte hwe
nolb he hay to lecherie/ br
fir in his herte/ pat af
y ryt ze stamdie yee/
pul it out/ z caste it fro
yee/ for it speddy to yee/
pat oon of y mebris y
uthe/ pame al y body go
in to helle/ and zif y ryt
hond stamdie yee/ kute
it a wey/ z caste it fro yee/
for it opeddy to yee/ pat
oon of y mebris pinte/
pame pat al y body go
in to helle/ forsope it is
seide/ who ese shal leue
his wyf/ z yue he to hir

a ribel. pat is a ribel boke
of forsaþynge / Sopheþ y
 seie to you. pat eny man
 pat shal leue his wyf
 outaken cause of forny
 ragoun. he makyþ hir to
 be lecherie. / & he pat wed
 dyþ ye forsaþen wyf. toþy
 anontrie / eftsones ze han
 herd. pat it was seide to
 olde men. you shalt not
 forswere. Sopheþ to ye lord
 you shalt zelte þi opis /
 forsoþe y seie to you. to
 not swere on al maner
 neþur by heuene. for it
 is þe trone of god / neþur
 by erþe for it is þe stool
 of his feet / neþur by ie
 rusalem. for it is þe cite
 of a gret kyng neþur.
 you shalt swere bi þi
 heed. for you maist not
 make an heer white oz
 black / but be youre word.
 ze ze nay nay. forsoþe
 pat is more vane þys.
 is of yuel / ze han herd
 pat it is seide. ye shal
 toþ for toþ / but y seie to
 you. to not azenstonde

yuel / But if any shal
 swyre þee in þe rixt
 cheke. / 3yue to hy and
 þe toþur / and to hy pat
 wole streþue wyþ þee in
 dome. and take away þi
 cote. leue þou to hym
 & ym onschyþ / & who ene
 constreyney þee a þou
 sand pashis. / so you wyþ
 hym oper elbo / forsoþe
 3yue to hym pat askeþ
 of þee. & turne þou not
 away fro hym pat wole
 borke of þee / ze han herd
 pat it is seide / you shalt
 loue þi neyhore. / & hate
 þi enemye / but I seie
 to you / loue ze þoure ene
 myes. do ze wel to hem
 pat haten you / & preie
 ze for me þi mysþynge &
 falsly chalengynge you.
 pat ze ben þe sones of
 þoure fadir pat is in
 heuenes. pat makyþ his
 sone to sprynge upon
 gode and yuel me and
 reyney upon mist men
 & vniust me / for if ze
 louen hem pat louen

zou: What mede schal ze
 haue. Wherfor & puppi
 cing don not vis ying.
 & hit ze greden or saluten
 zoure bapen oonhe. What
 more ouer schal ze don. Wse
 per & paynyngs don not
 vis ying. y pfore be ze
 pfitre. as & zoure heuich
 fadir is pfitre. Take ze
 hede lest ze don zoure ryt
 wisnesse bifore men. pat
 ze ben seen of hem. elles
 ze schal not haue mede at
 zoure fadir pat is in he
 uen. perfore whanne
 you doist alines. nyl you
 synge bifore pec in a tru
 pe as ypocritis don in sy
 nagogis & strecis. pat pei
 ben made worshipful of
 men. forsoye y seie to zou.
 pei han resteyued her me
 de. But pec doynge a lineor
 knowe not in list hond.
 What in rythond don y
 ym alines be in hidlis.
 & in fadir pat seep in
 hidlis. schal zelte to pec.

And whanne
 ze schulen preie
 ze schulle not be

as ypocritis pe whiche sto
 dyng donen to preie in sy
 nagogis & strecis of stre
 tis pat pei ben seen of me
 treuly y seie to zou. pei ha
 resserued her mede. But
 whanne you schalt preie
 entre in to in couche. & pe
 toze schit preie in fadir
 hidlis. and in fadir pat
 seep in hidlis. schal zelte
 to pec. Soerly preynge
 nyl ze seep myche as hepe
 men don. for pei zessen pat
 pei ben herd in heir myche
 speche. perfore nyl ze be
 made like to hem. for zoure
 fadir woot what is nede
 to zou. bifore pat ze axen
 hym. forsoye mis ze schu
 len preie. Dure fadir y
 art in heuenes. hakeind
 be in name. in kyngdom
 come to. Be in wille donas
 in heuene. & in erpe. yue
 to us vis day oure bred
 on oper sustaunce. & se
 yue to us oure dettis. as
 & we foryuen to oure det
 touris. and ledt us not in
 to temptacion. But deli
 uere us from yuelame.

pat is so be it forsope zif ze
shulen forzyue to me her
synnes: and zoure heuich
fadir shal forzyue to zow
zoure trespassis/ Sopeh if
ze shulen not forzyue to
men: neyir zoure fadir
shal forzyue to zow zoure
synnes/ But whanne ze fast
ten: nyl ze be made as ypoc
tes soureful for ye putten
her facis out of kyndly ter
mes: pat ye seme fastige
to men/ treuh y seie to zow
ye han reseyued her mede/
But whanne you fastist: a
noynte yin heed & wanke
in face pat you be not seen
fastyng to men/ But to pi
fadir: pat seep in hidlis:
shal zelde to pee/ Nyl yetre
soure to zow tresour is terpe
where rust & moipe dist
ep & where penyis delien
out and stelen/ But tresou
re ze to zow tresour is in he
uene: where neyir rust
ne moipe distrey & where
penyis delien not out or
vndirmynen not ne ste
len/ forsope where pi tre
soure is: pere and pme

herte is: ye kaurne of py
body: is yin ye/ if yin ze
be synple: al in body shal
be litzful/ But if yin ze be
weilward: al in body shal be
derkful/ perfore if ye litz
pat is in pee: be derknesse:
hou grete shulen pilke der
kenessis be/ No man may
serue to tibo lordis/ forsope
eyir he shal hate ye toon
& loue ye toper: eyer he
shal susteyne ye toon
& dispise ye toper/ ze mo
uun not serue to god & ry
chessis/ perfore y seie to
zow: pat ze ben not bisy
to zoure hyf/ What ze shu
len ete eyir to zoure body.
What ze shulen be clouid/
Wher zoure hyf is not mo
re pau mete & ye body mo
re pane clou/ biholde ze
fleynghe foukis of ye er
for ye solwen not ne re
pen neyir gaderen in to
bernes: & zoure fadir of
heuene fedy hem/ wher
ze ben not more wozy
pane ye/ Sopeh/ Wike
of zow penkynghe: may
put to his nature: o aubus

g

and of clopyng what be
 ze bisy. / biholde ze ye like
 of ye feeld. hou pei weper
 pei trauelen not. nepe
 spynen / treush y seie to
 zow for wsh ney salomo
 in al his gdone was bene
 red. as con of pese / for if god
 clopy pus pe hey of ye
 felde. pat to day is. & to
 morwe is sent in to a foun
 neys. hou myche more
 zow of lital fey. / y fore
 nyl ze be bisy seyrnge / w
 hat schulen we ete. or wst
 schulen we drynke. & wy
 what pyng schulen we
 bekened. / foesepe hepen
 men seken alle pese pyng
 treush zowre fadir woot
 pat ze han nede to alle
 pese pyngis / perfore seke
 ze first pe kyngdom of
 god. & his ryttynesse.
 and alle pese pyngis schu
 len betast to zow / perfore
 nyl ze be bisy in to pe mo
 we / for ye morwe day. it
 shal be bisy to hy. / suff
 sopeky it sufficep to
 ye day his makce. /

Dif ze deme /
 pat ze ben not tem
 ed / for in what do
 me ze demen. ze schulen
 be demed / and in what me
 sure ze meten. it shal.
 be meten to zow / but wst
 seest you a festu or a lital
 mote in ye ye of y brop.
 & you seest not a beam in
 ym olbue. / or what mi
 ner seist you to y broper.
 broper suffre. pat y cast
 out first a beam of y ye.
 and yane you shalt see.
 for to cast oute a festu of
 ye ye of y broper / nyl ze
 zyne holy pyng to houndis.
 nepe sende ze zowre mar
 saritis or psonse stonys
 bi fore clym. lest pauen
 ture pei desoulen he wy
 her feet. & lest houndis
 turnyd to gadre. al to be
 fe zow. / axe ze. & it shal
 be zow to zow / sechp &
 ze schulen fynde / knoeke
 ze. & it shal be opnyde to
 zow / for ecche pat axp.
 takp. & he pat sechp.
 fyndp. and it shal be

+ oute a mote of y ye. & lo a beam
 i ym 12 / yppointe cast

openyd to a man knowlege
 of who of you is a man. Wh
 hom if his sone aske beed.
 whether he shal dresse to hy
 a stoon. eyn if he shal
 aske a fether. whether he shal
 dresse to hy a serpent. /
 pfore if ze wshane ze ben
 yuel men. han knowen
 for to yue gode yngis
 to zoure sonys. hou my
 che more zoure fadir pat
 is in heuenes shal yue
 good yngis to me as er
 ze hy. / pfore alle yngis.
 what eue yngis ze wole
 pat men don to you. / a to
 ze to hem. for sope yest pi
 sis. beu ye labe. / pph
 tis. / Entre ze bi ye strect
 zate for ye zate pat ledy
 to pdaon or dampnatio
nis brood. / a large. / a
 per ben many pat entre
 by it. Hou strect is ye za
 te. / a narlike ye wey pat
 ledy to hyf. and per
 ben felwe pat synden it.
 pceyne ze a fle fro fals
 pftis. ye wshiche come
 to zoll in cloyngis of

of sheep. But whynne
 ye ben raupsthyng
 wolues. of her fruytis
 ze schulen knowe hem. / whe
 per mengaderen gras is
 of porrys. or figus of bre
 ris. / So ealy good tree.
 maky good fruytis. sope
 han yuel tree. maky
 yuel fruytis. a good tree
 may not make yuel fruy
 tis. neyr an yuel tree
 maky good fruytis. ealy
 tree pat maky not good
 fruyt. / shal be lit don
 / a schal be sent in to ye fi
 er. pfore of her fruytis
 ze schulen knowe hem.
 Not eche man pat seyr
 to me lord lord. shal en
 tre in to ye kyngdom of
 heuenes. But he pat doy
 ye wille of my fadir pat
 is in heuenes. he shal en
 tre in to ye kyngdom of
 heuenes. many schule
 seye to me in pat day.
 lord lord. whereye we han
 not pphened in pi name.
 / a han cast out deuylis
 in name. / a han don many

stues in y name. & pāne
 y shal knowleche to hem
 for y knelke you neuē. &
 party alwey fro me. & y
 worcheu wickidnesse. / yet
 fore eche man pat herep
 yes my wordis and doy
 hem. shal be made like
 to a wise man. pat hay bil
 did his hous upon a ston.
 & reyn came dū. & flodes
 camen. & wyndis blewē.
 & rusthiden in to pat hous.
 & it fel dū. / for it was foun
 did on a stoon. / & eij man
 pat herp yese my wordis.
 & doy hem not. is like to
 a man fool. pat hay buidid
 his hous on grauel. / or sent
 & reyn came. & flodis ca
 men. & wyndis blewē.
 & y rusthiden in to pat
 hous. & it fel dū. / & y fal
 synge dū. / yof was greet.
 And it is maad wshanne
 ihe hadde endid yese wor
 dis. / y cūpanyes wōden
 wē on his techyng. / sope
 sy he was techyng hem.
 as a man haryng polle
 er. / & not as y scribis
 of hem and farisees. /

& sope
 wshanne ihe hadde
 comen dōwn fro ye
 hil. many cūpanyes fol
 witen hy. / & lo alexprouse
 man comyng. / wōsthy
 de hym seyinge. / lord yf
 you wolt. you maist ma
 ke me clene. / & ihe holdyn
 ge forp ye hond to chide
 hy seyinge. / y woleyse y
 made clene. / & anoon yele
 pre of hym was clenid.
 & ihe sey to hym. / see sey
 you to no man. / but go
 nshelke yee to ystis. & offie
 pat yfte pat moises com
 aandite. / & to witnesyng
 to hem. / sope sy wshanne
 he hadde entrid in to cap
 sarnan. / centurio neyde
 to hym. preyng. / hi and
 seide. / lord my child hy
 yehous. / sike on ye palese.
 & is yuel tre mentid. / and
 ihe sey to hym. / i shal
 come. & y shal hele hym.
 & centurio answeryng
 sey to hym. / lord y am
 not worp. / pat yon entre
 vndur my roof. / but on
 sy sey hy word. & my child

shal be helde for whi^r I
 y am a man ordeyned vn
 der polker: hantze vnd
 me knyztis/and y sey to
 vis go: and he goy/and
 to anoyr come pou: & he
 come! & to my sernaūt
 to pou vis pyng: and he
 doy/ sopeh i^he herynge
 pese wordis: wondred &
 seide to me supnge hym/
 trensh y seie to you I sen
 de not so greet fey in isra
 el/ sopeh y sey to you I
 many schulen come fro
 pe east & west & schulen
 reste wip abraham and
 ysaac & iacob: in pe kyng
 dom of heuenes/ for sope
 ye souys of pe reylme.
 schulen be cast out in to
 vtermer derknessis/ pe
 shal be wepyng and te
 ryng to gidere of trey/
 & i^he seide to centurio/ so
 & as pou hast bileyde:
 be it don to pee/ and pe
 child was helde fro pat
 hour/ and whanne i^he
 hadde comen in to pe hou
 se of symount petre:

he seye his wvues modir
 higgynge & makun my fe
 ueres/ & he touchide hire
 hond: and pe feuer last
 hir/ and she ros & serue
 de hem/ sopeh whanne
 ye euenyng was mad:
 pei broukten to hym ma
 ny haupunge treuelis/ &
 he kest out spiritis by
 word and helde alle ha
 upunge yuel: pat it shul
 de be fulkild: pat pyng
 pat was seide by isaye
 ye pfete seyng: he to
 ke oure in fur mites: and
 bare oure sikenessis/ so
 peh i^he seyng manye
 cūpanyes aboute hym:
 had his discipulis go ouer
 pe watir: and o caribeg
 man of laue compynge
 to: seide to hym/ maister
 y shal sue pee whidur
 enie pou shalt go/ and
 i^he seide to hym/ foris
 han dichis or borwis: &
 briddes of pe ew han
 nestis: but mannysone
 hap not where he reste
 his hened/ sopeh anoy

Viii^o

of his disciples seide to
hym/ Lord suffre me go
first & burie my fadir/
forsope ihu seide to hy/
oue you me: & lere dete
men burie her dete men/
A ihu styngge up in to a
lital schip: his disciples
sucten hym/ & lo a gret
stirynge was made in
pe see: so pat pe lital
schip was hidid wip wa
wis. but he slepte/ &
his disciples came upz
to hym: & reisten hy
seynge/ Lord saue us.
we pisthen/ and ihu sei
de to hem/ What be ze
of lital fey agast/ pane
he risynge comandise
to pe wyndis & pe see:
& a gret peshbleneste
is made/ forsope men
wondren seynge/ Wh
at maner man is he pe
for pe wyndis and pe
see obersthen to hym/
And whanne ihu had
come ouer pe water in
to pe tynntre of men of
Genazareth: and also.

haminge deuels rimen
to hym goynge out fro
burichis. ful ferse or wite
hid so pat no man un
te passe by pat weye
and lo pei cieten sey
nge/ What to us and
to pee ihu pe sone of
god. hast you comen
hidur bifore pe tyme
for to turmente us./ so
pesh a flock or drone of
many hoggis lesynge.
was not fer fro hem/ bot
pe deuels preieten hy
seynge/ if you castist
out us heim. sende us
in to pe drone of hoggs/
& he swy to hem/ go ze/
A pei goynge oute: we
te in to pe hoggis/ & so
lo in a gret burie. al pe
drone wente hedlynge
in to pe see: & pei ben
tred in watris/ forsope
pe herdis fledde alkep
& comynge in to pe ate
tolten alle yest pigs. &
of hem pat hadden pe
fendis/ & lo al pe atee
wente azem ihu mettege

hym / & hym seen: per þy
ten hym pat he schulde
passe fre her costis: 14

And ihe goynge up
in to a boot: passi-
de ouer pe water
& came in to his cite / and
lo per offriden to hy a ma-
sche in paleseye: liggige
in a bedde / forsope ihe se-
ynge pe fey of hem: sei-
de to pe man seker pale-
seye / sone haue pou trust
in hymes ben forzeuen
to pee: & lo sume of pe
scribis saide wip yune
hem ilk: pis blassemye /
& where ihe hadde seen
her pontis: he seide /
wherto peuken ze puel
mngis in zoure hertis /
what is it lyter to seie
in synes ben forzyuen
to pee: oper to seie rise
pon & walke: / forsope
pat ze witen: p^r mann
sone hap polver to for-
zyne synes in erpe: pa
he seide to pe seke man
in paleseye / rise up take
in bed: and go in to yu

hous: & he ros: & went
in to his hous / sopeþy pe
cūpanyes seeynge dred-
den: & glorifieden god:
pat zaf suche polver to
men / and where ihe pas-
side pemy: he sey a mā
sittinge in a tollbope ma-
theu by name: & he seide
to hym / sine pou me: &
he risinge folowde hym /
& it is don hy sittinge
at pe mete in pe hous:
lo many ynphicans &
synful men compe sa-
ten at pe mete wip ihu
& his discipulis: & phari-
sees seeynge: saiden to
his discipulis / Whi etteþ
zoure maistr wip yn-
phicans & synful men:
& ihe herynge seide / a
lesse is nozt nede to me
pat fareu wel: But to
men hangynge yuel / so
peþy ze goynge lerne
what it is: y wole ing
& not sacrifice / forsope
y cam not to clepe ryt-
ful men: but synful
men / þane pe discipulis

eude

2

of ioon camen nyz to hy
seyunge/ wyl we & farise
es fasten ofte. but ydys
aplis fasten not. and ihs
seyde to hem/ wshew ye so
nes of ye spouse or holdbond
molt weilen or mozne. hou
longe ye spouse is wyf bes/
sorely dayes schulen come
whane ye spouse schal be
taken alwey fro hem. & yā
ye schulen faste/ sorely
no man sendy in a med
dyng of rinde or newe dopy
in to an olde dopye/ sore
ly he taky alwey y replen
te of it fro ye dopye. and
a worse kytting is maad/
neyr men senden uelwe
wyn in to olde botels or
wyn vessels. elles ye wyn
vessels ben broken. & ye
wyn is schede oute. and
ye wyn vessels pryschen/
but men senden uelwe
wyn in to uelwe wynnes
selles. and hope ben kept/
wyl spekyng yese pigis
to hem. lo o pryncce cam
to & worschypide hy sey
nge/ lord my dougter is

nolt deed. but come yon
& put yin hond upon hir
& sche schal lye/ & ihs
rusinge suede hy m. & his
discipulis/ & lo a woman
pat suffryde ye flux or
remynge of blood alweh
yere. cam to byhynde &
touchide ye hēme of his
dopy/ sorely sche seyde wy
me hir self. yf y touchen
ly ye dows of hyr. I schal
be saaf/ & ihs turnyde and
seyng hyr seyde/ do ytir
hane yon trest y sey hap
made yee saaf and ye wo
man was maad saaf fro
yat hour. & whanne ihs
cam in to ye hous of ye
pryncce & seyn mynstrels
& ye aipanye makynge
noyse. he fande/ go ye alwey/
for ye wench is not deed.
but slepey/ & yei scaynde
hyr. & whane ye aipanye
was cast out. he entride
yn & helde hir hond. and seide up
ye wench ros up/ & yis
fame wente out in to al
ye lond/ & ihs passynge
yenn. tillo bynde me

iden

sueden hym crynge & sei
ynge: þou soue of danny-
haue thiȝ of us/ soþely
wihane þei came in to þe
houe þe blynde me came
nyȝ to hym/ & ihe seip to
hem/ What wole ze pat I
do to you/ & þei/ Lord. þat
oure ien be openyd & ihe
seide/ bylene ze. þat I may
do vis þyng to you/ þei
seiden/ soþely or ihe lord/
þane he touchde her ien
saynge/ iȝ þoure seip. be
it don to you/ & þe ien of
þoe ben openyd/ and ihe
pretenyde hem saynge/ see
ze þat no man wite/ but
þei goynge out. defame
den hym þeron al þat lori
soþely þei gon out. loo
þei offriden to hym a ms
donmbe haȝynge a denel/
& wihane þe denel was cast
out. þe donmb ma spak/
& þe aȝpanyes wondride
seynges/ it aȝperide ne
ne so in yrael/ but þe fa-
risees seiden/ in þe þnce
of denels. he castyȝ out
denels/ And ihe aȝpasside

aboute alle atees & caste-
les. techynge in synagogis
of hem. & þichynge þe
gospel of kyndom. & he
lynge al limglunshige
or ache. & al sikenesse/ for
soþe ihe seynges aȝpany-
es. hade reuþe on hem.
for þei weren tranekide
& liggynge as schepe not
haȝynge a shepherde/
þane he seide to his dis-
pulis/ soþely þer is unȝe
ripe corn. but sette werk
men/ þei fore preyȝ ze þe
lord of þe ripe corn. þat
he sende werkmen. on to
his ripe corne. c. x.

And þe twelue dis-
pulis clepid to gader-
he zaf to he power
of vntene spiritus. þat
þei schulden casten hem
out. & þat þei schulden
hele al ache & al sekenesse/
þes ben þe names of þe
twelue apostelis/ þe first
symon þat is clepid
petre & andrew his bro-
þer. philip & bartholo-
meu. James of zebedee.

Thomas
A Jon his brother. Thomas
A Mathew puplican. A
James alshew. A thadde
Symon canane. A Judas
scarpot. pe wshich bitra
ed crist. ihu sente pes th
elie. comādyng to he
A seynge. so ze not in
to pe wey of heven uie
A entre ze not in to cite
of samaritans. But ra
per go ze to pe schep of
pe hous of israel. pat
pistiden. sopech ze goi
ae preche seynge. for
pe kyndom of hevenes
schal nehe. hele ze sele
men. op vaise ze deed me
dense ze mefels. cast ze
out deuels. frely ze han
taken. frely gyue ze. nyl
ze welden gold. ney sil
uer ne money. i zoure
birdis. not a scip in
pe weye. neyr tbo co
tis. neyr schoon. ney
zerd. for a werk man is
worpy his mete. in to
what euere cite or cas
tel. ze schulen entre.
askep wsho per yme

is worpi. A pere dille
ze. til pat ze gon oute.
forsope ze entrynge in
to an hous. gr ete ze or
salu ze it. saynge. pees
to mis hous. A sopech yf
pat hous be worpi zour
pees schal come on it.
forsope yf pat hous be
not worpi. zoure pees
schal turt ne azen to zou.
A wsho euere schal not
resceyue zou neyr here
zoure wordis. ze goyge
forp fro pat hous or cite
surtyt albey pe dust fro
zoure feet. trenly i seie
to zou. it schal be more
suffrable to pe lond of
men of sodom. A gomoz.
in pe day of ingement.
pane to pat cite. lo i se
de zou as schep in pe
mydel of wolues. pfore
be ze war or wys bfore.
as serpentis. A symple
as downes. forsope be ze
war of men. for pei schu
len take zou in consoles.
A pei schulen hie ze zou
in peir synagogis. and

to presidentes or meires.
A to kyngis & schulen
be led for me: in to witnes
fynge to hem & hepe me/
but whāne ye schulen
take you: nyl ze penke hou
or what pynge ze speken/
forsope it schal be zonen.
to you in pat hour: what
ze schulen speke/ for it be
not ze pat speken: but pe
spirit of zoure fadir: pat
spekyn in you/ sopeh ye
broper schal take ye bro
per in to dep: A pe fadir
pe sone/ & pe sonys schult
pe fadrs finere hem bi dep/
and ze schulen be in hate
to alle men: for my name
forsope he pat schal drowel
le stille in to pe ende: vis
schal be saaf/ sopeh wh
āne ye schulen pursue
you in vis atee: fle ze i
to anoyr/ trenly I seie
to you: ze schulen not
ende pes atees of israel:
tal pat mannys sone to
me/ pe discipule is not
aboue ye. maistr: ne
pe seruant aboue his

lord/ it is ynou to pe
discipule: pat he be as his
maistr: A to ye fnaunt
as his lord/ if ye han
cceptid ye hofebonde mā.
or ye fader of meynce.
besselub: hou myche mo
re his hous holt meynce/
perfore drede ze not he/
for no ping is couled or
hid: pat schal not be
schelbid/ & no pynge is
pynny: pat schal not
be wylt/ pat pynge pat
I seie to you in derknels:
his: seie ze in pe lycht/ &
preche ze upon housis:
pat pynge pat ze here
in ere/ & nyl ze drede he
pat sleen ye body: tren
ly yei molun not sle pe
soule/ but raper drede
ze hym pat may lese
soule & body in to helle/
wherei they spawen
hen not sold for an hal
penny: A oon of he schal
not falle on pe erpe wyl
outen zoure fadir/ forso
alle ye heeris of zoure
hed: ben nou bred/ pfore

nylze drede. ze ben better
 pan many sparlinges fore
 eny man pat schal knou
 leche me bifore men. & I
 schal knou leche hy bifore
 my fadir pat is i heve
 nes. Sopehy he pat schal
 denye me bifore me. & I
 schal denye hy bifore my
 fadir pat is in hevenes.
 ¶ Al ze deme pat I came
 to sende pees in to erpe. I am
 not to sende pees in to er
 pe. But swerd. Sopehy I
 cam to departe a man aze
 n9 his fadir & ye dougter
 azen9 her modir. & ye sonys
 wyf azen9 her hofebondis
 modir. & ye enemyes of
 a man. ben his homely me
 ne. he pat louey fadir. or
 modir more pan me. is
 not worpi of me. & he pat
 louey sone. or dougter on
 me. is not worpi of me.
 & he pat taky not his
 crosse. & suey me. is not
 worpi of me. he pat fyndy
 his soule. pat is tempal
 lif. for me. schal lese it. &
 he pat lesy his soule. f

is hyf. for me. schal fynde
 it. he pat resseyney you.
 resceyney me. & he pat res
 seyney me. resceyney hy
 pat sente me. he pat rescey
 uey a pphete in pe name
 of a pphete. schal take pe
 mede of a pphete. & he pat
 resseyney a iust man. in
 pe name of a iust man. schal
 take pe mede of a iust
 man. & who eny zynney
 drynke to oon of pese lyste
 a cuppe of cold wat. only
 in pe name of a duple.
 trenly I swe to you. he schal
 not lese his mede. ¶
 And it is don whane
 the hadde endid.
 ¶ he comandyng to
 his trewe discipyls. & pass
 de fro penn9. for to pche.
 & teche in pe citres of he
 fforsope whane Ioon in
 bondis had herde peller
 kis of crist. he sendyng
 treyne of his discipyls.
 sende to hym. art pon he
 pat art to come. or we
 abiden anoyr. & the
 answeryng. sende to he

719
C

ze gomme telle azen to joon
po pingsis pat ze han herd
A seen/ blynde men seen/ro
ed men wandren mesels
ben made cleue deef me hee
reni deed men risen azen po
re men ben taken to pchm
ze of ve gospel or ben made
kepers of ve gospel/ A he
is blyssid/ pat schal not be
standd in me/ sopehly
hem goynge away/ the by
gan for to seie of joon to
ve cūpanyes/ what yung
wenten ze oute for to see
in disert/ wher a reed
wallbyd wy wynd/ But
what yng wente/ out
for to see/ wher a mā
clond wy softe pingsis/
lo pei pat ben clond wy
softe pingsis/ ben housis
of kyngis/ but what yng
wenten ze out for to seen/
wher a pphete/ 3 he
seie to zou/ A more pāne
a pphete/ for pis is he of
whom it is writū/ lo y
sende myn aūgel bfore
yi face/ pat schal make
redy pūwey bfore pee/

treuly 7 seie to zou per
ros noon more pāne joon
baptist among children
of wymen/ forsope he p
is lesse in pe kyndom of
heuenes/ is more pan he
sopehly fro ve dāyes of ion
baptist til now/ ve kyndom
of heuenes suffry stren
spe or violence/ A violent
men rānysthen it/ for alle
pphetis/ A ve hanve alion
baptist appheneden/ 7 if
ze wolen resseyne/ he is he
ly pat is to come/ he pat
haveris of herynge here
he/ but to whom schal
seffe pis senatiom liche
it is liche to children sit
tyng in chepyng/ ve in
liche cryng to her pris
sepen/ we han sungen to
zou/ A ze han not dānsid/
we han moyned to zou/
A ze han not weildid/ oo
pehly joon cam nep etige
ne drynkynge/ A ve seie
he hav a denel/ ve sone
of man cam etyng and
drynkynge/ A pei seien/
lo a man denourer or glot.

drynkere of wyne & frend
 of prynces & synful men
 & wisdom is iustified of her
 sones / panne the bigan
 for to seie reprove to a
 trees in whiche ful many
 vntes of hym ben don
 for pei didn not penaunce
 wo to pee corrazym woo
 to pee bethsaida / for yf
 ye vntes pat ben don in
 zion haden ben don in ture
 & sidon / suty me pei had
 den don penaunce i haire
 & asch / nevels i seye it
 schal be softer or lesse py
 ne to ture and sidon pan
 to zion in pe day of dome
 & pon capharnaum the
 per til in to heuene you
 schalt be rerid up / you
 schalt go doun in to helle
 for if ye vntes pat ben
 don in pee haden be don
 in sadm / pei schulte han
 dwelld til vn to this day
 nevels i seie to you for
 to pe lond of sodome it
 schal be softere or lesse
 peyne in pe day of dome
 pane to pee / In yllke

tyme the answeryng
 seide / I knowleche to pee
 fadir lord of heuene &
 erpe for you hast hidde
 pes myngis fro wise men
 & war or clesgh men &
 hast schewid hem to lital
 men / so fadir / for this
 it was plesynge to fore
 pee / alle myngis ben ta
 ken to me of my fadir &
 no man knowe pe sone
 but pe fadir / neyr ony
 man knowe pe fadir no
 but pe sone and to whom
 pe sone wolde schewe
 alle ze pat traueile
 ben chargid come to me
 & y schal refreynthe or ful
 fille you / take ze my zoc
 upon you & lerne ze of
 me for i am mylde & me
 ke of herte & ze schule
 fynde reste to youre sou
 les / for my zoc is swete
 or soft and my charge
 is lytel & chy

In pat tyme ihu we
 te by cornys on pe
 sabot day / for sope
 his disciphs syngrige

Bigumen to plucke eris
of corn and to ete/ sopeh
pharisees seynge seiden
to hym/ lo y disciples dw
pat vyng pat is not lesul
to hem to do i sabotis/ &
he seide to hem/ wher
ze han not red what da
my dide whane he hun
gride and pat were wy
hym/ hou he entride in
to pe hous of god and ete
lonys of pposioun or put
tyngs fory pe whiche lo
nys was not lesul to hi
to ete ney to hem pat we
ren wy hym no but to
prestris onely/ or wher
ze han not rad i pe lawe
for in sabotis p^{ro}u in pe
temple defoulen pe sabo
tis/ & pei ben wy outen
greet hymne/ sopeh i
sepe to you for he is more
pauwe ve temple/ forsope
if ze wisten what it is
i wole alse/ & not sac^{ri}fice
ze schulden neuere hen
condempned innocens/
treuly maun⁹ sone is
lawd of pe sabot/ & whane

he passide penn⁹/ he cam
in to pe synagoge of he
also aman hanynge a dy
bond/ and pei ayde hy
seynge/ if it be lesul
to hele in pe sabot/ pat
pei schulden accuse hym/
sopeh he seide to hem/
whe schal be a ma of ion
pat hap o nhepe/ & if it
schal falle don in to a dy
che in pe sabotis/ wher
he schal not holde a list
up/ hou myche more is
aman betur pane a nhe
pe/ & so it is lesul to do
good in pe sabot/ pauwe
he seide to pe man/ stre
che fory ym bond/ and he
strenge fory and it is res
turd to helpe as ye to/
forsope pharisees songe
out made a counseil agen/
hy/ hou pei schulden lese
hym/ sopeh ihe w^{ro}te yn
ge/ wente alwey penn⁹/
& many fuden hym/ &
he helde hem alle/ & he
comandide to hem pat
pei schulden not maken
hym oppn or knowe pat

pat þyng schulde be fulfilled
lid pat was seide by Ihaue þe
pþete seynge/ so my cho
sen child whom I haue cho
sen/ my derlyng i whom
it hay wel plesid to my
soules/ I schal putte my spi
rit on hym/ & he schal telle
to me to heven men/ he schal
not stryue ne crye/ ne
yit ony man schal heere
his voyce in stretis/ he schal
not bryke to gader a schake
reed/ and he schal not quic
che synokynge flay til pat
he cast out dome to wito
rye & heven men schule
hope in his name/ þanne
a blynde man & dounble
hauynge a deuyl/ was of
fryd up to hym/ & he hel
de hym/ So pat he spak
& say/ & alle aþanys wo
driden & seiden/ wher þis
be þe sone of damp/ but
þe pharisees herynge
seiden/ he þis castip not
out fendis/ no but in bel
schub pryncce of fendis/
sovelly ihu witynge her
venus/ seide to hem/ eche

kyndom departid azen/
hym self/ schal be desolat
or distonfortid/ & eche citee
or hous departid azen/ hi
self/ schal not stonde/ and
if sathanas castip oute
sathanas/ he is departid
azen/ hy self/ perfore hou
schal his kyndom stonde/
& if I in belschub caste
out deuyls in whom
whos myzt/ zoure sonys
casten out/ perfore þey
schulen be zoure domys
men/ forsoþe if I in þe
spirit of god/ caste out fen
dis/ perfore þe kyndom
of god is comen to you
or among you/ eyn þou
may ony man entre in to
þe hous of a strong man/
& take alþey his vessels/
no but first he schal byn
de þe strong man/ & þan
he schal raunsthe his hous/
he pat is not wip me/
is azen me/ and he pat
gaderip not to gader ilap
me/ naterip aþode/ þ
fore y seie to you/ al þyne
& blassemye schal be for

zyuen to men. But pe spirit
of blasphemye schal not be
forgeuen/ and who eide schal
sey a word azen9 manyn9 so
ne. it schal be forgeue to hy
forsove he pat schal seie a wo
rd azen9 pe holy gost. it schal
not be forgeuen to hym ne9
in no world ne in pe toper/
euer make ze pe tre good. &
his fruyt good. euer make
ze pe tre yuel & his fruyt
yuel/ forsove a tre is knowe
of pe fruyt/ ze genaroun of
eddis. hou molten ze speke
good yngis. when ze ben I
uel. & dopeh pe mony spe
ke of pe grete plente of
pe herte/ a good man bryn
gip fory good yngis of
good tresour/ & an yuel ma
bryngey fory yuel yngis.
of yuel tresour/ forsove I
Owe to you/ for why of euy
pdril word pat me spoken.
yei schulen zelle resoun
per of in pe day of dome/ for
of vi wordis pou schalt be
iustified. & of vi wordis p
schalt be dampned/ patme
sume of pe scribis and

pharisees. an swereth to hy
seynge/ maist we wolen
see a tokene of pee/ ye wshi
ch an swerynge. seip to he
an yuel generacoun & a
voutrer. seip a tokene/ &
a tokene schal not be zoue
to it. no but pe tokene of
ionas ye aphte/ for as io
nas was in pe wombe of
a wshal pre dayes & pe nyz
tis. so manyn9 sone schal
be in pe herte of pe erp.
pre dayes & pre nyztis/ me
of ny nyue schulen rise i
dome wip vis genaroun and
schulen condempne it. he
yei diten penance in pe
pechynge of ionas/ ye
queen of pe souy schal
rise in dome wip vis ge
neracoun & schal cōtemp
ne it. for sthe cam fro pe
endis of pe erpe for to he
re pe wisdom of salomon/
and lo here is moze paine
salomon/ forsove wshane
an onclene spirit schal
go out fro amān. he goy
by depe places rekynge
reste & he findy not/ patme

And lo he pmo9
pen ionas

he seyn þat shal turne agen
in to my soun. fro which
I cam out. & he comynge syn
dryp it vnde clenfid wry bel
mes. and made fatre/ pāne
he goy. & taky seue of spi
ritis wry hym wose pāne
hym self. & pei entrynge
yn. dwellen þe. & pe laste
pynnis of pat man. ben
made wose pāne pe former.
so it shal be. & to pis wor
st generacion. at hy spe
kyng to pe cūpanyes of
puple. lo his modir & his
bryden stoden wry out forp
sedhyng for to speke to hi
sovelly. Gūman seide to hi
loo pi modir & pi bryden
stonde wry out forp sedh
ge pec. & he answerige
to pe man seynge to hi
seyn. who is my modir.
& who ben my bryden.
& he holdynge forp his
hond in to his distyphs.
seide. lo my modir & my
bryden. treuly who eile
dory pe wille of my fadir
pat is in heuene. he is
my biopir. syster & modir

In pat day he
goynge out of pe hous.
sat bishpis pe seel. & many
cūpanyes of puple ben
sanderid to hym. so pat he
stynge up in to a boot. sat
& al pe cūpanye stode in pe
brynke. & he spak to hem ma
ny pynnis in pablis seyn
ge. lo he pat souyn goy out
to salbe his seed. & pe wyle
he solw. sū felden bishpis
pe wep. & briddis of pe er
cāmen. & eten hem. sovelly
over seedis felden in to sto
my plāge. where pe had
not myche erpe. & anoon
pei ben spryngen up. for
pei hadden not depesse of
erpe. sovelly pe sūne sp
rūge up. pei shaliden
or brenten for hete. & for
pei hadden not rote. pe
drieden up. forsope over
seedis felden among pe
mo. & pe peyns were
up & strangiden he. but
over seedis feld in to
good lond. & zāne fruyt.
sū an hundred fold. & of
oxen fold. an of prun fold.

he pat hap eris of herise
 here he/ & distipis nūm
 ze to. seiden to hy/ whi spe
 list you in pablis to hem/
 pe which answerynge seip
 to hem/ for to you it is zoned
 for to enolbe. pe mysterie
 or priete of pe kyndom
 of heuenes. but it is not zo
 uen to hem/ for it schal
 be zoned to hy pat hap.
 a he schal hane plente/
 treuhy who pat hap not.
 pat pyng pat he is seen
 to hane schal be take allwey
 fro hym/ perfore I speke
 to hem in pablis/ for pei
 seynge seen not. & pei he
 ryng here not. nesh con
 dnrstonen pat pe aphe
 ac of I sane seynge be ful
 fillid in hem/ whi heri
 ze ze schulen here. & ze
 schulen not vnderston
 de/ & ze seynge schule see.
 & ze schulen not see/ for
 pe hert of pis puple is
 enfand. & pei herce gre
 noussly whi eeris and.
 pei han closid her yen.
 pat sume tyme pei seen
 whi yen. & whi eris here.

& vnderstonen I her te.
 & pei lien to zider tynge.
 & I heele hem/ for sope.
 zoure yen pat seen ben
 blessid. & zoure eris pat
 heeren/ for sope I seie tru
 ve to you. for many aphe
 tis & iuste men couentide
 to see po pyngis pat ze see.
 & pei salbe not/ & to here
 po pyngis pat ze heren.
 and pei herden not. yf
 here ze pe pable of pe so
 wyng man/ esche y herip
 pe word of reitwme & vnder
 stondip not. pe yuel spi
 rit comep & ransysshyp pat
 pat is solven in his herte.
 vis is pat solven bifidis pe
 weyl. Sopenly he pat is so
 wen on pe floon. pis it
 is pat herip pe word of
 god. and anoon whi ioye
 takip it/ for sope he pat
 hap not root in hi silf.
 but is tempal. pat is it
 lastip not but a litil tyme.
 for sope tbulacoon and p
 secucoon made for pe word.
 anoon he is schamdrid/
 but he pat is solven in
 porys. is pis pat herip

417^o

ve word. & ve bisnesse of vs
 world. & ve falsnesse of vs
 cheshe. & ranghy ve word.
 & it is made wyf oute fruyt
 but he pat is solven i good
 lond. is vs pat herip ve
 word. & condur stondip. &
 bryngip fory fruyt. & so
 vely sū makip an hundrid
 fold. trenly anof. Cxty
 fold. forsope anof prut
 ty fold. (An opir pable
 ihu put fory to hem sei
 ynge. ve kyndom of he
 uenes is made liche to an^{gode}
 pat selb. seed in his feelde/
 but whanne me slepten.
 his enemy cam & selbe
 aboue dernel or cockil in
 ve mydil of whete. & wen
 te alwey. Sopehy whanne
 ve erbe had grolbid &
 made fruyt. vane pe
 dernel or cockil apperide/
 forsope ve seruantes of
 ve hofelonde man comy
 se myz. senden to hym/
 lord wher you haft not
 solven good seed in vy
 feelde. wher of vane hay
 it cockil. and he seip to
 hem/ ve man enemy.

hay don vs pyngt trenly
 ve seruantes senden to hy
 wolt you we go. & gederen
 hem. & he say. uay. leste
 pauenture. ze gaderyng
 dernel or cockil. drawe up
 by ve rote to gader wyf he
 & ve whete. suffre ze hem
 bope were til to ripe corn.
 & in tyme of ripe corn. I shal
 seye to reyeris. firste gader
 ze to gader dernel or cockil
 & byndip hem to gader in
 knyafis or smale bindels.
 for to be brent. but gader
 ze whete in to my berne/
 Anof pable. ihu put fory
 to hem seiynge. ve kyndom
 of heuenes is like to a corn
 of seneuey. ve abich a mā
 takynge sell in his feld.
 ve which trenly is leest of
 alle seedis. but whan it
 hay weyen. it is most of
 alle wortis. & is maad a
 tre. so pat briddis of ve
 er cūnen & dwellen i bou
 es or bannichis of it. (Ano
 per pable. ihu spar to he
 ve kyndom of heuenes is
 like to sourdow. ve which
 taken a woman hid in ve

mesuris of meel/ til it were
al sound and bid/ iſe ſpac alle
pes pingis in pablis to pe
cūpanyes of triple. & he ſ
pat uot to hem wip outhen
pablis. pat it ſchulde be ful
fiſh pat vrys pat is ſet
by pe apſete ſeynge/ i ſhal
oppyn my mony i pablis. /
i ſhal bolke outhen or telle
outhen his pingis fro mak-
ſe of ve world/ pāne pe cū-
panyes leſte. he cam in to
an hous. / & his diſcyples.
camen nyx to hy ſeynge/
expolne to us pe pabbe
of derneſſe or coctis of pe
feeld/ pe which anſwer
ſe ſeip/ he pat ſoldy go
de ſeed. is mān & ſone/ ſo
peſy pe feeld is pe world/
but pe good ſeed. pes ben
ſonys of pe kyndom/ der-
neſſe or coctis forſope pes
ben yuel ſonys/ but pe
enemy pat ſoldy hem
is pe fend/ but pe ripe
corn. is pe endyng of pe
world/ ſopely pe repere-
ben anſels/ verfore as
derneſſe ben gaterid toge-
dre and brent in fier. ſo
it ſhal be in pe endyng

of pe world/ mān & ſone ſhal
ſende his anſels. & pe ſhu-
len ſeder of his reſtme alle. & ſerigne
ſtandis & men pat don
wickedneſſe/ & pe ſchulen
ſende hem in to pe chyme-
ney of fier/ yere ſhal be
abepynge & betynge to gi-
der of teep/ pāne inſte men
ſchulen ſchyn as pe ſime.
in pe reſtme of her ſadur/
he pat hap eris of herynge
here he. // pe kyndom of
heuenes is like to treſoure
hid in a feeld/ pe which ama-
pat ſyndy hidy/ & for ioy
of it he ſop & ſilky alle pi-
gis pat he hap. & hey pe
ille feeld. // & ſonys pe
kyndom of heuenes is li-
ke to aman inarchant. ſe
chynge good margaritid/
ſopely o ſaouſe margari-
te founden. he wente &
ſold alle pingis & bougte ^{he had}
it. // & ſte pe kyndom of he-
uenes is like to a nette ſent
in to pe ſee & of alle kyn-
de of fiſhis ſederynge/
pe which whanne it was
fulfilled. men ledynge
out and ſitynge biſidis
pe brynke. cheſiden pe good

in to her vessels. But þei
senten oute þe yuel/ so it
shal be in þe endyng of
þe world/ angels schulen
gon out/ & schulen departe
yuel men/ fro þe myddel
of iust men/ & þei schule
sende hem in to þe chymne
ney of fier/ þe schal be we
pyng & betyng to gader
of trep/ han þe condur
stonden alle þese yngis
þei seien to hym/ 3he/ he
seip to hem/ þerfore euery
wyter tauht in þe kyn
dom of heuenes/ is like
to an hofebonde man/ þat
bryngyng forþ of his tre
sour/ nelle yngis and
oold. // And it is don wiss
ne ihe hadde endid þese
pablis/ he passide fro þe
nyn/ & he comyng in to
his cuntre/ tauhte hem
in her synagogis/ so þat
þei wondriden & seiden/
wher of to hym þis
wisdom & vertues/ wh
euer is not þis þe sone
of a cnyth & carpenter/
wher his moder be not
seide marie & his brepe
ren James & ioseph/ and

hymourit iudas/ & his þis
tris/ wher þei alle ben
not at us. // þerfore wher
of to hym alle þese ym
gis/ & so þei weren stant
drid in hym/ forsoþer
seide to hem/ & pphete
is not wyte oute woorthy
no hit in his olde cum
tre & in his olde hous/
& he dide not þe many
vertues/ for þe conblyue
of hym/ c. xiii.

In þat tyme eronde
tetrarcha. þat is þe
ce of þe fourþe pt.
herde þe fame of ihu
& seide to his children/ þis
is iohn baptist/ for he hay
risen fro deed & þerfore
twes woorthen in hym/ Gen.
forsoþer eronde helden
& boond hym & putte hi
in to prison for erodias
þe wyf of his broþer/
for ion seide to hym/ it
is not leful to þee for
to hane hir/ & he wylly
ge to sle hym. dred þe
puple/ for þei hadden hy
as a pphete/ forsoþer in
þe day of erondias þat þe
re dnyter of erodias.

lepte in pe myddil and
 pleside to eronde/ W her
 fize. Wip an oop he biht
 for to zyne to hir what
 eide pyng nhe had axide
 of hym/ and nhe bifore
 monestid or Warwyd of
 hir modir. seip zyne pou
 to me hidir pe heed of ion
 baptist in a disthe/ and pe
 byng was counful for pe
 oop. a for hem pat seten
 to guidre at pe mete. he
 comauidid to be zouen/ a
 he sente a bihedid 1000 in
 pe pldom/ a his hed is bro
 ugt to in a disse. a it is zo
 uen to pe Wenche. a nhe
 bare it to hir modir/ a
 his discipulis comynge
 to. token his body a bi
 rieden it/ a pei comynge
 token to ihu/ pe which
 pyng whane ihe hadde
 herd. he wente fro yeng
 in to a boot in to disert
 place bihidis/ a whanne
 pe cupanyes of puple
 haden herd. pei folun
 den hym/ a on pe feet
 fro citees/ a ihe goynge
 out saw a greet multi
 tude of puple a hadde

reupe on hem. a he heft
 de pe seeke men of hem/
 sopeky pe euening made.
 his discipulis camen nyz
 to hym seynge/ pe pla
 ce is desert. a pe houre
 hap nolv passid/ leue pou
 pe cupanyes of puple.
 pat pei goynge i to cas
 tles. then metis to hem/
 forsope ihe sente to he/
 pei han not nede to go/
 zyne ze to hem for to
 ete/ pei answeriden/ we
 han not here nobut fy
 ue loyys a tibo finhis/
 pe which seip to hem/
 brynge hem hidir to me/
 a whanne he hade com
 amiddre pe cupanye. for
 to kute to mete on hay.
 fyne lones a tibo finhis
 taken. he biholdynge in
 in to hemene. bleside a
 brak a zaf to his discipulis.
 sopeky pe discipulis zane
 to pe cupanyes/ a alle
 eten a weren fullfild/
 a pei token pe relifs of
 broken gobetis tibelue
 coffyns ful/ forsope pe
 nombre of men etynge.
 was fyne poufande of

e

men outaken Wynnen a li
 til children / and anoon iſt
 couſelthe or comaunde
 pe diſciplis for to go up in
 to a bot: a go biſore hy on
 pe ſee: til pat he leſte pe
 apanyes / a pe apanyes
 leſte: he ſted up in to an
 hil aloon for to preie / so
 vely pe euening maad:
 he was yere aloon / sope
 ly pe boot in pe myddil ſee
 was yrollen wip walkis
 forſope pe Wynd was con
 trarie / but in pe four pe
 walkyng of pe nyzt: he
 cam to hem walkyng a
 lone pe ſee / a pei ſeyng
 hym walkyng abone pe
 ſee: Iweren diſturblid ſay
 myge for it w a fantum
 for drede pei crieden: and
 anon iſt opac to hem ſei
 yng: haue ze truſt / I am
 nyſt ze drede / Sopeh petre
 anſweryng ſeide / lord
 ȝif pon art: comaunde
 me to come to pec upon
 pe wattris / a he ſeyp come
 pon / a petre goyng dwi
 fro pe boot: walkid on
 pe wattris for to come to
 ihu: treuſh he ſeyng a

ſtrong Wynd: Was a ſerch
 a whame he bigan for
 to be drenchid: he crie
 ſeyng: lord make me ſaf
 a anoon iſt holdyng
 for pe hond: camte hy
 a ſeyp to hym / you of lal
 ſeyp wſh haſt you dwind
 a whame he had ſted up
 in to pe boot: pe Wynd as
 ſide / Sopeh pei pat were
 in pe boot: came a wor
 ſchiden hym ſeyng
 overly pon art godis ſo
 ne / a whame he had ſepal
 ſide ouer pe ſee: pei came
 in to pe lond of geneſar
 a whame men of pat pla
 ce haden knolwen hym:
 pei ſenten in to al pat ci
 tre: a pei offiden to hym
 alle hanynge ynel a pei
 preiden hym pat pei ſch
 ulden touche epr pe ſeine
 of pe clopmge of hym /
 and wſho enere touchid
 ben made ſaf: c. xv

Ihame ſcribis a fa
 riſees camen nyzt
 to hym fro Jeruſa
 lem: ſeyng: wſh pi diſci
 plis ouerpaſſen a breſt
 pe tradiaonis or ſtatutis

of elter men / for þei was
 hen not hondis. Whanne
 þei eten bred / soþely he an
 swer ynge seip to hem / a
 wshi a ze breken þe man
 dement of god for zoure
 tradinoun / for wshi god
 seide / honoure þi fadir
 a þi modir a he put cur
 sy fadir or modir: die he
 by dep / but ze seien / wsho en
 schal seie to fadir or modir.
 What eile zifte is of me: it
 schal profite to þee / a he hap
 not wasthyde his fadir or
 modir: a ze han made þe
 maundement of god void
 or ydil for zoure tradinoun /
 hypocritis I saye þe yllhere
 pfeaed wel of zou seipnge /
 þis puple honourey me
 wshippis: forsope her her
 te is for fro me / treuly
 þei wasthyden me wshy
 onte cause: techynge þe
 doctryns a maundementis
 of men / a þe aipayes of
 puple clepid to gide. e. o
 hym: he seide to hem / he
 re ze a wnderstonde / it
 pat pyng pat entrip in
 to þe mouy defouly amā
 but pat pyng pat comey

for fro þe mouy defouly
 amā / þane his disciples
 comynge nyz seiden to hy /
 wost þou pat þis word herd
 pharisees ben stamndrid /
 a he answer ynge seip / eily
 plamtynge þe wshich my
 fadir of heuene hap not
 plamnd: schal be dailben
 up by þe rote / suffice ze he
 þei ben blynd and leters
 of blynd men / soþely 3if
 a blynde man 3yue ledyn
 ge to a blynd man: bope
 fallen dowlm in to þe diche /
 forsope petre answer yge
 seip to hym / expolue to
 us þis pable / and he sei
 de / 3it and ze ben wry ou
 ten wnderstondynge /
 wsher ze wnderstondeu
 not pat al pyng pat en
 trip in to þe mouy: 3on
 in to þe wombe and is sent
 out in goynge alvey / but
 po pyngis pat come fory
 fro þe mouy: 3on out of
 þe herte a po pyngis de
 foulm amā / for of þe her
 te 3on out: yuel pouztis
 mansleyngeis anoutries
 fornycauonis pestis fals
 witnensis. blaspemyes þes

yngis it ben pat desoulen
 aman/ sopeh for to ete wy
 hondis wylastum. desou
 ly not aman/ and ihe gon
 out fro pennig. Wente in to
 pe parties of tyre & sidon/
 & lo a woman of canane go
 out of pe wostis. cried sei
 ynge to hym/ lord pe sone
 of dany. Hine my on me/
 my dnyr is puel tuelde
 of a deuel/ pe which auwe
 ride not to hir a word & his
 discipulis comynge to. prei
 deu hom seynge/ leue y/
 hir. for she crye after
 us/ forsope he answerde
 seip/ I am not sent no but
 to pe shepe of pe hous
 of israel pat pynchen/
 but she cam. & worsthipi
 de hym seynge/ lord help
 me/ pe which answery
 ge seip/ it is not good for
 to take pe bred of sonys.
 & sende to honndis/ & she
 seide/ zhe lord/ for why
 & pe lital whelchis eten
 of pe crams. pat falle
 dou fro pe boord of her
 lordis/ yanne ihe answe
 ryng seip to hir/ so pou
 woman. y seip is greet

be it dw to pee as y wold
 a hir dnyr was helde
 fro pat honr. // And wha
 ne ihe hadde passide peynge.
 he cam bishdis pe see of ga
 lile/ and he stynge in to.
 an hil. sat he/ & many m
 panyes camen wy to hym
 haunng wy hem dw
 men & crok. felle & dnd
 & many ower. & pe casti
 den hem down at his feet/
 & he helde hem. so pat pe
 apanyes wondren so
 ynge. donbe men spok
 & crokid goynge blynde
 men seynge/ & pe mag
 isieden god of israel/
 Sopheh ihe his discipulis
 saderid to gwer seide/ I ha
 ne reipe of pe apanye
 of puple. for nold pe yd
 day pei dwellen stille wy
 me & pei han not yng
 which pei shulen ete/
 & y wole not leue he fast
 ynge. lest pei fauent
 pe wey/ & pe discipulis se
 en to hym/ perfore wher
 of so many sonys to us
 in desert. pat we fulfil
 le so grete a apanye of
 puple/ and ihe seip to.

hem/ hou many lounys han
ze / & pe seiden senene
a felwe finale fusthis / & he
comaundide to pe cūpaue
pat pei schulden sitte to
pe mete or pe erpe / & he
takynge seiue lounys &
fusthis & dopage paufyn
his beak & zaf to his disci
pulis / & discipulis zane to
pe puple / & alle eten &
weren fullfillid / & pei to
fen pat pat was oner of
relifs. Senene lepis ful
forsope pei pat eten we
ren foure thousand of me
n / & wyten litil children
& wyemen / and pe cūpa
ue of pepul last. he
sted up in to a boot. &
cam in to pe coostis of
magedan. xli.

And farisees & sa
duces temptynge
camen nyz to hy.
A preiden hym for to st
hellwe to hem a tokene fro
henene / & he answerge
seip to hem / pe enemyge
made ze seuen it schal
be cleer for pe henene
is like to reed / & pe mozte
to day tempest / for henē

schynen hem & kallful
More ze han knowe to de
me wifely pe fate of he
nene. But ze moln not
write pe tokenes of tymen /
pe ynel generacion and
mourtrir. sechp a tokene.
A a tokene schal not be
zonen to it no but pe to
kene of sonas pe pphete
& hem forsaken. he wen
te alwey / And Whanne
his discipulis camē oner
pe see. pei forzaten for
to take lounys / pe which
seide to hem / bihold ze
& bey war. of pe sourd
wz of farisees & saduces
& pei pouzten amonge
hem seipnge / for we han
not taken lounys / forsope
the witynge. Seide to he /
What penken ze among
zon of litil fery. for ze
han not lounys. ze ze on
dur stonden not neyr
han mynde of fyne lounys
in to fyne thousand of
men. & hou many cof
fyns ze token / trensh ne
yr of omenes lounys in
to foure thousand of me
and hou many lepis ze

taken. Whi condurston den
 ze not for I seide not to you
 of bred. Be ze war of sounre
 touz of farisees & of sadu
 ceis. panne pei condursto
 den pat he seide not to hem
 to be war of sounre of
 louys. But of pe techynge
 of farisees & saducees. So
 pely the cam in to pe pnes
 of cesarie of philip & axid
 his discipulis seynge. who
 seien men to be many? so
 ne? & pei seiden. some ion
 baptist oyr forsope helpe.
 But of ieremye or oon of
 pe pphetis. the seip to hem.
 sopeh whom seien ze me
 to be? Symount petre an
 swerynge. seide. you art
 crist pe sone of god hyng
 ge. forsope the answeru
 ge. seide to hym. blessed
 art you Symount bariona
 pat is sone of ahuier. for
 fleisch & blood thewede
 not to pee. But my fadir
 pat is in heuenes. and y
 saie to pee for you art
 petre. & upon pis ston
 I schal bilde my church.
 & pe zatus of helle schule
 not han myzt strengre

axen? it & to pee I schal
 zyne pe keyes of pe kyn
 dom of heuenes. & what
 euere you schalt bynde
 upon erpe. schal be bou
 den & in heuenes. & what
 else you schalt onbynde
 upon erpe. schal be on
 bounden & in heuenes.
 panne he comamndide to
 his discipulis pat pei schal
 den sey to no man pat
 he was crist. fro pat ty
 me the bigan for to the
 we to his discipulis. pat
 it bihouey hym to go to
 Ierusalem. & suffre many
 pynnis. of pe eldis. & stri
 kis & pnes of prestis &
 be slayn. and ye pridde
 day rise up azen. & petre
 takynge hym to. bigan
 for to blame hym seynge.
 fer be it fro pee lord. pis
 vping schal not be to pee.
 pe which turnyd. seide
 to petre. Sathanas. go
 astir me. you art ston
 dre to me. for you sauert
 not or condurstonist not
 vo pynnis pat ben of
 god. But vo pynnis pat
 ben of men. panne

ihu seide to his discipulis/ if
 ony man wole come aftir
 me- denye he hym self- &
 take his crosse & sue me/ for
 he wat wole make his soule
 saaf- pat is his lyf- schal
 lese it/ forsope he wat schal
 lese his soule pat is his
 lyf for me- schal fynde it/
 sovely what aftir it to a
 man- if he wylle al pe
 world- treuly ho suffre py
 ryng of his soule- or what
 chaungynge schal a man
 zyne for his soule/ for ma
 ny sone is to come in glorie
 of his fadir wip his an
 gelis- & pame he schal
 zelte to eury man aftir his
 werkis/ treuly y seie to you
 per ben sūme of men so
 dyng here- pe whiche
 schulen not taste dey- tyl
 pei seen manny sone co
 mynge in his kyngdom-
 And aftir fyve dayes-
 he toke petre and
 James & ion hyo
 bropr- & ledde hem asdis
 m to an hy hil & was tūf
 figurid or turnyd in to an
 opir licnesse byfore hem/

and his face shone as pe
 sūne- forsope his cloyne
 weren maad white as
 snoll- & lo moyses & heli
 appereden to hem- spekyng
 se wip hym/ sovely petre
 answerynge seide to ihu/
 lord it is good us to be here/
 if you wolt- make we
 here pre tabernacles to
 pee oon to moyses oon &
 oon to heli- if hym spe
 kyng- lo a lyt cloude-
 schadewide hem- & lo a voyc
 of pe cloude seynge/ is
 is my der wory sone- I wyl
 I haue wel plesid to me-
 here ze hym/ & pe discipulis
 herynge- follen dū in to
 her faas- & dreden greth/
 & he cam wip & touchide
 hem- & seide to hem/ rise
 up- wyl ze drede/ forsope
 pei rissynge up her nen
 sawen no man no but he
 aloon/ & hem comynge
 dū fro pe mounteyne
 he comandide he seynge/
 sey ze to no man pe vision-
 til pat manny sone ryse
 agen fro ded/ and his dis
 ciplis axten hy seynge/

*What yf fore seyn stabis
 yat it bishoney heli first
 come/ & he answerynge
 seip to hem/ forsope heli
 is to come and he schal
 restore alle yngis/ treuhy
 I sey to you yat heli is now
 comen & pei knellen hy
 not. but pei diden in hy
 what eide yngis pei wol
 den/ so & manny sone is
 to suffre of hem/ pame
 disciplis vnderstoden.
 yat of ioun baptist he had
 de. seide to hem/ And wh
 anne he cam to pe aipa
 npe of purple. annan cam
 to hym foldid on knees
 bifore hym seynge/ lord
 haue my on my sone for
 he is ananik & suffrey
 puel for why ofte tymes
 he fallit in to pe fier
 & ofte tymes in to water/
 & I affide hym to y disci
 plis & pei myzten not
 hele hym/ ihe answery
 ge seip/ & you geslacion
 onbyleful. & out of pe
 fery a weyward. hon
 longe schal y be odyr you.
 brynge ye hym hidur to

me/ & ihe blamyte hym
 and ye deuyl wente out
 fro hym/ and ye childe
 is helide fro pat hour/
 pame disciplis camen
 ny to ihe pryuyly/ &
 seiden to hym/ why myzte
 not we chisten hym out/
 ihe seip to hem/ for youre
 onbylene/ treuhy I sey to
 you. yf ye schulen haue
 fery. as a corne of sene
 ney. ye schulen sen to y
 hil. passe you hem/ & it
 schal passe/ & no yng st
 hal be nyossible to you/
 forsope yis kynde is not
 cast out. no but by prey
 nge & fastynges/ treuhy
 hem brynge to sidere
 in galilee. ihe seide to
 hem/ manny sone is to
 be bitrayed in to pe hon
 dis of men & pei schule
 sle hym. & in ye pryd
 day he schal rise agen/ &
 pei ben maad hil sey/ and
 Whanne he cam to capfar
 nat. pei yat toke tribut
 camen to petre & seiden
 to hym/ youre maister
 payep not tribute/ & he

holb longe schal y suffice you.

seip/ zhe/ a whanne he had
 dw entride in to an hous.
 ihe cam bifoze hym seip
 se/ symonit. What semer
 to pee/ of whiche taken
 ye kyngis of erpe tribute
 or rente/ of her owne sonys.
 epir of alienes. or of men
 sones. the seide of oþ me
 no sones. ihe seide to hy/
 verfore sonys ben free/
 folsore pat we stamnde
 not hem. go you to pe
 see & sende an hoke. & take
 wilke fische pat firste co
 mey up. and his moup
 openyd. you shalt fynde
 that. pat is a tryne of mo
 ney. you takynge it. yy
 ue to he for me and for
 pee.

A pat hour pe disti
 phis camen nyh to ihe
 seynge/ who gessit
 you is more in ye kyn
 dom of hevenes. / a ihe
 depyng a litil child.
 putte hym in ye myddil
 of hem. & seide. / I seye
 treupe to you. no bit zif
 ze shulen be turnyd &
 maad as litil children.

ze shulen not entre in
 to ye kyngdom of hevenes/
 verfore who ende schal me
 ke hym as his litil child.
 he is more in ye kyngdom
 of hevenes/ & he vat res
 seynge oon fische litil childe
 my name. restreyn me/
 forsoye who ende shal st
 laundre oon of pes sma
 le leest vat bilenen in
 me. it spedip to hym
 pat a mylne stoon of affis
 be hangid in his necke.
 a be drenchid in to ye dep
 nesse of ye see. / woo to
 ye world for stamndre/
 trenk it is neede. pat st
 lamdis come/ nepeles
 woo to wilke man. by who
 a stamnde come/ folsore
 zif ym hond. or yf foot
 stamndre pee. / Eit it of
 a caste abbey fro pee/ it
 is good to pee to entre i
 to hyf felde epir crokid.
 yame hanynge also hon
 dis. or also feet. to be sent
 in to ende lastynge fyer/
 a zif ym ye stamndre
 pee. pulle it out a caste
 abbey fro pee/ it is good

to pee Wm oon ne to entre
in to hys. vaine haupnge
tbo nen to be sent in to pe
fier of helle. See pat ze
dispyse not oon of pes li
tle. trenly I sey to you pat
ye aungels of hem in he
uenes. seen eimore pe fa
te of my fadir pat is in he
nenes. forsope many sone
came for to saue pat pms
pat pishide. What semey
to you zif y weren to su
man an hundred sheep.
a oon of hem shal erre.
Wsher he shal not lene.
nynty. A nyne ipe shal
a shal go for to seche pat.
pat erride. a if it bifalle
pat he fynde it. trenly
I sey to you. for he shal
ioye per on more pane
of nynty a nyne pat er
reden not. so it is not wil
le bifore your fadir pat
is in heuenes. pat oon
of pes lital peristhe. For
sope zif y broper shal
hyme in pee. go you
a reprove hym or snybb.
bawke pee a hym al
one zif he shal here pee.

you hast Wom y brop/
trenly zif he shal not
here pee. take Wm pee
oon or tbo. pat any word
stoude in pe mony of tbo
or pre vntnessis. pat zif
he shal not here hem.
sey you to pe church.
forsope zif he shal not
here pe church. be he
to pee. as an hepen aa
pnplican. I sey to you ten
ly. What eile pms ze
shulen bynde oxpon er
pe. po shulen be bound
ten a in heuenes. a what
eile pms ze shulen by
bynde upon erpe. po shu
len be vnboude. In he
uenes. eft sone y seie to
you. pat zif tbo of you
shulen consente on peer
pe of eily pms. What
euere pei shulen aske
it shal be don to hem.
of my fadir pat is in
heuenes. for Wsher tbo
or pre shulen be zekend
in my name. pere I am
in pe mydil of hem. pa
ne petre comynge nix
to hym. slide. Lord hou

salige don

ofte schal my broþer syne
 in me. & I schal forgyue
 hym. / Weþer to seventy
 mes. / the seip to hym. / I
 sey not to pee til seuene
 sipes. But to seventy sipes
 e. f. seuene sipes / perfore pe kyn
 dom of heuenes is lickened
 to aman þing pat wolke put
 resou. / his his seruauntis / a
 wþaime he bigan for to put
 resou. / oon was offrid to hy.
 pat onyte to hym ten pou
 sande talentis / treuly wþa
 ne he hadde not. / wþer of
 to zelde. / his lord comaundide
 hym to be sold a his wyf
 a sonys. / a alle yngis pat
 he hadde a to be paid / for
 sope pe ilke seruaunt falkyn
 se don. / þide hym seynge /
 hane paaence in me. / a alle
 yngis / I schal zelde to pee /
 sopeþe pe lord of pe serua
 unt haunye mercy. / le
 te hym or suffrid hym
 a foras to hym pe dette /
 treuly vilke seruaunt gon
 out. / fonde oon of his euen
 seruauntis. pat onyte hy
 an hundrid pens. / a he hol
 dyng hym a ranghede hy
 seynge / zelde pat þolbist

a his euenseruaunt. / þide
 hym seynge / hane pa
 cience in me. / a alle yngis
 I schal quyte to pee / forsoþe
 he wolde not. / But wente
 and sente hym in to þsou
 til he hadde paid al pe det
 te / sopeþe his euenserua
 untis seynge pe yngis
 pat weren don. / greth had
 den southe / a þei camen a
 tolden to her lord. / alle pe
 yngis pat weren don / pa
 his lord depide hym. / a sei
 de to hym / weilkard ser
 uauit. / I foras to pee al
 pe dette. / for þou þydest
 me / perfore wþer it by
 honey not a pee. / to hane
 mercy on þi euenseruaunt.
 as a þu hadde mgy of pee. /
 a his lord toke hym to tur
 mentouris. / til pat he
 paid al pe dette / so a my
 fadir of heuene schal do
 to þou. / 3if þe forzene not.
 euery man to his broþer
 of þoure hertis /
 and it is don wþa
 the hadde endid þese
 wordis. / he passide
 fro galilee a came in to pe
 endis of iudee on iordan /

l ends

b

and many cupaydes of we
 futen hym. and he helde
 hem vere/ and pharisees
 camen up to hym. temp
 tinge hyr saynge/ wher
 it be lesul to a man to leue
 or forsake his wyf of what
 ende cause. / ye which answ
 erunge seip to hem/ hanze
 not red for he ^{that} made man
 at ye biggynge. male
 & female he made hem. /
 & he seide/ for his pyngge
 aman shal leue fadir &
 moder & he shal cleue or
 drawe to his wyf. & pey
 shulen be also in o fleische.
 pfore aman departe not
 pat pyng pat god emoy
 ned or knyght to sidere.
 pei seyen to hym/ what
 pame comandise moises
 to gyue a litil boke of for
 takynge & to leue of/ and
 he seip to hem/ for moy
 ses at ye hardnesse of
 zoure herte suffride you
 forsake zoure wyues/ for
 sope at ye biggynge
 it was not so/ treuly /
 seye to you. pat who ende
 leuey his wyf. no but
 for fornicacioun & wed

if he wol
 pei benot
 tbo. but
 oo fleische

dip anoyr dy anoutrie/
 & he pat weddyd ye forsa
 ken wyf. dy anoutrie/
 his discipulis seyen to hy
 zif ye cause of aman wy
 alwyf is so. it speddy not
 to wedde/ ye which seip to
 hem/ not alle men take
 his word. but to whiche
 it is zonen/ sovely per
 ben geldyngis. whiche
 ben his boru of ye mo
 der wombe. & per ben
 geldyngis. pat han gel
 did hem oif for ye syn
 dom of henenes/ he pat
 may take/ take he/ pane
 litil children weren offid
 up to hym. pat he shul
 de put hondis to hem &
 preye/ sovely his disci
 plis blamden hem/ but
 he seip to hem/ suffre
 ye litil children come to
 me. and mylze forbete
 hem for to come to me/
 for of sicke is ye kynd
 of henenes/ & whanne
 he hadde putte to hem
 hondis. he abente ren
 nys & lo ou tomyngge
 to. seip to hym/ good
 manstr. what of good

if he be geldynges / ben
 made of me

pyng schal y do: pat I ha
ue enlastyngge hyf: ye whi
ch seip to hym/ what axist
you me of good pyng: & he
is o good god/ for if you
wolt entre in to hyf: kepe
ye comaimementis/ he seip
to hym/ Whiche: & treuly
the seide/ you schalt not
do mansleynge: you schalt
not do auontrye: you schalt
not do yeste: you schalt not
seie fals witnessyng: wor
schipe yf fadir & yf modir:
& you schalt lone yf nene
bore as yf self: ye zonge
man seip to hym/ I haue
kepte alle yese pyngis fro
my zongre/ what yt fail
hyf to me/ the seip to hyf/
if you wolt be pfit: go
& selle alle pyngis pat
you hast & gyue to pore
men: & you schalt haue
tresoure in heuene: & to
me sue you me/ forsope
Whanne ye zonge man
hate herd yese wordes:
he wente alwey sorowful
for he was haryngge ma
ny possessionis/ forsope
the seide to his discipulis
I sey to you treupe for

a riche man of hard schal
entre in to ye kyndom of
heuenes/ & eft sone I sey
to you/ it is lighte or esier
a camel for to passe youn
an nedles ye: paume a
riche man to entre in to
ye kyndom of heuenes/
treuly yese wordis herd
ye discipulis wondriden
gretly seynge/ who per
for may be saaf/ forso
ye the beholdyngge seide
to hem/ anentis men pro
pyng is impossible: but
anentis god alle pyngis
ken possible// yane petre
answeryngge seide to hyf/
lo we han forsaken alle
pyngis & we han sued
yee: what yefore schal
be to us/ the forsoye sei
de to hem/ treuly I sey
to you: pat ye pat han
forsaken alle pyngis &
sued me: in regendoon
or gendryngge agen we ha
ue manyng sone schal sitte
in ye seete of his manes
te & ye schulen sitte on
twelue seetis or seegis
demynge ye twelue by
redes of israel/ & eny

man pat schal for sake hous
or brispen. or sistren or fa
dir or modir. or wyf and
soms. or feldis for my na
me. he schal take an him
dus fold. and schal welte
enlastynge hyf for ope
many schulen be pe firste.
pe laste & pe laste. pe
firste.

A

He kynnyng of hen
nes is like to an ho
se bonde man. pat
wente oute early or by pe
mornynge to hire werke
in to his wynezerd. for so
pe pe conenat made wy
werk men. of a peny for
pe day. he sente hem in
to his wynezerd. & he go
oute aboute pe prydde hour.
say oper stonnyng ydel.
in pe chepyng. & he sei
de to hem. go & ze in to
my wynezerd. & pat
schal be rythful. I schal
gyue to you. sopehy pei
wente for. forsope eft
sone he wente oute abou
te pe sixte hour & pe
myne hour. dide on li
che manner. but aboute
pe ellenenpe hour. he

wente out. & found oper
stonnyng. & he seide to
hem. what stonken ze here
ydel al day. & pei seyen to
him. for no man hay hi
rid us. he seiy to hem. go
and ze into my wynezerd.
forsope whane enenynge
was maad. pe lord of pe
wynezerd. oery to his pro
catour. & seiy pe werke man.
& zelte to hem her hire.
by symnyng at pe laste
til pe firste. perfoze wha
ne pei weren comen pat
camen aboute pe ellenenpe
hour. & pei token singu
ler pens. pat is ehy man.
a peny. trenly pe firste
comynge demeten pat
pei weren to take more.
trenly & pei token echon
by hym self a peny. & pei
takynge grachden apen.
pe hosedbonde man seynge.
pes laste diten worke oon
hour. & pon hast made he
euene to us pat han born
pe charge of pe daya heet.
& he answerynge to oon
of hem seide. frend I to
pee no wronge. wherfor
pon hast not acordid wy

me for a peny/ take pat it
is ym & so/ forsope I wole
zyue & to vis laste man as
& to pee/ wher it is not le
ful to me for to do pat it
I woles wher ym ye is wic
Ed for I am good/ so per
stulen be ye laste men
fiste/ & ye fiste me laste/
for many ben clepid/ but
fewe chosen/ And ihe sy
nge up to Jerusalem to
ke his twelue discipulo in
puyte & sey to hem/ Loo
we gon up to Jerusalem/
& mann⁹ sone schal be ta
ken to pncas of prestis &
scribis & pe schulen con
dempne hym by dey/ &
pe schulen bitake hym
to hepen men for to be
stonyd & stonryd & cru
shed/ & ye priddy day he
schal rise agen/ yanne
ye modir of ye sonys
of zebede/ cam wy to hy
wy hir sonys/ honouryn
ge/ & dyngge sit pring of
hym/ pe which seide to hir/
what wolt pou/ & thesey
to hym/ say pat pe schal

31
xxx
my sonys/ don at ym rithhalf
at don at ym liffie half in ym
kyndom/ forsope ihe ans
werynge seide/ ze witen
not what ze asken or schu
ken aske molben ze drynke
pe cuppe/ pat I am to dry
ke/ & pe seven to hy/ we
molben/ he sey to hem/
forsope ze schal drynke
my cuppe/ but to sette at
ye rithhalf or at ye liffie
half it is not myn to zy
ue to zou/ but to wische
it is made redy of my fa
der/ & ye ten heerynge/ had
den indig naaom of elbo
bryperen/ sovely ihe cle
pide hem to hym & sey/
ze witen for pryncas of
hepen men ben lordis of
hem/ & pe pat ben more
haunten polker in to he
it schal not be so amog
zou/ but who ende wole
be made more amonge
zou/ be he zoure mynys
tre/ & who ende amonge
zou wold be ye fiste/ he
schal be zoure gervant/
as mann⁹ sone cam not

for to be seruyd. But for
to serue. A for to 3pne his
soule. or hyf redempadon
for many. And hem go
ynge out of ierico. ma
nye aipanyes of puple
sheden hym. & lo tibo bly
de men sittynge bi sidis
pe wey. herten pat the
passide. & pei crieden sei
ynge. lord pe sone of da
uid. haue mercy on us.
for so pe ye aipanye bla
mede hem for to be stille.
A pei crieden more. A mo
re seynge. lord pe sone
of dauid haue mercy on us.
A the stode. & depeide he
A seide. what wole ze p
y to to 3ou. pei seien to
hym. lord pat oure ye
ben expydyd. for so pe the
seynge nly on hem.
touchide her ren. A ano
pei sauen and sueden
hym.

A.

And whane the
came nyz to Je
rusalem. A came
to bethsage at pe mount

of olivete. pane the sen
te his tibo disciplis sei
ynge to hem. so ze into
pe castel pat is azemes
30w. A anoon ze schule
fynde a sche asse tyed. A
a colt wy hir. on byde
ze. A bringe to me. A if
omy man schal seye to.
3ou omy ping. sey ze p
pe lord hay nefe to hem.
A anoon he schal leue
hem. trensh al vis was
don. pat pat yng pat
was seide by pe prophete
schulde be fulfilled. sey
nge. seie ze to pe touyt
of syon. lo y bringe to
mey to pee. homely. or
meke. sittynge on an asse
A a foole pe sone of a bes
te andur 30f. for so pe dis
cyples goynge. did as
the comandise hem. A
pei broughten to a sche asse
and pe foole. A putiden
her cloys on hem. A
maden hym sitte abo
ue. for so pe ful myche

rāpāye. streuſten her
 clovis in pe wey/ ſoyels
 oper kintēn brāunche
 of trees. A ſtreuſten in
 pe wey/ but pe rāpāyes
 pat wente biſore. A p̄ ſued
 tūēn ſeynge/ of ſama pat
 is p̄p̄e ſame to pe ſone of
 dāny. bleſſid is he pat co
 mey in pe name of pe lord.
 of ſama in hiſeſt p̄yngis
 ⁊ whāne he hadde entrid
 in to Jeruſalem. al pe co
 tte was ſured ſeynge/ in
 ho is p̄s. ⁊ treuſly pe p̄
 ph̄s ſeiden/ p̄s is iſc pe
 p̄ſete of nahareth of ga
 ſlee/ And iſc entride in
 in to pe temple of god. ⁊
 feſt out of pe temple alle
 ſyllinge ⁊ biyng ⁊ he
 turnyd upſodown pe bo
 dis ⁊ chaungeris ⁊ pe
 chaſeris of men ſillp̄e
 culueris/ ⁊ he ſep to he
 it is writū/ myn hono
 ſhal be claid an hono
 of preier. forſope ⁊e han
 made it a ſen of venet
 and blind ⁊ crokēd came
 up to hy in pe temple

⁊ he helde hem/ forſope
 pe p̄nas of preſtis ⁊
 p̄ndis ſeynge inwey
 louſe p̄ngis pat he di
 te. ⁊ children ar̄yng
 in pe temple. ⁊ ſeynge
 of ſama to pe ſone of ſa
 my. ⁊ d̄yngeden ⁊ ſeide
 to hym/ herit pou what
 pes ſeyen/ ſoyels iſc
 ſep to hem ⁊ he/ wher ⁊e
 hau not rad. for of pe mo
 ny of children. pat k̄me
 not opeke ⁊ of ſoulyge
 myſt. pou haſt made p̄
 fit piſyng. ⁊ hem forſi
 ſen. he wente out of pe
 cite in to betānye. ⁊ pe
 he dwelte. ⁊ tauhte he.
 of pe kyndom of god. for
 ſope on pe moſte he t
 nyng ⁊e in to pe cite
 hungre/ ⁊ he ſeyng ⁊
 fiſe tre biſidis pe weie.
 came to it. ⁊ ſound no
 p̄ng. pere in. no but
 ſeeyd conly. ⁊ he ſep
 to it/ neile be fruyt lo
 ven of pec. in to biſon
 ten ende/ And anoon pe

fige tre was dried up/and
discipulis seynge wondred
seynge/ hou anoon it dry
ed/ sopeh ihe answeryn
se: seip to hem/ treuly/ I
seie to you. zif ze schulen
han seip as a corn of seme
ney/ & dwiten not. not on
ly ze schulen do of vis fy
re tre. but & zif ze seien
to vis hil. take pee. and
caste pee in to pe see. and
so it schal be don/ & alle
ymgis what eile ze schu
len aye in preier. bile
uynge. ze schulen take/ And
whane he came in
to pe temple. pe pncis
of ystis/ & elder men of
pe puple. camen nyz to
hym techynge. seynge/
in what polver dost thou
pes ymgis. and who
zif to pee vis polver. /
ihe answerynge seide
to hem/ & I schal aye
you o word. pe which zif
ze schulen seip to me. &
I schal seie to you. i wht
polver I do pes ymgis/
of whenn was pe

baptym of Ioon. of heue
ne or of men. / & pei pouz
ten wip ine hem self seip
nge/ zif we schulen seie
of heuene. he schal seip
to us/ wth pfore bilene
ze not to hym/ sopeh zif
we schulen seip of men.
we dreden pe cuppen of
puple/ for alle hadden
ioon as a pphete/ & pei
answerynge to ihu sei
den/ we witen not/ & he
seip to hem/ neyr I seip
to you. in what polver
I do pes ymgis/ for sope
what semey to you/ su
man hadde two sonys/ &
he comynge nyz to pe first
seide/ sone go for to wor
che vis day in to my cy
ne zerd/ sopeh he answe
rynge seip. I nyl/ for so
pe afterward he stired
by penance or forsyn
ynge. wente/ for sope
he comynge nyz to pe
wyer. seide like manere/
& he answerynge. seip/
lord I go/ & he wente not/
who of pes two dide pe

xxix

didde pe fadris wille & pe
 seien to hym pe firste / ihs
 seip to hem / treuk / ihs
 to zou / for puplicans &
 hooris. Nshulen go bifoze
 zou in to pe kyndom of
 god / forsope 1000 cum to zou
 in pe lye of rithisnesse.
 & ze bilyeuen not to hym /
 but puplicans & hooris.
 bilyeuen to hym / sopeh
 ze seynge neyr hadden pe
 nauie / afturward. pat ze
 bilyeuen to hym / here ze
 anoyr pable / per was
 an housebonde man. pat
 plantide a wynezerd. a
 zaue an hegge aboute &
 dalhe a pssure per yn &
 bilde a toum / & hired
 set to fer me to erpetill
 ers. and wente fer in pil
 grymage / forsope whane
 whane pe tyme of fruy
 tis neyde. he sente his
 seruantis to pe erpeti
 liers. pat pei tofen fruy
 tis of it / & his seruau
 tis taken pe erpetiliers
 beten pe toon anoyr
 pei sloken. but anoy
 pei stoupen to depe.

estedonys he sente oper
 seruantis. uno pane pe
 firste. & liche manere pei
 diden to hem / forsope at
 pe laste he sente his so
 ne to hem. seynge / pey
 Nshulen Nshame or drede
 my sone / sopeh pe erpe
 tilers seynge pe done.
 senten lye the he self /
 pis is pe eyre / come ze
 cle we hym. & we shu
 len hane his heritage /
 & hym taken pei besten
 out of pe wynezerd. &
 sloken / perfore whane
 pe lord of pe wynezerd
 Nshal come. what schal
 he do to piske erpetiliers
 pei seien to hym / he schal
 lese yuel pe yuel men.
 & sette to hire his wyne
 zerd to oper erpetiliers.
 pe whiche Nshule zelle
 to hym fruytis in her
 tyme / ihs seip to hem /
 redder ze neuer i septu
 ris. pe stoon pe whiche
 bidders reproneden.
 pis is maad in to honed
 of pe agnere / of pe lord
 pis vps pyng is made.

4 it is unneiloufe i oure
nen/ perfore i seie to you
for pe kyndom of god it
shal be taken fro you: a
nshal be zeuen to a folk
doynge fruytis of it/
and he pat shal falle
on his stoon shal be brou-
ken to gider/ forsope up
on whom it shal falle
it shal to gider polue
hym/ and whane pe pi-
ns of prestis & faris-
hadde herd his pabler
pei enelven pat he seide
of hem/ apei sechynge
to holde hym dreden
pe anpanses of puple
for pei hadden hym as
a pphete. xxxj

And ihs answery
ge spake eftsone
in pablis to he
serynge/ pe kyngdom
of heuenes is made li-
ke to aman kyng- pat
made weddyngis to his
sone/ a he sente his ser-
uantis for to clepe me
befen to pe weddyngis-
a pei wolde not come/
eftsone he sente oper

seruantis serynge/ seie
ze to pe men beten to
feste/ so i haue made
redy my mete my bolis
& volatilis ben slayn
& alle pyngis redy come
ze to pe weddyngis/ so
peli pei dispisiden o-
recken not/ and pei wen-
ten away oon tu to his
tollue forsope anop-
to his marchandise/ but
pe oper helden his seru-
antis: & slobwen hem
pumpstide wip comel/
forsope pe kyng whane
he hadde herde was wr-
oop/ a his oostis sente
he leste o distryed pe
manquelleris & brent
her citee/ pane he serp
to his seruantis/ so-
peli pe weddynges ben
redy- but pei pat were
slepido pe feest were
not worpi/ perfore go
ze to pe oute goynges
of weies: a whom eile
ze shulen fynde clepe
to pe weddyngis/ a his
seruantis gon out in

to weyes. gaderiden to gi
 dere alle pat pei fouden
 good & yuel. & pe weddi
 ses of men sittynge at
 mete ben fulfild. for
 sope pe kyng entride þ
 he schulde see men sit
 tynge at pe mete. & he
 saw pere amon not clo
 yd wip bride. clopis. &
 he seip to hym. frend
 hou entridest thou hidir
 not harynge bride clop.
 & he was wunniþ. þane
 pe kyng seide to pe my
 nystris. his hondis and.
 feet bounden. sende þe hi
 in to wimer derknessis.
 pere schal be wepyng &
 beryng to gaire of teep.
 for sope many ben clepid.
 but selwe chosun. þanne
 farisees goynge alweye
 token a counsel. pat pey
 schulden take ihe i word.
 & senten to hym her dis
 aples wip erodians.
 pat ben men of eroudis
 seipnge. master welbi
 ten pat you art sopfas
 & þou testist in treupe þe
 of god. & þer is no cure

or charge to pee of ony
 man. for þou biholdist
 not þe pson of men.
 perfore seie to us what
 it semet to pee. is it
 lesful to zyne cesar ren
 te or tribute. for sope þe
 wickidnesse of he kno
 wen. ihe seip. ypoctis
 what tempten ze me.
 nhewe ze to me þe pite
 of þe money. & þei offri
 den to hym a peny. &
 ihe seip to hem. whos
 is þis ymage & þe wri
 tynge aboue. þei seie
 to hym. of cesar. þanne
 he seip to hem. perfore
 zelte ze to cesar. þo þin
 gis pat ben cesaris. &
 to god. þo þingis þ ben
 of god. & þei herynge
 wondriden. & hym laste
 pes wenten alwey. þu
 pat day saduceis pat
 seyen þe is no rpsme
 azen. came nyz to hym.
 & axiden. hym seipnge.
 master moises seide.
 if ony man be teed not
 harynge a þone. pat
 his broper wedde his

or wey.

ende

ende

Wif & reise seed to his
broper / forsope seuē bry
peren weren at us / & pe
pe first alwif weddid is
deed / & he not harynge
seed lest his wif to his
broper / also pe secounde
a pe priddē til ^{to} pe seuē /
forsope pe last of alle / &
pe woman is deed / þfore
in pe risynge azen whos
wif of genene shal she
be / for alle haten hir / so
velly ihs answerynge sey
to hem / ze erren nep kno
wynge pe scripturis / nep
pe odu of god / forsope in
pe risynge azen / nep pei
wedden nep ben weddid /
but pei ben as pe angelis
of god in heuene / forsope
of pe risynge azen of
deed men / ze han not red.
pat it is seide of pe lord
seyng to you / I am god
of abraham god of Isaac
& god of iacobi / he is not
god of deed men / but of
harynge men / a pe cum
panyes of purple hery
ge / wounden in his
techyng / forsope fari

ses herynge pat he had
put silence to saducae
camen to gidere to oon / f
and oon of hem a teacher
of pe lawe axide ihs / seip
tynges hym / maistir whi
ch is a greet maundemēt
in pe lawe / ihs seip to
hym / you shalt loue pe
lord y god of al ym her
te / & in al ym soule / & in
al ym mynde / yis is pe fir
ste & pe most maundem
ent / forsope pe secounde
is hys to yis / you shalt
loue ym neyboze as yy
self / in pese twe man
dementis / hangy al pe
lawe & pphets / / Soþely
pe farisees gederid to ge
der / ihs axide he seyng /
what semey to you of est
whos sone is he / pei sei
en to hym of dany / he sey
to hem / perfore hou da
my in spirit clepy hy
lord seyng / y pe lord sei
de to my lord / sitte on my
rythalt / til pat I punte
ym enemyes / a stool of
vi feet / þfore zif dany
clepy hi lord / hou is he

his sone. / & no mā myzte
answere allword to hym. / ne
yir ony man was hardy
fro pat say to axe hym
more.

fi

Ihanne ihc spat to
pe cūpantes of pu
ple & to his disciples
seyng. / upon pe chauer of
moyses. scribis & farisees
seten. / þfore þe ze & to ze
alle ymgs. / what enē pū
gis pei schulen seie to zou
of pe lawe. / but nyl ze to
astur her werkis. / soþel
pei seien & don not. / soþe
ly pei bynden to greuous
se chargsis & vnpportable
or pat molyn not be born.
A putte in to schuldres of
men. / but wip her fynger
pei wolen not moue hem.
þfore pei don alle her werk
is. / pat pei be seen of
men. / forsoþe pei alarge
her filateries. / pat ben
smale strolbis. / & mag
nyhen peir hēmes. / so
þel pei louen pe fir ste
hitynge places in sops.
& pe firste chawers in sy
nagogis. / & saluaciōis

in pe chepyng. / & to be
clepid of mē maistris.
soþel nyl ze be clepid
maistr. / for oon is zoure
maistr. / forsoþe alle ze
ben bryden. / & nyl ze cle
pe to zou a fadir on erþe.
for oon is zoure fadir. / þ
is in heuenes. / acyur be
ze clepid maistris. / for
oon is zoure maistr. / & /
he pat is more of zou.
schal be zoure mynystre.
forsoþe he pat schal hye
hym self. / schal be mekē.
& he pat schal mekē hy
self. / schal be enhaunsid.
// Soþel wo to zou scri
bis & farisees ppoctis.
for ze closen pe kyndom
of heuenes byfore men.
soþel ze entreu not. / ne
suffren men entrynge.
for to entre. / wo to zolb
to zou scribis & farisees
ppocritis. / pat eten pe
housis of widelwis. / & longe
preier preynges. / for vis
yngs ze schulen take pe
more dome. / wo to zolb
scribis & farisees ppocti
tis. / pat cūpassen pe see

& ye loud. pat ze maken o
 profeliter pat is a wuld
to zour ordre. & whan he
 he shal be maad. ze ma
 ken hym a sone of halle.
 double more yane zou/
 /Wo to zour blinde leders
 pat seuen. who eue shal
 swere by ye temple of
 god. no ying is. ope
 ly he pat shal swere in
 ye gold of ye temple. o
 wy or is detour. ze foo
 lis & blind. forsope wh
 at is more. ye gold or
 ye temple y^t halscrip
 ye gold. & who en shal
 swere in ye auter. no
 ying is. but he y^t shal
 swere in ye zifte. pat is
 on ye auter. scrip. blin
 de men. what forsope is
 more. ye zifte or ye au
 ter pat halscrip ye zifte.
 forsope he pat swerip
 in ye auter. swerip in
 it. & in alle yngis pat
 ben yon. and he y^t swe
 rip in ye temple. swe
 rip in it. & in hy pat
 dwelip in ye temple.

& he pat swerip i heuene.
 swerip in ye trone of god.
 and in hym pat sittip.
 yon. /Wo to zour scribis &
 farisees. ypotitis. pat
 tipen myute anese. and
 comyn. & han lest po y
 sis pat ben greuousere
or of more charge of ye
lawe. don. & mercy & for.
 & pes yngis it bishoned
or uedide for to do. & not
 to tene hem. blinde lede
 res. clensunge a gnatte.
 but swolirunge a camel.
 /Wo to zour scribis and fa
 risees. ypotitis. pat ma
 ken clene pat yng of ye
 arpe & plater. pat is wy
 oute foy. forsope wy me
 ze ben ful of raucyne &
 onclennesse. yon blinde
 farisee. clense friste pat
 yng of ye arpe & pla
 ter. pat is wy me foy.
 pat & pat yng. pat is wy
 oute foy. be made clene.
 /Wo to zour scribis and
 farisees. ypotitis. pat
 ben like to sepulchris.
 made wlite. ye which

Arm^o

Wip oute fory seime fay
re to men. sopely a bryp
me pe ben ful of bones
of ded men & al filpe/
so and ze firslope. Wip ou
ten fory aperen iust to me
but wip me ze ben ful of
ypocrisie & wickidnesse/
Also to zou scribis & fari
sees ypocritis pat bidden
sepulchris of pphets &
maken faire pe buriels
of iust men. & seien/ zif
we haden be in pe dayes
of oure fabris. we schul
den not han be here fe
lowis in pe blood of pph
tis/ and so ze ben in to wit
nessynge to zou oylf. for
ze ben pe sonys of hem
pat slowen pe pphets/
& ze fulfyllen pe mesure
of zoure fadris/ ze serpe
tis fruytis & burielwyr
is of eddris. pat sleen
her modris. hou schul
ze fle fro pe dome of helle.
¶ Hwee so I sende to zoll
pphets & wise men. and
scribis & writers. & of
hem ze schulen slee &

crucifie. & of hem ze
schulen bere in zoure
synagogis & schulen
pshue fro ate in to ate.
pat al pe iust blood co
me upon zou. pat was
shed in pe erpe fro pe
blood of iust abel tyl
pe blood of zacharie pe
sone of barachie whom
ze slowen buriye pe
temple & pe auter/ tren
ch I seye to zou alle pese
pmyis schulen come upo
vis generacion. ¶ Jerusa
lem. ierusalem pat slest
pphetis & stonest hem p
ben sente to pee. & hou
ofte wolde I sedir to gi
der in sonys. as an hene
sederip to gader hir che
kenes andir hir wengis.
& pou woldist not/ so zou
re hous schal be leste
to zou disert & forsake
forslope I sey to zou ze
schulen not see me fro
hem/ forp. nl pat ze
seien/ blyssid is he pat
comey in pe name of
pe lord.

E

A
viii

And Iste zow out of
 pe temple wente
 & his discipulis ca
 men nyz to hym. pat
 pei schulden schewe to
 hy pe bildyngis of pe
 temple/ forsope he answe
 ryng. seip to hem/ se ze
 alle pese myngis. / treuhy
 y seie to zow a stoon schal
 not be lefte here on a stou
 pe whiche schal not be
 destroyed/ Sopehy hym
 sittynge on pehil of oly
 uete. discipulis came nyz
 to hym pryuyly. seyinge/
 sepe to us whane pese
 myngis schulen be. & wist
 tofene of y comynge &
 of pe endyng of pe world/
 & Iste ansueryng seide
 to hem// See ze pat no ma
 disteyne zow many schu
 len come in my name.
 seyinge I am crist. & pei
 schulen disteyne many/
 sopehy ze ben to here ba
 tales. & opynions of
 batels/ see ze pat ze ben
 not disturbrid/ sopehy
 it bihoney pese myngis

to be don. But not zit is pe
 ende/ folk schal rise to ge
 dir azen9 folk. & rellme
 in to rellme. & pestalen
 as. & hyngris. & erpe mo
 wyngis. schulen be hy pla
 cis/ forsope alle pese ym
 gis. ben bigymyngis
 of sorowis/ pane pei schu
 len bytake zow in to tribu
 lacion. and pei schulen
 osee zow. & ze schulen be
 in hate to alle folkis for
 my name/ & pane many
 schulen be schawndrid &
 to gider bitwae or cke of
 & in hate haue to gider/
 & many fals apheis schu
 len rise. & disteyne many/
 & for wickednesse schal be
 plentenouse. pe charite
 of many schal weye cold/
 forsope he vat schal dwelle
 stable on to pe ende. he
 vis schal be saaf/ & vis
 gospel of kyndom schal
 be pchid in al pe world
 in to witnessyng to alle
 folkis. & pane pe ende
 schal come/ yfne whane
 ze schulen see pe abho

my nation of distourf. þ
is seide of danyel þe pphete
stondynge in þe holy place
he pat redy vnderstode/
þane þei pat ben in iudee
fle þei to mounteyns / & he
pat is in þe hous roof co
me not dū to take ony þing
of his hous / & he pat is in
þe feld / turne not æen to
take his cot / forsoþe lbo
to wʒmen wy child & no
ruthyng in þo dayes / so
þei prey þe pat þoure fle
yngre be not maad i wʒn
ter or sabot / forsoþe þane
shal be greet tribulaciō
what maner was not f
þe bysynyng of þe world
til now / neþr shal be
maad / & no but þif þo day
es hadden be breggid al
flesch pat is mankynde
shulde not be made saaf
but þo times shulen be
maad shert for þe chosen
men / þanne þif ony mā
shal oʒ to ʒon / so here
is crist oʒ þere / nyl ʒe
bʒlene / forsoþe falshe
cristis and fals pphets.

shulen rise & þei shul
ʒyue greet tokenes &
wondris / so pat alþ þe
chosen be lād in to erro
ʒif it may be dū / lo þ
hane bi fore seid to ʒon /
perfore þif þei shulen
seie to ʒon / so he is in de
sert / nyl ʒe go out / lo
in þy chāubris oʒ pla
ns / nyl ʒe bileue / soþe
as leyt ʒop out fro þe
ceft / & aperi til in to
þe west / so shal be & þe
comynge of mān sone /
wher ende þe body shal
be / & þe egʒis shulen
be gederid vidir // forso
þe anon after þo day
es / þe siue shal be ma
de derk & þe mone shal
not ʒyue hir lyt / & st
ris shulen falle dū
fro heuene & adies of
heuene shulen be mo
ued / & þane þe tokene
of mān sone shal ap
pere in heuene / & þan
alle kynredis oʒ kyn
gis of erþe shul be
le / and þei shulen see

mān9 sone comynge in
 cloudis of heuene wy my
 the dñr & maieſte / he
 ſhal ſende his an9els
 wy a trūp & greet voy
 ce / a pe ſhulen gēdere
 his choſen fro foure wy
 dis of heuene. fro pe hieſt
 ym9is of heuenes. til
lines or endis of hem
 lerne ze pe pable of a fi
 ge tre / wħane his bowz
or braunche is now ten
dre. and ſeuyns ſprūgen.
 ze witen pat ſomer is
 myz / ſo and ze wħanne
 ze ſhulen ſee alle reſe
 ym9is. witey pat it is
 myz in pe zatis / trenly
 I ſeie to zou for pis ſene
 ratiō ſhal not paſſe
 til pat alle ym9is be don
 heuene & erpe ſhulen
 paſſe. but my wordis
 ſhulen not paſſe / for
 ſope of vilke day & hour
 no man wot ne9 an9els
 of heuenes. no but pe fa
 dñr aloone / for ſope as it
 was in pe dayes of noe.
 ſo ſhal be a pe comynge

of mānes ſone / for as in pe
 dayes biſore pe greet flood
 pei weren etynge & dryu
 bynge weddyng. & tal9e
 to weddyng. til in to pat
 day in pe wħich noe entle
 in to pe ſhip & pei knelw
 not til pe greet flood ca
 me & toke alle men. ſo ſhal
 be pe comynge of mān9
 ſone / panne t̄wo ſhulen
 be in a feld. oon ſhal be
 taken to & anoy left or for
taken. t̄wo wymen ſhul
 be grynnyng in o quer
 ne. oon ſhal be taken to.
 a pe to9 forſaken / t̄bo in
 o bed. pe tou ſhal be ta
 ken to & pe toper forſake
 p̄ſore wale ze ſa ze wite
 not in wħat our zoure
 lord is to come / ſope lyf
 pyng wite ze for if pe
 hoſt bonde man wiſtem
 wħat hour pe peef were
 to come. trenly he ſhul
 d wale & ſuffre not ſho
 hono to be condempned
 and p̄ſore a ze be redy.
 ſa in wħat hour ze geſ
 ſen not mān9 ſone is

f

to come / Who gesst þou
is a tresser seruaunt and
prudent or War Whom
his lord ordeyned on his
meyne / þat he zene to
þeun mete in tyme / Whi
shd is þat seruaunt / Wh
om his lord whāne he
shal come shal fynde so
ynge so / trenshy / I seie to
jou. for upon alle hys
goodis / he shal ordeyne
hym / forsope if pilley
nel Arant shal oseye
in his herte my lord
maky dwellynge or to
ryuge to come / a byp
ne to smyte his ene ser
uauntis / Sovely if he en
a drynke wip dronkelen
men / þe lord of yllke
seruaunt shal come in
þe day in which he ho
py not / a in hour i whi
ch he knolwy not / a shal
departe hym / a put his
part wip hypocritishe
shal be wepynge &
betynge to dere of
trep

hanne þe ^{xxv}
syndom of heneues
shal be like to ten
virgynes / þe whiche
fynge her lampes wen
ten out metynge þe spon
se or hesebond / a þe spon
se or wip forsope
fyne of hem were foo
les / a fyne prudent / but
þe fyne foolles her lāmp
is taken / taken not oile
wip hem / forsope þe p
tent / taken oile in her
vessels wip lāmpis /
forsope þe sponse or ho
sebond makynge dwel
lynge / alle nappiden &
slepten / sovelly at mys
nyzt a try was maad /
foe þe sponse comen / so
ze out metynge to hy
paine alle þe virgyn
nes risen up / and anon
neden her lāmpis / sope
hy þe foolles senden to
þe wise / zyne ze to us
of zoure oile / so oure
lāmpis ben quenched /
þe prudent ansiberiden

seynges/ lest paventure
it suffise not to us and
to you. so ze raper to me
sillynges/ a bye to you/ for
sore ye while ye wente
for to bre. ye sponse came/
a po pat lveren redy en
triden in wy hym to ye
weddyngis. a ye zate is
shut/ sovelly at ye laste.
a ye oper virgynes ca
men seyinges/ lord lord.
opene to us/ and he an
swerynge seip/ trenshy
I seie to you. I knowe
not you/ a so wake ze a
prey. for ze witen not
ye day ne ye hour/ sove
ly as aman goynge fer
in pilgrynage. clepid
his sernantis. a bytok
hem his goodis. a to
oon he gaf fyue talentis
or besantis. forsope to
anoyr tibo. but to anoy
oon/ to eche astir his ow
ne wtu. a wente forp
anoon/ forsope a he yf
hade taken fyue talentis
wente forp a broughte
in hem. a wanne oper

fyue/ also a he pat hade
taken tibo. wan op tibo/
sovelly he pat hade take
oon goynge forp. dalf in to
ye erpe. a hidde ye money
of his lord/ but astir my
che tyme ye lord of ye ser
uantis came. a putte re
soun wy hem/ a he yf hade
taken fyue talentis. comy
ge to offrise oper fyue sey
nges/ lord you bytokest me
fyue talentis or besantis.
lo I haue geten ouer oper
fyue/ his lord seip to hy/
wel be you good seruait
a feyful or trelke for upo
felwe pynis you hast ben
trelke. y shal ordeyne
pee upon many pynis/
entre you in to ye joye
of yn lord/ forsope a he yf
hade taken tibo talentis.
came to a seip/ lord you
bytokest me tibo talentis.
lo I haue geten on over
tibo/ his lord seip to hy/
wel be you good seruait
a trelke for upon felwe
pynis you hast be trelke.
I shal ordeyne pee upon

many pmissis/ entre you
in to ye ioye of y^r lord/
forsope & he pat had ta-
ken oon talent/ compe-
to serp/ lord / I woot pat
you art an hard man.
you repist where y^e hast
not solwen/ & you seideri-
st to sidere/ wher y^e hast
not sprad a brood/ & y^e-
dredynge wente/ & hid
y^e talent in ye erpe/ lo
you hast pat y^e is ryne/
sovelly his lord answery-
ge/ sende to hym/ puel
seruaunt & slow wistist
you pat y^e repy where y^e
sewe not/ & gedered to
sidere where y^e spradde
not a brood/ y^e fore it by-
houed yee sende or bryn-
ke my money to chaū-
geris/ & y^e comynge schul-
de haue resseyued forso-
pe pat y^e is myn wip-
usuris/ & so take ye all-
ey fro hym ye talent/
& y^e yue ye it to hy pat
hast ten talentis/ for to
eily man hauynge it se-
hal be zonen/ & he shal

haue plente/ & to hym-
pat hay not/ pat y^e he
semey to haue/ shal be
taken fro hym/ & cast-
ze out ye conprofrable
seruaunt/ & sende ze hy
in to vittu mere der knes-
his/ ye shal be wepyge-
& betynge to sidere of
teep/// Forsope whanne
mannes sone shal come
in his mageste & alle his
angels wip hym/ pan
he shal sitte on ye sege
of his mageste/ & alle
folkis schulen be geder-
rid biforn hym/ & he se-
shal departe hem a twy-
ne as a shep herde depar-
tyr shere fro Eddis/ and
sovelly he shal sette ye
sheep on ye ryth half/ ye
Eddis forsope on his left
half/ pame ye Eynge
shal sey to hem/ pat
schulen be on his ryth
half/ come ze blessid of
of my fadir/ welde ze ye
Eyndom made redy to
zou fro ye bygymynge
of ye world/ forsope y^e.

was hungry. & ze zane
to me for to ete. I priſide
and ze zane me for to di
keſſ. I was herborles. &
ze gadereden or herboze
ien me. nakid. & ze hili
den me. ſeek. & ze anſu
den me. I was in pſou.
& ze camen to me. pane
wiſte meu ſchule anſwe
re to hym ſeynge. lord
whane ſalwe we pee ſin
gry. & we fadden pee. pur
ſy. & we zyne to need
drynke. whane forſope
ſalwe we pee herborles.
& we gederide pee. or na
kid & we hilden pee. or
whane ſalwe we pee ſeek
or in pſou. & we came
to pee. & he anſwerige
ſchal ſeye to he. treuly
I ſeie to zou. as longe as
ze diden to oon of peſe
my leſte. lrypen. ze di
den to me. pane pe hyz
ſchal ſeye & to hem. p
pat. ſchulen be on his
lyfſhall. departe fro
me. ze on ſide in to eu
laſtynge fier. pe which
is maad redy to pe

denel and his augehis/
ſopeky. I hungry. & ze
zane not me for to ete/
& priſide. & ze zanen
not to me for to dryke/
I was herborles. & ze
gadereden not me. na
kid. & ze conſeden not
me. ſeek. & in pſou. &
ze conſiden not me.
pane. & pei ſchule an
ſwere to hym ſeynge/
lord whanne ſalwe we
pee hungry. or purſy
or herborles. or nakid. or
ſeek. or in pſou. & we
ſerueden not to pee.
pane he ſchal anſwere
to hem ſeynge. treuly
I ſey to zou. hou longe
ze diden not to oon of
peſe leſte. & neyir ze
diden to me. and peſe
ſchulen go in to euer
laſtynge turment. for
ſope. pe. pe. iuſt me. in
to enlaſtynge. hiſſ. A
And it is don. wh
ane iſt. hadde en
dide alle. peſe. wo
rds. he ſeide to
his diſcipulis. write. zee

for after two dayes past
shal be made. & manny
done shal be bitaken pat
he be crucified. pane ye
punas of pthis & elder me
of ye puple ben sederid
in to ye halle of ye pnce
of pthis. pat was seide
caiphas. & made a coun
seil. pat pei shulden hol
de ihu wy sile and sle/
sopely pei seiden/ not i
ye feste day. lest pe pane
ture uops were made in
ye puple/ forsope wshane
the was in betanye in
ye hous of symont le
prouse. alwoma haunge
a box of alabastr of pre
cious oynement came
ny to hy and shedde out
on ye hed of hy restige/
sopely dysiplys seynge.
haden dedyn. seynge/ wh
erto vis losse/ forsope
it myzt be sold for my
the & be zouen to pore
me/ sopely the wityn
ge seip to hem/ what
be ze heuy to vis wo
man/ sopely a good.

werk the hay wrougte
in me/ for why ze shule
euer more haue pore me
wip you. but ze shulden
not algatis haue me/ for
sope vis woman sendy
ge vis oynement in to
my body. made for to ho
rie me/ trensh y sey to
you where eue vis gos
pel shal be pthid in al
ye world. it shal be
seide & pat vis woma
dide in to mynde of hy/
pane oon of ye tibelie it
was seide judas scariot.
wente for to ye punas of
pthis & dey to hem/ what
wolen ze zyne to me. & y
shal bitake hym to you.
& pei ordeyneden to hym
priti platis of siluer//
& fro pat tyme he souz
couenablete. for to bitake
hym/ forsope in ye firste
day of ye feet of past.
dysiplys came to ihu sey
inge/ where wolt y we
make redy to pee for to
ete paste/ & the seip/ so
ze in to ye citre to sumā.

& seip to hym / ye maister
 seip / my tyme is nyz / at
 yee I make my paste wip
 my dyspulis / & ye dyspulis
 diden as ihs comaundide
 to hem / & pei made redy
 paste / forsope euening
 maad / he sat at ye mete
 wip his tibelue dyspulis /
 & he seide to hem etynge
 trenly I seie to you / for
 oon of you is to betraye
 me / & pei ful soz bi
 nen to seye / lord wher I
 am / & he answerynge
 seip / he pat wip me in
 puttyr ye hond iye pla
 ter / yis shal bytraye
 me / forsope man9 sone
 gop / as it is writun of
 hym / but wo to y^e man
 by whom man9 sone shal
 be bytrayed / it were good
 to hym / yif pat man
 hadde not be born / for
 sope Judas pat betray
 ed hym / answere sey
 inge / maister wher I
 am / he seip to hym /
 you hast seide / forsope
 hem soupyngge ihs tolke

breed & bliside / & brake
 & zawe to his dyspulis
 and seip / take ze & etc
 yis is my body / & he ta
 kyng pe cuppe / dide pat
 kyngis / & gaf to hem sey
 inge / drynke ze alle her
 of / yis is my blode of
 ye newe testament / ye
 which shal be shed out
 for many in to reynyss
 on of synis / forsope I
 seie to you / I shal not
 drynke fro yis tyme of
 yis fruyt of ye vyne
 til in to pat day / whane
 I shal drynke it newe
 wip zon / in ye kyngdom
 of my fadir / & an ymp
 ne or heryngge seide
 pei wente out in to ye
 mount of olyuete / pane
 ihs seip to hem / alle ze
 shulen suffre standee
 in me / in yis nyz / for
 it is writun / I shal
 smyte ye shepsherde
 & ye shepe of ye flot
 shulen be staterid / for
 sope aftir pat I shal
 rise azem / I shal go

44
so biforn you in to galilee/
sorely petre answerde
sey to hym/ & if alle schu-
len be standund in pee-
I shal neuer be standund/
if he sey to hym/ treuly I
sey to pee for in vis myt
bifore ye cōtrowle. pries
you shalt denye me/ pe-
tre sey to hym/ & if it
shal bishoue mo to dpe
wip pee/ I shal not de-
nye pee/ also & alle disci-
pulis seiden. pame the
came wip hem in to a
tollne pat is seide gossa-
manye. & he seide to his
discipulis/ sitte ze here.
ye while I shal go pider
& preyre/ & petre taken to
& tilke soues of zebede. he
bigan for to be distublid
& heuy of ooy in herte/
pame he sey to hem/ my
soule is sorowful til to
ye dey/ sustene ze & ab-
de ze here. & wake ze wip
me/ & he gon forp a linc-
felte don in to his face.
preynge & seynge/ my
fadir. if it is possible.

patte vis cuppe fro me/
neveles not as I wole.
but as you wolt/ & he ca-
me to his discipulis. & son-
de hem slepynges/ & he
sey to petre/ so. wiser ze
myzten not oon hour wa-
ke wip me. wake ze & pre-
vat ze entre not in to tep-
tacion/ for soye ye spirit
is redy. but ye fleische
soek or unstable. este ye
secounde tyme he wente
& pyde seynge/ my fadir
if vis cuppe may not passe
no but y drynke it. & pi-
wille be don/ & eftsoone
he came. & found he sle-
pynges/ forsoye her nen
weren greued. & he lefte.
he went aftersone. & pyde
ye yride tyme ye same
word seynge/ pame he
came to his discipulis.
& sey to hem/ slepe ze
now. & reste ze/ so ye ho-
ur hay neynd. & man-
sone shal be taken in to
ye hondis of symmeris/
rise ze go we/ so he pat
shal take me. & schal.

neye / & sit hy opelyge.
lo Judas oon of ye clyke
& wyf hy came agreet
at panye wyf sberdis
and battis sent of ye p
ns of pntis & of ester me
of ye puple / forsoye he
pat bitraied hy / zaf to
hem a tokene seynge /
Whom eide I shal kisse
he it is holde ze hym / a
anoon he comynge nyz
to ishu / seide / hail ma
tir / & he kysse hym
& ishe seide to hy / friend
Wherto art you comen /
vane pei came nyz / &
castiden hondis in to ishu
& helken hym / & lo oon
of hem pat were wyf
ishu / holdynge out ye
hond / drolbe out his sberd
& he smytynge ye ser
naut of ye pns of p
tis / Eide of his litil
ore / vane ishe ovy to
hym / turne pi ewerd
in to his place / sovely
alle pat shule take
swerd / shule pnthe
by swerd / wher gesst

you pat I may not fy
my fadir & he shal zene
to me nois more pane
clyke legions of anige
lis / Hou pfore shulen
ye pnturis be fulfilled
for so it bihouey to be doun
Iz pat hour ishe seide to
ye cūpanyes of peple /
as to a peef ze han gon
out / wyf sberdis &
batts for to cacche me /
day by day / I sate at zou
techyng in ye temple
& ze helden not me / for
soye al pis pyng was
ton / pat ye pnturis
of apheus shulen be
fulfilled // vame alle
discipulis fleden hym
forsaken / and pei hol
dynge ishu / ledten hy
to capphas / pnce of p
tis / wyf scribis & pary
sees / & ye elder men of
ye puple had comen
to zidere / forsoye petre
suede hym a fer / til in
to ye halle of ye pns
of pntis / & he gon in w
hime / sate wyf ser naut

pat he schulde se pe ende/
 for þe pe þnas of þhis
 & al þe conseil sonþen
 fals witnessinge azen
 ihu. pat þei schulden
 take hym to sep/ & þei sou
 den not. Whane many
 fals witnessis hadden
 come to/ tress at þe luke
 two fals witnessis. came
 & seiden/ þis seide/ þi may
 distroie þe temple of god.
 & after þe proude day bilte
 it azen/ & þe þnce of þhis
 risynge seip to hy/ answere
 rist þou no þing to þo
 þingis þe wishde þek wit
 nessen azen þee. forþope
 ihe was stille/ & þe þnce
 of þhis seip to hym/ þi co
 nure þee by anye god yf
 þou seip to us. if þou be
 crist þe sone of god/ ihe
 seide to hym/ þou hast
 seide/ nepoles þi seie to
 þou anye tyme or fro a
tyme for þe schuld see
many sone. sitynge at
 þe rithall of þe oin of
 god and cumynge i dauid
 of heuene/ þane þe þnce
 of þhis tyme or to rente

his doþis seynge/ he hap
 blassemyd/ what in ne
 de han we to witnessis.
 lo nolk þe han herd blas
 femye/ what comye to
 þou/ & þei answerge
 seiden/ he is galy of drep/
 þane þei spiritide in to
 his face. and smytten
 hy wy buffets/ forþope
 over zauen strokes wy
 þe pallme of hondis in
 to his face seynge/ þou
 crist pphete to us who
 is he þat smot þee.
 soþely petre sat wy on
 ten in þe porche/ and
 oon handwarden came in
 to hym seynge/ and þi
 were wy ihu of galilee/
 & he tenye before alle
 men seynge/ y bot not
 what þou seist/ forþope
 hy soyege oute þe zate
 any hand madden saly
 hy. & seip to he þat we
 ren þe/ & þis was wy
 ihu of nazareth/ & este
 sone he demyde wy an
 oop. for he knewe not
 þe man/ & after a litil
 þei pat stoden camen

nyz & seiden to petre / treuþ
 & you art of hem / for why
 a pi speche / maky þe o
 þyn / þane he bygan to wa
 rie & swere / þat he knelle
 not þe man / & anon þe
 col drebe / & petre bypny
 te on þe word of ihu / þat
 he had seide bifore þe col
 drebe / yries þou shalt
 tenye me / & he gon out
 wepte bitterly /

Lorsore þe moelbe
 made alle þe þnas
 of þstis & elder men
 of þe puple / token counseil
 azen ihu / þat þei shulde
 take hym to dey / & þei led
 den hym bounden & bitoke
 hy to pilat of poure meyr
 re or chief iustice / þane
 iudas þat betraide hym
 seynge þat he was dampnid
 he led hy penaunce or feryn
kyng / þroughe azen pryt
 ty platis of siluer to þe
 þnas of þstis / and to þe
 elder men of puple seyn
 inge / I þane synned / by
 traingge iust blood / and
 þei seiden / what to us
 se þou / & þe platis of sil

uer caste aþey in to þe
 temple / he wente alþey
 & goyge alþey he hangede
 hy silt wry a gyne or sua
re / forsoþe þe þnas of þst
 tis taken þe platis of
 siluer / seiden / it is not le
 ful to send hem in to þe
 tresorie / for it is þe pris
 of blood / soþely counseil
 taken / þei bouzten wry
 hem þe feeld of a potter
 in to buryng of ded men
 for þis þing þe ille feeld
 is deyd acholmenak / þat
 is þe feeld of blood til in
 to þis day / þanne it is
 fulfild þat þing þat
 is seide by þe pphete þe
 reynge seynge / and þei
 token prytty platis of sil
 uer / þe þst of amā þised
 whom þei þiseden of þe
 sones of israel / & þei za
 uen hem in to a feeld of
 a potter as þe lord ordey
 ned to me / soþely ihs sto
 de bifore þe meyre or to
mesian / & þe president
 asside hym seynge / art
 þou kyng of ielkes / ihs
 seip to hym / þou seist

pligines

Whanne he was accused of
 pe pnce of pntis & elder me
 of pe puple. he answerid
 ge no pyng / pilat seip to
 hym / herist you not hou
 many wituessyngis pei
 seien azen? pee? & he an
 sweryde not to hy ony
 word. so pat pe pshient.
 wondride greetly / forsope
 by a solemayne day. pe psh
 dent was wout. for to d
 lyuer to pe puple oon bo
 unden whom pei wolden
 forsope he hadde a noble ma
 bounden pat was seide bara
 bas / perfore pilat seide to
 hem gederid to geder / whom
 wole ye I leue or deliuer
 to you. wher barabas or
 ihu pat is seide crist / sope
 ly he wiste. pat by eny
 pei bitraieden hym / forso
 pe hym sityng forwiste
 or domeliman. his wyf sen
 te to hym seyinge / no pig
 to pee & to pat iust man
 sopeh I haue suffrid yis
 day many yngis for hy
 by a vision or allene
 forsope pe pntis of pntis
 & pe elder men tithen or

consuliden to pe puple p
 pei shulde aske barabas.
 but ihu. pei shulden lese
 forsope pe pshient answe
 ryng seip to hem / whom
 of pese tibo wolen ye to be
 leste or deliuerid to you?
 and pei seiden. barabas.
 pilat seip to hem / what
 pfore shal y do of ihu pat
 is seide crist? alle seien be
 he crucified / pe pshient
 seip to hem / sopeh what
 of yuel hap he don? / pei
 crieden more seyinge / be
 he crucified / forsope pilat
 seyinge pat he pfitide no
 pyng but pe more noyse
 was made. watur & a
 fen. wasthede pe houndis by
 fore pe puple seyinge
 I am innocent or giltles
 fro pe blood of yis iust
 man. see ye? & al pe puple
 answeryng seide / his blo
 de upon us. & on oure so
 nyss / pane he leste to he
 barabas. but he toke to
 hem ihu stourgid pat
 he shulde be crucified. //
 name knyghts of pe psh
 dent takyng ihu in pe

moethalle: gederede to hym
alle pe aipange of luytis
a pe vndorunge hym. dūt
aboute hym ared mantel
a pe feldunge a crolne of
porns. puttiden on his
hened. a a reed in his ryz
hond. and pe lke bolwde
byfore hym. pei scorniden
hym saynge. hail kyng
of ieris. a pei spittinge
in to hym. token a reed and
swyten his hened. and af
ter pei scorniden hy. vndo
pighym of pe mantel. pei
clopiden hym wip his
clonis. a lidden hy feto be
crucified. Capely pei goy
ge out. founden amā of
syruen comynge fro a
tolbue symount by na
me. rey constreyneden
hym pat he schuld ta
ke his crosse. a pei came
in to a place pat is cle
pid golgatha. pat is pe
place of caluarie. a pei
zamen hym for to dryn
ke wyn mengid wip gal
le. a whanne he hadde
tastide. he wolde not
drynke. sopeley astur p

pei haden crucified hy in.
pei depariden his clonis.
sendunge lot. pat it schul
de be fulfilled. pat is sei
de by pe pphete seynge.
pei partiden to hem my
clonis. a on my clon pei
somen lot. a pei sittige
tepen hym. a pei put
iden on his hened pe cau
se of hym writun. pis is
iste of nazareth. kyng of
ieris. // pāme elbo peiys
ben crucified wip hym.
oon on pe rythhalf a oon
on pe listhalf. forsope me
passunge for blasfemy
den hym. monynge her
hedis a seynge. wath 22
five to pee. pat distruest
pe temple of god. a in pe
pryde day bildist it aȝen.
Sane von in gilt. if pou
art pe sone of god. come
down of pe crosse. also and
pnas of p̄his scornynge
wip stribis a elder men
siden. he maad op mō
maaf. he may not make
hym gilt. caaf. if he is
kyng of israel. come he
now don fro pe crosse. F

we beleuen to hym/ he truf
 ty in god. deliuer he hy
 nolt yf he wole/ forsope
 he seide for I am godis sone/
 forsope & pe priefs pat we
 ren crucified wip hy. put
 den to hym wip reprove
 pe same ying/ sopehy fro
 pe sixte hour derknessis.
 ben made on al pe erpe.
 til to pe nynte hour/ & a
 boute pe nynte hour. ihc
 est wip greet voice seynge/
 holy hely samasabatany.
 pat is my god my god wif
 erto oz wif hast pou forsa
 ken me/ sopehy sunnen fro
 dyng pe & herynge. sei
 den/ pis clep hy hely/ & and
 oon of hem reuynge.
 fillid a sponge take wif
 eyfel oz wynegre. & put
 tid to a red. & zane to hy
 for to drynke but of sei
 den/ suffre pou. ke we
 wher hely come deliue
 ryng hy/ forsope ihc
 est sones cryng wip
 a greet voice. sente out
 pe spirit/ & lo pe deil
 of pe temple is fitt oz
rente in tillo pties fro

pe hiest al down/ & pe
 erpe is moned. & stonys
 ben doue. & biricles ben
 openyd. and many body
 es of seyntis pat slep
 ten oz weren deed. risen
 azen/ & pei goynge oute
 of her biricles. astur his
 resurrexioti camen into
 pe holy ate. & apperiden
 to many. wrenly centurio
 & pei pat weren wip hy
 lepyng ihc. pe monyge
 of pe erpe seen. & po pi
 gis pat weren don. ded
 den greeth seynge/ oh
 ly pis was godis sone/
 forsope pe weren pe ma
 ny wymen afer. pat
 sueden ihc. fro galile
 wip wiftryng to hym/
 amonge whiche was ma
 rye mandeleyn & marie
 of james & pe modir of
 ioseph. & pe modir of ze
 bedes sonyor/ forsope w
 han pe euening was
 made. pe came a riche
 man fro armathia. iose
 ph by name. pe which
 & he was distiple of.
 ihc/ he wente to pilate

and asfide pe body of ihu
pāne pilat comāundide pe
body to be zolden / a pe body
taken. ioseph wlaƿide it
in a clene sendel oz hūne
clap a putide it in hy o
newe biriel pat he hade
helpen in a stoon. a he wal
wid to a greet stoon at pe
dore of pe biriel a wente
alwey / forsope marie ma
deleyn a anoy mar ye we
ren pe sityngge azemes
pe sepulcre // Sopely on
pe toper day pat is afe
past euenyngge. pe pnaas
of p̄stus a pharisees ca
men to gidere to pilate sei
yngge / Sure we han myn
de for pilke traitour oz
disseyuour seide ȝit hūy
ge. astir pre daies i shal
rise azen / perfore comāu
de pou pe sepulcre for
to be kepte. al in to pe iud
day / lest pauenture his
disuplis comē a stelen hi
a seien to pe puple he
hay risen fro pe deap /
a pe last erroure shal
be worse pāne pe seyn /
pilat sey to hem / ȝee

han pe keepyngge. go ȝe.
kepe ȝe as ȝe lūmen / forso
pe pei goyngge forp. kep
ten oz warden pe se
pulcre. markyngge oz se
lyngge pe stoon wip ke
pers. xxvii.

Horsope in pe ene
myngge of pe sa
booth oz hallday.
pat st̄p̄nep in pe firste
day of pe weke. mar ye
mandeleyn came. a an
oyer marie for to see pe
sepulcre / a lo pe was ma
de a greet erpe monyngge /
forsope pe anngel of pe
lōd came don fro heuē.
a comyngge to urnyde a
wey pe stoon a sat don /
sopely his lōkyngge was
as lēyt. a his clōys wsh
te as snoll / forsope for
drede of hym pe keepers
ben aferd. a pei ben ma
d as ded men / forsope
pe anngel answeryngge.
seide to pe wymen / nyl
ȝe drede / for i wot pat
ȝe seken ihu pat is crua
fied / he is not here / so
pely he roos as he seide /

cume ze & see ye place wh
 here ye lord was put / &
 ze goynge soone seie to his
 discipulis & to petre. for he
 has risen / & lo he shal go bi
 fore you in to galilee / yere
 ze schulen see hym. loo /
 hane bifore seide to you
 and marie maudeleyn
 & anoy marie wente o. it
 soone sho pe briel wy
 drede & greet ioye reynge
 for to telle his discipulis
 & lo isc ran azen hem
 seynge / haile ze / for so pe
 pei camen to & helde his
 feet. & worshipide hy
 vane isc sey to hem /
 nyl ze drede / go ze telle
 ze to my brisen. pat pei
 go in to galilee. pe pei
 schulen see me / pe whiche
 whane pei haden gon.
 lo sume of pe sepers ca
 men in to pe atee & wol
 den to pe pmas of pntis.
 alle pntis pat weren
 don / & pei gedreden to
 seder wy pe elder me.
 a counsaal taken zauen
 to ye Emptis plente
 nouise money. seynge /

seie ze for his discipulis
 camo by myt & han sto
 len hym us slepynge /
 & zif vis be herd of pe
 phidont or iustice. Ade
 schulen counsaal hym &
 make you sikur / and pe
 money taken. pei dide
 as pei weren tauht &
 vis word is puplicid
 at pe iellis til in to vis
 day // For sope eleuene
 discipulis wenten in to
 galilee in to an hil wh
 ere isc had ordeynede
 to hem / & pei seynge
 hym. Worshypiden / so
 pely stane of hedonti
 den / & isc comynge to
 spake to hem seynge /
 al polver is zonen to
 me in heuene and in
 er pe / perfore ze goyn
 ge teche alle folkis
 or stemynge hem in pe
 name of ye fadir and
 of ye sone & of ye holy
 gost. redige ho to kepe
 alle pntis or whiche eilepis
 I haue comaundid to you / &
 lo I a wif you i alle dayes
 al pe endynge of ye world //

Marke pe enange
 list of god cho
 seu. & petris
 doue of bapty
 me. & in godis
 word disciple. prechid in
 israel ledynge afur flei
 stis a deken. he turwyd to
 fey of crist. wroot pegol
 pel in ytalie. schewynge
 per in what he owid to his
 thured. & to crist for why
 pe bigynnyng of his p
 aples he ordynynge ma
 voice of a pphetes excla
 macion. schewyn pe or
 dre of dekenes election.
 pat he pchynge pe foz
 dynden Ioon zacharies so
 ne sent out in voice of
 an aungel tellynge. not
 oonly godis sone maad
 man. but pe body of pe
 lord pat is churche in to
 alle yngis by pe word
 of godis voice quylened.
 schuld schewe in pe by
 gynnyng of his pre
 chynge of pe gospel.
 pat pe whiche pis re
 dynge schuld knolke
 to whom pe bigynnyng

of fleisthe in pe lord &
 ihu comynge to pe habi
 tade. pe fleisthe schuld
 knolke and in hy psp
 pe word pat is crist of
 pe voice. Ioon bapty
 pat in consoumment. pat
 is in former fadris. he
 hade lost. schuld fynde
 forsope hope he pe iherke
 of pe gospel fulfild enin
 ge. and fro pe bapty me of
 pe lord bigynnyng to p
 che god. ne traueled not
 to seie pe natyurte of
 fleisthe. pe whiche he hade
 seen in of bifore. but
 he expssynge pe exposi
 cion of alle pe deserte.
 hap schewid oute pe fas
 tynge of noubre. & pe
 noubre of fastynge pe
 temptation of pe fend.
 pe genacion of bestis.
 & pe scrupit of aungel.
 pat he ordynynge us to
 vnderstonde. alle yngy
 in schort. peynynge to
 gidre. & he schuld not
 do a wey pe auctorite
 of yng don. & y^e he
 schuld not denye y^e d

nesse of wegt to be pformed
for sope he seide to haue
lit alwey his polme
pat he myzt be had as
unborpi to psthode but
so mythe myzt eleccion
bifore ordeyned accordi
ge to pe feyn pat ney
so in pe werke of pe word
he shulde lese pat raper
he hade deserued in kynde
for of alifamdre he was
bischop of whom by alle
myngis werk of intenci
on was tokene hope to dis
pose pe seiyngis of pe
gospel in hym self & to
pe discipline of pe lawe
in hym self and to under
stonde goddis naty of pe
lord in flesshe pat is
manhed. pe wylfulle pi
as in us self first it
bikoney to be requyrd
a furward we wolen pi
as soure to be knowe
hauinge pe mode of
exortacion for he p
plamtyr and he pat
moistyr. be pe same
but he pat zmyer pe
necesse is god

The bigyn
nyng
of pe gos
pel of
hu crist
pe sone of
god. as
it is wri
ten in ysane pe phete
lo I sende myn angel
bifore yi face. pat shal
make ywey redy bifore
yee/ ye voice of oon cry
ge in disert. make ye redy
pe wey of ye lord. make
ye his papis rutfull Jon
was in disert baptysse
& pchynge ye baptisme
of penance in to remis
sion of synnes/ & alle
men of ierusalem went
oute to hym & al ye cite
of iude & weren baptysid
of hym in pe flood of
jordan. knowlechyng
her synnes/ and iohn was
clopid wy heris of chame
lis & a gurdil of skyna
bonte his lendis/ & he cre
stiffes & honp of pe wo
de. & behide seyinges &
a strongyr ym fribal

m
A9

come after me. of whom
 eachynge am not worthy
 for to vndo or vnbynde.
 ye knowe of his schoone
 I haue baptise you in wa-
 ter. sopeh he shal baptise
 you in pe holy goost. And
 it is don in po dayes. the
 came fro nazareth of ga-
 lilee. & was baptysd of
 Ion in Jordan. & anoon he
 styngge up of pe watir
 say heuene openyd and pe
 holy goost comynge don
 as a culier. & dwelthge
 in hym. & a voice is ma-
 de fro heuene. you art
 my loued sone. in pee I
 haue plesid. & anoon pe
 spirit puride hym in
 to disert. & he was in di-
 sette. forty dayes and
 forty nyghts. & was try-
 ad of satanas. & he was
 wyf bestis. and angelis
 wysperiden to hym. for
 sope after wat Ion was
 taken. the came in to ga-
 lilee. pchynge pe gos-
 pel of pe kyndom of
 god. & saynge. for tyme

is fulfillid. & pe kyndom
 of god shal come nyz. for
 pynke ze or dze penitence.
 & bileuep to pe gospel.
 and he passynge by sidis
 pe see of galilee. say sy-
 mouit. & andrew his bro-
 per. sendynge nettis in to
 pe see. sopeh pei weren
 fishers. & the seide to he
 come ze after me. I shal ma-
 ke you to be maad fishers
 of men. & anoon pe nettis
 forsaken. pei sueden hym.
 & he gon fory peim. & a lile.
 say James of zebede & Ion
 his broper. & hem in pe
 boot makynge nettis. &
 anoon he clepid hem. &
 zebede her fadir sefte in
 pe boot wyf hys seruau-
 tes. pei sueden hym. And
 pei wenten fory in to ca-
 farnaum. & anoon in pe
 sabotis he gon in in to pe
 synagoge. tanyte hem.
 & pei wondriden on his
 techynge. sopeh he was
 techynge hem as haui-
 ge polker. & not as scri-
 bis. & in pe synagoge of

hem Was a man in an vnde
ne spirit. & he cried sei
ge/ what to us & to pee. I
hu of nazareth/ hast you
comen bfore pe tyme.
for to distruye us & boot
pat you art pe holy of god
& the pretenyd to hym.
seyng/ weye dounbe
& go oute of pe man/ &
pe vndeue goost delire
kyng hy & crynge w
greet voice. Wente al
fro hym/ & alle me won
driden. so pat pei soug
to adere amonge hem
seyng/ what is pis
pyng/ what is pis uelbe
techyng/ for in polber
he comaudip to vndeue
spiritis. and pei obey
then to hym & pe tale
of tyngs of hy. Wente
forp anon in to al pe
cuntre of galilee/ & anon
pei goyng out of pe
synagoge. camen into
pe house of symount
& andrelke wyf Jany
& joon/ copenly and pe
modir of symount is
wyf sele in felles restid

or lay sele in felles/ & ano
pei seien to hym of hir/
& he comyge to. rerid up.
pe hous of hir take and
anoon pe seu leste hir
& the mynystride to he
forsope pe euenyng
made where pe fume
wente don. pei brouz
ten to hym alle haup
ge puel & haupge dene
his/ & al pe ate was ge
derid at pe zate. & he
holide manye pat we
ren tranellid wyf dulse
soelbis. and he kest out
many denelis/ & he suf
fride hem not for to spe
ke. for pei knewen hy/
and in pe moornyng
ful erly he risyng gon
out wente in to diserte
place. & praied se & sy
mount sued hym. & pey
pat weren wyf hym/ &
whaime pei haden foun
den hym. pei seiden to
hym/ for alle men seche
pee/ & he seip to hem/ go
me in to pe nexte townes
& cytres. pat & se I pe
che/ for to pis pyng. I

came / & he was schynge
in ye synagoges of hem
& in al galilee / & castyng
out fendis / And a lepron
se man came to hym / & se
chynge hym / & ye knee
folden / saide / yf þu wilt
you maist cense me / for
sope ihs hauinge mercy
of hym / streynte out his
hond / & touchynge hym
saiy to hym / I wole / be þu
maad cleue / & whāne he
hadde seide / anon yele
pre pnde alwey fro hym
& he is clenfid / & he prete
myd to hym / & anon he
put hym out / & saiy to
hym / see you / seye to no
man / but go sthewe pee
to ye pncs of p̄as / & of
fre for y clenfyng / & y
as pat moyses had into
witnessynge to hem / &
he gon out / began to p
che & defame o pupli
sthe ye word / so pat noli
he myzte not oppnyly go
in to ye cite / but be wy
outen fory in disert pla
as / and yei camen to gi
dere to hym / on al sidis //

And este ^{cc. vii.}
he entride into
cappharnaum /
after eyn̄tē dayes /
& it was herd pat he was
in an house / & manye came
to gidere so pat it toke not
ney at ye zate / & he spat
to hem al word / & ye came
to hym men bryngynge
a seke man in palſye / & ye
which was boyn of foure
men / & whāne yei myzte
not offre hym to hys for
ye cūpanye of puple / yei
maden ye roof naked / & her
he was / & makynge oppn
yei senten don ye bed / in
which ye seke man in pa
lesye lay / sope whāne
ihs saiy ye fey of hem /
he seiȝ to ye seke man in
palesye / sone / y synes
ben forȝenen to pee / for
sope þe weren sume of
ye scribis sittynge & ym
fynge in her hertis / wh
at speke y he yis pus
he blasfemy / who may
forȝyue synes / no but
god aloone / & ye which
pyng / anon Enolwen.

by pe holy goost. for pei po
inten wip inue hem selfe
ist seip to hem. What pin
ken ze pese pmgis i zoure
hertis. What is lister for
to seye to pe seke man in
palsie. Synnes ben forze
uen to pee. or for to seye
rise take pi bed & walke.
sopeli pat ze witen pat
man? sone hay polber in
erpe to forzyue synnes.
he say to pe seke man in
palsie. I seye to pee rise
up take pi bed & go in to
pin hous. and anon he
ros up. and pe bed taken
up. he wente bifore alle
men. so pat alle me wo
driden & honouride god.
sayinge. for we sayen ne
uer so. & he wente oute
estfomys to pe see & al
pe cupaye of puple
came to hym. & he may
to hem. & whanne he pas
side. he sey leuy alphe
sittinge at pe tollboye.
& he say to hym. sue
me. and he risinge. sue
de hym. & it is don whā

he sat at pe mete in his
hous. many puplicans
& synful men. saten to
sidre at pe mete wip ihu
& his discipulis. Sopeli p
weren many pat folowide
hym. and scribis & fari
sees seeynge. for he ete w
puplicans & synful me.
siden to his discipulis. W
hi ety & drynk zoure
maistir wip puplicans
& synners. pā pping
herd. ihu seip to hem. hole
men han no nede to ale
che. but pei pat han yuel
forsope I came not to cle
pe iust men. but synis. and pe disa
whipe discipulis of ioun & pharisees. We
of farisees fasten. but pharisees we
in discipulis fasten not. ien fastig. &
& ihu seip to hem. Wher pei come and
pe sonys of weddignis. sauen to hy
moln faste. as longe
as pe spouse is in wip
hem. hou longe tyme
pei han pe spouse wip
hem. pei moln not fas
te. forsope dayes schule
come. whanne pe spouse
shal be taken alwepe

fro hem: & þane þei schule
 faste in þo dayes/ no mā seþ
 in a pacche of rynd or nelbe
 cloy: to an olde cloy/ ellis he
 taky away þe nelbe supply
 ment or pacche: & a more bre
 dyng is maad/ & no man se
 dyþ nelbe wyu in to olde bote
 les or wyu vessels: ellis þei
 schal berst þe wyu vessels.
 & þe wyu schal be held out:
 & þe wyu vessels schulen p
 ythe/ but nelbe wyu schal
 be sent in to nelbe wyu
 vessels/ & it is don eftone
 whaime þe lord walkide in
 þe sabotis by þe cornys: &
 his discipulis ligumen to pas
 se forþ & plucke eris/ cope
 by þe farisees seiden/ loo
 what þi discipulis don in sa
 botis: þat is not lesful/
 & he seip to hem/ radde ze
 neie what dauid dide wha
 ne he hadde nede & he him
 gride & þei þat weren byp
 hym. hou he wente in to
 þe hous of god. and durabi
 ashar þnce of þstis: & ete
 louys of pposicion þe lshi
 de it was not lesful to ete
 no but to þstis aloon &

he zaf to hem þat weren byp
 hym/ & he saide to hem/ þe
 sabot is made for man: &
 not aman for þe sabot/ &
 so manes sone is lord: all
 of þe sabotis. **m. a.**

And he entred eftsoone
 in to þe synagoge &
 þe was aman. haupn
 ge adrye hond/ & þei aspiode
 hym. 3f he helide in sabotis:
 for to accuse hym/ & he seip to
 þe man haupnge a dry hond/
 rise in to þe myddil/ & he saip
 to hem/ is it lesful to do wel
 in þe sabotis or yuel: for
 to make a soule saaf. whe
 þir to lese/ & þei weren stille/
 & he biholdynge hem abou
 te byp wrappe. haupse for
 we upon þe blyndnesse of
 her herte: seip to þe man/
 holde forþ ym hond/ & he
 held forþ. & þe hond is res
 toid to hym/ copely þe
 pharisees seynge goþe
 out anoon maden anseil
 byp erodians azens hy:
 hou þei schulden lese hy/
 forsoþe ihe byp his disa
 plis wente to þe see/ &
 myche tūpanye fro galile

& Jude Suede hym & froie
 rusalem & fro ydume. and
 byonde Iordau & vei pat a
 bonte tpre and sydon a gre
 te multitude herynge vo
 yngis pat he dide. came
 to hym / & the seip to hys
 discipulis pat pe lital boot
 schulde Ene hym for pe
 panys of purple leste vei
 oppresseden hym / Oth he
 helde manye so pat pey
 felden faste to hym. pat
 vei schulden touche hym
 for sove hou manye eile
 hadden oors or woundis
 & vntene spiritus whane
 vei saien hym fulde don
 to hym. & crieden seynge
 you art pe sone of god / and
 grete he manasside he
 pat vei schulden not make
 hym oppyn or knollen / &
 he stymge in to an hil
 cride to hym whom he
 wolde / and vei camen to
 hym. & he made pat ve
 weren tkehe wry hym
 & pat he schulde sende
 hem for to pche / & he zane
 to hem polber of helthe
 sekenessis. & of castyge

out fendis / & to Symount
 he putte name petre. & Ia
 mys of zebede & Joon pe
 broper of Jamys & he put
 tide to hem names boenar
 ges. pat is pe sonys of pou
 dryng / & andrelwe & philip
 & Bartholomelwe & mathelwe
 & Thomas & Jamys alphey
 & Gadde & Symon canace
 & Judas scarioth pat buray
 od hym / & vei camen to an
 hous and pe cupaye of
 purple came to gudere este
 soone so pat vei myzten
 not ney ete bred / & whane
 his tynnesmen hadden herd
 vei wenten oute for to hol
 de hym / sopehy vei saide
 for he is turnyd in to wo
 denesse / & ve scribis pat
 camen don fro ierusalem
 seiden / for he hay behabul
 & for in pe pnce of denchis
 he casty out fendis / & he
 gederid to gudere. he saide
 to hem in pablis / hon may
 sathanas caste oute satha
 nas. / & if a rellime be de
 prude in it self. pe ilkere
 wme may not stonde / &
 if an hors be dyspyorkid

on it self. pe ilke house may
not stonde / & yf sathanas
happ risen agenes hy self
he is dispoikd / & he shal
not molbe stonde but hay
an ende / no man goy into
a strong mann⁹ hous may
take away his vesselles.
no but he bynde firste pe
strong man & pane he sh
shal dyner selfe raupsthe
his hous / treush / seye to
you. for alle synes & blas
femes by whiche yei han
blaffemed. schulen be for
zenen to pe sonys of men
sopely he pat shal blas
feme agenes pe holy goos.
shal not haue remysst
oun in to wy outen ende
but he shal be gilty of
edelapynge trespass / for
yei sanden he hap an vn
clene spirit / & his modir
& bripereu camen. & pe sto
dynge wy oute for. sen
ten to hym clepyng hys
& a companye stode aboute
hym / & yei saien to hy
lo yn modir & yn bripereu
wy out for. Selen pee
& he answerynge to he.

sap / who is my modir & my
bripereu. & biholdynge he
aboute pat saten in pe cu
pas of hym. he sap / lo my
modir & my bripereu / for
sope who pat soy pe wille
of god. he is my brop^r &
my sistre & modir.

And este the bigan for
to tesse at ye see.
a myche companye
of puple is gaderid to hy.
so pat he seynge in to a
boot sat in ye see / & al pe
companye of puple was
aboute ye see on ye lond
& he taryte hem in yablis
many yngis / & he sende
to hem in his techynge
here ze / lo aman collyng
soy out for to solle / & pe
while he collyp. an oper
seed. felde aboute yelkey
and briddis of heuen or of
pe or camen & enen it / for
sope anopir felde don on
strong places. wher it sh
de not myche erpe / &
anoon it sprong up. for
it had not depnesse of er
pe / & whane pe same ros
up. it welwude for hete.

& it dried up: for it hade
 not rote, & anoy felde doū
 in to pornes. and pornes
 stryden up & stranglide
 it & it zaue not fruyte/
 & anoy felde doū in to go
 de lond. & zaue fruyt str
 inge up & waxinge, & oon
 brout pritty foold & oon
 sxyt fold & oon an ym
 drid fold, & he seide he
 pat hay eris of heringe
 heere. And whanne he
 was synfuler or by hym
self. po tuelue pat we
 ren wy by hym. as liden by.
 for to expolue pe pable/
 and he seide to hem. to you
 it is zouen for to knowe
 pe wysse or fruyte of
 pe kyndom of god. so
 peky to hem pat he wy
 oute fozp alle pringis be
 maad in pablis pat pe
 seeyng. & see not. & pe
 heryng. here & vndur
 stonde not. pat sūtime
 pei ben coultid & syn
 nes ben forzeuen to he
 & he say to hem. wy
 ten ze not vis pablis
 & hou ze schule knowe

alle pablis. he pat sollyp.
 sollyp a word. pese copels
 ben pat aboute pe weye.
 where pe word is solken/
 & whanne pei hau herd. a
 noon comey sathanas. &
 taky albey alword pat is
 is solken in heris. & also
 pese ben pat ben solken
 ou a stoon. pe whiche wh
 ane pei hau herd anoon ^{pe word.}
 taken it wy wyge & pei
 han not rote in he silt
 but pei ben tempel pat
is lant a lital tyme. aft
 ward tribulacionu pro
 sen up & psecucion for
 pe word. anoon pei be
 schandrid. & p be ope
 pat ben solken in por
 nys. pese it ben pat he
 ren pe word. and mysfes
 te of pe world & dysent
 of riches. & op char
 ge of couetise entrin
 se in stranglen pe
 word. & it is made wy
 outen fruyt. & pese it
 ben pat ben solke on
 good lond. pe whiche
 heren pe word & taken
 & maken fruyt oon.

or vnder a
bed

pryncy fold. oon syttfolde.
 a oon an hundred folde.
 And he seide to he wher
 a lantne come. pat it be
 put vnder a bushel.
 wher not pat it be put
 vpon a candlestake. forso
 pe ye is no pryncy hid. p
 nshal not be maad opyt
 nesh ony pryncy is pryncy.
 ye whiche nshal not come
 in to apert. yf ony man
 haue eris of herynge he
 re he. and he seide to he
 see ze what ze heeren in
 what mesure ze meten.
 it nshal be meten to zou
 a be cast to zou. sovely
 it nshal be zouen to hy
 pat hap. a it nshal be
 taken alkei fro hy pat
 hap not. also pat p^rhe
 hap. a he seide. so pe
 kyndom of god is. as yf
 aman kyste seed in to pe
 erpe. a he slepe. a rise
 up in nytt. a day. a bri
 ge fory seed. a wey faste.
 pe while he woot not.
 forsope pe erpe bi his
 owne woorching maky
 fruyt. firste an erbe.

or grene corn. afterward
 an eer. afterward ful
 fruyt in ye erpe. a wha
 ne of it self. it hap from
 te fory fruyt. anoon he
 sendy a sikel. or hoke.
 for ye ripe corn comep. tyne et.
 a he seide. to what pryncy
 nshulen we likene ye ky
 dom of god. or to what
 pable. nshulen we compa
 rison it. as a corne of
 seneney. ye whiche wha
 ne it is sorben in ye erpe
 is lesse painne alle ye see
 dis. pat ben in ye erpe.
 a whane it is bred. or qm
kened. it stey up in to a
 tree. a is made more pa
 ne alle wortis. or erbis.
 a it nshal make greet
 braunchis. so pat brud
 dis of heuene. r. olu. dib
 elle. vnder pe. nshal sibe
pos. a in many. sicke
 pablis he spak to hem.
 alword. as pei mynzen
 here. sovely he spak
 not to hem. wip oute
 pable. forsope he exp
 olined to his discipulis
 alle pryncis. on sdis hond

þ of bootis were wth hy And y was
made a gylt tēpest of wyde & sende
floodis to ye shipe so y^e shipe was
fyllid And he was i ye shippe

57

or by hem self & he sayd to he
in þat day whāne euening
was made/ passe we ayme
ward & þei leynge þe cū
pauze of purple token hym
so þat he was in þe boot sle
pyng on a pilwe & þei
reisen hym & sayn to hy
maister þeyney it not
to þee þat we þysshens
A he risynge up manasid
to þe wynd & sende to þe
see/ he stalle wexe donle/
A þe wynd celside & greet
peffbleness is made/ A
he sayd to hem/ What dre
den ze/ not yt han zee
fery. A þei dreden wy
greet drede & sanden to
eche oþer/ Who gessist
you is þis/ for þe wynd
A þe see obersthen to hy

And þei amen
on þe walwe of
þe see in to re
antire of aya seues, and
anoon aman in vndene
spirit ran oute of a by
riel to hym goynge ou
te of þe boot. þe which
man hadde an house
in ayns o birchels &

ney wy cheynes nold myz
te ony man bynde hym/
for ofte tymes he bounden
in stollis & cheynes. hade
broken þe stollis to smalle
gobets/ & no mā myzte
damm or make hy tane
A calmore myzt a day in
birchels & hillis arynge
A betynge hym self wy
stomys/ soþely he seþge
ist afer. ran a worsthy
de hym/ A he arynge
wy greet voice sande/
What to me & to þee
you istn þe sone of god.
hizest. I dūre þee by
god. þat you turment
not me/ forsoþe ist sai
de to hym/ you vndene
spirit go out fro þe man
A ist aske hym/ What
name is to þee. A he sayd
to hym/ a leguon is na
me to me for we ben ma
nye/ A he preied hym
myche þat he schulde
not put hym oute of
þe antire/ forsoþe þe
was þe aboute þe hil.
a floc of hoggis. leselv
ynge in feldis. & þe

þe cheynes &

goynge
oute

un to elbo you
fande. & were
fragid & pe see

spiritus hyden ihu seyn
ge sende us in to hoggis.
pat we entre in to hem &
anoon ihe guntide to hem
& pe budene spiritus entri
den in to pe hoggis. and
wry greet hir & haste pe
floc was cast down in to
pe see. Sopen pe pat fed
den hem. fledden & tolden
in to pe alee & in to feel
dis. and pe wenten oute
for to see what was don. &
pei camen to ihu. & pei see
hym pat was trauelide
of pe fend. sittinge doryd.
& of hool mynde. & pey
dredde. and pei tolde to
hem pat sayen. hou it
was don to hym pat ha
de a fend & of pe hoggis.
and pei bigunen for to fy
hym pat he schulde go
away fro her costis. &
whane he styede in to a
boot. he pat was true
lide of pe deny. bigan
to fy hym pat he schul
de be wry hym. Sopen
ihe resteyned hym not.
but serp to hym. so p^r

in to ym hous to pyne. &
telle to hem hou many pi
gis pe lord had don to pee.
a hadde mercy of pee. & he
wene forp. & bigan for to
pise in decapoly. pat is a
cuntre of ten citis. holl
many pingis ihe hadde don
to hym. & alle me wonda
den. & whane ihe hadde sty
ed in to pe boot. estresone
ou pe see. myche comparye
of purple came to gider to
hym. & was aboute pe see.
a oon of pe phas of syna
gogis. by name iayrus.
came & seynge hym fel
don at his feet. & preiede
hym myche seynge. for
why my doughter is in pe
laste yngis. wome you
put ym hond on hir. pat
she be saf & houe. & he ke
te forp wry hym. & myche
comparye of purple suede
hym. & oppside hym. &
a woman pat was in pe
flur of blood abelue ze
re. & had suffrid many
yngis. of ful manye
lechis. & spendid alle

hir pringis. & no ping pro
funde but moze hade wor
se. Whanne she hade herd
of ihu. she came in pe ayn
me by hynde. & touchide
his cloy. Sope she seide.
for if y shal touche o his
cloy. I shal be safe. & anon
pe welte of blood is dried up
and she felde in body. pat
she was helid of pe wound
o sikenesse. & anon the
knowynge in hym self. pe
wif. & she pat was gon
out of hym. he turnide
to pe aynme. & sayd. who
who touchide my cloy.
& his discipulis saiden to
hym. you seeft pe aynme
mye pissinge pee. & sayd
you who touchide me.
and the lord aboute for
to see hir pat had do his
wound. for sope pe woma
dredynge & qualynge
wrynge pat it was don
in hir. came & fel don by
foze hym. & saide to hy
al treupe. forsope the
seide to hir. douztir y
ferp hay made pee saaf.

so in pees. & he saf fro
pe sikenesse. & the hye
kyng. massangre came
to pe pnce of a synago
ge saynge. for y douzt
is deed. what trancliste
you pe maistr. for y. for
sope pe word herd pat
was seide. the seide to pe
pnce of pe synagoge. myl
you drede. oonly bilene
you. & he resteyned not
ony man to sue hym. no
but petre. jamps. & jon pe
brof of jamps. & pei came
in to pe pe house of pe pnce
of pe synagoge. & he
seez noise and men wepi
ge & weilynge myche.
and he gon in sayp to hem.
what ben ye troblid and
wepen. & pe wench is not
deed. but slepy. & pe
scorniden hym. forsope
alle cast out. he taky fa
dir & modir of pe wench.
& hem pat weren wry
hym. & pei entren in
where pe wench lay. &
he holdynge pe hond of
pe wench. sayp to hir.

tabna ampy. pat is mepre
tid or ex polued. Wenthe to
pee / say rise pou. a noon
pe wenthe ros a walkide / so
pely she was of twelue year
a pei weren abaushed wip gre
te stonynge / a he comaundide
to hem greetly. pat no ma
shulde write it / a he coman
dide to yue hir for to ete / and
ist gon out peim. Wenthe
to his olue aunte. a his dish
pisa folowiden hym.

A

Ad pe saboth made.
ist bigan for to teche
in a synagoge / a
many herynge wondriden
in his techynge. saynge
of whemys to pis. alle pese
pyngis. a what is pe wise
me pat is zouen to hym.
a suchte stues pat be ma
de by his hond. whes pis
is not a symy or carpent
pe sone of marie / pe brop
of janyis a josph. judas
a symount. wher his
sistris ben not here wip
us. a pei weren stalandid
in hym / a ist saide to he
for a pphete is not wipou

ten honour. no but in
his olue aunte. a in his
hous a in his syn / a he
myzte not make pe ony
stue. no but helide a selbe
seek men. pe hondis put
to / a he wondride for pe
unbilene of hem / a he
wente aboute castelles in
empyron techynge / a he de
pide twelue a bigan for
to sende hem by tbo. a
zane to hem polver of vn
clene spiritis / a coman
dide hem pat pei shulde
not take ony pyng in pe
weye. no but a zerd onli
not a stipe ne breed ne
money in pe گردil. but
shod wip sandeis pat is
open above. a pat pey
weren not clopid wip tbo
cootis / a he sande to hem
whider eile ze sthulen en
tre in to an hous. dille ze
pe til ze gon out peim.
a who eile sthulen not
resteyne ne here zoll. ze
soynge oute fro peim.
shakey alwey pe ponder
fro zoure feet. in to hyt

nessynge to hem/ & per goi
ge oute pshiden pat men
shulden do penaunce/ & per
besten out many fendis.
& anoyntiden wiy oile ma
ny oek men/ & per weren
helid/ & kyng eroude herde/
for sope his name was ma
de cyyr/ & he saide/ for ion
baptist hay risen azen fro
deed men/ & pfore oones
ben wyout i hym/ sopeh
oper seiden/ for it is he
ly/ but of seiden/ for it is
a pphete as oon of pphets/
pe which ping herd/ erou
de say/ wshom i bihedide
ion/ vis hay risen fro
deed men/ for sope wille
eroude sende a helde ion
& boond hym in to psonn.
for erodias pe wyf of filip
his broper/ for he hadde
weddiid hir/ sopeh ion
saide to eroude/ it is not
lesful to pee/ for to haue
pe wyf of y broper/
erodias for sope leyd aspi
es to hym/ & wolde oke
hym & myzte not/ sope
ly eroude dred ion wittige

hym a iust man & hoobly
A lepte hym/ & hym herd/
he dide many pings/ &
gladly herd hym/ and wsh
aue a conenable day hade
fallen/ eroude in his bir
pe day made a sep to pe
prias & tribunes & to pe
firte or grettef of gali
lee/ & wshane pe doumtir
of wille herodias hadde
entride in/ & lepte a plesid
to eroude & also to men
restynge/ pe kyng/ saide
to pe wench/ aske von
of me what von wolt/
& i shal gyue to pee/ &
he stode to hir/ for what
eide von shalt aske i sh
al gyue to pee/ vonz pe
half of my kyndom/ pe
wshiche wshanne she
hadde gon out/ saide to
hir modir/ what shal
i aske/ & and she saide/
pe hed of ion baptist/
and wshiche she hadde
entride/ anoon wiy hast
to pe kyng/ she askid
seyng/ wille pat anon
von gyue to me i a dyshe

+ for his ooye & for me sit
tuge at ye mete. He wolde
not make her hary or sorp/

marke

+ ye hed of ion baptist/ & ye
kyng was sorp/ but amā
queller sent. he comāndide
ye hed of ion baptist for
to be brought/ & he bihedid
hym in ye ppsom. & broom
te his hed in a dishe &
zane it to ye Wenchel/ &
ye Wenchel zane it to hur
modur/ ye which yng herd.
his discipulis camen. & token
his body & puttiden it in
a buriel/ & ye aposthis com
ynge to gidere to ihu. tol
den to hym alle yngis of
pei hadden do & tauhte &
he seip to hem/ come zehy
zoure self in to a diserte
place. reste ze a litil for
sope yf weren many pat
camen & wenten azen &
pei hadden not space for
to ete/ & pei sitzinge into
a boot. wenten in to a di
sert place by hem self
& pei saken hem goiwe
alsey & many knollen
& goynge on feet fro
alle arees pei rimen
to gidere ydir & camen
bisfaze hem/ & the goiwe

out say myche aipanye.
& hade nity of hem for pey
weren as shepe not hary
se & shepherde/ & he biga
for to teche hem many pi
sis/ & whāne myche hour
was made nolt. his disci
pulis camen myz sayinge/
his place is desert. & nolt
ye hour hay passid/ leue
hem. pat pei goynge into
ye next townes & vilagis.
hie to hem metis whiche
pei schulen etc/ & he ans
werynge seip to hem/
zyue ze to hem for to ete/
& pei seiden to hym/ goi
ge hie we lounys twy alko
hundrid pens. & alle schu
len zyue hem for to ete/
& he seip to hem/ hou ma
ny lounys han ye/ so ze &
seep/ & whāne pei hadden
knollen. pei saken fyne
& alko ppsom/ & he comā
dide to hem. pat pei schul
den make alle me sitte
to mete aftar aipanyes
upon grene hay/ & pey
paten doti by pries. by
hundreds and fifties/ &
ye fyne lounys taken &

A tibo fisthes. He byhol
dyng in to heuene. bles
side and brake lonyo. a
zane to his discipulis. pat
pei schulden put bifoze
hem/ and he depteide tibo
fisthis to alle/ a alle ere
a weren fulfildid/ a pey
token pe relif of broken
mete tibelue coffyns ful
a of pe fisthes/ sopeh pei
pat eten weren fyue pou
sand of men/ and anoon
he constreyned his discipulis
for to styte up in to aboot.
pat pei schulde passe by
foze hym oil pe see to kerf
sanda. pe while he lefte
pe puple/ a whane he ha
de lefte hem. he wente in
to an hill for to preye/
a whane euemyng was.
pe boot was in pe myddil
see. a he aldon in pe land.
a he say hem traueylng
in robyng. sopeh pe
wynd was contrarie to
hem/ a aboute pe four
pe walynge of pe nygt.
he wandrynge on pe see
came to hem. and wolde
passe hem/ a as pei sien

hym wandrynge on pe
see. gessiden for to be a
fantum. a crieden/ for
sope alle sinen hyt
pei weren disturbide/
and anoon he spak wy
hem. a seide to ho/ truste
ze/ i am. nylze drede/
a he came up to hem in
to pe boot. and pe wynd
cesside/ a pei more won
driden wyne hem/ for
pei vnderstoden not of
of pe lonyo/ sopeh her
herte was blindid/ a
whane pei had passid
oil pe see. pei came in
to pe lond of genazareth
a setten to lond/ a wha
ne pei hadden gon out
of pe boot. anoon pei
kuelken hym/ a pey
reynge yorn/ al pe
cuntre. bigime to bere
hem aboute in beddis/
hem pat haden yuele.
where pei herden hy
to be/ a whider euere
he entride in to vilages
or townes or in to citees.
pei puttiden sek me.
in stretis a pyden hym

pat pe schulden touche
 eyn pe heine of his clop
 & hou many eile touchide
 hym: weren made saaf //

nd ^{le. vii}

A farisees & sume
 scribis comynge
 fro ierusalem
 comen to ladere to hym
 and whane pei hadden
 seen sume of his dyspulis
 etc bredd wyþ comoun
 hondis. pat is not wasch
 en pei blameiden/ forso
 pe farisees & alle ielbes
 eten not no but pei was
 then ofte þ hondis. hol
 dyngge pe tradiciois &
 statutis of elder men/
 & pei turnynge agayne
 fro chepyng. eten not no
 but pei ben wasthen/ &
 many oþr ymgis ben
 pat ben taken to þe for
 to kepe. waschynge is of
 cuppis & cruetis. & of uel
 sels of brasse & of boddis
 and pharisees & scribis.
 askiden hym senynge/
 why gon not þi dyspulis
 astir pe tradicoun of
 elder men. but wyþ

comyn hondis pei eten
 bred. & he answerynge
 saide to hem/ Hæye apþe
 cied wel of zolb ypocritis
 as it is writun/ þis peple
 woertshyp me wyþ lippis
 forsoþe her herte is fer
 fro me/ in veyn trenly.
 pei woertshypen me. techi
 ge doctnes & pceptes of
 men/ forsoþe ze forsakyn
 ge pe maundement of god.
 holden pe tradiciois of
 men waschynge of cētis
 & cuppis & many oþr ym
 gis like to pese ze dw/ &
 he saide to hem/ Wel ze han
 made pe maundement
 of god void. pat ze kep
 zoure tradicoun/ forsoþe
 moises seide/ woertshype
 þi fadir & þi modir/ and
 he pat schal curse fadir
 & modir. by ðeþ dpe he/
 soþely ze schen/ ȝif ama
 schal sey to fadir & mo
 dir. cokolan. pat is what
 eile ȝfte of me. schal
 pfitte to pee/ & ou ze suf
 fren not hym do any þis
 to fadir & modir. brekyn
 pe word of god by zoure

tradicioun pat ze han zone
 ⁊ ze don many fliche of pyn
 gis and he eftersonys cleyn
 geto pe compaignie of puple
 saide to hem ze alle heere
 me ⁊ vnderstonde no pyn
 wip outen man is entring
 in to hym. pat may defoule
 hym but po pynge pat come
 forp of aman. po it ten pat
 defoulen aman forsope nif
 ony man haue eeris of he
 ringe here he ⁊ whanne
 he hadde entride in to an
 hous fro pe compaignie of
 puple. his discipulis axide
 hym pe palle ⁊ he saip
 to hem. So ⁊ ze bet conpr
 uident or vnlvise vndur
 stonde ze not for al pynge
 wip oinen forp entring
 in to aman. may not defou
 le hym for it hap not ent
 rid in to his herte. but in
 to his wombe ⁊ bynepe it
 gop out purginge alle me
 tis. Sopeli he saide for pe
 pynge pat gon out of aman.
 po defoulen aman forsope
 fro wip yme of pe herte
 of men comen forp yuele
 pouztis. auouites. formica

cioms. mansleynge. pestis.
 couertis. Wickidnessis. gy
 le. vnchastite. yuel yze blay
 pheynnes. pride ⁊ folk. alle
 pese yueles. fro wip yme.
 comen forp ⁊ defoule aman.
 And isic rhynges peny.
 Wente in to pe coostis of yre
 ⁊ sydon ⁊ he gon in to an ho
 use. wolde no man write or
enelle. ⁊ he mygt not dare
or be pur. Sopeli a womā
 anon as she herde of hy.
 whos doumtur hade an vnde
 ne spirit. entride ⁊ felle
 down at his feet. Sopeli pe
 womā was hepen of pe ge
 nianoun of cyrifen ⁊ she
 hyde hy pat he wolde caste
 out a deuel of hir dwytur.
 pe lwhich seide to hir. suffice
 pou souys to be fulfilled
 first it is not good to take
 pe bred of sonys. ⁊ sende
 it to houndes. and she
 answerynge seide to hy. ⁊
 forsope lord. for wihy ⁊
 lital wihelms eten vndir
 pe bozd of pe crumes
 of children. and isic saip
 to hir for pis word go
 pe send is wente out of

in duntur: & wshame sthe
 hate gon: doom: She fond
 ye weiche smyng on pe
 bed: and pe deuel gon out
 fro hir: And estedny's.
 f 8 the goynge out fro reen
 dis or costis of tyre: came
 porlb sydon to pe see of
 galilee: pat is hytby
 pe nydel endis of decapo
 leos: & pei ladden to hy
 a deaf man & dumble.
 & piden hy pat he put
 to hym pe bond: & he ta
 kynge hy asidis fro pe
 cūpanye. sente hy's
 fnyngis in to his litil
 eeris: & spmyng: tou
 chide his tonge: and he
 hsholdynge in to heud:
 souwde wip the & swip to
 effeta: pat is he pou op
 nyd: and anoon his ee
 tis were opened: & pe
 bond of his tonge is
 vnbouiden: & he spat
 rytly: & he comaundide
 to hem: pat pei shulden
 sepe to no man: forsope
 hon myche he comūdid
 to hem so myche more:
 pey pshiden more: & by

pat pe more pei wondiden
 saynge: he did wel alle
 yngis: & deaf me he made
 to here: and dumble men:
 for to speke

A No dayes wshame
 myche cūpanye of pe
 pul was wip ihu: &
 haden not what pey
 shulden etc: his dyspplis
 gederid to gidere he sayp to
 hem: I haue reirpe on pe
 cūpanye of purple: for loo
 uolb pe pridde day pei sul
 teynen or abiden me: & han
 not what pey shulde etc:
 & if y leue he fastynge i
 to her housis: pei shulde
 faile in pe weye: forsope
 sūme of hem came fro
 fer: & pe dyspplis answe
 riden to hy: wsher of shal
 aman molle fille hem:
 wip looues: here in wil
 dirnesse: & he axide he
 hou manye looues han
 ze: & pe wshiche sūden se
 uen: & he comaundide pe
 cūpanye sitte dū on pe
 erpe: & he takynge pe
 seuene loouys & wyge
 paukyngis: brak & zaf

ende

A

to his dyspulis. pat pey
schulden put forp/ and pei
seten forp to pe cuppaye/
A pei hadden a felbe smale
fisthis. & he blesside hem.
& comaundide for to be put
forp/ & pei alle & ben ful
fild/ and token up pat
lest of rebf. sene lepes
ful/ forsope pei pat ere
weren foure poustand of
men & he leste hem/ & ano
on he wente up in to a
boot wip his dyspulis.
& came in to pe ptes of
dalmatytha/ & pharases
wenten out. & bigumen
to seke orare wip his se
chinge a tokene of hym
fro heuene. temptynge
hym/ & he soulyngge wip
hine in spirit sayn/ wsh
at sekyn his senaacion
a tokene. treuh/ I sey to
you a token shal not be
gouen to his senaacion/
& he leuyngge he wente
up estesonys in to a boot.
& wente ouer pe see/ &
pei forzaten to take bred.
& pei hadden wip hem
but oo loaf in pe boot

A he comaundide to hem.
seyngge/ See ze & bepbar.
of pe souredolh of furi
sees. & of pe souredolh of
eroude/ & pei poynten con
to anop/ sayngge/ for we
han not lones/ pe wshich
pyng knolwen. ife seip
to hem/ what penken ze.
for ze han not brede.
knolbeze not yet ue andur
stonden/ han ze yet your
herte blyndid/ ze han yge
yen seen not. & ze han y
ge eeres heren not/ nep
ze han mynde. wshanne
y brak fyue lones in to
fyue poustand. & hou
manye coffyns ful of
broken mete token ze up/
pei saien to hym/ tikel
ue/ wshane & sene lones
in to foure poustande
of men. hou many lep
ful of broken mete tok
ze up/ & pei saie sene/
& he saide to hem/ hou
vndirstonden ze not
yet/ And pei comen to
bethsaida. & pei bryngen
to hym a blynd man.
& pyden hym pat he

schulke touche hym / & ye
 hond of pe blynd man take.
 he ledde hym out of pe stre
 te / & spytynge in to his ye
 his hondis put to. he axide
 hy if he say any yng / & he
 byholdynge serp. I see me
 as trees walkynge / after
 ward estelones. he putte
 hondis on his yen & he by
 gan for to see / & he is resto
 red. so pat he say derly
 alle yngis. & he sente
 hy in to his hous serge /
 go in to ym hous / & if y
 shalt go in to pe strete.
 say to no man / And the
 entride yn & his dyspulis
 in to pe castels of cesarie of
 philip. & in pe weye he
 axide his dyspulis. sayge
 to hem / Whom sayen me
 me for to be / ye wylliche
 answeriden to hy saynge /
 siune ioon baptist of saye
 hely. but of sayen as oon of
 pe pphetis / vane he say to
 hem / but whom saye me
 for to be / petre answeringe
 serp to hym / you art qst
 & he pteynde hem pat
 pei schulken not say to

any man of hym / & he byga
 for to teche hem. fort by
 honey maun? come to say
 fre manye yngis. & to be
 reprovod of pe hieft phtis
 & of elier men & scribis
 to be slayn. & after pedy
 es for to ryse agen / & he spat
 pleyuly pe word / & petre
 takynge hym. was an for
 blame hym / ye whish tur
 nyd. seeynge his dyspulis.
 manassie to petre saynge /
 go after me sathanas / for
 you saiest not po yngis
 pat ben of god. but vo y
 gis pat ben of men. And pe
 awpanye of puple redreide
 wy his dyspulis. he saide
 to hem / if any man wole
 sue me. denye he hy self
 and take he his crosse. & sue
 he me / sovely who omole
 make his soule. pat is his
lof say. he shal lese it.
 for sope he pat shal lese
 his soule. pat is his lof
 for me & ye gospel. shal
 make it say sovely what
 ptey it to a man. if he
 wylle al pe world. & do
 peyringe to his soule.

ende

2 synful

as what chaunginge schal
ama yue for his soule for
sope who pat schal knowle
che me & my wordis in his
seulaoun anoutresse & ma
nes sone schal knowleche hy
whanne he schal come in pe
store of his fadir wip his
angelis & he saide to hem/
treuly I sey to you for per
ben sume of men stonde
ge here pe whiche schulen
not taste dep. til pe see
pe rellime of god comyng
in oth

And after xpe dayes
iste toke petre &
James & jon & led
de hem by hem self alone
in to an hy hil & he is thif
figured byfore hem & his
clopes ben made schynge
& white ful myche as snow
& what man clopis a fuller
may not make white on
erpe & hely wip moyses
appereden to hem & pey
weren spekyng wip
ihū & petre answerge
seip to ihū whatster it
is good us for to be here
make we here parterna

this oon to pee oon to moy
ses & oon to hely sorrel
he wiste not what he schul
de seip forsope pe were
agast by drede & his made
a cloude shadelbynge hem/
& a boie came of pe cloude
saynge prais my moost
der woipe sone here ze hym
& anon pe byholdyng a
boute sayen namore omy
man no but ihū onely
End he comyng down fro
pe hil comāūde hem pat
pe schulden not telle to o
ny man po yngis pat pey
haden seen no but whanne
mā sone hap risen fro de
de quertis & pe helden pe
word at hem self sechge
what schulde be whāne he
schal risen fro dep and pey
axiden hym saynge what
stere sayen pharisees &
scribis for it byhouey hely
to come firste pe whiche
answeryng seip to hem/
whāne hely schal come
firste he schal restore alle
yngis and hou it is wri
ten in to mā sone pat
he suffre many yngis

& be dispised / but I say to
 zolb: for & hely is come &
 pei diten to hym what alle
 pynnis pei wolken as it is
 writen of hym / And he
 comynge to his discipulis
 seeynge a greet cūpanye
 aboute hym / so this to gi
 der axinge wip hem / & ano
 al pe cūpanye seeynge ihu
 was astonysed & dedden / &
 pei reynge to greeten
 hym / & he axide he / whet
 seken ye amonge zolb
 & oon of pe cūpanye ans
 werynge seide / maystr
 I haue brougte to pee my
 sone / harynge an vncle
 ne spirit / ye whiche wher
 eide he shal take hyr / hir
 tyng hym / & he froppe
uon / & betw to gider
 wip teep / & waxip dize /
 & I saide to n discipulis
 pat pei shulden caste
 hyr out / & pei myzren
 not / ye whiche an swer
 ge to hem saide / a pou
 shuld vnd gerdacione out
 of bilene / how longe shal
 I be at zolb / how longe
 shal I suffre zolb /

Brynge ye hym to me / & pei
 broukten hym to / & whane
 he hade seen hym / anoon pe
 spirit trublde hym / & he cast
 down in to pe erpe / waldide
 fropunge / & he axide his fa
 der / how myche of tyme it
 is / Geyu vs pyng fel to
 hym / & he say / fro childe
 hode / & ofte he hay sente hyr
 in to pe fyre & watre / & he
 shulde lese hym / bot & if
 you maist ony pyng helpe
 us / harynge my of us / so
 pols ift seip to hym / if I
 maist bylene alle pynnis
 ben possible to anna byleng
 ge / & anoon pe childes fader
 crynge wip teris / seide /
 lord I bylene / helpe you
 myn vnbilene fulnes / &
 whane ift hade seen pe
 cūpanye of pepul reynge
 to gider / he manasside to
 pe vncle ne spirit / sayge
 to hym / pou deef & dou
 be spirit / I comaunde pe
 go out fro hym / & entere
 no more in to hym / and
 he dyng & myche to bren
 dyng hym / wanne out
 fro hym / & he is made as
 ded / so pat many seide

pat he was deed/ forsope ihe
holdynge his hond. lyfte
hym up & he ros/ & whane
he hade entride in to an hous.
his disciples axiden hy pynly
why mynsten not lke cast hy
oute/ and he saide to hem/
pis kynde in no prync may
go out/ no but in preier &
fastynge/ & ye gon fro peth
wenten for in to galilee/ &
he wolde no man writte/ he tan
te his disciples/ & saide to
he for mannig sone schal
be bytrayed in to pe hondis
of me/ & pei schulen sle
hym/ & he slayn on pe
pydder day schal ryse azen/
& pei shullen not velboerd
& dredde for to axe hym/
And pei came to capernaum/
whiche whane he was in pe
hous axide hem/ what tren
den ye in velbeyde/ & pei lke
ren stille/ sope pei discu
tiden amonge hem in pe
kaye. who of he schulde
be moze/ & he sayde
stepre pe til belie/ & sayp
to hem/ if ony wole be
pe firste amonge zold.
he schal be pe laste &

mynstre of alle/ and he ta
kyng a child. ordeyned hy
in pe mydel of hem/ whom
whane he hade byclaypid/ he
sayp to hem/ who eile schal
resteyue sone of suche chil
dren in my name. he restey
uep me/ & who eile restey
uep me. he resteyuep not
me alone. but hym pat
oente me/ for answerte to
hym saynge/ mayst we
seen ou oon for to castige
oute fendis in pi name/
pe lshich ouep not us/ &
we han forboden hy/ sope
hy ihe sayp to hym/ nyl
je forbede hym/ per is no
man pat dy odu in my
name/ & may soone ope
ke yuel of me/ forsope
he pat is not azenes
us/ is for us/ sope who
eile schal zyne drynke to
zold a cuppe of colde wat
in my name for ze ben of
cryst/ trenly. i. sayp to you.
he schal not lese his me
de/ & who eile schal stan
de oon of pe se litel by
leynge in me/ it is good
to hym pat amylneston

of an asse were don aboute
his neck. and were sent in
to pe see. & if ym honde
schaunder pee. lute it alle
it is good to pee. felle to en
tre in to hyf. pane handre
also hondis so in to helle in
to fier pat neide schal be
quenched. where pe worne
of hem dyep not. & pe fier
is not quenched. & if ym
foot schaunder pee. lute
it of. it is good to pee for
to entre golad in to euer
lastyng. lyf. pane hant
so also feet to be sent in
to helle fier. wher pe wor
me of he dyep not. & pe
fier is not quenched. &
if ym ye schaunder pee.
caste it out. it is good to
pee to entre golad in
to perabme of god. pane
hanyng. also yen for to
be sent in to helle of fier
where pe worne of hem
dyep not. & pe fier is not
quenched. // forsope ealy
man schal be salted or ma
de saul wip fier. and ealy
schayn sacrifice schal be
sauld wip salt. salt

is good ym. pat if salt
be unsalt. in what ym
schulen ye make it saul. /
hane ze salt in you. & hane
ze pees amonge zoll. **E A**
And the rissynge up
fro peam. came in
to pe endis of Jude
on Jordan. & ctesomys pe ai
pamyas of pepul camen to
sadir to hym. & as he was
wont. ctesone he tange
hem. & farisees comynge
my. axiden hym. if it be
lesful to aman to leue or
for sake his wyf. tempty
se hym. & he answerge
serp to hem. what comau
dide moyses to zoll. & pe lsh
che ceden. moyses suffri
de to write a libel of forsa
kyng. & to forsake. to lsh
the answerynge serp. to
pe hardnesse of zour herte
moyses broot to zoll his
pcept. forsope fro pe by
gynnyng of creature. god
made hem. male & female
god made hem. & he saide
for his ym. anna schal
leue padir & modir. &
he schal cene to hyo

Wyf & pe schulen be albo
m o fleisthe / & so nols pey
ben not albo. but o fleisthe
þfere pat ping pat god icoy
ned to guder. no man depte
æ eftelone m pe hous hys
disuplis axiden hy of pe
same ping / & he s. up to
hem / Who eile chal leue.
his Wyf & wedde anop. he
dop auoutrie upon hir / &
if pe Wyf chal leue hir
hosebonde & be weddid to
anop. ðhe dop auoutrie.
And pei offriden to hym
litel children. pat he schulte
touche hem / Soþely disti
plis pretenede to me offry
ge / Whom Whanne ihe hade
seen. he bar heuyly or
unþorþly. & say to he
Suffre ze litel children.
for to come to me. & forbe
de ze hem not / forsoþe of
suche is pe kyndam of
god / treuly. þ Sey to job.
Who eile chal not restey
ue pe kyndam of god. as
pis litel child. he chal
not entre in to it / & he
bychþpyge hem a peny
se hondis upo he. blissid

hem. And Whanne ihe was
gon out m pe wey amā ren
mynges byfore. pe ene bollid.
preyed hym sayyng / good
maystr what chal y do. pat
y resteyue eilelaþynges byfe
forsope ihe saide to hym /
What seist you me good.
no man good. no but god al
one. you hast knolbe pe com
auidementis / do you noon
auoutrie. Ele not. stole not
say not fals witnessyng.
do no frande worstship py
fadr & m modir / and he an
swerynge seip to hym / ma
ister. I haue kepte alle pese
pyngis fro my zompe / so
þely ihe byhelle hym &
donyde hym / & he saide to
hym / o ping failþ to þe /
so þou selle þ what eile
pyngis þou hast. & þue to
þore men. & þou shalt
hane tresoure in heuene /
& come oue þou me / pe
Which made sorowful in
pe word. Wente alþey mo
urmynges / forsoþe he was
harynge many possessi
ouns / & ihe byholdyng
aboute. say to his disciples

hou hard pey pat hau mo
ney. schulen entre in to
pe kyndam of god/ for sope
pe discipulis weren stonped
in his wordes/ & ihe estes
ne answerynge. say to
hem/ ze litel sonys hou
hard pyng is it. me trus
tynge in riches for to
entre in to pe kyndam of
god/ it is lyt a chamel.
to passe poth an eddis ne.
pane a ricke man for to
entre in to pe kyndam of
god/ whiche wondemge
more saynge at he self
a who may be maad saaf/
& ihe by holdynge he say
to hem/ anentis me it is
impossible. but not anentis
god/ for alle pyngis ben
possible anentis god/ &
afterward petre began to
say to hym/ so we ha lest
alle pyngis. & han sued
pee/ ihe answerynge say/
treuly i sey to zoll. pe is
no man pat schal leue
hous. or bruden. or sistris.
fadir or modir or sones
or feldis for me & for
pe gospel. pe whiche

shal not take an hundred
folke so myche nolt in pis
tyme. honfis & brisen &
sistris. & modris & feldis
wip psecucionis. & in
pe world to comynge euer
lastynge by/ for sope ma
ny schulen be. pe firste
pe laste. & pe laste pe fir
ste/ for sope pa weren in
pe wey styng to ierusalim
& ihe wente byfore he. &
pe wondaden/ & folowge
dreden/ & aftersone ihe tak
se to albethe. began to sey
to hem what pyngis were
to comynge to hym/ for so
we styen to ierlm. & waim
sone schal be bytrayed to
pe prynces of pthas & to scribis
& to elter men. & pe schu
len dampne hym by depe/
& pe schulen bytake hym
to heyen men. & pe schule
sacre hym. & by spate he
& bete hym. & pe schulen
ste hym. and in pe pydd
day he schal ryse agen/ &
james & ioon zebedees so
nes came nyz to hym say
inge/ maystir we wolen
pat what eile we schuld
axe. you do to us/ & he

saide to hem/ what wolen
 ze pat i do to zolk/ a pei sey
 den/ yue to us pat we sit
 ten pe toon at py rithhalf
 a pat oper at pi hystehalf
 in py glosye/ forsope ihe
 seip to hem/ ze witen not
 what ze schulen aye/ molke
 ze drynke pe cuppe which
 i am to drynke. or belwais
 then wy pe baptisme in
 which i am baptysid/ a
 pei seiden to hy/ we mo
 wen/ sopehy ihe say to
 hem/ treuly ze schulen
 drynke pe cuppe pat i
 drynke. a ze schulen be
 waisthen wy pe baptis
 in which i am baptysid/
 sopehy for to sitte at my
 rithhalf or hystehalf is
 not my to yue to zolk.
 but to whom it is ordey
 ned/ a pe ten herynge.
 haden indignacion of
 iames a ioon/ sopehy
 ihe clepyng hem. seip
 to hem/ ze witen pat
 pei pat seme or ben
seen to han prynces
 on folkis. lordshypen

of hem. a pe prynces
 of hem han polker of
 hem/ forsope it is not so
 of you/ but who euere
 schal wole be made mo
 ze. schal be zoure my
 nystr/ a who eile schal
 wole be made firste in
 zolk. schal be swait
 of alle/ for why a ma
 nes come came not pat
 it schulde be mynystr
 de to hym. but pat he
 schulde mynystr. and
 yue his soule azenby
 nge for many/ a pei
 came to jerico/ a hym
 goynge for fro jerico
 a his dyscyples a a ful
 myche cupanye of pe
 pul. pe some of tyme
 barthymes blind. sat
 bydis pe wey beggynge/
 pe which whanne he
 hade herde for it is ihe
 of nazareth. bygan to
 crye a saye/ ihu pe
 some of danyel haue
 mercy of me/ a many
 pretynden hym pat he
 schulde be stille. a he

cried myche more/ ihu ye so
ne of dunn haue mercy of
me/ & ihs stondynge coman
dide hym/ for to be clepid/
& perdepiden ye blynd/ say
inge to hym/ be pou of be
tir herte/ ryse up/ he depy
pee/ pe wshich his clop cast
alwey/ farynge came to
hym/ & ihs answerynge
seide to hym/ what wolt
pou ȝe to pe/ pe blynd
man seide to hym/ maister
pat ȝe se/ sopeky ihs saide
to hym/ so pou ȝe fery
hap made pee saaf and
anoon he callz/ & suet hy
in ye waye/

And wshanne ihs
came myz to ieru
salem & to betany
to ye mount of olivete he
seute alko of his disciples/
& say to hem/ so ȝe in to
ye castel pat is azen ȝou/
& anoon ȝe entrynge in
pidur/ sthulen fynde a colt
tyed/ on pe wshich noon of
men sat yt/ vnbrynde
ȝe & brynge hym/ & ȝif
ony man shal sey ony
ping azen ȝou/ say ȝe
what do ȝe/

pat he is needful to ye lord/
& anoon he shal leue hy
hidur/ & ȝey ȝoyngz forp/
founde a colt bounde byfore
ye zate wy out forp in ye
metynge of alko wayes/
& ȝey vnbunden hym/ &
sūme of men stondynge
ȝe/ saiden/ what don ȝe/
vnbrynde ye colt/ & ȝe sa
den to hem as ihs coman
dide hem/ & ȝe lesten he/
& ȝe broukten ye colt to
ihu/ & putiden to hy her
clopes/ & ihs sat upo hy/
forsope many streliden
her clopes in ye waye/ so
peky oper men fūnde bolt
is fro trees/ & streliden
in ye waye/ & ȝe f wente
byfore & pat sueten/ rye
den saynge/ osanna blesid
is he pat comey in ye na
me of ye lord/ blesid ȝe
tam pat comey of oure fa
dir damp/ osanna in heynz/
And he entride in to ieru
salem in to ye temple/ &
alle pringis seen aboute/
wshanne our was now enemy
se/ he wente in to betany
wy abelue/ & anop day/

Whane he wente oute of be
tanye. he hungrede. & whane
he hade seen a fige tre after
hauyge leues. he came yf
haply. he schulde ony p^ris
fynde yfne. & whane he
came to it. he foond no p^ris.
outaken leues. for it was
no tyme of figus. & the a
sweringe saide to it. nolk
no moze wyf outen ende ony
man ete fruyt of pee. & his
discyplis herden. & per came
to ierusalem. & whanne he
hade entrid in to pe temple.
he began for to caste oute me
sellunge & buynge in pe
temple. & he turnyde opse
dolu pe lordis of chaungis.
a pe chaieris of me selly
ge cullies. & he suffrid not
pat ony man schulde bere
a vessel poron pe temple.
a he tanyte hem sayunge.
wher it is not writen. for
myn hous schal be clepid.
pe hous of praynge to alle
folkis. forsope ze han made
it a den of reues. pe whi
ch pyngs herd pe p^ris
of p^ris & carlis counte
hon per schulde lese hy.

forsope per dreden hym.
for al pe companye of pe
publ wounde on his techt
se. & whane euerynge was
made. he wente oute of pe
cite. & whane per passide
eerly. per sayen pe fige
tre made drye fro pe rootes.
a petre hauyng mynde.
saide to hym. maist to pe
fige tre whom p^r arsidist.
hap dried up. & the answere
ryng seip to hym. hane
ze pe fery of god. trenk. i
say to zolb. pat whi eide
say to p^ris. take a
sende in to pe see. & dunt
not in his herte but hi
lenept for what eide he
shal say be it made. it
shal be made to hy. more
i say to zolb. alle pyngis.
whi eide pyngis ze p^r
inge schulen aye. bylene
ze pat ze schulen take. &
per schulen come to zolb.
a whanne ze schuld stonde
for to p^rye. forpyne ze p^r
ze han ony pyng azeyn
ony man. pat & zonne
fadir pat is in hevenes
forzeue to zolb zonne synes.

f

pat if ze schulen not for
 yue. nesh zoure fadir pat
 is in heuene schal fory
 ue to zolb zoure symes
 & este sone pei camen to ie
 rusalem/ & whane he lkal
 kide in to pe temple. pe
 hyest pphes & scribis &
 elder men came nyz to
 hym. & sayn to hym/ in
 what polker dost pou rese
 yngis. or who zaf to pee
 no polker. pat pou do
 rese yngis. for sope the
 ansuerynge seip to
 hem/ & I. shal axen zou
 o word. & ansuere ze to
 me. & I shal say to zolb
 in what polker I do rese
 yngis/ wher was pe
 baptyme of joun of
 heuene or of men. an
 swere ze to me/ & pei
 pouzte. wher the hem
 oif saynge/ if we
 schulen saye of heuene
 he shal say to us/ whi
 pfore byleuen ze not
 to hym/ if we schule
 say of men. we drede
 pe pepul/ for alle ma
 haden joun for he was

with a pphete/ & paan
 swerynge sayen to us/ in
 we litten neuere/ & the
 ansuerynge seip to
 hem/ nesh I. say to zou.
 in what polker I do re
 se yngis.

And the bigan to qu
 ee pabli oem pa
 rablis/ ama plai
 tid a synezerd and putti
 de aboute it an hegge &
 dalf a lake & buldite a toum.
 & hride it to erpet hiers.
 & wente soyn in pilgma
 ge/ & sente to pe erpeti
 hiers in tyne a euant.
 pat he schulde restryne
 of pe fruyt of pe syn
 zerd. at pe erpet hiers/
 pe whiche beten hy ta
 ken. & lesten hy wode/
 & este sone he sente to
 hem anoy euant. &
 pei woundiden hy in pe
 hed. & punysshid hy.
 whi chydngis or res
 yngis/ & este sone he
 sente anoy. & pei slo
 wen hy in/ & op mo.
 betyngge summe but oie
 ynge over/ pfore zit he

haunynge o some most derlboep
 a to hem he sente hym pe
 laste. saynge/ for by happe.
 pey schulen schame my come.
or dreiden his reuerence/ forso
 pe tenauntis seiden to hem
 self or to aedir. pis is pe eir/
 come ze sle like hym. a pe
 heritage schal be ouren/a
 pei tak yge hym. castiden
 oute wyponte pe bynexerd
 and stoben/ pfor what
 schal pe lord of pe cyne
 zerd do? he schal come a le
 se pe tenauntis. a zyne pe
 bynexerd to over/ wiser ze
 han not rad pis scripture.
 pe stoon which me bildyn
 ge han dispised. pis is ma
 de in to pe hed of pe corner.
 pis ping is made of pe lord.
 a is wondrousful in oure ier/
 and pei sougte for to hol
 de hym. a pei dreiden pe
 companye of pepul/ sopeh
 pei knellen for to hem he
 schite pis pable/a hy left
 pei wemten alwey/a pey
 senden to hym stume of
 pe pharisees a herodpancea.
 v/ pei shulde take hi i word/ pei lsh
 a ze conynge saye to hym/

maistr like litten for pou art
 sopefast a resist not ony
 man sopeh uer/ pou ceest
 in to face of men but pou
 testist pe lwey of god a treu
 pei is it leueful for to zy
 ue tribut to cesar. a west
 shulen not zyne/ pe lsh
 ch litynge her pyn fals
 uesse. say to hem/ what
 tempten ze mes brynge
 ze to me a penny pat q.
 see/ a pei offriden to hy
 a he say to hem/ whos
 is pis ymage a pe lsh
 tynges/ pei ceyen to hy/
 cesaris/ forso pe ihs ans
 werynge seip to hem/
 pfor zele ze to cesar. p
 hen of cesar. a to god po
 yngis pat ben of god/
 a alle wondriten on hy
 a aduces pat sepe no
 resurrection to be came
 to hy a axiden hy sey
 inge/ maistr moyses
 wroot to us pat zif
 pe broper of a man
 were ded. a leste alkyf
 a leste not sones. his
 brop take his wyf a
 raise up seed to his brop/

yfere seven briden weren &
 pe firste toke albyf & is dede
 no seed leste / & pe secunde
 toke hir / & he is dede / & ne
 pr pr is leste seed / and pe
 ynde also / & seue toke hir
 & lesten not seed / and pe
 womā laste of alle is dede
 vane in resurrection whāne
 pe schulen ryse azen whos
 wyf of pese shal she be
 sopele seven hāden hir
 wyf / & the answerynge
 say to hem / wher ze erre
 not yfere not knollinge pe
 scripturis ney pe odu of
 god / forsope whāne pe
 schulen ryse azen fro dede
me ney pe wedden ney
 ben weddid / but pe schu
 len be as aungels of god
 in heuēnes / sopele of de
 te me pat ryse azen ze
 han not rad in pe boke
 of moyses ou pe byrthe
 hou god seide to hym /
 saynge / i am god of
 abraham & god of ysaac
 & god of iacob / he is
 not god of dede men
 but god of lyuynge
 me / yfere ze erre wythe

& oon of pe scribis pat hade
 herde hem seynge to gide / am
 ny / & seynge pat he hade
 wel answered hem / axide
 hym which was pe firste
 mandement of alle / the
 answerde to hy / pat pe first
 of alle comandementis is /
 here ysaac / pe lord in god
 is oon / & pou shalt loue
 pe lord in god of al yme
 herte & of al in soule &
 of al in mynde & of al
 in oweru in myt / pr is
 pe firste comandement
 forsope pe secounde lyke
 to pr / pou shalt loue vy
 neyboze as vy self / pe is
 noon of mandement more
 vane pese / and pe scribe sey
 to hym / maist in tremp
 hast wel seide for god is / &
 pr is noon outakyn hym / &
 pat he be louyd of al herte
 & of al pouyt & mynde &
 of al vnderstandynge &
 of al pe soule & of al tremp
 pe & to loue pe neyboze
 as hy self / is more vane
 alle licent offryngis & sa
 crifices / the forsope seyn
 ze pat he hade wel answe
 ride / & seide to hym / pou

art not fer fro pe byndam
of god/ and noli no ma dwiste
axe hym wage/ And ift ans
weringe seide techinge
in pe temple/ pfore holi say
en scribis crist for to be pe
sone of dany. to wsh dany
hy self seide in pe hooly
goost. pe lord seide to my
lord. Sute on my rythalf-
ul i putte ym enemyes
pe stole of ry feet/ pfore
dany hym self seip hy
alord. & wsher of is he his
sone/ & myche cupanye.
gladly herde hym/ & he
seide to hem in his techy-
se/ be ze war of scribis
pat wolen wandre i stolis.
a be saluted in pe chepy-
ge & sute in synagogis
in pe firste chayeris & in
pe firste sittinge places
in capps. pe whiche denon-
ren pe housis of widelwes
ondur colour of longe py-
er/ pei taken pe lenger
dome/ & ift sittinge aze
n9 pe tresory. byhelde hon-
pe cupanye of purple.
castide money in to pe
tresorye/ & many riche

men. castiden many yngis/
sopehy wshane a pore wide
lbe hade come. sthe sente
also mynutes pat is fer pig/
& hise dyspulis deinde to
gadr. he say to hem/ tru-
ly i. ay to you. for vis pore
widelbe sente more pane
alle pat senten in to pe
tresorye/ sopehy alle sen-
ten of pat yng. & wba
plenitounse to hem/ birt
vis of hir myseifte. sente
alle yngis pat she hade.
al hir byflode/ c. x. ym.
Hnd wshane he wente
oure of pe temple.
oon of his dyspulis
say to hym/ maister by
holde what maner stoues.
& what man bildyngis/
& he answerynge seip to
hym/ seeft pon alle rese-
crete bildynges. / pe shal
not be lefte a stoon upo
a stoon. pe whiche shal
uot be distruped/ & wsha-
ne he sat in pe mount
of olyuete azeyn9 pete-
ple. pey axiden hy ethe by
hym self. petre panya-
& joon & andrew/ say

you to us. Whāne pese
pīngis schulen be made/
a Whāt tofene Whānne
alle pese pīngis schule
bygyune for to be endid/
a ihe answerynge. by
gan for to sey to hem/
see ye pat no mā dīpey
ue zoll/ for many schulen
come in my name sayge/
for y am. a pei schulen
disteyne manye/ sopeh
Whāne ze schulen here
bavels a opynyouns of
bavels. drete ze not/ for
sope it byhouey pese pī
sis to be don. bot not at
anoon ye ende/ for folke
shal ryse upon folke.
a rellme upon rellme.
a erpe monyge shal be
by places a hūngre/ by
synyng of soules. se
pese pīngis/ sopeh o
ze zoure self/ for pei
schulen take you in con
seilis. a ze schulen be
beten in synagogis/
a ze schulen stonde by
fere kyngis a comestine
for me. in to witnesse
ze to hem/ and in to

alle folkis/ it byhouey
fiste ye gospel to be p
chide/ a Whāne pei schu
len lede you by tranyge
nyl ze penke Whāt zee
schulen speke/ but ope
de pat pīng. pat shal
be zonen to you in pat
hour/ sopeh ze ben not
spekyng. but ye holy
soft/ forsope ye brot shal
bytraye ye koyer in to tēp/
and ye fadir ye sone/ and
sones schulen ryse to gide
agayn fadir a modur
a pīnyng hem by depe/
a ze schulen be in hate to
alle men. for my name/
but he pat shal sustey
ne to ye ende. no schal
be saaf/ forsope Whāne
ze schulen see ye alhomy
nacion of dystoufēt flo
dyng Whān it albey not/
vndur stonde he pat redy/
pīne pei pat ben in iudic
fle in to hilles/ a he pat
is aboue ye roof come not
down in to his hous/ ne
pr entre he pat he take
ony pīng of his hous/
a he pat shal be in ye

† spech
in zoll

feeld: turne not agen by hind
for to take his clop/ sope
bo to hem pat ben wyrd
de & nort schynge in po day
es/ perfore prey ze p^rayer
ben not in wynter/ for
sope yllke dayes of tribula
tioun schulen be such. w
hiche man weren not slope
by synnyng of creature.
ye wiche god made. til nob
nepit schulen ben/ and no
bit pe lord hade breggid
po dayes. al fleisthe or
manfynde hadde not ben
saaf/ but for pe chosen
whom he ches. pe lord hay
breggid po dayes or made
choet a panne yf ony ma
shal sey to zou. lo here
is crist. lo ye. bylene ze
not/ for false cristis &
false phens schule rise
up. & schulen 3ue toke
nes & greet wondris to
disteyne yf it may be
don. 3he pe chosen/ shal
see ze. lo I haue bifore
seid to zou alle yngis/
but in po dayes astir
pat tribulacioun. pe
sune shal be made.

arke. & pe mone schal not 3eue
hir schynnyng & sterris
of heuene schulen be fal
lynge doun & adues pat
ben in heuene. schule be
moued/ & pane pe schule
see manyns sone comynge
in cloudes of heuene wy
greet adu & glorie/ & pa
ne he shal sende. hy
amgels & shal gedir his
chosen fro foure wyndis
fro pe lokist yng of erpe.
vnto pe hyest yng of
heuene. // forsope of pe
fige tre lerne ze pe pa
ble/ whane nob his bran
chis schul be tendre &
leues ben sprunged out.
ze witen pat somer is
in pe nexte/ in pe doun/
treuly I sey to zou. for
pis genacioun shal not
passe away. til alle yse
yngis be doun/ heuene &
erpe schulen passe. for
sope my wordis schule
not passe. // treuly of
pat day or hour. no ma
woot. ney angels in he
uene. ney pe sone. ne but
pe fadir. // See ze Wake

so 3e wiche ze schule sa yese yu
gis be done. Witt ze p^r hie is
in pe next.

ze & prey ze. Sopely zelwite
 not wthane tyme is for as
 aman ye wlich gon fer in
 pilsnages lest his hous
 & zane to his suaurtis po
 ther of eith werk & comandise
 to ye porter pat he schuld wake
 wfore wake ze forsope zelbi
 ten not wthane ye lord of
 ye hous comey in ye eue
 tye or in ye mydnyzt or
 colkis crollynge or moulke
 nynges lest wthane he schal
 come ooderynly. He fonde
 zoll slepynges forsope p
 pat i sey to zoll. i sey to
 alle. Wake ze. L. xiii.

A forsope paste & pe
 feste of perf loo
 ues wy oute sou
Dol. was after ye secun
 d day & ye hiest pftis
 & scribis sousten holl
 pei schulden holke hym
 wy ale & ote hym so
 pely pei oreden not in
 ye feste day lest panen
 ture noyse were made
 in ye pepul & wthane
 he was at betampe in pe
 hous of symout lepon
 se & resite a woman

conynges hauninge a box of
 piousse oynement spoken
 ard and ye box broken helte
 oute on his hed forsope pe
 weren eithen berynge on
 worpely or heuylly wy pte
 hem self & saynges wther
 to no losse of oynement is
 made for pis oynement
 myzt haue ben sold more
 pte for ye hundris pens
 & be zonen to poze men
 & pei zoneden in to hir
 sopely she stude suffre
 ze hir wlat ben ze heuy
 to hir she hap wrouzte
 woud werke in to me
 for eithore ze schulen
 haue pte men wy zow
 & wthane ze schuld wole
 ze moln do wel to hem
 forsope ze schuld not
 eithore haue me she
 ade pat she hade she
 by fire came for to anoy
 to my body in to biryng
 treuly i sey to zoll wther
 eith pis gospel schal be
 pte in al pe wold &
 pat pis woman hap don
 schal be tolke in to myde
 of hy & iudas scariot

oon of ye tibelue. Went to
pe huest þus pat he schul
de bytraye hym to hem pe
whiche herynge ioyeden.
A byhyten hem to yve
money. & he sougte holb
he schulde bytraye hym to
neuableness. & ye fir ste day of
perf loones. Whane paste
was offrid. discipulis saye
to hym. Whidur wolt pou
we go. & make redy to pee
pat pou ete paste. & he se
dyr tilbo of his discipulis.
A say to hem. go ye in to
pe citee. & aman berynge
a saloun of watir schal re
ne to iob. & come azemes
yll. Sue ze hym. & whidur
eile he schal entre. say ze
to pe lord of pe hous. for
pe maister seip. where is
my fulfyllinge. & etwe
place where y schal ete
paste wip my discipulis.
& he schal shewe to iob
a greet soupyngge place
strethid. & ye make zee
redy to us. & his discipulis
wenten for. & came into
pe citee. & founden as he
hade soue to hem. & pey

maden redy paste. sopeh
euemyngge maad. he came
wip tibelue. and hem sit
tyngge at pe mete. & ete
se. ihe say. trenly. I say
to iob. for oon of you pat
etip wip me. schal bytraye
me. & pe bygyuen for to
be cor. & to saye. eten
by hym. silf. wher. I.
pe which seip to hem.
oon of ye tibelue. pat put
tip in pe hond wip me
in pe planer. & sopeh ma
nes soue. god. as it is
writun of hym. for sope
wo to pat man. he. wh
mann. soue schal be by
trayed. it were god. to
hy. if pat ilke ma had
not ben born. & hem ete
se. ihe toke bred & bless
se. hals it. & zane hem. &
say. take ze. pis is my
body. & pe appe taken.
he doynge grates. zaf to
hem. & alle drunken. yd
& he seip to hem. pis is
my blood of ye newe
testament. pe which
schal be shed oute for
manye. trenly. y. seye

to zolk for noll y shal not
 drynke of pis fruyt of
 vyne til in to pat day
 whane y shal drynke it
 newe in pe rellume of god
 & pe ympe or herymage
 saide pei wenten oute
 in to pe hil of olyues &
 ihs seip to hem alle ze
 shulen be stoundred
 in me in pis nyzt for
 it is witten / I shal comy
 te pe shepheard & pe
 shepe of pe floc shu
 len be dyspyld / bot aft
 pat I shal rise aeyn
 y shal go byfore zolk in
 to galilee forsope petre
 seip to hy / & if alle shu
 len be stoundred bot
 not I & ihs seip to hy
 treuly I seip to pee for
 pou to day byfore pe cob
 in pis nyzt turies yue
 wois pries pou art to
 denye me / & he spat mo
 ze / & if it byshonep me
 to dye to gader wip pee
 y shal not denye pee
 sopeh lyke man & alle
 seiden / & pei camen
 into a place to whom

pe name gessamanye
 and he seip to his disci
 plis / entre ze here while
 y prey / & he taky petre
 Jamys & Ioon wip hym
 & bigan for to drede & to
 be hery / & he seip to he
 my soule is sorowful al
 to pe de / susteyne ze or
abide ze here & prey ze
 wip me / & whanne he ha
 de gonfory a litel he fel don
 on pe erpe & preide pat if
 it myzt be pe hom shul
 de passe fro hym / & he sa
 de / fadir alle yngis ben
 possible to pee turne fro
 me pis cuppe / bot not pat
 I wole bot pat pou &
 he came & fonde hem ste
 pynges / & he say to pe
 tre / Symount slepist
 pou / myztst pou not
 wake wip me oon hour
 wake ze & pry ze pat ze
 pat ze entre not in to tep
 tacioun / forsope pe spirit
 is redy bot pe fleish
 seet / & estedone he go
 ynges / & he turnyd a
 zenn estedone fonde he

slepyng/ sopeh her
 neu weren greued. & pe
 Enelken not what pe sch
 ulden answere to hym/
 and he came pe prude
 tyme. & serp to hem/
 slepe ze nolv & reste ze/
 sopeh it suffiser/ pe
 hour comep. lo manny
 done shal be betrayed
 in to pe hondis of sy
 ful men/ rise ze go we/
 lo he pat shal betraye
 me is nyz/ & zit hym
 spekyng. Juas sca
 riot on of pe tibelue
 came & larp hy myche
 upanye wy sberdis
 & cranes. sent fro pe
 hiest pstris & scribis
 fro pe elter men/ forso
 pe pe traitour hate zoue
 to hem a tokene sayng/
 whom enle y shal kysse
 he it is. holte ze hym/ &
 lede ze larky/ & whane
 he came. anon he comy
 ge to hym. say/ mastrin/
 & he kysse hym/ & pey
 leiden hondis in to hy.
 & helten hym/ sopeh
 oon of men stondynge

aboute ledynge onte
 a sberd. smot pe &
 namit of pe hiest pstr.
 & kine of to hym an
 ere/ & the answeryng
 serp to hem/ as to a
 peef ze han gon onte
 wy sberdis & staues
 for to take me/ forsope
 day by day. Was at zon
 techynge in pe temple.
 & ze helten not me/ bot
 pat pe scriptures be
 fulfilled/ vane hym for
 saken. alle his disciphs
 fledden/ sopeh sume
 zonge man clodid wy
 synen clon on pe bare
 suete hym & pe hel
 ten hym/ & pe synen
 clon forsaken. he na
 lid flen away fro he/
 & pe leden ihu to pe
 hiest pstr/ & alle ca
 men to gader in to on
 pe pstris & scribis &
 elter men/ forsope pe
 tre suete hym aser
 til to wy yme in to
 pe halke of pe hiest
 pstr/ & he gate eby
 pe mynystris. and

warmed hym at pe fire
forsope pe higest pftis &
al pe counsel souyte Wit
nessynge azeim9 ihu. pat
pe schulden gyue hym to
der nesh pe founden/sope
ly manye seiden false Wit
nessynge azeim9 hym. &
pe Witnessynge weren
not couenable/ & siame
rissynge souyten false
Witnessynge azeim9 hym
seyunge/ I schal vndo
pis temple maad wip
hondis. & after pe ynd
day I schal bilde anoyr
not maad wip hondis
& pe Witnessynge of
hem was not couenable
forsope pe higest pft ry
singe up to pe mydel
ayde hym saynge/ an
swereft pou not omi pns
to yo yngis pat ben
putt to pee of pefe. so
pely he was stille. &
no ymg answerde/ eft
sone pe higest pft ayde
hym. & saide to hym/
art pou crist pe sone
of blissid god. sopely
ihc saide to hym/ I am/
& so schulden se man9 son

Sittynge on pe rygthalt
of pe oth of god. & to
myngre in clondis of
houene/ forsope pe higest
pft. Eittynge his clapis
saip/ What yit desiren we
Witnesstis/ ze han herd
blasphemye/ What semet
to you/ pe whiche alle
condempnedden hym for
to be gilti of deef/ &
siame byrgumen for to
la spytte hym. & to hys
his nen/ & smyte hym
wip buffetis. & saide
to hym/ yhesce pou/ &
pe tynnystris beten
hym wip strolis/ and
whanne petre was in
pe halle bynepen. oon
of pe hondmandenes of
pe higest pft came/ &
whanne she had seen
petre warminge hym.
she beholdynge hym
saide/ & pou wast wip
ihu of nazareth/ and
he denyed saip. ze ne
yr y woot ney I haue
knowen what pou saist/
& he wente forp byfore
pe halle. & anoon pe col
dunge/ eft sone forsope

for the
han heide
hy seye

Whanne anoy' hond mayde
 hadde seen hym. She bigan
 for to sey to men stondy
 ge aboute. for this is of he
 & he eftesone denyed and
 astur alittel. eftesone pey
 pat stoden nyz. seiden to
 petre/ whyl you art of
 hem/ for whyl & you art
 of galile. Sopeh he bigan
 for to curse & swere for
 y knolke not this man.
 Whom ze sayn/ & anoon
 eftesone pe cok songe/
 & petre lipouzte on pe
 word pat the had seide
 to hym/ before pe cok sy
 ge thries. whies you
 shalt denye me/ & he by
 gan for to wepe/ & anoon
 pe morke maad pe hieft
 pthis makinge counsel
 lwy elder men & scribis
 & al pe counsel byndyge
 ihu. sadden & byroken
 to pilate. Lc. 23.

And pilate axide
 hym/ art you
 kyng of ielwes/
 & he answerynge saip
 to hym/ you sayst & pe
 hieft pthis accusiden
 hym in many pmyngis/

pilate forsope eftesone ax
 ide hym saynge/ pou an
 swerist not ony pmyng/
 Oest you in hou many
 pmyngis. pei accusen pe
 forsope ift more no pmyng
 answereid. so pat pilat
 schulde wondur/ forsope
 by a solempne day he
 was wont to leue to he
 oon boimden whom eu
 pei axiden/ forsope pe
 was he pat was seide
 barabas pat was boim
 den wip sleers of men.
 & pat haden don malfau
 tre in seducatiō. pat is
debate in atre & whane
pe cupanye hate fyled
up. it bigan for to pve
as he enmore dide to he
sopeh pilate answeri
d to hem & sende/ wolen
ze y leue to zoll pe kyng
of ielwis. Sopeh he luf
te. pat pe hieft pthis ha
den taken hym by anye
forsope pe bishopes sty
riden pe cupanye of pu
ple. pat more he schul
d leue to hem barabas
forsope eftesone pilate
answerynge. sey to he/

What p[ro]p[er] violence y shal
do to pe kyng of ielwes / &
pei este[re]one crieden / cruce
fye hym / for sope pilate
seise to hem / sope[ly] wh
at of yuel hay he don /
& pei crieden more / cruce
fye hym / sope[ly] pilate
Wyllynge for to do ynoth
to pe pepul / lest to he
barabas and bytoke to
hem ihu smyten wip
scourgis pat he schulde
he cruafied / for sope
knyghtes ladden hym
wip yue in to pe flooz
of pe moot halles & the
piden to gader al pe cum
panye of knyghtes / & do
piden hym wip thur /
& pey feldyng a crowne
of pornes / putten to
hym / & biginen for to
greete hym saynse /
heil pou kyng of ielwes
and pei smyten his
heued wip a reed / & by
spitiden hym / & put
tynges her knes pey
wasturiden hym / &
astur pat pei haden sm
yde hym / pei vnder

den hym fro purpur / &
clayden hym wip hise
cloris / & leden hym
pat pei schulden ana
the hym / & pei constrey
neden suman passynge
forp / Symount of syry
uen comynge fro pe tols
ne pe fadir of alisandre
& ruse / pat he schulde ta
ke his crosse / & pei ledde
hym in to a place golba
tha pat is meprende &
expolned pe place of
caluarie / & pei ianen to
hym se to drynte wyn
medid wip myrr / & he
toke not / & pei crucify
nge hym depiden his
clopes sendyng loth on he
who what schulde forp
pe it was pe yud how
pat men clopen vnder
& pei crucifieden hym
& pe title of his cause
was witten / ihu of na
zareth kyng of ielwes /
& pei crucifieden wip hy
two penes / oon at pe
rythalf / & oon at his
lyftelhalf / & pe pphete
is fulfilled pat say /

& he is gessid or ordyned
 Wip Wickidmen/ and pas-
 singe for. pe blasphem
 meden hym moynge
 her hedis & saynge/ sy
 you pat distrust pe tem-
 ple of god. and in pre-
 sayes aembildist it/ you
 comynge down fro pe cros-
 se. make y self saaf also
 & ye huest pthis stonew
 hym eche to oyr wip of
 his sciden/ or he made saf.
 hy self he may not make
 saue/ Cnst pe byng of is-
 racl come he down nolk
 fro pe crosse. pat we see
 & bilene/ & pei pat we
 ren crucified wip hym.
 putten wrong to hy/
 and pe sixte hour or
undurne maad. derk-
 ness ben made vpon
 al erpe. til in to pe.
 nyne hour. & in pe ny-
 ne hour isc cried wip
 greet voice saynge/
 heloy. heloy. Eimasaba-
 rany/ in pe which in
 eprend is my god. my
 god. why hastow forsake
 me. & sune of men

stondynge aboute he
 rynge. sciden/ so he
 clepy heloy/ sayely ou
 reynynge & fyllinge
 a spouringe wip bynesse
 & putynge aboute to
 a reed. zaue hy drynke
 saynge/ suffreze. see
 we yf heloy come for to
 do hym down/ forsope
 isc. agreeet voice sent
 oute. dyed. or sent out
 pe bryt/ & pe veil of pe
 temple is lit in to dwo-
 fro pe huest til to down/
 forsope centurio see
 ge velliche stode ene
 aenst for so arynge
 he had dyed. say/ dy
 ly vis man was godes
 sone/ sayely y weren
 and oyr wip men. by
 holdynge fro a fer. a
 monge which was
 marye maudeleyne.
 & wane of James pe
 lesse. & pe modir of
 ioseph & salomee/ and
 whame isc was in
 galilee. pei followed
 hym. & mynstriden
 to hym. & many oyr

Whymen pat to gader sty-
den wip hym to ierusalem/
E Whanne euenyng was
made for it was pe even
bifore pe sabot. Joseph
of armath pe noble dea-
troun pat hade ten men
vndir hym came pelsh-
che E he was abydyng
pe rellme of god/ and
hardly he entrid in to
pilate. E axide pe body
of ihu forsope pilate
wondred. If he hadde
nolb dyed/ E centurio
axid to g brougt to. he
axide hym if he were
nolb deed/ E Whanne he
hade knowen of centurio.
he gaf pe body of ihu
to ioseph/ Sorely ioseph
bryngge hymen clop. E
bryngge hym down wlap-
pide in pe linnen clop.
E putide in a nelbe se-
pulture pat was heben
in a stoon/ E wallwid to
a stoon. at pe moupe
of pe sepulture.

a

M

arie maudeleyn
forsope E marie
of ioseph. biholde

Where he was put/ E Whanne
pe sabot had passid. ma-
rye maudeleyn. E marie
of iames E of salomee bo-
ten oymementis. pat pei
comyngge shulden anoy-
te ihu/ E ful eerly in oon
of pe week dayes. pey ca-
men to pe sepulture. pe
stine nolb sprunge up/
E pei seiden to gader/ Who
shal axem turne to us.
pe stoon fro pe dore of pe
sepulture/ E pei biholdy-
ge salben pe stoon wal-
wid albey/ forsope it was
ful greet/ E pei in goyn-
ge in to pe sepulture. say-
en a zong oon hild wip
a white stole cotinge
at pe rythhalf E pey
weren abayshed or gret-
ly aferd. pe whiche seip
to hem/ nyl ze drede/ pe
seken ihu of margareth
crasfied. he hap risen
he is not here/ loope
place where pey put
iden hym/ bot zo see
say to his discyples E
to petre. for he shal
zo byfore you in to ga-

h

lille; þe ze schulen see
 hym. as he saide to you //
 & þei goynge oute fledde
 fro þe sepulchre forsoþe
 drede & quakyng. hade
 assaile hem / & to no mā
 þei seiden omȝ þing; forso
 þe þei dredden // Soþely
 ihs risynge erly in þe
 firste day of þe week. ap
 peride firste to marȝe
 maudeleyn of whom he
 hade caste out seue deue
 les / she goynge tolde to
 hem þat weren wyth
 hem weyllynge & wepyng;
 and þei herynge þat he
 liued & was seen of hir.
 byleneden not // Soþely af
 ter þese þingis. also of
 hem wandrynge. he is
 schewid in anoyr licnesse
 to hem goynge in to a
 tolln / & þei goynge tol
 den to oper. neȝer þei
 byleueden to hem // for
 soþe at þe laste hem el
 leuen restynge. ihs ap
 peride to hem. & repued
 þe onbyleue of hem &
 þe hardnesse of herte
 for þei byleueden not
 to hem þat hade seen

hym to haue risen fro
 ded / & he saide to hem //
 ze goynge in to al þe
 world. prechyn þe gos
 pel to eche creature //
 he þat schal bylene &
 schal be baptisid schal
 be cast soþely he þat
 schal not bylene. schal
 be dampned / forsoþe
 þese toknes schulen
 sue hem þat schulen
 bylene / in my name
 þei schulen caste oute
 fendis. þei schulen spe
 ke in ny newe tonges.
 þei schulen do alweȝ
 spentes / & if þei schu
 len drynke any venym
 it schal not noue he
 þei schulen put her
 hondes upon sick me.
 & þei schulen haue he
 lth // & soþely þe lord
 ihs after þat he hade
 spoken to hem. is ta
 ken up in to heuene.
 & sittyn on þe ryȝt
 half of god / soþely
 þei gon forȝ þis man
 erly & wher. þe lord.
 worchynge wyȝ &
 confermyng þe word

Wp synges folowynge

Here endy pe gos-
pels of warke.
And here bigynny
pe prolog of luke.

prolog

Luke of antio-
che of arie-
nacion in
craft a lecher
pat was a
disciple of pe apostles.
afterward he folowid
poul anon to his pas-
soun seruyng to pe
loed Wp oute blame
for whi he neyr haun-
de ovy tyme Wp nes-
sones of sex & foure
zere age dyed in bityn-
ful of pe holy gost. pe
whiche after pat pe gos-
pels were write by ma-
thew forsope in ielmye
by marke covely in y-
talie. firyng pe holy

gost vis gospel he brot
in pe cuntrees of ashaie
And signefyng hym
siff pat ovy gospels
of matthe & marke be
re write bifore to whom
Wp oute vylle pynge
pe whiche pe orde of pe
disposyng of pe gospel
axyn pe most nede of
tranel was. pat first
to pe bilyeuete men of
grees. by alle apheym
ge pe manhod of crist
comynge in to fleische.
shulde be made open.
lest pe holde Wp ielles
fables in pe onely desire
of pe olde lawe shulde
be holde. & pat he shul-
de tranel. lest pe distey-
ned Wp herenkes fables
& folw bysynesses shul-
de falle fro pe trewe
after pat in pe bygyn-
nyng of his gospel pe
natyure of ioun take
byfore shulde okebe to
whom he broot pe gos-
pel & in whom he chese
shulde write make
open hym in hy self

to be fulfillid pat lbe
ren for myche unfulful
god ye which wolde bry
ge you to oure folowynge
ye paynyngs or gentils
awenbarde answerde.
in hon myche ye grete
benefetis ze tellen abou
te you in so myche ze
schulen schelbe you gilt
gilty ye more blame for
eue to alle pese ymags.
ze hanen be onkyndest
afur ye voice of god herd
forged malmetis ye whi
che you ze hafe not don
poru pat onch synne
ze ne myght not take for
zeuenesse. pat ye lord by
pfens voues byhyte
not onch ze wolde not
resteyne. but also ze
slothe. whome we on
durfonge whanne of
hym to us no ma hafe
fresche. In hok myche
pfor oure fery be bet
tir clerliche it is open
pat forsope we shede
to malmetes. was
not of rebelle. but of
ignorance forsope we

we shelde ye treupe and
we folowde ye sones of
abraham not of fleschly
burpe. but of ye grace
of crist it was to pese
pus streynynge ye ap
ostle put hy a meene
but bene. shellynge to
hope xples neyr ar
necessoun to be onyte
neyr ye lorde flesche.
but ye fery pat lbe
hy by charyte. euere
by while forsope mety
ge hem by al ye cristen
wyp reduns & witnes
fynge counseiller to
oonhed. & shellyng
neyr porou his ryzt
fulnesse hane pis dis
erned. but al what en
to be depite to ye grace
of god. shellynge ye
iellus forsope & ye pay
nyngs greuously to
hane trespassid & by
tyngliche ye iellus for
ye by brenynge of pe lawe
hanen onkyndshipid
god. ye gentils for pes
chaungid ye treupe of
god in to lesynge it is

and why he broot no mo
pen ten epistles to churchis.
ten for sope bey epistles why
pulle pat is sale to ebreikes/
for ye oper soure/ to dyspyle
honnely were sent or put
for for he wolde shewe
ye nelle. distordy fro ye
olde testament. & he cuf
not to do aem. ye salwe
of moyses/ ordeyned his
epistles to ye noubre of
ye firste mandement of
decorage/ and why godd
many pceptis by moyses
ordeyned iellus to be deli
uered from pharao. why
ryt so many epistles.
yes poule techy men
y purchasid fro ye drel
& fro ye duage of mal
metrye. for why also pe
tley tables of stoon to
haue had figure of ye
tley testaments ryt
wel serued men haup
y take ye epistel holy
pat to ebreikes is. why
ten of entitiled to be
noon of poule. same
afferney. for so myche
pat it is entitiled why

his name. & for ye distaunce
of speche. & man of why
tyng. but of barnabees.
after tarcollian. of lube
after sume of eteyne clem
entis ye dyspyle of ye apost
les. & after hem ordeynede
byschop of Rome church/
to whom it is yns to answe
re. yf yfore it is not pou
his epistel for it hay not
his name. ch it shal be
no manes. for why no ma
nes name it is entitiled.
ye which pmg to graue
if it be poule it is most
to be leued to he pat so
myche shyney why ye
eloquence. of his wyne
oper eteyne. for pat at
ye ebreikes churchis/ he
was had as distroier of
ye salwe why fals susse
nom. he wolde his name
beynge pulle of ye figu
res of ye salwe. & ye tren
ye of crist. zelde rekenyng.
lest haply. hate of ye
name schulde exclude
ye pfit of ye lesson. it
is no wondur holy if he
be wiser in his owne lan.

sage pat is ebreke. pame
in a straunge. pat is in grell
in whiche speche of epistles
bey write it meup also su
men why pat ye epistel of
romayns in first is put sh
resoun openep it to haue be
write astur for he writuessey
hyin self to haue write his
epistel pan goynge to ierlm
astur pame pat he hadde mo
nestid wip lettris pat were
epistles. ye corinthies. &
oper pat pei schulde gedec
ye mynystrye of ye quylet
pat schulde be boze wip
hyin wherfor it is to bu
durstonde so alle ye epis
telis to be ordeyned. pat
yulle firste schulde be put
ye whiche to lolver us
in hywinge was sent.
& by alle oper enlyche ep
istelis fro gre to gre schul
de come to pfter ymagis/
romayns. Sodely ryzt
many were so amfide
faste pat pey vndersto
de not hem self to be
sanyd wold gods gra
but wold her meritis.
& for pat tkey pupils
schulde stryue amonge

hem self pfore he affer
mey hem uedy to be con
fermed ye dices of her
paryngurie ras myndig
to corinthies. Sodely he
sey. ye grace of science
to be grauntid. and not
as wel he blamey he
as he reproncy why pei
ondur name not oper.
whanne he sey. per
is herde amonge zoll
fornycacioun. & estesones
my spirit wip zoll ga
der to gider taky oisoun
to sathanas. In ye se
conde epistel fersope
& ye pat pfter more/
& more yei bep conser
led. ye men of galas
pame of ne blamey.
bey reproned but for
pei leuyd to felle fals
apostelis. Ophesies ho
ly. non ondur nyngge
but myche praysyngge
bey wozi for pei kepte
ye fey of ye apostles
ye philipensis sodely
myche more bep prey
sed for fersope neyr
pey wold hare false
apostelis. petessalony

censio neyheles in tibeie
 epistis wir al preisyng he
 forselber for as myche as
 not ouely pe few of tremp
 pe lepte into synite but
 also in psecucion of perre
 cutesynes pe were fonde
 stable Colocensio copely
 siche were pat no nede
 schulde haue pat pe schul
 de be seie fleischly of pe
 apostel forsope to hem
 he bylyhte neide hys co
 mynge to pe wylche also
 he seip and pouy y. he
 absent in body but i spy
 ryt i am wir zolt rovin
 ge & seyng zoure orde
 Of pe ebrelles copely
 what shal y seie of wyl
 om pe tessalonycensio
 pat greetly bep preised.
 bep seide to be made
 folwers of pe churchis
 of god pat bep ielberne
 pe same copely also ze ha
 my suffred of zoure by
 red pat also pey of ielb
 es at wyl ebrelles also
 pe same he remebry
 seyng for wyl also to
 men bounden ze hauey

hade compassioun & rauce
 ne of zoure goodes wir glad
 nesse ze haue suffred knoll
 inge zolt to haue bett &
 dwelinge substaunce of op
 bigone to whom yfere afir
 pe baptyim of godis done
 fro pe psecucion of genaa
 om fulfild in crist & fro
 pe bysynge of natyng
 of man to be reheris. pol
 er was graunted pat to
 men sechynge he schulde
 schalke in wylche he was
 apphendynge by pe entn
 ge of pe generacioun of
 undeprattible god renyge
 azen on to god. by natan
 pe sone of damp admyt
 tid schynge to men his
 crist schulde make by pe
 werk of ampyt mant
 ne azen to hym self.
 pe wylche luke by damp
 pe fadir to men comyge
 to god zaf alky in crist
 to pe wylche luke polke
 in byp of pe apostles
 dedis to be wite was zy
 ne pat god fulschewid
 in to god as to be god pat
was in pe ascension & pe

done of tresoun pat was in
das a quechis / pe preier
 of pe apostles. Whom lon
 ge pe lot of godis chons
 pe nommbre schulde be ful
 flid / so poul fulfyllinge
 schulde ryue to pe dedis
 of pe apostles. Whome
 longe tozens pe gode / pat
was godis wille / lyfynge
 pe lord hade chose pat ym
 bope to men redyng &
 sechynge god. by alle
 ymgis it were pfitable
 to be oved of us / nealpo
 les the knoddyng pat
 pe transeylenge erpe ty
 lher it byhoney to ere of
 his fruytes. haurp aboi
 ded open curioseste laste
 we schulde be seie not
 to chere god as wel to
 men willyng as to
 pfit to men al o ymg

Lher was
 him prest
 zacarie by
 name / m
 pe dayes
 of eroude
 kyng of
 iude of
 pe sort of abin & his wif
 of pe dnytris of aaron.
 and hir name elizabeth
 sopeh pei bope weren
 iust by fore god. soynge
 in alle pe maudemetis
 & instifyngis of pe lord.
 Wp outen playnt / & a
 sone was not to hem.
 for pat elizabeth was
 bareyne & bope hadden
 son fer in her dayes / so
 pely it is don. pat zaca
 rie was sente presthode
 in pe ordre of his sorte
 by fore god after pe custu
 me of pthode. by sort
 he wente forp. pat he
 entride in to pe temple
 of pe lord. schuld put
 encense / & al pe multa
 tude of pe puple was
 wp oute forp preinge
 in pe hour of encense /
 sopeh an amgel of pe

Here endy pe prolog
 of luke and bigyn
 neu pe gospels of
 luke aft pe lettre.

I Lord apperide to hym. stonde
 se on pe rixthalf of pe au
 ter of encense. ⁊ zacharie
 seynge is disturblid. ⁊ dre
 de felde doun on hym. for
 sope pe aungel seip to hy
 zacarie drede pou not. for
 y preier is herd. and es
 zabeth y wyf shal bere
 to pee a sone. ⁊ his name y
 shal be. ioseph. ioon. and
 he shal be ioye to pee. ⁊
 gladmyng. and manye schi
 len enioye in his natyuy
 te. sope he shal be gre
 te byfore pe lord. ⁊ he
 shal not drynke wyne. ⁊ sy
 dr. ⁊ he shal be fulfild
 wip pe holy gost. yit of
 his modur. wombe. ⁊ he
 shal counte manye of
 pe sones of ysrael. to
 pe lord god of hem. and
 he go before hym in pe
 spirit. ⁊ due of helye.
 and shal turne pe her
 tis of padis in to pe
 sones. ⁊ men oute of
 bylene. ⁊ pat bylene
not to pe prudence of
ust men. for to make re
 dy a ppyte pepul to pe

lord. ⁊ zacharie seide to
 pe aungel. Wher of shal
 y wite this. for I am olde.
 ⁊ my wyf hap gon fer
 in hir dayes. ⁊ pe angel
 answerynge seide to hy
 forsope y am gabriel. ⁊
 stonde nyz byfore god. ⁊
 y am sent to pee. for to
 speke and to euangelize
 to pee pese ymgis. ⁊ lo
 pou shalt be stille. ⁊
dumbe. ⁊ pou shalt not
 moln speke til in to pe
 day. in whiche pese ym
 gis shulen be do. for pat
 pou hast not bylene to
 my wordis. pe whiche
 shulen be fulfild in
 her tyme. ⁊ pe pepul
 was abidyng zacharie.
 ⁊ y wonderiden. for he
 taried in pe temple. for
 sope he gon oute myzte
 not speke to hem. ⁊ y
 enelken pat he hade see
 a bysion in pe temple
 ⁊ he was bekenyng to
 hem. ⁊ dwelide dwibe.
 and it is made. as pe day
 es of his office weren
 fulfild. he wente in

to his hous/ forsope aftur ye
 se dayes. Elizabeth his wif
 conceyued. and his husf
 ue nonepis sayngel for
 so ye lord dide to me in ye
 dayes in which he biselke
 for to take alle my shen
 ship amonge men/ sovelly
 in ye sixte monye. pe
 aungel gabriel is sente
 fro god in to a cite of ga
 lilee to whom pe name
 nazareth to a maiden wed
 did to aman to whom pe
 name was ioseph of pe
 hous of dauid. and yena
 me of pe warden marie/
 and pe aungel gon in to
 hir. seide/ haile ful of
 grace ye lord wif pee.
 blessid pou amonge wy
 men/ pe whiche whanne
 she hade herde is trub
 blid in his word. & pou
 tel what maner saluta
 cioun his was/ & pe aun
 gel seide to hir/ ne dred
 pou marie/ sovelly pou
 hast founden grace and
 tis god/ so pou shalt co
 ceive in wombe & bere
 a sone. & pou shalt

clepe his name ihs/ pro
 shal be greet. and he
 shal be clepd pe sone
 of pe hiest/ and ye lord
 god shal zine to him.
 ye see of dauid his fa
 der. & he shal regne
 in ye hous of iacob wif
 outen ende/ & of his rell
 me shal be noon ende/
 forsope marie seide to
 pe aungel on what ma
 ner shal his ping be
 don. for y knolke not
 man. / and ye aungel
 answeringe seide to
 hir/ pe holy gost shal
 come fro aboue in to
 pee. & ye shu of pe
 hiest shal shawlike to
 pee. / Ofore & pat holy
 ping pat shal be born
 of pee. shal be clepd
 pe sone of god/ & lo eth
 zabeth vy codyn & she
 hap conceyued a sone
 in hir elte/ and his mo
 nepe is pe sixte to hir/
 pat is clepd barcyne/
 for eith word shal not
 be impossible anentis
 god/ forsope marie

Primo

like

seide/ lo ye hondmayden
of pe lord. be it don to me
after pi word/ And ye ann
gel deytide fro hir cope
ly marie rysynge up in
po dayes. Wente wyf haf
in to pe hilly places in
to a citee of judes/ & she
entride in to pe hous of
zatharie/ & gret elyabeth/
& it is don as elyabeth
herde pe salutation of
marie. pe zonge child in
hir wombe gladdid/ & ely
abeth is fulfillid wyf pe
holy gost/ & cried wyf
greet voice & seide/ bly
ssed you amonge wyfwe
and blessid be ye fruyt
of pi wombe/ & wher
of pis ping to me. pat
ye modir of my lord.
come to me. so forsope
as pe voice of pi sa
lutation is made in
myr eris. pe zonge
child gladdid in ioye
in myr wombe/ & bly
ssed you pat haf lifte
ued. for vylle yngis
pat ben orde to pee

fro pe lord. schulen be
pfitehly don/ & marie
seide/ my soule mag
niefiey pe lord/ and my
spirit hap gladdid in
god myr helpe/ for he
hap byholden pe meke
nesse of his handmayde.
lo forsope of pis alle ge
neracions schulen seye
me blessid/ for he pat is
myrty. hap don to me gre
te yngis/ & his name
holy/ & his mercy fro by
rede in to Eymedis. to
men dredynge hym/
he wad myrty in hyo
arme. he staterid. prom
de men wyf mynde of
his herte/ and putte
don myrty men fro see
te/ & enhaunsed meke/
he hap fulfillid hungry
men wyf good yngis/
& he hap lefte ryche
men vord/ he hanng
mynde of his mercy.
toke up ysacl his child/
as he hap spoken to
to cure fadys. wab
raham and to his seed

9

in to beldis/ forsope marie
Wolde whi hir as pre moue
pis/ & turued azem to hir
house/ Sopely pe tyme of
beryngge child is fulfildde
to elyabeth/ & she childe
a coney/ & pe neybores &
cossyns of hir heiden for
pe lord hade magnified
his mercy/ Whi hir/ & pey
paucliden hym/ and it
is don in pe erte day pey
camen for to circumade pe
child/ & pei clepden hy
zacharie by name of his
fadir/ & his modir answere
rynge/ seide/ nay/ but
he shal be cleped ion/
& pey oviden to hir for
no man is in pi kyn pat
is cleped by pis name/
sopely pei made a signe
to his fadir/ Whom he
wolde hym for to be cle
ped/ & he axunge a poyntel
skrot sayunge/ ion
is his name/ & alle mi
wonduden/ forsope his
moup is opened anon
& his toung & he spak
blessyngs god/ & drede
is made on alle here

neybores/ & pefellbordis
weren pruphschid apou
alle pe hilly places of
indee/ & alle mi pat her
den putiden in her her
te sayunge/ who gessit
pon pis child shal be
& sopely pe hond of pe
lord whi hym/ & zaccarie
his fadir is fulfildde
Whi pe holy gost and p
figed sayunge/ blessid
pe lord god of ysaac
for he hay distide and
made redempcionn of
his puple/ and he hay
rerid to us an horn of
helpe/ in pe hous of da
uid his child/ as he spak
by pe moup of holy aseter
pat ben fro pe world/ helpe
of onre enemyes/ and of
pe hond of alle men pat
hadden us/ to be don in di
whi onre fadris/ and to
haue mynde of his holy
testament/ pe oop pat
he swore to abraham
onre fadir/ to zyeue hy
to us/ pat we deliuerid
fro pe hond of onre ene
myes/ serue we to hy

by ourn drede in holynesse
 & rite & finesse byfore hym
 alle oure dayes and pou ch
 ild shalt be clepid pe pphete
 of pe higest for p shalt
 go byfore pe face of pe lord
 for to make redy his weies
 for to geue stience of helpe
 to his people into reuyns
 from of her synnes by pe
 entrailes of pe myght of oure
 god in pe whiche he spryn
 ginge up fro an hysse hap
 visited us for to geue lyght
 to hem pat sitten in dyl
 nessis & in shadowe of
 dey for to dresse oure feet
 in to pe wey of pees so
 pely pe child waxide &
 was comfortid in spiritis
 and was in dysert tyl pe
 day of his afelbyng to
 iherusalem

A

Hesoye it is don in
 po dayes amaimde
 ment wente oute
 fro cesar august a noble pat
 al pe world schuld be dis
 cened his first dyscry
 mynge was made of gryn
 iustice or hope of cytye &
 alle me wenten pat pey

schulden make pffessoun
 or knowlecheinge eche by
 hym self in to his cite
 copely & ioseph stode up
 fro galilee pe cite of na
 zareth in to iudee into
 a cite of damp pat is cle
 pid bethlem for pat he
 was of pe hous & mey
 nece of damp pat he schul
 & knowleche our marie
 spoused to hym whiche wip
 child copely it is don
 whanne pey were verer
 pe daies ben fulfilled
 pat she schuld bere child
 & she childen hir firste
 bygeten com & whapped
 hym in clothes & put
 tid hym in a cratche
 for it was not place to
 hym in pe comon stable
 & sheperdis weren in
 pe same cuntrie waky
 ge & kepynge pe wac
 chis of pe nyzt upon
 her floo & lo pe an
 gel of pe lord stood by
 sidis hem & clernesse
 of god shyned aboute
 hem & pey & edden luy
 greet drede & pe angel

sende to hem/ nyl ze dicen
 lo sopeh. i. ewangelize or
 preche to you a greet ioye.
 pat schal be to alle pe
 pepul for a sancoure
 is boene to day to us. pat
 is crist a lord in ye citee
 of daup. & is a token to
 you ze schulen fynde a
 yonge child wlaipid wip
 clothes. & put in a crache
 and sodrynly per is made
 wip ye aungel annunciu
 d of heuenly knyghod.
 heriunge god. & seynge/
 storie in ye hyest vngis
 to god. and in epe pees
 to men of good wille. and
 it is don pat wshane pe
 aungelis passiden alwey
 fro hem in to heuene. pe
 shepsherdos spoken to
 gidere seynge/ go wo
 ouer to bedlem. & see the
 vis word pat is made
 pe whiche ye lord ma
 de. and shewed to us/
 & per hyunge camen. and
 founden marie. & ioseph
 & ye yonge child putte
 in a crache/ sopeh. per
 seeynge knellen of pe

word pat was sende to
 hem of mo child. & alle
 men pat haden herd
 wondriden. & of pese
 vngis pat were sende
 to hem of ye shepsherdos
 for sope marie kepte alle
 pese wordos. beringe
 to god in hir herte. &
 ye shepsherdos tned
 hem. stonfyngge & he
 ringe god in alle vni
 gis pat per haden herd
 & oen as it was sende
 to hem/ and after pat
 epte dayes were ended.
 pat pe child schulde be
 arcuadid his name
 is clepid ihu. pe whiche
 was clepid of pe anni
 gel. byfore he was con
 ceived in wombe/ and
 after pat pe dayes of
 pynsaoun of marie
 weren fulfilled after
 moyses lawe. per toke
 hym in to ierlm. pat
 per schulden offre hym
 to pe lord as it is wry
 ten in pe lawe of pe lord/
 for ealy male fynde ope
 nyngge pe wombe for

to go oute. & shal be cleped
holy to ye lord. & pat pey
shulden yue an offrynge
after pat it is seide in pe
lawe of ye lord. apere of
turtres & tilbo culier bird
dis. & lo ana was in ie
rusalem to welcome ye na
me symeon. & his man
just & dredeful abydyng
ye comfort of ysacl. &
ye holy goost was in hy
& he had taken answeere
of ye holy goost. hym
not for to see dy. no
but he see fiste crist of
ye lord. and he came in
spirit in to ye temple.
and whanne his chylde
laden ye chylde ihu. pat
yei schulden & after
ye custome of ye lawe
for hym. & he toke hym
in to his armes. & he
blessid god and seide.
lord now thou leuest in
seruaunt. after yllhod
in pees. for myn nen
han seen. ym helpe. ye
wiche you hast made
redy. byfore ye face

of alle peples. hyte to
to shewyng of hepen
men. and storie of y
pepul of ysacl and his
fadr. & his modir weren
wondringe upon yest y
his pat theren seide of
hym. & symeon blessid
hem. and seide to marie
his modir. lo this is put
in to ye fallynge. & into
ye risynge ayein of many
men of isracl. & in to
a tokene to whome it
shal be ayeinside. and
a sword shal passe thor
his owne soule. pat po
uytis he shal bid of ma
ny hertes. and ana was
a pphetesse. ye doughtir
of phanniel of ye kyn
se of aser. & she hadde
son fory in many day
es. & hade lyued wip hyr
hosebonde seven year.
fro hir maidenhode. &
his was a wiche. on
to fourestore year and
foure. ye wiche & jar
tide not fro ye temple
seruyng nyzt & day

to fastyngis and bysychyngis
 & was in yllke hour abone
 comyng. Enouche to pe
 lord & spak of hym to alle
 pat abiden pe redemption
 of israel & as pei hadden
 pfitely don alle yngis. af
 ter pe salbe of pe lord. pei
 turneden azem in to galile-
 in to her awe nazareth. So
 pely pe child wexe & was
 confortide ful of wisdom
 & grace of god was in hy
 And his elter pat is fadir
 & modir. Wenten hy alle
 zenis in to ierlun. in pe so
 lempne day of pasche and
 whanne ihe was made
 of elvelue zenis. hem sty
 nge up in to ierusalem
 after pe custome of pe feste
 day. & pe dayes endide.
 Whanne pei turneden a
 zem pe child dwelt in ie
 rusalem. and his fadir
 and modir. Enelven not
 forsope pei gessynges hy
 for to be in pe aurtree
 or solokestipe. camen
 pe weye or four ney of
 a day. & sousten hym

amonge his cosyns and
 Enolben. & pei not syn
 dyng. Wenten azem in
 to ierusalem. sechinge
 hym. & it is don after pe
 prid day. pei founden hy
 in pe temple. sittinge
 in pe mydel of doctours
 herynges hem & axinge
 hem. so pely alle me pat
 herden hym. Wondriden
 on pe prudence and answ-
 res of hym. & pei seyn
 ge wondriden. & his mo-
 der & fadir. Seiden to hy
 sone. What hast pol-
 don to us yus. lo in fadir
 & y ovlbynges. han sou-
 te pee. & he sey to he
 What is it pat ze som-
 ten me. Wiste ze not
 for in yo yngis pat be
 my fadris. it byhouep
 me for to be. & pei vn-
 durstode not pe word.
 pe whiche he spak to
 hem. & he came doun
 wyf hem. and came to
 nazareth. and was so
 get or vndurlourte to
 hem. & his modir kepte

G

to sider alle pefelbordis
berynge to gidir in hir her
te/ & iſt pſited in wiſdome
& age/ & grace angutis god
& man.

A

H Or ſope in pe fif
tenpe zeer of pe
empire of tybe
rie empoure pilat of pou
ce pauryng or ſeyng
iudei/ ſopely eroude pnce
of pe fourpe part of ga
lilee/ philip forſope hys
broper pnce of pe fourpe
part of yturie/ & of pe ci
tre of tracon/ & liſamy pnce
of pe fourpe pt of abyly
vudir pe prynces of pſas
annas & caiphas/ pe word
of pe lord is made vpon
ion pe ſone of zacarye
in deſerte/ & he came in
to al pe cuntre of jordan
pſchynge baptym of pen
aunce in to remyſſion
of synnes/ as it is writte
in pe boke of wordis of
yſaie pe pphete/ pe voice
of oon cryng in deſert/
make ze redy pe lley of
pe lord/ make ze his pa
tis ryztful che valey

ſhal be fulfilled. every
hil & hillot ſhal be ma
de lowe/ and pſchellid pi
gis ſchulen be in to des
ſed ymgis/ & ſharp ym
gis in to playn weyes/
& euery pſeiſhe or man ſhal
ſee pe helpe of god/ pſore
he ſende to pe cupanyes
pe whiche werten oute
pat pei ſchulen be bap
tizet of hym/ fruytis
or frudelyngis of eddis/
wſho ſchuld to zoll for
to fle fro pe wrape to
counyng/ & per ſore do zee
woep fruytes of penance/
& hoxyme ze not for to ſay
we han a fadir abraham/
ſopely y ſey to zou god
is myzty for to reys of pe
ſe ſtones pe ſones of abra
ham/ forſope now in aye
is put to pe rote of pe
tre/ ſopely euery tre not
makynge good fruyte
ſhal be lit down/ & be
sent in to pe fier/ and pe
cupanyes ariden hym/
ſayng/ what pſore ſhu
len we do/ & ſopely he an
ſwerynge ſende to hem/

he pat hap ilko cootis. & y
ue to uon haupnge. & he
pat hap metis. do on lyke
man/ Sowely & pe puplia
nes camen for to be bapty
zed. & pey seiden to hym/
maister what schulen we
do. & he seide to hem/ do
ze no ying more. pane pat
pat is ordeyned to you. for
sope & Enyztis axiden hy
seyunge/ what schulen &
we do. & he sey to hem/
Smyte ze wrongfully no
man. ney make ze false
challenge. and be ze apay
ed wip youre solides/ for
sope al pe puple gessyge.
& alle men peulynge
in her hertes of Ioon. lest
pauenture he were eft/
Ioon answeryde. Sey
inge to alle men/ Sowely
y baptise you in watur.
for sope a stronger pan
y schal come astur me. of
whom y am not worpy
for to wubynde pe yllon
ge of his schoon/ he schal
baptize you in pe hooly
gost & fire. whos wryn
wrynge wol in his hond.

& he schal purge his flo
re of corn. and schal ge
der ye whete in to hys
berne. sowely pe chaffo
he schal. breime & wy
fire ouquenchable/ for
sope and he firyngge ma
ny oper ymyng. euange
lyzed to pe pepul/ Sowely
eroude pnce of ye four
pe yt whane he was bla
med of Ioon of erodias
wyf of his broper. & of
alle ye yuelles pat erou
de dide. caste to pis oyl
al & schutte Ion in pson/
for sope it is don whane
alle pe pepul was bap
tyzed. & ihs estened &
preyngge. heuene is
opened & pe holy gost
came don in bodily lyf
ness as a culuer in to
hym/ & a voyce is made
fro heuene/ you arte
my der worpe sonne. in
pee it hap plesed to
me/ & ihs was bygyn
nyngge as of prity ze
re. pat he was gessid
pe sone of Ioseph/ pe
whiche was of ehye/

pe lliche was of mathan/
pe lliche was of leuy/
pe lliche was of melchij/
pat was of sime/ pat was
of ioseph/ pat was of ma
thas/ pat was of amos/
pat was of traum/ pat
was of elze/ pat was of
nagge/ pat was of matha
th/ pat was of mathie/
pat was of semep/ pat
was of ioseph/ pat was
of juda/ pat was of gozo
gabel/ pat was of sala
tiel/ pat was of nery/
pat was of melchij/ pat
was of addy/ pat was of
cosan/ pat was of elna
dan/ pat was of her/ pat
was of ihu/ pat was of
elazar/ pat was of jo
rym/ pat was of matha
th/ pat was of leuy/ p
was of symeon/ pat
was of juda/ pat was
of ioseph/ pat was of
iona/ pat was of elia
chym/ pat was of me
lea/ pat was of meima/
pat was of mathathai/ p
was of nathan/ p was
of dauid/ pat was of jesse/

p was of
johanna
p was of re
sa.

pat was of ober/ pat
was of gooz/ pat was
of salimon/ pat was of
naason/ pat was of amy
nab/ pat was of aram/
pat was of efrom/ pat was
of phares/ pat was of jims/
pat was of jacob/ pat was
of ysaac/ pat was of alba
ham/ pat was of thare/
pat was of nachaz/ pat
was of scruth/ pat was
of eagan/ pat was of pha
lith/ pat was of heber/ pat
was of sale/ pat was of
caynan/ pat was of ar
phaxath/ pat was of sem/
pat was of moe/ pat
was of lameth/ p was
of mathusale/ pat was
of enoc/ pat was of ja
reth/ pat was of mala
liel/ pat was of caynan/
pat was of enos/ pat
was of seth/ pat was
of adam/ pat was of
god.

H Or sope the fil
of ye holy gost
turned hem
fro iordan/ & was led by
ye spirit in to deserte.

fourty dayes. & Was temped
by pe deuel. & ere no ping in
po dayes. & po dayes endid.
he hungred. for so pe de
uel sende to hym. & if you
art godis sone. say to pis
ston. pat it be made breed.
& ihs answeringe to hym.
it is writen. for amā hūey
not in oonliche bred. but
in eily word of god. and pe
deuel cede hym in to an
hy hil. & schalide hym
alle pe relikes of pe rou
denesse of pe erpe. in a mo
ment of a tyme. & sayp
to hym. y schal gyue to
pee al pis polker and pe
stone of hem. for to me
pe ben zoun. & to whom
y wole. I gyue hem. yfore
if you shalt worshippe
byfore nte. alle pingis
schulen be pyne. & ihs an
sweringe. sende to hym.
it is writen. you shalt
worshippe pe lord in god.
& to hym alone y shalt
due. & he les hym in to
ierusalem. & sette hym
on pe pyname of pe tem
ple. and sende to hym.

if you art godis sone.
sende pi gilt hem. & dū
for it is writen. for he sayp
comāndid to his aūgelis
of pee. pat pei leyn pee
in alle pi weyes. and for
in hondis pei schulle take
pee. lest pāuenture you
hurt pi foot at a stoon.
& ihs answeringe seip
to hym. it is send. you
schalt not tempte pe lord
in god. and eily tempta
cioun endid. pe send lke
te albey fro hym. til to a
tyme. & ihs turned azem
in dū of pe spirit. in
to galilee. & pe fame lke
te foz of hym poik al
pe countre. & he taughte in
pe synagoges of hem. &
was magnified of alle
men. & he came to naza
reth where he was nois
hid. and he entride aft
his custome in pe saboth
day in te a synagoge.
& ros foz to rede. & pe
boke of ysac. pe prophete
is taken to hym. & as
he turnede pe boke. he
fonde a place where it

iii^o

Was writen/ pe spirit of pe
loed on me: for wiche pms
he anoynted me he sente
me for to euangelize to pore
men/ for to hele contrite me
in herte & for to pche remys
sion to canis. & lyt to bly
de men. & for to leue or deli
uer broken men in to remys
sion for to pche pe zeer of
pe loed. acceptid or plesant
& pe day of retribuoun
or zeldyng azen. & wchame
he hade foldid or closed pe
book he gaf azen to pe my
nistre & sat/ & pe yen of
alle men in pe synagoge
weren bysholdyng in to
hym/ sopeky he began for
to seye to hem for in pis
day pis scripture is fulfil
lid in zome criss/ & alle me
pauen witnesseyng to hy
and boundiden in pe wordis
of grace pat camen for
fro his moup/ & pei stode
wcher pis is not pe sone
of ioseph. & he sey to he/
sopeky ze schulen sey to
me pis lickenesse/ for he
le hy self/ pei senden
gret pynge han he herde

don in capharnaum. make
you and here in pi am
tee/ sopeky he sey/ truly
y sey to you. for no man
pphete is accepte or ressey
ued in his olde cuntree/
in treupe y sey to you for
many widelkes weren in
pe dayes of helhe pe pphete
in israel wchame heue
was closed. pre zeer and
syxe moneris. wchame
gret hungur was made
in al erpe. & to non of
hem was hely sent no but
in to sarepta of sydon to
a woman widelke/ & ma
ny mesels weren in israel
ondur helhe pe pphete.
& noon of hem was clen
sid no but naaman of sy
rie/ & alle in pe synago
ge heryngge pese pynge
ken fulfilled wip wraye/
& pei risen up. & castid
hym out wip oute pe cite
& leden hym to pe cop
of pe hil on pe wiche
her cite is foundid. pat
pei schulden caste hym
down/ sopeky he passy
ge. wente by pe mydel

of hem/ and he came doun
 in to capharuaum a cite of
 galilee/ & þe he taught hem
 in sabots/ & þey were asto-
 nyed in his techynge/ for
 his word was in polver/ & in
 þe synagoge ^{of hem} was aman ha-
 uynge an dunelene fend/ &
 he cried wip greet voyce sey-
 nge/ suffre what to us & to
 þee ihu of nazareth/ hast þu
 comen for to lese us/ I wote
 þee pat þou art þe hooly
 of god/ & ihe blamed hym
 seynges/ were dounb/ &
 go oute fro hym/ & ihe hane
 þe fend had caste hym forþ
 in to þe mydel/ he wente alkei
 fro hym/ & no ying noyed hy
 & drede is made in alle men/
 and þei speken to guder sey-
 nge/ what is þis word for
 in polver & oþu he coman
 dny to dunelene spiritis/ and
 þei gon out/ & þe same was
 purplichid of hym/ in to
 eche place of þe cuntre//
 fforsoþe ihe risynge of þe
 synagoge/ entride in to þe
 hous of symount/ soþely
 þe modur of symountis
 dyf was holden wip greet

feles/ & þei preyede hy
 for hir/ and ihe stondynge
 upon hir/ comamndide
 to þe fener/ & it leste hir/
 & anon she risynge my-
 nystride to hem/ forsoþe
 whane þe sone wente
 doun/ alle pat had ovel
 men wip dyvyls langkys
 hynges/ ledten hem to hy/
 & he puttyng hondis to
 eche by hym sylf/ helde
 hem/ soþely fendis wen-
 ten oute fro manye cry-
 nge & seynges/ for þou
 art þe sone of god/ & he
 blamynges suffrid not
 hem for to speke/ for þey
 wisten hym to be crist/
 soþely þe day made he
 gon out wente in to desert
 place/ & þe cupanyes of
 pepul sougte hym/ and
 þei camen on to hym/
 and þei helden hym/ pat
 he shulde not go alkei
 fro hem/ to whom he sey-
 de/ for & to oper cittees it
 byhouep me for to euange-
 lize þe kyndom of god/ for
 per to I am sente/ & he
 was techynge in þe

Synagogues of galilee: v

Sopely it is don wh
 ame cupanyes of
 pepul raman fast
 in to ihu. pat pei schulden
 here pe word of god. and he
 stode byndis pe stondyng
 watir of genazareth & say
 also bootis stondyng bys
 dis pe stondyng watir
 sopely pe fisheris haden
 gon dū. & waishiden nettis
 sopely he saynge in to a
 boot pat was symonitis.
 preied hym for to led aȝem
 a litel fro pe lond. & he sit
 tynge taughte pe cupanyes
 fro pe boot. sopely as he se
 id fro to speke. he seide
 to symon. led pou in to
 hye & stakȝe ȝoure nettis
 in to takynge. & symon
 answeryng seide to hym
 comāndour lke trauelȝn
 ge by al pe nyȝt. taken no
 pȝng. but in þis word i shal
 ley oute pe nett. & whāne
 pei haden dū pȝng. pei
 clafiden a plenteuous mul
 titude of fishis. forsope
 her nett was broken. & pei
 beknyden to felokkes pat
 weren in anop boot. pat

pei schulden come & holpe
 hem. & pei came & fulfiden
 bope pe litel bot. es. so þ
 pei weren alinest drenchid
 pe whiche pȝng whāne
 symount petre say. he sel
 doken to pe kness of ihu say
 nge. lord go fro me. for i
 am aman symon. sopely
 in et wordȝ hadȝe bygon
 hym aboute. & alle pat we
 ren byȝ hym in pe takynge
 of fishis. whiche pei toke
 sopely on pe lithe maner.
 james & ion pe sones of ze
 bedee. pat weren felokkes
 of symount petre. & ihs
 sey to symon. iȝe pou
 drede. noll fro þis tyme þ
 shalt be takynge men. &
 pe bootis led up to pe lond.
 alle pȝngs lāste. pei suide
 hym. And it is don whāne
 he was in don of pe citee.
 & lo aman ful of lepre &
 seyng ihu and fallȝe
 doken in to his face. þȝd
 hym seyng. lord iȝe pou
 wast pou maist make me
 clene. & ihs holdyng forȝ
 þe hond. tūchide hym
 seyng. i. wole. be pou

made chene/ & anon pe lepre
 passed alwey fro hym/ & iſc
 comandise to hym pat he ſt
 hulke ſaie to no man/ but
 go ſhelke pee to a pſt & offre
 for pi clenſynge as moyſes
 had in to witneſſynge to he/
 ſowely pe word walke abou
 te pe more of hym & many
 cūpanyes came to gader pat
 pei ſchulden here & he held
 of her ſekeneſſe/ for ſope
 he wente in to deſert & pryde/
 & it is don in oon of dayes/
 & he cūtyngge tauhte/ and
 pe weren phariſees & ſatti
 ge/ & doctour is of ſalke v
 camen of eche caſtel of ga
 lilee & iude & ieruſalem/
 & pe adu of pe lord was
 for to hele ſeke men/ & lo
 men beryngge in a bed ama
 pat was ſeke in paleſte
 & pei ſouyten ſe to bere
 hym in & put byfore hy/
 & pei not fyndynge i what
 pte pei ſchulden bere hy
 in for pe cūpanye of pe
 pul/ ſtieden upon pe roof/
 & by pe ſclates pei ſente
 hym tolbu wy pe bed in to
 pe mydel byfore iſu/ pe

ſep of whom as iſc ſayd/
 he ſaide/ man/ pi ſynes
 ben foryeuen to pee/ & ſt his
 & phariſees bigūnen ſie to
 penke/ ſaynge/ who is pis
 pat ſpekis blaſphemye/ for
 who may foryeue ſynnes/
 no but god aldone/ for ſope
 as iſc ſuere pe pointio
 of hem/ he anſwerynge/
 ſaide to hem/ what penke
 ze yuel pingis in zoure
 hertis/ what is hither
 for to ſay/ ſynes ben for
 yeuen to pee/ or for to ſey
 riſe up & walke/ & ſowely
 pat ze wite for mann/
 done hay polver in erpe
 to foryeue ſynnes/ he ſay
 to pe ſeke man in pale
 ſte/ to pee i ſaye riſe/
 up/ take pi bed & go in
 to ym hous/ & anon he
 riſynge up byſtoe hem/
 toke pe bed in whiche he
 lay & wente in to hy
 hous magnifyngge god/
 & greet wondur to alle/
 & pei magnifieden god/
 and ben fulfilled wypp
 greet drede/ ſaynge for
 we han ſeen unelouſe

f

yingis to say. And after þe
se yingis is writte oute &
call a puppican leuy by na
me. Cyttinge at þe tollbope
and he seip to hym. Sue
you me. & alle yingis for
saken. he risynge sued hy
& leuy made to hy a greet
frest in his hous. and þe
was a greet cōpanye of
puppicans and of oþer þ
woren wip hem. Cyttinge
at þe mete. & phariseos
& scribes of hem. gructh
den Cyttinge to his dis
ples. Why eten ye & dryn
den wip puppicans. & sy
ful men. & is the answe
ryng seip to hem. þey
þat ben hool han no ne
d to aliche. But þei þ
han yuel. soþely i. cam
not þe to depe iust nre.
But synful men to þe
naue. & þei cōden to
hym. Why dyspulis of
ioun fasten ofte & make
bysechyngeos. also & þe
phariseos. Bot þi dys
pulis eten & drynken to
whom he seip. Wher ze
moln make þe sones

of þe sponse for to faste.
þe while þe sponse is
wip hem. & soþely dayes
schulen come whanne þe
sponse schal be taken alwey
fro hem þane þei schulen
faste in þo dayes. for soþe
he saide to hem. & aliche. for
no man sendip a mede
þing of anelwe clþ in to an
olde clþ. ellis & he brek
þe nelke. & þe mengyns
of þe nelke acordip not to
þe olde. & no man sendip
nelke wyne in to olde wyne
vessels. ellis þe nelke wyne
shal breke þe wyne vessels.
and þe wyne schal be shed
oute. & þe wyne vessels
schulou pische. Bot welke
wyne is to be sent in to nelke
wyne vessels. & bope ben
þepte. & no man drynke
ge olde. Wole anon welke
soþely he saip. þe olde is
þe better.

Herfore it is witten
in þe secunde
first saboth wh
anne he passide
by agnes. his dyspulis.
pluckeden cris. & þei stode
ge wip hondis eten.

soperly crime of pe pharise
 es. seiden to hem/ what
 don ze pat pat is not lesful
 in sabotis. / & ihte answer
 ynge seide to hem/ nepir
 ze han red pat pat daup
 side whanne he hungride
 & pei pat weren wip hym.
 hou he entride in to pe hous
 of god & toke lous of pro
 raoun. & eet. & zaf to he
 pat weren wip hym wsh
 che lous it was not lesful
 to ete no bit oonly to pshas
 alone. & he seide to hem/
 for manes cone is led. zhe
 of pe saboth. // Soperly it
 is don & in anoy saboth.
 pat he entride in to a sy
 nagogue & tauyte. / & aman
 was se. & his rythond
 was drye/ forsope scribis
 & pharisees asprieden hy
 zif he schulte hele hym in
 pe saboth. pat pei schul
 den fynde cause wher of
 for to acuse hym soperly
 he wiste pe pouztis of hem/
 & he say to pe man pat haid
 a drye hond/ rise up & st. n
 te in to pe mydel. & he ry
 nge stode/ soperly ihte

soper to hem/ I axe zow zif it
 is lesful to do wel in pe saboth
 or ynel. / for to make a soule
 saaf. or for to lese. & alle
 men loked aboute. he seide
 to pe man/ holde forp yme
 hond. & he held forp. / & his
 hond is restored to helpe/
 soperly pei ben fulh lhd
 wip wylkysdam. or folke
 & spaken to gader what pei
 schulden do of ihte. // forsope
 it is don in po dayes. he
 wente oute in to an hyl for
 to ppe. & he was almyzte
 dwellynge in pe pphar of
 god. & whanne pe day was
 maad. he clepid his discipulis
 & ches tibelue of hem. who
 and apostles he clepide/
 symonit whom he cle
 pde petre. & andrew his
 broper. james & joon. phi
 lip & bartholomew. matheu
 thomas. james alphey.
 & symonit pat is cleped
 zelotes. judas of james
 & judas scariot. pat
 was traitour. / & ihte comy
 ge woln fro pe hyl wip
 hem. stood in a feold
 place. & pe cupamyx of

his disciplis. & a plenteuou
se multitude of smale pe
pul of alle iudee & ierusa
lem & of pe see coastis &
of tyre & sydon. pat came
pat pei schulden here hy.
& pat pei schulden be helde
of her langwisthis & pep
pat weren traueld of in
clene spiritis. were held
& eche apanye of purple
sowte for to touche hym.
for thu wente oute of hy
f & helde alle and his ren
caste up in to his disciplis.
he seide/ blissid be ze poze
men. for pe kyndam of
god is zours/ blissid be
ze pat nolk hungren.
for pei schulden be fulfillid/
blessid be ze pat nolk wepe.
for ze schulden leyze/ ze schu
len be blessed whane men
schulden hate you & departe
you alwey & put schenship
on you. & caste oute zoure
name as yuel for manny
somes ioye ze in herte in
pat day. & stad ze wypp
oute forp. la copel zoure
mede is myche in heuene/
for sope after yese yngis.
pe fadris of hem siden

to pphetis/ neples lbo to
you ruche men. pat han
zoure confort/ lbo to you
pat ben fulfillid. for zee
schulden hingre/ lbo to you
pat nolk leyzen. for ze schu
len mourne & wepe/ lbo to you
whane men schule blesse
you/ after yese yngis. pe
fadris of hem siden to p
fetis/ bot y sey to zoll y
heren/ loue ze zoure ene
myes. do ze wel to hem pat
hate you/ blesse ze to men
our synge you. the ze for me
pat fa shely challenge you/
& who schal smyte pee in
pe too chek. yue to hym
& pe toper/ and fro hy pat
takep alwey in clopes. the
nyf pou shal dede pe coote/
sope yue to eche synge
pee/ & he pat takep alwey
po yngis pat ben yne
are pou not azen/ as ze
wolen pat men don to you.
& do ze to hem on hiche
maile/ & if ze louen he
pat louen you. what grace
or yong is to you. for wh
& synful men loue me
louynge hem/ & if zee

don wel to hem. pat don wel
 to you. What grace is to you?
 sopeh & synful men don
 pis pings. & if ze zeuen bo
 wyng to hem of whom ze
 hopen for to take ayeu. What
 grace is to you. / for why. &
 synful men leenen to sy
 ful men. pat pei take ayeu
 euen pings. nevels loue
 ze zoure enemyes & day like
 & yue ze boowynge. no pis
 hopyng. do. & zoure mede
 shal be myche & ze shulde
 be pe ones of pe hyst.
 for hers benigne. upon
 onkynde & yuel men.
 ffore be ze wylful. as & zou
 re fadir is wylful. nyl ze de
 me. & ze shulden not be de
 med. nyl ze condempne. &
 ze shulden not be condemp
 ned. for zeu ze. & it shal
 be forzeuen to you. zeu ze.
 & it shal be zonen to you.
 pei shulden yue in to zou
 re bosum a gode mesure. &
 wel fillid. & shalen to gi
 der. & onstowynge. forsope
 by pe same mesure. by
 which ze shulden mete.
 it shal be meten to you.

sopeh he seide to hem &
 a licnesse. Wher a blynde
 man may lede pe blynde.
 Wher pei fallen not bo
 pe in to pe diche. / adisti
 ple is not abone pe maist.
 sopeh eche shal be pste.
 if he be as his maistr.
 Sopeh what orest pou in
 in bropes ye a festu. or more.
 bot pou byholdist not. a be
 me pat is in in olbne ye.
 or hou maist pou say to py
 broper. Broper Suffre. i.
 shal caste oute a festu of
 in ye. pou byholdist not
 abeen in in olbne ye. /
 ypochte firste cast oute
 pe beem of in ye. & pa
 ne pou shal byholde pat
 pou lead oute a festu of py
 bropes ye. / forsope it is
 not a good tre pat maky
 yuel fruytis. ney an yuel
 tre pat maky good fruy
 tes. / Sopeh eny tre is kno
 wen of his fruyt. / sope
 h neyr men geider figus
 of porues. ney me ga
 teren a grape. of a bush
 of breis. / a good man.
 of pe good tre. / diue of

his herte bringip forp gode
 yngis. & an yuel man of
 yuel tresoure bringip forp
 yuel yngis. Sorely of pe
 plente of pe herte. pe mon
 pe spekep. forsope what
 copen ze me lord lord & don
 not po yngis pat y saye.
 eche pat comep to me &
 herip my wordes & dwy he.
 I shal stowe to you to ligo
 he is liche. he is liche to am
 bildinge an hous pat dis
 gep depe & putide pe form
 timent on a stoon. Sorely
 greet floddyng made flode
 is hurtid to pat hous. &
 myzte not mene it. for it
 was foundid on a sad ston.
 Sorely he pat herip & dwy
 not. is liche to am. bil
 dyng his hous upon pe
 erpe wyrt outen founde
 ment. in to liche pe.
 flodes hurtid. & anon
 it fel don. & pe falligge
 don of pat hous is made
 greet.

Herforpe whanne
 he had fulfilled
 alle his wordes in
 to pe & is of pe pepul. he

entred in to cap harnaim.
 Sorely a duant of suman
 centurio. hauninge yuel was
 to dye pe whiche was pious
 to hym. & whanne he hade
 herd of ihu. he sente to hy
 pe elder men of ielles. pynge
 hym pat he come & held his
 duant. & whanne pei came
 to ihu. pyden billys sayn. yei
 ge to hym. for he is worpy.
 pat you gye to hym pis
 yng. for he souep oure folk.
 & he bildid to us a synagoge.
 Sorely ihe wente wyrt hem.
 & whanne nolk he was not for
 fro pe hous. centurio sente
 to hym friendis sayinge. lord
 myl you be traueiled. for y
 am not worn pat you entre
 vndir my rof. for whiche pis
 & y demed not my self wor
 py. pat y shuld come to pee.
 bot say yowhy word. & my
 chid shal be hekid. for liche
 and y am aman ordeyned
 vndir polber. hauninge vndir
 me kinytes. and y say to pis
 go. & he sop. & to anopir to
 me. & he comep to my ser
 uant & pis yng. & he dwy
 it. pe whiche yng herd.

isf loundred & he turned sey
 de to pe cupanyes saynge
 hym/ treuly y sey to zolb-
 nes in ysaac I fonde so gre
 te fer/ & pe pat were sent
 turneden aem hoorn-fonden
 pe seruant- haal pe which
 was oke/ And it is don aft
 ward isf wente in to a cite.
 pat is copped naim & his
 dyspulis wenten wy hym
 & ful greet cupanye of pe
 puli sovely wshane he came
 ny to pe cite of pe cite.
 lo an oonluppi come of hys
 modir was born oute ded/
 & pis was a whilbe & wythe
 cupanye of pe cite wy hyr/
 whom wshame pe lord ihu
 hade seen. he moued hyr in
 y upon hyr sande to hyr/
 nyl yon lkepe/ & he came
 to & touchide pe bere/ for
 poe pei pat baren. stode
 & he say zonge man. y
 sey to pee rise up/ & he st
 was ded oate aem. &
 ligan for to spele/ & he
 zaf hym to his modir/ so
 pely drecte toke alle mē
 & pei was gnyfiden god
 saynge/ for a gret pfete

hap risen amonge us & for
 god hap visited his pore
 pepul/ & pis lound wente
 oute of hym in to al iude
 & in to al pe cite aboute//
 & dyspulis of ioun tellen
 to hym saynge of alle pe
 se yngis/ & ioun cephede to
 gader tkeyne of his dyspulis
 & sente to ihu saynge/
 art pou pat art to come
 & abide we anoyr. & sope
 hy wshame pe mē hadn
 comen to hym. pey sey
 den/ ioun baptist sente us
 to pee. saynge/ art pou
 pat art to come. & we a
 biden anoyr. & forsope in
 pat hour he helde many
 men of her langbysthis
 & woundes & yuel spuri
 tis. & he zaf ozt to ma
 ny blynde men/ & isf
 answerynge sende to he/
 ze saynge telle aem to
 ioun po yngis pat ze han
 herd & seen/ for blynde
 men seen. aoked gon.
 uesles ben made dene.
 deef men heren. ded mē
 risen aem. pore men beu
 taken to pche pe gospel.

ende

& who else shal not be sith
 undid in me is blisshid
 & whanne pe messageris
 of ioun hafe gon away
 he ligau for to sey of ioun
 to pe companyes/ what be
 ten ze oute in to deserte for
 to see/ areid walkid wip
 wynd/ & bot what wenten
 ze oute for to see/ aman
 cloped wip softe doymg
 lo pe pat ben in phouse
 clop & in delices/ ben in
 fynge houses/ bot what
 ymg wenten ze oute for
 to see/ a pphete/ & sope
 y sey to zou/ & more pan
 a pphete/ pis is of whom
 it is writen/ lo y sende
 myn aungel byfore y
 face/ pe whiche shal ma
 ke redy y weye byfore pe
 sope y sey to zou/ amon
 ge children of wyemen
 no man is more pphete
 pane ioun baptist/ sope
 ly he pat is lesse in pe
 kynom of heuene/ is
 more pan he/ & al pe
 pul gerynge & pnplica
 nes baptizid wip pe bap

tem of ioun iustifieden
 god/ forsope pharisees &
 wise men of pe lawe not
 baptizid of hym/ dispust
 ten pe counsel of god in
 to hem self/ sope y pe lord
 sende/ pphete to who shal
 y sey men of pis genera
 cioun liche/ & to whom
 ben pey liche/ & pe ben
 liche to children outige
 in depyngge/ & spelunge
 to zider & seyrnge/ we
 han songen to zou wip
 pypes/ & ze han not lepid
oz dancid/ we han made
 lamentacioun/ & ze han
 not kept/ forsope ioun
 baptist came ney etinge
 bred ne drynkynge wip
 & ze sayn he hay a fend/
 mann9 sone came etinge
 & drynkynge/ & ze sayn lo
 a man deuourer oz gloton
 & drynkynge wip fend
 of pnplicanes & synful
 men/ & wisdom is iust
 fied of alle her sones//
 fforsope sith oon of pe fa
 rices pphete shd pat
 he shulde ete wip hym/

& he entrynge in to pe hous
 of pe pharisee. sat at pe
 mete. & lo alkoman syner-
 pat was in pe atee. as she
 knelwe pat ihe hade seten
 at pe mete in pe hous of
 pe pharisee brought an ala-
 bastre box of oynement. &
 she stondynge bihynde.
 bysides his feet. began
 to moyste his feet wip te-
 ris. & wiped wip heris of
 hir hed. & list his feet &
 anoynted wip oynement.
 sovely pe pharisee seinge
 pat cleped hym. say wip
 yme hym self saynge.
 if pis were a pphete. so-
 vely he schulde wite wiso
 & what maner woman
 it were pat touchy hym.
 for she is a synner. & ihe
 answerynge. saide to hy.
 Symon. I haue ou pnis
 for to sey to pee. & he seip.
 mayst say you. & he ans-
 werid. alko detouris we-
 ren to ou man oo lener
or shwere. oon ony to hy
 syne hundred pens. & an
 of fifty. sovely hem
 uot hanynge wcher of

rei schulden zelde. he for-
 gaf to hope. wiso wfore
 louep hym moze. Symon
 answerynge. seide. I gesse
 for he. to w whom he forgaf
 moze. & he answerid to
 hym. you hast demed ryt
 hy. & he turned to pe wo-
 man. saide to Symon.
 seest you pis woman. &
 y entryde in to ym hous.
 & you hast not yue water
 to my feet. forsope pis hap
 moisted my feet wip tee-
 ris. and wiped wip hir
 heris. you hast not zoue
 to me a cosse. forsope pis
 syen y entrid. cessid not
 for to kysse my feet. you
 anoyntidst not my hed
 wip oyle. forsope pis an-
 oynted my feet wip oy-
 nement. for wliche pis
 y sey to pee. many syn-
 nes ben forzeuen to hir.
 for she hap loued my self.
 sovely to w home is lesse
 forzeuen. louep lesse. so-
 vely ihe saide to hy. sy-
 nes ben forzeuen to pee.
 & pei pat eaten to gader
 at pe mete. byginen.

for to sey this ymme he self/
 who is his pat also forze
 uer cyues. forsope he sei
 de to pe woman/ pi fep hap
 made pee saf/ so you in
 pees.

Vij

A

And it is don astur
 ward. & is made
 iourney by atees
 & castels. pching & enan
 gelizinge pe rellme of
 god. & tikelue this hym.
 & suane wyemen pat we
 ren helid of wickid spi
 ritis & cekeness. ma
 rie pat is cleyed maude
 ley. of whom seven de
 ueles wenten oute. & jon
 pe wif of chuse pruratio
 of eronde. and susan &
 many ower pat mymys
 triden to hym of her fa
 cultees or richesse. for
 sope Whanne fil mich
 apanye came to gader.
 & fro atees hastiden to
 hym. he seide by a hyl
 nesse or ensampel. he pat
 solwep. goy oute fro to
 solwe his seed. & pe wif
 le he solwep. ou felde
 bysides pe wey. & it

A

is defouled & briddis of
 pe er. eten it. & anop
 felde on a stoon. & it
 sprungen dreyed. for it
 had not moysture. & an
 op felde amonge po
 ues. & pe pomes sprugen
 up to gider. strangiden it.
 & anop felde wile in to go
 de erpe. & it sprungen
 up. made an hundredfold
 fruyt. he saynge pep
 pingis. cried. he pat hap
 eris of herynge here he/
 copely his disciplis aride
 hym. what his palle was/
 to whom he seide. to you
 it is zouen to knowe. pe
 myste of pe kyndam of
 god. forsope to ope me in
 pables. pat vei seynge
 see not. & vei herynge
 vnderstonde not. copely
 his is pe pable. pe seed
 is godis word. copely
 po pat felle his dis pe
 wey. ben pese pat here
 asturward pe fend comep
 & taky allwey pe word fro
 her herte. lest pe hyle
 nyng he made saf. for
 why vei pat felle wpon

a stoon. ben yese pat lshane
 pei han herd. resteyue pe
 word lshy ioye. & yese han
 not rootis. for a tyme pey
 bileuen. & in tyme of temp
 tacion pei gon albey for
 sope pat y felle don in
 porues. ben yese pat her
 ten. & of ye bysynessis &
 richessis & voluptees of
 lyf pei goyng be stran
 glid. & bryngen not a
 zem fruyt. forsope pat
 pat in good erpe. ben ye
 se pat in good herte &
 best herynge pe word hol
 den. & bryngen fley fruyt
 in paaente. forsope no
 man lhtenynge a lautue
 shup it wip a vessel. or
 putty andur abed. bot
 upon a caudistike. pat
 men entnge see lyt. for
 yis no phuy ymg. pe lsh
 che shal not be openedi
 ney hid ymg. pe lshche
 shal not be knolben. &
 come to apert. perfore see
 ye hou ye heren. forsope
 it shal be zonen to hy
 pat hap. & who eide hap
 not. als pat pat he we
 ney hyu for to haue.

shal be taken albey fro
 hyu. forsope his modir
 & brysen camen to hy.
 & pei myzten not go ful
 ly to hyu for pe cupamy
 of puple. & it is tolke to
 hyu. in modir & in bry
 en stonden lshy oute forp.
 wylhyngge for to see yoe
 ye lshche answerynge
 seide to hem. my modir
 & my brysen ben yese.
 pat heren ye word of
 god & don patte. for
 sope it is don in oon of
 dayes. & he fayed in to
 a boot & his displis. &
 he say to hem. passe we
 ouer ye stondynge wat.
 & pei styeden up. sovely
 hem volbyng. he stepte.
 & a tempest of lshynd
 came don in to ye wat.
 & pei weren dryue hy
 dur. & ydir lshy walwes.
 & weren in pyle. forsope
 pei comynge nyz rey
 fiden hyu seynge. co
 mandom. we pisthen.
 & he risynge blained
 ye lshynd. & ye tempest of
 watir. & it ceside. & yese
 glete is made. forsope

he seide to hem/ wher is you
re fep? pe wliche dredyge
wondren to gide/ seynge/
who gessit pou is pis for
he comandit to wylndis
& to see. & pey obeyen to
hym. & pey voluden to pe
nautre of gesasenes pat
is aym? galilee. & whanne
he wente oute to pe lond.
suman ran to hym welsh
che had a deucl nolt myche
tymes & was not doped
wip dop neyr dwelld in
hous. but in squitris/
pis as he sech ihu. felde don
hyfwe hym. & crynge wip
greet voce seide/ what to
me. & to pee ihu pe sone
of pe hyest god. & hyfwe
pee. pat pou tur mente
not me/ sopehy he coman
dide to pe bndene spirit.
pat he schulde go oute.
fro pe man/ fesepe he
tok hym many tymes.
& he keppe in stockes was
bounden wip cheynes. &
pe bondis broken he was
led of deucls in deserte/
sopehy ihu axide hym
seynge/ what name

is to pee. & he seide/ ale
giorn/ for many deucls
haden entride in to hym/
& pei pyden hym pat he
schulde not comande to
hem pat pei wenten in to
pe depnesse/ forsope y was
a flot of many hogges. & le
syrnge in an hil. & pei py
ten hym pat he schulde suf
fer hem for to entre in to
hem. & he suffrid hem/ y
fore deucls wenten oute
fro pe man. and entride
in to pe hogges/ & wip hir
pe flot wente hedlynge i
to pe lake of watir. & is
stranghede/ pe wliche yng
as pei pat lesabiden oen
don. fleden & tolten into
pe cite & in to tolbnes/
sopehy pei camen oute.
for to see pat pyng pat
is don. & pei fouden pe
man sittynge clopid fro
whom pe fendis wente
oute. & in hole myde.
at his feet. & pei dred
den/ sopehy & pei pat
seen tolten to he. hou
he was made hole of pe
legiorn/ & al pe multi

& pe callid
to ihu.

inde of pe cunte of gera-
senes phyden hym pat
he schulde go fro hem-
for per weren holden wy-
greet drede/ sopeh he sty-
nge in to a boot- turned
a gem/ & pe man of whom
duelis wenten oute. py-
te hym pat he schulde be
wy hym/ sopeh ihs les-
te hym saynge/ go gem
in to ym hous. & telle
hou many yngis god say-
don to pe/ & he wente
powl al pe citee. pthige
hou many yngis ihs
hade don to hym/ forso
pe it is don whane ihs
hade gon a gem. pe cipa-
nye of pepul resteyue
de hym/ forso pe alle we-
ren abydinge hym/ and
lo aman to whom pe na-
me iayrus. and he was
pnce of a synagoge/ &
he felde don at pe feet
of ihs. pyngge hym p
he schulde entre in to his
hous. for conlippy dmye
was to hy aluicst of tik-
elue zeer. & yis died/ &
it byfel while he wente.

he was prymgen of pe
cūpanyes of pepul/ &
ou woman was in flux
of blood fro tikelue zeer.
pe whiche hade spendid
al hir substaunce in to
lechis. nys she myzte be
cured of ony. she came
myz byhynde & touchid
pe hem of his clop/ & an-
oon pe flux of hir blode
stode/ & ihs say/ who is
it pat touchid me/ so-
pely alle men demyngge.
petre seide/ & per pat
weren wy hym/ coman
tour cūpanyes of pepul
prymgen & tormenten
peo. & pou sayst ihs
touchid me/ & ihs an-
de/ cūman touchid me/
for why & i haue knolke
vta to haue gon out fro
me/ sopeh pe woman
seeynge for it was not
prymy. she came trem-
blinge & fel don before
his feet/ & for what
cause she hade touchid
hym. she sheldide by fire
al pe pepul. & hou anon.
she is helid/ & he saide.

to hir/ Douȝtū p fery hap ma
 de pee saf. go you in pees/
 3it hym opekyng. Cūman
 came to pe pace of pe syna
 goge. Sayyng to hym. fir py
 Douȝtū is deed. nyl you tra
 uelē pe maistur/ vis word herd.
 iſt auſwerde to pe fadir of
 pe lēche/ nyl you drede.
 but hyſeue you oonſy. &
 oſhe ſhal be ſaaf/ & whāne
 he came to pe hous. he ſuf
 fride not ony man for to en
 tre lēp hym mo bot petre
 jou. & james. pe fadir & pe
 modir of pe lēche/ ſope
 hy alle lēpten & lēkiden hir/
 & he ſaide/ nyl zelbepe/ ſope
 hy pe lēche is not deed. bot
 ſlepy. & pei ſcarneiden hym.
 Wyyng pe ſhe lēas ded/
 forſope he holdyng hir hond.
 aied ſayyng/ lēche riſe up/
 & hir ſpirit turned aȝen.
 & ſhe roſ anon/ & he com
 aundide for to ȝue to hir
 fir to ete/ & hir fadir & mo
 dir wondriden grete to lēho
 he comāundide. pat pey.
 ſhulden not ſaye to
 ony. pat pat lēas
 dii.

H Drſope. c nemy fi
 Abſelue apoſtles de
 ped to gader. iſt ȝaf
 to hem. Wtū and polber op
 on alle denche. & pat pei
 ſhulden hele langlētthig.
 & he ſente hem for to piſe
 pe kyndam of god. & for
 to hele ſeke men/ & he ſay
 to hem/ no pyng take ȝe
 in pe wey. neyr ȝerd. ne
 ſtruppe. neſ bred ne mouce.
 & neyr haue ȝe tēto cotēſ/
 & in to lēhat eile ȝe ſhulde hous
 entre. dibeſte ȝe pere & go
 ȝe not oute penniſ/ & lēho
 eile ſhal not reſteyne you.
 ȝe goyng oute of pat are.
 ſhake of alld pe ponder
 of ȝoure feet. in to lēit
 neſſyng upon hem/ ſope
 hy pei goyng oute euuy
 rolēden hy caſtels. euau
 gelhyng & helōng eily
 where/ forſope wroude pu
 ce of pe four pe pt of ga
 lilee. herd alle peſ pyngs
 pat weren don of hym &
 he loutide. for pat it lēas
 ſente of Cūmen. for joon
 roſ fro deed/ ſopeſ of ſū
 men for heſ apperide. ſo

pely of oper for oon of pe olte
 pphets toos/ & eroude say/
 I haue by leuyie ion/ sopele.
 Who is pis/ of whom y here
 such pynge/ & he souzte
 for to see hym/ & pe apostles
 turned ayein/ tolden to hym
 what eny pynge pei diden/
 & hem taken to/ he wente on
 anoy half in to disert place.
 pe which is clepid bethsay
 da/ pe which pynge whanne
 pe compaynes of pepul had
 knowen/ pei folowiden hym/
 & he receyued hem & spak
 to hem of pe kyndom of god.
 & helde hem pat hade neede
 of cure/ sopele pe day began
 for to bolbe toln/ and pe tith
 elue comynge nyz/ saiden
 to hym/ leue pe compaynes
 of pepul/ pat pei goynge
 turne in to castels & tolnes
 pat ben aboute pat pei syn
 de metis/ for we ben here in
 a disert place/ forsope he
 sey to hem/ 3yne ze to he
 for to ete/ & pei saiden/ pe
 ben not to us/ moze pane
 fyue lounes & tibo fisthis/
 no but panenture & we
 son & byen metis in to al

pe compayne/ sopele pe me
 weren almest fyue thousand/
 forsope he sey to his dis
 ples/ make we hem for to sit
 te to mete/ by systres & pei
 diden so/ & pei maide alle
 men sitten at pe mete/ for
 sope fyue lounes & tibo fyr
 hes taken/ he byshelle in to
 heuene/ & blessed hem & tra
 ke & delide to his dysples.
 pat pei schulde put to by
 fre pe compaynes/ & alle
 men eten & ben fulfild/
 & pat pat leste to hem of
 broken metis is taken up/
 tikelue cofyns/ And it is
 don whanne he was alone
 pynge/ & his dysples
 weren wry hym/ & he ap
 id hem saynge/ whom
 pe compaynes sayen me
 for to be/ & pei answere
 ruden & saiden/ ion bap
 tist/ forsope oper sayen
 helpe bot oper/ for o ap
 hete of pe former bap
 risen/ sopele he saide
 to hem/ bot whom say
 en ze me for to be/ & y
 mount petre answeryn
 ge saide/ pe crist of god/

& he blaunye hem to man
 dte hem pat pe schulden sey
 to no man saynge pese pin
 sis/ for it byhouep many
 sone to suffre many pyns
 & to be reprovied of pe elder
 men & of pe pnces of jstis
 & of carlis & for to be schain
 & pe pridde day for to ryse
 agem/ forsope he ceide to
 alle men/ if ony wole come
 aftir me. denye he hym
 self & take he his crosse
 evy day & sue he me/ so
 pely he pat schal wole ma
 ke his soule **pat is his lif**
 oaf. schal lese it/ for why
 he pat schal lese his soule
 pat is his lif for me. schal
 make it oaf/ so pely what
 pfitep it to amian. if he
 wyne al pe world. lese
 forsope hym self & do pey
 ryng to hym self/ for
 why who pat schal cha
 me ine & my wordes &
 many sone schal shame
 hym whanne he schal
 come in his maieste &
 of pe fadris & of pe ho
 ly amigelis/ forsope

sey to you Alth. pe ben
 some stondynge here
 pe whiche schulen not
 taste dep. til pe seen
 pe reikme of god/ so pely
 it is don aftir pese wor
 dis alnost exte dayes
 & he toke petre & james
 & jon & he styed in to an
 hil. pat he schulde ppe
 & pe while he ppe. pe
 lianesse of his chere is
 made over maner. & his
 doynis white schynynge/
 & lo tilko men spoken wip
 hym/ forsope moyses &
 helhe weren seen in ma
 ieste & pe garden hys
 goynge oute. pe whiche
 he was to fulfille in je
 rusalem/ forsope petre &
 pe pat weren wip hym
 weren grieved wip slepe/
 & pe wakyng seen his
 maieste & tilko men pat
 foden wip hym/ & it is
 don whanne pey depnde
 fro hym. petre scip to
 ihu/ comaundom it is
 good to us for to be here
 and make we here pe

tabernacles oon to pee & oon
to moyses. & oon to helpe
not witynge what he schul
d saye. sopehly hym ope
kyngse pese yngis. & thou
d is maad & schadelwide he
¶ pei dreedde. & hem entrynge in to pe
cloude. pey dreedden. & a
voice is made of pe cloude
sayyng. vis is my derlyng
sone. here ze hym. & pe
while pe voice was water.
isn is shunden alone. & pei
hellen pees & to no man.
senden in po dayes ouste
of po yngis. pat pei hade
seen. forsope it is du in
pe day sayyng. hem comy
ge doun of pe hil. myche
cūpanye of pepul reney
to hem. & lo aman of pe
cūpanye. troyd sayyng.
manstir y biseche pee by
holde in to my sone. for
he is conlapp to me. & lo
a spūrit takep hym. &
sodeynly he cryep & hur
ty hym dū & dyspūp
ce to dralkep hym wip.
flōop & bimepe he goy
albey to dralkep hym
¶ & p pte p distiplo f

pei schulden caste hym
oute. & pei myzten not.
sopehly ihe answerynge.
ende to hem. & onseip
ful generacoon & wey
ward. hou longe schaly
be at zou & suffre zolb. &
lede hidir p sone. & whā
ne he came my. pe deuel
hūrtid hym dū. & dis
pūpde. & ihe blamed pe
vncleue spūrit & helide
pe child. & zelle hym to
his fader. sopehly alle
men wondyden gretly
in pe greetnesse of god.
¶ & alle men wondrynge
in alle yngis pat he
dade. he saide to his dis
aplis. putte ze in zoure
hertis pese wordis. sope
ly it is to come pat mā
nes sone be hitraied in
to pe hondes of men. &
pei knelben not his word.
¶ & it was hū byfore he.
pat pei sellen it not.
¶ & pei dreedden for to axe
hym of his word. ¶ for
sope a poigt entrid in
to hem. who of he schul
d be moze. & ihe sepe

27

pe pouztes of pe herte of he
 takynge a chylde sette hym
 byndis hym & he sayd to he
 who euer schal resteyue pis
 chylde in my name. restey
 nep me / & who eue schal
 resteyue me. receyuep hi
 pat sente me / for why
 he pat is lesse amonge
 you alle. pis is more
 forsope ion answer id sei
 ynge / comandur we see
 on man castynge oute
 fendis in pi name. alke
 han forbeten hym. for he
 suep not pec wip us /
 & ihe sayd to hym / nyl
 ze forbede / forsope he pat
 is not azem⁹ us. is for
 us // Sopeh it is done
 whanne pe dayes of his
 takynge up. weren ful
 filth. & he sette faste
 his face pat he schulde
 go in to ierlm. & sente
 messagers byfore hy
 out / & pei goynge en
 triden in to a citee of
 samaritans. pat pei
 schulden make redy
 to hym / & pei restey
 uiden not hym. for

pe face of hym was gorn
 ze in to ierusalem forsope
 whanne james & jon his
 discipulis haden seen. pei
 saiden / lord wolt you be
 sayn pat fire come down
 fro heuene & waste hem
 as helpe dide / & he turned
 blamed hem saynge / for
 sope mann⁹ come came
 not for to lese me. 7 p^{er}u^{er}is.
 bot for to saue hem / &
 pei wenten in to anoyr
 castel // forsope it is don
 hem walkynge in pe waye.
 suman seide to ihu / y
 schal sue pec. whidur
 eue you shalt go / & ihe
 sayd to hym / foris han
 dyches & briddis of pe
 eyr nestes / bot mannes
 come hap not wher he
 reste his hened / forsope
 he seide to anoy / sue
 you me / sopeh he sai
 de / lord suffre me firste
 for to go & byrie my fa
 der / & ihe saide to hy
 suffre pat deed men
 birie her dede me. bot
 so you & telle pe byn
 dom of god / & anoyr

ze better ne
 who p^{er}u^{er}is
 ze ben

seide/ lord y schal one peec/
bot firste suffre me to telle
aȝein to hem. pat ben at
home/ forsope iſe saide
to hym/ no man sendyn
se his hond to pe ploȝ
& byholdynge aȝein. is
able to pe rellme of god

A Drisope **Ps**
after pese pȝis
pe lord ihu ordey
ned & of ſcienȝ & tbo.
& ſente hem by tbo and
tbo biſore his face in to
enȝ atee & place iſhidur
he was to come/ and he
saide to hem/ ſorche my
che ripe corne. is. Gote
felke werkmen ben yſore
pȝe ze pe lord of pe ry
pe corne. vat he sende
werkmen in to his ripe
corne/ so ze/ lo y sende
zob. as lombren amon
ze wolues/ myl ze bere
a ſachel neȝ ſcrippe
neȝr ſhoon & grete ze
no man by pe weȝe/ in
to what enȝ hono ze
ſhulen entre. firste
ſaye ze/ pees to pis
hous/ & yf a ſone of

pees ſchal be pȝe. zoure
pees ſchal reſte on hym/
zif noon it ſchal turne
aȝein to zou/ forsope in
pe ſame hous dwelle
ze. etynge & drynkynge
vo pȝis pat ben at
hem/ forsope allweil mā
is worȝ his hire/ ryl
ze paſſe fro hous in to
hous/ and in to what enȝ
atee ze ſhulen entre. &
pei ſhulen reſteȝneȝ.
ete ze vo pȝis pat be
put to zou/ & hele ze ſe
ke men pat ben in pat
atee. & ſaye ze to hem/
ye kyndom of god ſchal
neȝe in to zou/ in to what
enȝ atee ze ſhulen entre
& pai ſhulen not reſ
teȝneȝ zob. ze goynge
oute in to pe ſtretis
of it ſerȝ/ alſo we wy
pen of in to zob pe pon
der pat clenȝe to us
of zoure atee/ neȝeles
wate ze pis pȝis. for
pe rellme of god ſchal
come nyȝ/ forsope y ſay
to zou/ for to ſoddom it
ſchal be eſſer pame

to pat care in pat day //
 Woo to pee corayn. Woo
 to pee bethsanda for zif in
 tyre & sydon haden pe
 viues be don pe whiche
 ben don in zoll: Cūyme
 pei Cūyngre in hayre &
 austhe schulden han do pe
 naunce / nepeles to tyre
 & sydon it shal be esier
 in pe dome pāne to zou /
 & pou capharnaum art
 enhaunsed on to heuene.
 pou shalt be drenchid
 in to helle // he pat herip
 zou: herip me / & he pat
 dispisep zou: dispisep
 me / forsope he pat dis
 pisep me: dispisep hy
 pat sente me / forsope
 tilko & seuenty dispiles.
 turnyden azem wip ioye.
 sayinge / lord also deuels
 ben soget to us in pī na
 me / & he oep to hem / y
 sally sathanas fallige
 wiln fro heuene as leyt /
 & lo y haue zowen wou
 polwar. of defoulyngre upō
 serpentis & scorpionis
 & upon alle pe dū of
 pe enemy. & no pms

shal anoye zoll / nepeles
 wyl ze enoye in pīs pīs
 for spiritus ben soget
 to zou / birt ioye ze pat
 zoure names ben wriuen
 in heuenes // In yllk hour
 he glādide in pe hōh gost
 & saide / I knowleche to pe
 fadir. lord of heuene &
 erpe. pe whiche hast hid
 pese pms fro wise me
 & prudent. & hast ohe
 wid hem to litel zhe fa
 dir. forsope it pleside
 to pee / alle pms ben
 taken to me of my fadir /
 & no man woot wwho is
 pe sone. no but pe fa
 dir / & wwho is pe fadir.
 no man bot pe sone. &
 to wwhom pe sone wold
 shewe / & he turned to
 his dispiles & saide / bles. d
 sid pe yen. pat seen po
 pms pat ze seen / so
 vely y sey to zou. pī ma
 ny pphetis & kynge
 wolden see po pms
 pat ze seen. & pei call
 en not. & here po pms
 pat ze heren. & pei her
 den not / & lo a lyf mā

of pe lalke ros: temptynge
 hym & saynge/ maistur. Wh
 at pyng drynge chal y wel
 de euerlastynge hyf. & he
 saide to hym/ What is wri
 ten in pe lalke. Hou redist
 pou. & he answerynge kide/
 pou shalt loue pe lord pi
 god. of al pme herte. &
 of al pi soule or hyf. &
 of alle pi strengpis &
 of al pi mynde. & pi nez
 bore as pi self. & ihe sai
 de to hym/ pou hast answe
 red rythly/ do pis ying. &
 pou shalt hve/ forsope he
 wilyngne for to iustifie
 hym self. saide to ihu/
 & who is my neyboze. &
 sovele ihe byholdynge
 up. saide/ En man came
 don fro ierusalem in to
 ierico. & felle in to peneo.
 pe whiche also robbide
 hym. & boundis put in
 skenten albeie. pe man
 felle half quyle/ forso
 pe it byfelle pat sum
 pte came dolen in pe
 same weye. & hy oec
 passid forp/ also forsope

& a defene wshame he was.
 hisdis pe place & seeg hy
 passid forp/ forsope sum
 samaritan makynge iour
 ney. came hisdis pe weye/
 & he seeynge hym. is stired
 by mch/ & he comynge my
 bonde to gider his woundes.
 heldynge in oyle & wyne/
 & he putynge in to hys
 iument or hore. ledde in
 to a stable. & dide pe cu
 re of hym/ & anopn day
 he bronzte forp tilso pens.
 & jane to pe keper of pe
 stable & say/ haue you
 cure of hym/ & what eide
 you shalt yue oner. y
 chal zelde to pee wshane
 y chal come azen/ who
 of pese yre demey to pee.
 to haue be neyboze to
 hym pat felle in to pe
 ues. & he saide/ he pat
 did mch in to hym/
 & ihe say to hy/ go
 pou & d pou on liche
 maner/ forsope it is
 don pe while pei ben
 ten. & he entrid in to
 en castle. & en Roma

ende

martha by name resteyned
 hym in to hir hous/ & to
 his was a sister. marie
 by name. ye whiche also
 sittynge by his feet
 of ye lord. herde ye word
 of hym/ sopeh martha
 byshid aboute ye ofte ser
 nyce/ ye whiche stood and
 sey/ lord is it not of char
 ge to pee. pat my sister
 leste me aloon for to my
 nystrer. fore say you to
 hir. pat she helpe me/
 & ye lord answerynge
 seide to hir/ martha mar
 tha. you art bysie & art
 disturblid azen/ ful
 many yngis/ forsope.
 o yng is necessarie./
 marie hap chose ye best
 part. ye whiche shal
 not be taken away fro
 hir.

And it is don whanne
 he was synge in
 synn place as he
 telde. con of his dyspyles
 saide to hym/ lord teche
 us for to pre. as and you
 taunte his dyspyles/ and
 he sey to hem/ whanne

ye shew. saye ye/ fadir.
 halwed be yi name/ yif
 dom come to/ yue to us
 to day. oure ethe dayes
 bred/ & foryue to us oure
 synes. as & lke foryeu to
 ethe abyngge us/ & lede us
 in to temptacionn/ & he
 say to hem/ who of yoll
 shal haue a frend & shal
 go to hym at my dnyzt.
 & shal seye to hym/ frend
 lene to me pre lones/ for
 my frend comen to me
 of ye wey. & y haue not
 what I shal put before
 hym/ & he wrytne forp
 answerynge sey/ nyl y
 be hely to me. ye dre is
 noly shyt. & my childe
 ben wrytne in ye couche.
 I may not rise & yue
 to pee/ & yf he shal dwel
 le stille knockynge. y
 say to yoll. & yf he shal
 not yue to hym/ ryste
 for yit he is his frend.
 nepeles for his myght
 or contynuel synge he
 shal rise & yue to hy.
 hou many he hap note
 ful. & y say to you/ aye

ye & it shal be zonen to zoll/
 eke ze: & ze shulen fynde/
 knocke ze: & it shal be ope
 nyd to zoll/ forsope eche pat
 arrip: taky/ & he pat se
 chyp: fyndy/ & to amman
 knockyng: it shal be ope
 nyd/ pfore wbo of zoll ay
 ny his sadir bred: wber he
 shal zyne to hym a stoon/
 or yf he eye fytter: or yf
 he shal are an eye: wber
 he shal dresse to hym a
 scoornoun: pfore yf ze
 wshame ze ben yuel: han
 knollen for to zyne gode
 yf tis zonen to zoinrechil
 drien: hou myche moze you
 re sadir of henene shal y
 ue a good spurt to men
 axinge hym: & he was cas
 tyng oute a fend: & he was
 dumble: & wshame he had
 caste oute pe fend: pe dwi
 be man spac: & pe company
 es of pepul wondriten/ for
 sope siune of hem seiden/
 in besebub pnce of deu
 lis: he casty oute deuclis
 & ower temptyng axidru
 of hym a tokene fro hene
 uel/ forsope he as he day

pe poungis of hem: say
 de to hym/ enery rellme
 deytid in it silf: shal be
 desolat: & an hous shal
 falle upon an hous/ for
 sope & yf sathanas be de
 pade hem hym silf: /
 hou shal his rellme ston
 de: for ze sayn me for to
 caste oute fendis in bel
 sebus/ forsope yf y in bel
 sebus caste oute fendis:
 in whom zoinre sonis
 casten oute: pfore pey
 shulen be zoinre domes
 men/ forsope yf y caste
 oute fendis in pe fygure
 of god: sopeh ye rellme
 of god is comen in to
 zoll/ wshame a stronge
 armed man kep his
 hous: alle yingis pat
 he wellyn ben in pees/
 sopeh yf a strenge
 pame he comyng
 boue outcome hym: /
 shal take alwey: & he
 armes in wliche he truf
 ted: & shal dele abroad
 his spuyles/ he pat is
 not wry me: is hem
 me/ & he pat gadry not

Wher for fische
 he shal zyne to
 hy a seipent:

d

to gader wy me. Scaterip
 abrood. Whanne in quide
 ne spirit shal go oute of
 a man. he wandip by drye
 places. Selynge rest. & he
 fyndynge not. say. I
 shal turne aȝen in to my
 hous. Toher of I came on
 te. & Whanne he shal co
 me he fyndip it censed
 wy besemes & our myd
 pan he gop & takip wy
 hym senene ope spri
 tis worse pane hym self.
 a pei dwelken yd. a pelaf
 te yngis of pat mā. ben
 made worse pane pe for
 mer. // forsope it is don
 Whanne he spat pese
 yngis. Sū Woman of
 pe aipanye rerynge.
 up hir voyce seide to
 hym. blessid be pe wom
 be pat bare yee. & pe.
 tetis pat pou hast so
 ben. & he satde. raper.
 blessid be pei pat here
 pe word of god & lepen.
 it. // forsope pe aipanye
 of pepul reynynge to
 gader. he bigan for to

saye. pis generacioun
 is a wellhard generacioun/
 it selip a tolene. & a to
 bene shal not be zounē
 to it. no but pe tolene of
 Ionas pe. pphete. for why
 as Ionas was a tolene
 to men of ny nyue. so
 mannys sone shal be to
 pis generacioun. // pe gile
 ene of pe sony shal ry
 se in don wy men of
 pis generacioun & shal
 condempne hem. for she
 came fro pe endis of
 erpe. for to here pe wis
 dome of Salomon. & lo
 here more pane Salomō
 men of mynyne shule
 rise in dome wy pis ge
 neracioun & shulen con
 dempne it. for pei dūt
 penaunce at pe pphete
 of Ionas. & lo here mo
 re pane Ionas. // No
 man tendip a lautne
 & puttip in hidles nef
 vndur a bussel. bot
 upon a candlestike. p
 pei pat gon in. see lyt
 pe lautne of pi body.

is ym yel yf ym ze st
 hal be symple. al y
 body chal be lytyl for
 sope if it chal be weildard.
 altho y body chal be derk
 ful yf we see you. lest
 pe lyt pat is in yee ben
 derkenessis yf we see yf al y
 body chal be lyt not ha
 nyngz omz part of derk
 nessis. it chal be al lyt
 yf as a lantre of brizt
 nesse it chal yue lyte
 to yee. a whanne he opac
 on pharisee yf pat he
 schult ete at hym for
 sope he gon in. restid. so
 yel y pharisee gessyze
 why yne hy self. saye
 why he was not waistht
 byfwe ye met. a ye loz seip
 to hym. noll ze pharisees
 clausen pat pat is why ou
 te forp of ye cuppe a plat.
 bote pat yng pat is why
 yne forp of zoll. is ful of
 raueyne a wickidnesse.
 foles wher he pat ma
 de pat pat is why oute forp.
 made not a pat pat is
 why yne forp. ne peles.
 pat pat is ouer. yne w
 alines. a lo alle yngis

ben clene to zoll. Wote
 wo to zoll pharisees pat
 tipen mynt tne a al kor
 te or erke. a passen dom
 a pe charite of god. faers
 pe it byhouete for to do
 yese yngis. a not to
 leue hem. wo to zoll pha
 risees pat louen pe fir
 ste chaweris in synago
 ges. a salitaciouns
 in chepyng. wo to zoll
 pat ben as sepulchris
 pat apperen not. a nide
 walkyngz aboue witen
 uot. forsope on of ye
 wise men of salbe an
 sweryngz seip to hy
 maister you sepyngz
 yese yngis. also to us
 you dost dyspate a he
 say. and wo to zoll why
 re men of salbe. for ze
 chargin men why bur
 ynes. ye schiche pei
 molkn not heren. a ze
 zoure self why o syn
 gre touchen not ye
 heynnes. wo to zoll
 pat bylden birchis of
 apstetis. for sope zoure

Giganto

fadris sloken hem/ nren
 ly ze wittnessen. pat ze
 consenten to pe werkis of
 zoure fadris/ for sovely
 pei sloken hem. bot ze
 liden her sepulchris/
 yfere a pe wysdom of god
 sende/ I chal sende to he
 apheetis a apostles a of
 hem pei schulen oke a
 pfue. pat pe blode of
 alle apheetis pat is held
 oute fro pe makynge
 of pe world. be souzte
 of vis generacion fro
 pe blode of abel oute
 pe blode of zacarie. y
 pisthede bealix pe aut
 a pe hous/ so y say to
 you. it chal be souzte
 of vis generacion/ wo
 to you wyse men of pe
 salte. for ze han taken
 alle pe key of kunyng
 ze zoure self cunden not
 in. a ze han forbeden he
 pat entriden/ sovely wha
 ne he spat yese pingis
 to hem. pharisees a wy
 se men of salte. bygun
 nen greuousely to azem
 fionde hym a oysse his

mony. asprynge hym of
 many pingis and seely
 ze for to take ou ping of
 his mony. pat pei schul
 den aause hym. welke
Sovely manie
 schipanyes of pe
 pulis stonde
 aboute so pat pei de fin
 liden or troden eche oper.
 he bigan for to say to his
 discipulis. be ze war. a fle
 fro pe ganreidly of pha
 risees. pat is ypocrite/
 forsope no ping is hold.
 pat chal not be shewid/
 ney hid. pat chal not
 be list. for whi. po ym
 gis pat ze han seide in
 derknessis. schulen be
 seide in lyt. a pat pat
 ze han spoken in pe ere
 in conchis. chal be pre
 chid in rofes/ forsope y
 say to you my frendis.
 be not aserd of he pat
 steen pe body. a after pe
 se pingis han no more.
 what pei schulen do/ so
 vely y chal shewe to
 zolk whom ze schuld dre
 de/ drede ze hym. pat asse

A

he has slayn. has palber
 for to sende in to helle. so
 y say to you drede ze hy
 wher fyue sparres ben
 not sold for tlio halpens.
 & oon of hem is not in for
 yetynge byfore god. & hote
 & alle ye heris of zoure
 hed. ben nouked. yfore
 nyl ze drede. ze ben of mo
 ze pris pan many spar
 res. treuly y say to you.
 who eile schal knowleche
 me before men. & man
 & some schal knowleche
 hym before ye aungelis
 of god. forsope he y schal
 demie me byfore men. & schal
 be demied before ye
 aungelis of ye lord. &
 eche pat say alword azei
 nes ye some of man. it
 schal be forzeuen to hy
 sopehy it schal not be
 forzeuen to hym. pat
 schal blasphemie in ye
 holy gost. forsope wha
 ne pey schulen love you
 in to synagogis & to
 magistratis & pote sta
 tes. nyl ze be besy hon
 or what ze schule answere.

or what ze schule seye.
 forsope ye holy gost
 schal trefe you in pat
 hour. what it byshouey
 you to seye. sopehy on
 man of ye companye say
 to hym. maister say to
 my broper. pat he depte
 wyf me. ye heritage. &
 he sende to hym. maister
 ordyned me domesman.
 or depter upon you. & he
 sende to hem. see ze &
 be ze war fro al conen
 se. for not in habundance
 of omy man is his lyf.
 of ye pryncis pat he wel
 dey. sopehy he sende to
 hem a licnesse saynge.
 ye felte of ou riche ma
 broughte forp plemenon
 se fruytis. & he pouzte
 wyf yne hym self sey
 nge. what schalyd
 pat y haue not whidur
 y schal gedur my fruy
 tes. & he sey. pis pig
 y schal do. y schal distroy
 my ber nes & schal make
 more. & ydir y schal ge
 dr alle pryncis pat ben
 bozne to me. & my goodes

& y shal sey to my soule
 soule pou hast many go
 des put up in to ful ma
 ny zenis/ tesse von etc
 drynke & plenteuously
 etc/ sevely god sente to
 hym/ fole in his myt.
 pei schulen are of pee
 pi soule/ for whos schu
 len vo pingis ben. pat
 you hast made redy so is
 he pat trespourep to hy
 self. & is not riche in
 to god/ & he send to his
 discipulis/ pfree y say to
 zowr myl ze be lisy to
 zowre soule & luf what
 ze schulen etc. neyr to
 zowre body. Wp what
 ze schulen be doped/ pe
 soule is more pane me
 te. & pe body more van
 doring/ byholde ze coll
 es for pei salken not
 neyr repen to whom is
 no teler neyr berne. &
 god fedir hem/ hon my
 che more ben ze of more
 pris panne pep. for
 soye who of you bypen
 byge. may put to oo
 aubyn to his stature/

More yf ze molken not yf
 pat is lest. What ben
 ze byly of oper pingis.
 byholde ze lyhes of pe
 felde. hon vey weyen/
 pei tranelen not neyr
 spymen/ sevely y say
 tozon. for neyr salomo
 in al his glorie was clo
 ped as oon of pest/ for
 soye yf god clopp pus
 pe hay pat to day is in
 pe felde. & to moene is
 sente in to a fur neyr.
 hon myche more zow of
 litel fey. and nyl ze &
 be what ze schulen etc.
 or what ze schulen dryn
 ke. & nyl ze be taken up
 in to an hye/ for soye fol
 kes of pe world ceken alle
 pest pingis/ sevely zowre
 fadir woot for ze ueden
 pest ymgis/ neyelles &
 be ze fur ste pe kyndom
 of god. & alle pest pin
 ges schulen be caste to
 zon/ nyl ze litel floc de
 te. for it pleside to zowre
 fadir. for to prue to zon
 a kyndom/ sette ze vo
 pingis pat ze han in

f

possession. & yue ze al
mes! make ze to zow sa
choles pat weren not olatre
tresoure not falsynge
in heuenes whidur a ref
tiemp not. nesp mope dis
truey/ forsope where is
pi tresour. pe and pin
herte shal lie/ be zowre
leendis gurd byfore. &
lurthys bremynge in
zowre hondis/ & ze liche
to men abydyng her londe
Whanne he shal turne
aȝein fro Weddynges/ &
Whanne he shal come &
knocke. anon vey opene
to hym/ blessid vo Euau
tes. Whom Whanne pe lord
shal come. he shal fynd
de Wakynge/ treuly y py
to zow. pat he shal byfore
gurd hym. & make hem
for to sitte at pe mete/
& he passynge shal my
nystre to hem/ & ȝif he
shal come in pe secunde
Wakynge. & ȝif he shal
come in pe ȝud Wak
ge & shal fynd so. voo
Euauitis ben blestid/

forsope write ze ma vis.
for ȝif an hofebonde ma
wiste in what hour pe
pief schulde come. so
wys he schulde Wake. &
not suffre his hous to
be unged/ & he ze reedy
for in what hour ze ges
sen not manyn some sh
al come/ forsope petre
saide to hym/ lord saist
pon pis pable to us.
or to alle. & sopehy pe
lord saide/ who seist
pon is a feyful dispen
der & prudent. Whom
pe lord ordynede vpon
his meynce pat he ȝy
ue to hem in thyme me
sure of Whate. blestid
pat Euauit. who wha
ne pe lord shal come.
he shal fynd so. veyge/
vysly y sey to zow. for
vpon alle pnygis pat
he Woldip. he shal or
dyne hym/ pat ȝif y
Euauit shal say in
his herte. my lord ma
kip dwellynge for to
come. & bygyne for to

ompte children & handman
 denes & etc & drynke & be
 fillid ouer mesure: pe lord
 of pat Euangil shal come
 in pe day pat he hoppr
 not & hour pat he woot
 not & shal departe him:
 & put his part wip vnfey
 ful men // forsope yllle ex
 uaint pat knoeve pe wille
 of his lord & made not hy
 redy: & did not asur his
 wille: shal be beten
 wip many p lages: sope
 ly he pat knoeve not &
 did worpi ymngis of wou
 dis: shal be beten wip
 felwe: forsope to eche man
 to whom myche is zowē.
 myche shal be conzite
 of hym and pei shule
 axe more of hy: to wld
 pei leute myche y came
 for to sende fier in to pe
 erpe: & what wold y bot
 pat it be kyndelid: so
 pely y hane for to be bap
 tized wip bapteme: & hon
 am y constreyned til y
 it be pfitely don: Gessen
 ze for y came for to ze
 ne pe o m to pe erpe

nay y say to zow lode &
 ptyng: forsope fro pis ty
 me: y shule be hinc dep
 tid in on hous: pre shule
 be deytid in to tldo: & tldo
 in to pre shule be deytid:
 pe fadir in to pe sone: &
 pe sone ito his fadir: pe
 modir axem y pe dnyr:
 & pe dnyr axem y pe mod:
 pe host bondes modir axem
 y pe sones wyf: & pe
 sones wyf axem y hu
 gost bondes modir: for
 sope & he sende & to pe ai
 panyes: wshame ze shu
 len see a cloude ryfhye
 fro pe cline goyngē dō:
 anon ze sayn reyn com
 ey & so it is don: & wshā
 ne pe wup sholwyngē:
 ze sayn for here shal be:
 & it is made y porites
 ze han euolben for to zo
 ue pe face of henene &
 erpe: so pely hon quē
 ze not pis tyme: wshat
 so pely & of zowre self: &
 me ze not pat pat is wshā
 forsope wshane pou gost
 wip ym adisurpe to pe
 pnce in pe day: yne y

by synesse for to be deliuered
fro hym leste pauenture
he dralbe pee to pe domeswa
e pe domesman bitake pee
to pe wrongful axere. &
pe wrongful axere sende
pee in to prison. y sey to
pee pou shalt not go pen
ny. til pou zelde also pe
laste penyng. c. xii

In sope siime came
to in pat tyme tel
hyng to hym of ga
hilees. whos blode pilate my
sed. wip sacrificis of hem/
e he ansuerynge seide to
hem/ wenen ze pat pese me
of gahle weren symmers
byfore alle gahlees. for pei
suffriden suche ynges/
nay y sey to zow/ bot alle
ze schulen pisthe in lyche
maide. no bot zif ze schu
len haue penaunce/ and
as po ten and einte upon
whom pe tour in sylsa
felledon and slowe he.
gessen ze for and pei we
ren detounes more pene
alle men dwellynge in
iherusalem. / nay y say
to zow/ but also zee alle

schulen pisthe. zif ze schu
len not do penaunce/ for
sope he seide pis licnesse/
siinan hade a fige tree
plautade in to his vyne
zerde. & he came selgye
fruyt in to it and foud
not/ sope he seide to
pe thiere of pe vynerd/
lo pre zereis ben. cipey y
came selgyng fruyt in
pis litel fige tree. & y
fynde not/ perfore byt
it down/ wher to occupy
it zhe pe erpe. & he an
swerynge seide to hy/
lord suffre it & pis zee.
til pe whyle y dwile abou
te it. & sende toordis/ &
zif it shal make fruyt.
zif noon or ellis in tyme
comyng yon shalt bit
it down/ forsope he was
techyng in pe synago
ge of hem in cabotis/ &
lo alwman pat hade a
spirit of siknesse ten
a einte zereis. & was bolt
ed down. neyr ony pig
myte loken oplyardes/
whome whanne ihu
hade seen. he cleped to

here

lym & serp to hir/ woman
you art leste of y^e selfe
nesse/ & he put to hir y^e
bondis/ & anon she is
reuered & glorified god/ so
poh y^e pnce of y^e syna
goge answerynge haue
ye dedeyn for ihu haue
heled in y^e cabot/ can
de to y^e cupanye of pepul
ye ben syxe dayes in wh
iche it byhouep ferto w
orche/ perfore come ye
in pese & be ye heled &
not in day of caboth/ for
sope y^e lord answeryge
saide/ ypocrite where
este of zoll in y^e cabot
outrey not his oxe or
asse fro y^e crache & sta
ble & ledyng ferto watre/
byhoste it not y^e wyg
of Abraham Whom sa
tanas hay bounden lo
ten & eyte zenis/ ferto
be vnbunden of y^e s
bond in y^e day of ca
both/ & Whanne he sa
de pese ymgis/ alle
his adisaries weren
asthamed/ & alle y^e pe
pul ioyed in alle y^e p^{re}s

put weven gloriously
don of hym/ perfore he
saide to what ymgis is
ye byndom of god liche
& to what ymgis y^e gesse
it to be liche/ it is like
to a croone of Seney/ y^e
Whiche taken amā sen
te in to his zerd & it wex
& is made in to a greet
tree/ & foules of y^e eyr
restiden in braunches
perof/ & estesone he co
de/ to what ymgis shal
y^e gesse y^e byndom of
god liche/ it is like to
courdallz y^e Whiche
taken a woman hidyng
in to y^e mesires of
melo/ til it were sour
dolked/ & he wente by
cittes & castels techyng
& makynge iourneye
in to ierusalem/ sope
by Suman saide to hy
lord yf y^e ben felle/
pat ben saued/ sope
ly he saide to hem/ stry
ue ye for to entre by
y^e streyt gate/ for y^e
oy to zoll many selfe
for to entre & permay

not forsope Whanne pe
hofebonde man hap entride
and closed pe dore ze schulde
bigynne for to stonde wy
oute forp & rynge pe dore
seynges lord opene to us/
& he answerynge shal sey
to zolk/ y knowe zou not
of Whenn9 ze ben/ panne
ze schulen bygyne to cry/
we han eten bysone pee
& drunken/ & in oure stre
tis you hast tange/ & he
shal sey to zolk/ y knowe
zolk not/ of Whenn9 ze
ben/ so ze alwey fro me/
alle wourchers of wickednes
pere shal be wepynges &
betynges to gyder of teep/
Whanne ze schulen see
abraham & ysaac & iacob
& alle pphetis in relyn
dom of god/ sopehly zolk
for to be put oute/ & pey
schulen come fro pe east
& west & fro norpe & soup
& sitte at pe mete in pe
rellme of god/ & lo pey
pat weren pe furste
bes pe laste/ & pei pat
weren laste/ ben pe fir
ste/ In pat day sume

of pharisees came my
saynges to hym/ so oute
& go henn9/ for heroude
wote sle pee/ & he sey
to hem/ so ze & sey ze
to pat fox/ lo y caste
oute fendes & y make
pfitely helpis to daye
to morowe/ & pe prude day
am endid/ nepeles it by
honey me to day & to
morowe/ & synges day
for to walke/ for it sal
lip not to a pphete for
to pyste out of ieru
salem/ Ieruusalem Ieru
salem pat slest pphetis
& stonest hem/ ou pat
ben sente to pee pa hou
ofte wolde y sedn to gi
der in sones as a brid/
his nest vndir penes
in wynges & pou wol
dest not/ lo zoure hous
shal be laste to zou de
sert/ sopehly y sey to
zolk/ for ze schulde not
see me/ til pat it co
me Whanne ze schulen
seye blissid is he p
annep in pe name
of pe lord.

a

And it was don whanne he hadde entrid in to the hous of sū prince of pharisees in the saboth for to ete bred. & þei kepten & aspreten hym / & lo sumā oke in the dropeþe was byfore hym / & ihu answeringe seide to þe iwise men of lawe & to the pharisees seynge / if it is leful for to hele in saboth & þei helten þees / forsoþe ihu helide hym taken to. & lest / & he answeringe to e of hem. seide / Whos of turgow oxe or asse shal falle in to a pit & not anon shal he dealbe hym oute in the day of the saboth. & þei myzte not answeren to hym to þese wordes / forsoþe he seide & a pable to men becomen to a feste. byholdynge how þei chesiden the firste entynge places. seynge to hem / Whanne þou shalt be beden to weddynges / sitte not at the mete

in the firste place. lest þe pamenture a worpiere þe ne þou be beden of hy. & he comynge pat tere be þe & hym sey to þe / yue place to þis / & þanne þou shalt bygyne þy shame for to holde the laste place / bot whanne þou shalt be beden to feste / go & sitte wile in the laste place / pat whanne he comen pat had þe to the feste / sey to þe / friend styte up hyer / þanne shal be to þe byfore me entynge to gader at the mete / for eche pat enshau þe hym shal be lowed / & he pat mekyn hym shal be hyed / forsoþe he seide & to hym pat had be beden hym to feste / Whanne þou makist a feste or sup. nyl þou tere þi frendes. ne þi þerperen ne þi cosynes ne þi neyghbores. ne þi riche men. lest þe pamenture & þei biide þe azem. & retribuciō or el dynge azem. be made to

we but whaune you makest
 a feste clepe pore men feble
 croked. blynde and you shalt
 be blessed for ye han not
 wher of to zelve azem to
 pee/ forsope it shal be zel
 de azem to pee/ in perishe
 azem of iust men. whaune
 suman of cutyng at me
 te hate herid pese ymges.
 he seide to hyrn/ blessed he
 pat shal ete bred in pe
 relbane of god/ and he sei
 de to hyrn/ suman made a
 gret seip/ & clepeid many/
 & he sente his suauit in
 pe our of seip for to sey
 to men beiden to feeste. if
 yei shulden come for nolt
 alle ymges ben redy/ &
 alle bigunen to geid to
 exause/ ye firste seide/ y
 haue bougt a tolbne. & y
 haue neede for to go oute
 & see it/ y prey pee. haue
 me excused/ and ye toper
 saide/ y haue bougt fine
 zockes of oxen. & y go for
 to proue hem/ y prey
 pee. haue me excused/
 & anoy seide/ y haue lred
 did a wyf/ & pfore y may

not come/ & ye ser nauit
 turned azem. & in pese
 ymges to his lord/ pane
 ye hosebonde man brop.
 saide to his suauit/ go
 oute soone in to grete stre
 tes & smale strengs of pe
 atee. & pore ind & feble
 blynd & croked. bryng
 yn hidur/ & ye suauit
 seip/ lord it is don as you
 hast comamnde. & zit y
 is place/ & ye lord seip
 to ye suauit/ go oute in
 to lreyes & heggis & con
 streyne for to entre. pat
 myn hous be fulfilled
 forsope y sey to you for
 no man of yo men pat
 ben cleped. shal taste
 my seip/ seipely many
 arampes wenten wy hy
 & he turned. seide to he
 zif any man come to me.
 & hatip not his fadir
 & modir & wyf & his childe
 & brisen & suttis zit
 forsope & his soule pat
 is lsf. may not be my
 dysiple/ & he pat berep
 not his crosse & comep
 after me. may not be

ende

f



my disciple/ forsope who
of you walkynge for to bilde
a toure. wher he firste sit
tyng countey not pe speu
les pat ben uedful. if he
haue to pfourme. lest aft
pat he hap putt pe founde
ment & myte not pforme
alle pat seen. bygyune for
to cowne hym. Seynge/
for pis man bigan for to bil
de & myte not ende. or wh
at byng to go for to sende
or make bat aile hem? ano
per byng. wher he cunty
ge firste bypenke not. if
he may wip ten thousand
so hem? hym pat cunty
to hy wip thienty thousand.
elles yt hym dyngge a
fer. he sendyngge a messa
ger. preley po ymges p
ben of pees. so pfreche
of you pat renounshp not
or forlukip not alle ym
ges pat he welde. may
not be my disciple. salt
is good ymg. forsope. if
salt vanyshe in what
pyng. chal it be saue.
red. nep in erpe. nepir
dngge. hil it is pfitable.

but chal be sente outte/
he pat hap eris of here
ge. here.

Horslope puplicans
& synful men we
ren neyngge to hy.
pat pershulden here hy.
& pharisees and scribes
grunthiden seyngge. for
pis resteyner synfulme.
& ctep wip hem. & he ctep
to hem. pis pable seyngge.
what man of gold pat hap
an hundred shepe. & if he
shal lese oon of hem. wher
he leuey not mynty & nyne
in desert. & go to it pat
psthid. til he fynde it.
& whanne he hap founden
it. he ioyngge puttyn into
hie schuldre. & comyge
home. clepey to gred his
frendes & neyhebores. sey
nge to hem. panke yeme.
for y haue founden pe
shepe pat y haue lost. so
pely y sey to you. so ioye
shal be in heuene on
oo synful man. dyngge
penaunce. pene upon
mynty & nyne. just pat
han no uede to penaunce.

or what woman harynge
ten dragmes or besauitib
e if she chal lese o drag
me. Wher she tendry
not a laurie e turney
wpsidw pe hous e setip
diligently til pat she syn
de / e whanne she hap fon
den. she clepey to gader
freendis e nezbores sey
inge/ panke ze me for y
haue founden pe dragme
pat y had lost/ lo y sey
to zoll ioye chal be to
aungelis of god. vpon
o synful man wyngre
penaunce/ forsope he seip/
su man hade elbo soues
and pe zongre seide to
pe fadir/ fadir zyne
to me pe porcioun of
substauce or catel pat
byfalle me/ e he dep
tude to hem pe substau
ce/ e not aftir many
dayes. alle pingis ge
dered to gader. pe zongre
some wente fer in pil
grymage in to a fer ai
tre e pere wastide his
substauce in hynge
lecherously/ e aft pat

he had endid alle pingis
a stronge hungur is made
in pat cuntre e he began
for to haue ned/ e he wen
te e clenyde to oon of pe
burgeys of pat cuntree
and he sente hym in to
his toben. pat he shulde
fete hogges/ e he couetide
for to fulfille his wombe
of pe coddie pat pe hog
gis eten. e no man zaf
to hym/ sope he tur
ned azen in to hy selfe
seide/ hou many hired
men in my fadir hous.
habounden in lounes. for
sope y puste here in
hungur/ y chal ryse
up e go to my fadir. e
y chal sey to hym/ fa
dir y haue syned in to
hevene e byfore pee
noll y am not worpi for
to be cleped in some/ ma
ke me as oon of ym hy
red men/ e he risynge
came to his fadir/ so
peh whanne he was
yt fer. his fadir say
hym e is fured by m
y/ e he remyge to fete

ende
T

vpon his necke & kysse
 hym/ and he sone seide
 to hym/ fadir y haue syn
 ned in to heuene & byfore
 pee & now y am not worpi
 for to be cleped in sone/ for
 sope he fadir seide to his
 seruauitis/ soone bringe
 ze forp he firste stooke &
 cloy hym & ynezearyng
 in his hond and schoon in
 to feet & bringe ze to cal
 fe made patt & ole ze & etc
 we & glad we in plente
 uouse etyngze for pis my
 sone was ded & hap lyued
 ayein/ he pisthid & is
 founden/ & alle me bygn
 uen for to ete gladly/ for
 sope his elder sone was
 in pe feeld/ & whanne he
 came & neyde to pe hous.
 he herde a synfonge &
 carole or troude & he cle
 pde oon of pe seruauitis
 & axide what pese ymgos
 weren/ and he seide to hy
 in brop is comen &
 in fadir schilz a fattid
 calf. for he resseyued
 hym saaf/ forsope he
 was brop & shold not

entre/ perfore his fadir gon
 oute byganne to prece hy
 & he answeringe to hyo
 fadir. seide/ lo so many ze
 res y serue to pee. and y
 neide passid ouer or that in
 comaundementis. & pou
 neide hast yne & god pat
 y schulde byp my frendes
 be fulfild/ bot after pat
 pis sone pat hap deuori
 de his substance byp
 goozes came/ pou hasse
 schyn schyn to hym a
 fattid calf/ & he seide to
 hym/ sone pou art ouer
 more byp me/ and alle
 my ynges ben yne/ for
 sope it byghoste for to ete
 plenteuoushy and to roye
 for pis in broper was ded
 & lyued ayein. he pisthid
 & is founden. c. xlvj
Hesope he seide
 and to his dis
 ples/ per was
 on riise man pat had
 a fermour or hulk and
 pis is defamed at hym
 as he had wasted hyo
 goozes/ and he clepi de
 hym and serp to hym/

What here y p's p'ng
of p'ce / zelle resoun of
p' ferme / for noll pou
shalt not molke holte
pe ferme / forsope pe fer
mour seide Wip yime
hym self / What shaly
do for my lord takep a
wey fro me pe ferme /
dellue may y not . y scha
me for to besse / y woot
What y shal y do . pat
Whaume y shal be re
moued fro pe ferme . pey
ressoyue me in to her hou
ses / and so alle pe dettou
res of his lord clepide
to geder . he seide to pe
firste / hou myche owest
pou to my lord . y & he
seide to hym / an hundrid
barrels of oyle / & he sei
de to hym / take p'cama
oun or obligation . & so the
soone and write fift /
afterward he seide to an
op / sovely hou myche
owest pou . y pe whiche
seiy an hundrid mesu
res of Whete / & he sei
de to hym / take p'cetta
& write fourestore / & pe

lord pressed pe fermour
of Wickidnesse for he ha
de don pridently / for pe
sones of p'is worlde ben
more prudent in here
generaoun . pane pe
sones of hert / & y ovy
to zou . make to zou fren
dis of riches of Wickid
nesse . pat Whaume ze
shulen farte pei restey
ue zou in to enlasyng
tabernacles / he pat is
trekke in pe leste p'ng
& in pe more is trekke /
& he pat in a litel p'ng
is Wickid . and in pe
more is Wickid / p'fore
zif in pe Wickid riches
ze weren not trekke . pat
pat is cov who shal
bylene to zell / & zif in
oper menn' p'ng zee
weren not trekke . pat
pat is zoure who shal
zyue to zou . / No man
may due to tbo lordes /
forsope oper he schal
hate pe ton & loue pe
toyer . or due to pe
toon & dispise pe topy
ze molke not serue

/ ende

o

to god & to rycheffis / forso
 pe pharisees pat weren
 couetouse herten alle pese
 ymngis & pey scorneden
 hym / and he seip to hem /
 ye it ben pat iustiffen
 you by fore men / sopeh
 god hay knolwen youre her
 tes / for pat pat is hyz to
 men is abhominatioun
 anentis god / pe salbe &
 apphetis til to noon / fro þ
 ymne pe rellome of god
 is euangelised & eche ma
 doy strengpe or violence
 in to it / forsope it is hyz
 ter heuene & erpe for
 to passe ouer & paine o
 titel falle of pe salbe //
 Euery man pat forsa
 thy his wyf & weddy a
 noyr & doy auoutrie & he
 pat weddy pe forsaiken
 of pe hofebonde doy auou
 trie / Suman was ryche
 & was cloped in purpui
 and hyis or vestite silke
 and ete euery day offy
 myngly / & þe was sum
 begger / Lazarus hy name
 pat lay at his zate ful
 of byles / couetyng to
 be fulfilled of pe cru

mes pat fellen fro pe ri
 che manes bord & no
 man zas to hym / but &
 houndes camen & lickid
 his byles / forsope it is
 don pat pe begger dyed
 & was borne of aungelis
 in to abrahams bosome /
 forsope & pe riche man
 is ded & is byried in
 helle / sopeh he castyge
 up his yzen byhaime he
 was in turmentes / say
 abraham after & lazarus
 in his bosome / & he cried
 seyrng / fadir abraham
 haue my on me & sen
 de lazarus pat he dippe pe
 laste part of his fygire
 in water pat he lye my
 tonge for y am timentid
 in his flammes / & abra
 ham said to hym / sone
 haue mynde for you hast
 receyued good ymnges in
 þi lyf & lazarus also yuel
 ymnges / sopeh he is uolt
 confortid / but you art t
 mentid / and in alle pese
 ymngis bitylly us & you
 a greet derle place is sta
 bled pat pey þ wolen

fro hēuez passe to zolb-
molbn not. neyr fro pen-
nes passe ouer hidur. &
he seip/ perfore y prey
ye fadir abraham. pat
you sende hym in to pe
houis of my fadir. sope he
y haue syne brypen. pat
he witnesse to hem. lest
and pei comen in to pis
place of turmentes/ and
abraham seip to hym/ pa-
han moisen & pphetis. he
re pei hem/ & he seide/ nay
fadir abraham. but yf ony
of deed men shal go to he-
rey schulen to penance/
forsope he seip to hym/ yf
pei here not moyses and
pphetes. neyr yf ony of
deed men shal rise hem.
pei schulen byleue to hy/
and he seip to his disci-
ples/ it is impossible yt
schuldre comen not.
forsope woo to pat man
by whom pei comen/ it
is more pfitable to hym
yf a mynestoon be put
aboute his necke. and be
caste in to pe see. vane
pat he schuldre oon of

pes hitel/ preyne to
zolb self/ yf y broper
shal synne in pee.
blame hym/ & yf he
shal to penance. for-
zeue to hym/ it yf se-
uen cipes in pe day he
shal synne in pee & se-
uen cipes in pe day he
shal be coulted to pee.
seyng it forpmyse
me. forzeue hy.

And pe apostles
senden to pe lord/
entrese to us seip/
forsope pe lord seide/ yf
ye halen seip as a corne
of seneue. ye schullen
sey to pis tree more.
be you drallen up by pe
rote & be onplamitide
in to pe see. & it shal
obeye to zolb/ forsope
wiso of you haunyge
a seruant crynge &
lesuyng pe oxen. pe
wische turned hem fro
feld. he seip anon to
hym/ go sitte at pe me-
te. & not seip to hym.
make redy pat y soupe
& gide pee byfore and

wynstire to me til pat y
ete & drynke & afur yese pi
ges pou schalt ete & drynke
Wher he hap grace to pat
shant. for he dide pat he
comandide to hym. nax
y gesse. so and ze whane
ze han dne. alle pinges
pat ben comandide to
zolk. sey. We ben onpo
fitable sumuris. pat y
we gysten for to do we han
do. And it was don welsh
le ihu wente in to ierusa
lem. he passide pouls pe
mydel of samarye & ga
lilee. & whanne he entride
in to en castel. ten leyron
se men came zains hy
pe whilke stoden afur. &
lyfuden op a voyce sey
inge. ihu commandeur
haue mercy on us. whom
as he callz. he orde. so
ze schelwe ze you to pthas
and it was don pe while
pey wenten. pei ben den
sed. forsope oon of hem
as he say for he is den
sed. wente zain wip gre
te voyce magnyfyngge
god. & he felde wil in to

pe face bystere his feet. wy
ge grates. & pis was a sa
maritan. forsope ihu aufte
ryngge seide. Wher ten ben
not censed. & Wher ben
pe nyne. & pe is noon foun
den pat turned zaim & af
glorie to god. no hit pis alen
& he cry to hym. rise up.
so pou. for y fery hap made
pe saaf. / sopey yene ihu tha ayd e
of pe pharisees whanne
pe rellime of god come. & he
answeride hem & seide. pe
rellime of god come. not
wip aspyngge. neyr pey
schulen sue. lo here. & lo
pere. forsope lo pe rellime
of god is wip yme zolt. &
he cry to his disciples. day
es schulen come whanne
ze schulen desire for to see
oo day of mannes sone. &
ze schulen not see. & pey
schulen sey to you. lo here
& lo pere. nyl ze go. neyr
sue ze. for why as leyt
schynngge from vndur he
uene. schynen in to po ym
ges pat ben vndur heue
ne. so schal mannes sone
be in his day. forsope firste

it byhouep hym for to enf
 fre many ymges. and for to
 be repurd of his gentiaoun. & as it
 was don in pe dayes of noe.
 so it shal be in pe dayes
 of mannes sone/ per eten
 & drunken. wedden wyues.
 & weren iouen to weddyn
 ges til in to pe day in pe
 whiche noe entride in to
 pe schip. and pe greet fl
 de came & loste alle/ also it
 was don in pe dayes of loth
 per eten & drunken. boukten
 and solden. plauntiden &
 bidden. sepehly in what
 day loth wente oute of so
 dm. pe lord reyned fir
 & brymstoon fro genene
 & loste alle/ after his vis
 it shal be in what day
 manys sone shal be et
 habid/ in pat hou he pat
 shal be in pe rof. and his
 vessels in pe hous. come
 he not. dolben for to take he
 alwey/ & he pat is in pe
 flde also turne not azen
 byhynde/ he ze myndful
 of pe wyf of loth/ who
 ener shal oke for to
 make his smile pat is

he saaf shal lese it/ &
 who eile shal lese it.
 shal quene it/ y sey
 to you in pat myt til
 shulen be in obed. don
 shal be taken to. and p
 oper. forsaken/ also hym
 shulen be geyndynge to
 gide. pe ton shal be ta
 ken to & pe toper. forsaken/
 tilbo in a flde. pe toon
 shal be taken to & pe
 toper. forsaken/ per answ
 ryng. seien to hym/
 where lord/ pe whiche
 seide to hem/ where eile
 pe body shal be. padur
 shulen be geiderid to ge
 dr and pe esles. c. viii.

H Or sope he seide
 to hem & a pable
 for it byhouep for
 to prey. evermore & not
 falle. sayng. per was
 sti. pige in a ate. pat
 dired not god. ney. scha
 med men/ forsope. crune
 Under was in pat ate.
 & offe came to hym sey
 inge/ venge me of myn
 aduysarie. he wolde not
 by myche tyme/ sepehly

After these things he seide
 Unto yune hym self and ys
 y drede not god & shame
 not man. neples for no
 widue is heny to me y et
 shal venge hym lest at ye
 last she comynge strangle
 me: sopehy ye said seip.
 here ye what ye domesman
 of mchidnesse seip/ feso
 ye lsher god shal not do
 overmunde of his chosen
 crynge to hym myt &
 day. & shal haue pa-
 ence in hem. / sopehy y sey
 to you/ for soone y shal
 do overmunde of hem. // Ne
 ples sessit pon mam y
 some comynge shal syn-
 de fery in erpe. feso pe he
 seide and to sunen pat
 trufiden in hem self as
 rufidul & dispisiden ope-
 no patile seynge/ also
 men fieden up in to ye
 temple for to prey ye
 roon was a pharisee. &
 ye toper a puphican/ for
 sope ye pharisee stonde
 ge. preyed amentis hym
 self these ynges seynge/
 god y to panynges to pee

for y am not as op of men-
 ranenouris comust anou-
 teris as also pis puphican
 y faste thyres in ye weke.
 y yue tyres of alle ynges
 pat y haue in possession/
 and ye puphican stonde ge
 after wolte not neyr lifte
 op ye yen to heuene. but
 smot his brest seynge/
 god be helppful & mchful
 to me symmere/ treuly y
 sey to you pis descendide
 in fied in to his hous fro
 hym/ for eche pat enham
 fery hym. shal be made lake/
 and he pat meip hym
 shal be enhammed/ feso pe ende
 pe broun to hym longe
 children pat he shulde tou-
 che hem/ ye whiche yng
 whaume displis saluen.
 pe blameten hem/ sopehy
 ihu depyng to gide he
 seide/ suffre ye children
 fery to come to me. & myl
 ye forke hem. sopehy of
 suche is ye kyndom of he-
 uenes/ treuly y sey to you.
 who ener shal not take
 ye kyndom of god. as a
 child. shal not entre in

to us / & On pryncce axide
 hym seynge / good maister
 What ying wynges / shal
 y lyste enerslastynges Ryse
 sopele ihu sende to hym /
 What seist you me good /
 no man good / no but god
 alone / you hast knollen pe
 comaimdementes / you
 hast not ote / you shalt
 not do lechery / you shalt
 not do pesty / you shalt
 not seie false witnessyn
 ge / worshippe y fadir &
 y modir / ye whiche seyn /
 y haue kepte alle pesty pi
 ges fro my yongye / ye
 whiche ying herd ihu
 seyn to hym / yit o ying
 faulty to pee / selle yow
 alle what enle yinges y
 hast & yue to pore men
 and you shalt haue tre
 soure in heuene / and co
 me & sue me / pes piges
 herd he was sorowful / for
 he was ful riche / sopele
 ihu seynge hym make
 soze / sende / hou hard pes
 pat haue money / schu
 len entre in to se kyndom
 of god / forsope it is hyt

a chanel for to passe
 yow an edis ne pane
 a riche man for to entre
 in to se kyndom of god /
 & per pat herden pesty
 yinges / sende / & Esho
 may be made safe / and
 he seyn to hem / ye yin
 ges pat ben impossible
 mentis men / ben possi
 ble anentis god / forsope
 petre seyn / lo we han
 leste alle yinges / & ou
 er pee / ye whiche sende
 to hym / treuk y seyn to
 yow se is no man pat
 shal forsake hous or fa
 dir & modir / & bryperen
 or wyf or sones or felles
 for ye tell me of god /
 & shal not receyue my
 che mo yinges in yis
 tyme / and in se world
 to comynge enlastynges
 lyf / forsope ihu toke
 his rbelue dysples &
 seyn to hem / lo we syen
 up to ierusalem / &
 alle yinges schulen be
 endid pat ben writen
 by apheetis of mannes
 sone / forsope he shal le

bytraied to hepen men &
 he shal be scorned & stou-
 red & byspat and after pat
 pei han stourged pei shule
 oke hym & pe priddy day
 he shal rise azeim & pei
 andur stoden no ying of
 pese & pis word was hid
 fro hem & pei andur stode
 not po yinges pat weren
 seide forsope it was don
 whanne ihe came myz to
 ierico. su blynd man sat
 bysides pe wey beggyng
 & whanne he herde pe au-
 panyng of puple passyng
 he axide what pis ying
 was / sope pei seiden
 to hym pat ihu of naza-
 reth passide & he cried
 seynge ihu pe sone of
 dauid haue mercy on me
 & pei pat wenten byfore
 blamed hym pat he shulde
 be stille / sope he myche
 more criede / pou sone of
 dauid haue mercy on me /
 forsope ihu stondyng
 comaindide hym for to be
 long te for to hym / & wha-
 ne he came myz he axide
 hym seynge what

wolt pou & shal id to pe
 & he seide lord pat y see
 & ihe seide to hym byhol-
 de / pi fere hap made pei say
 and anon he say & sued
 hym magnesyng god &
 al pe puple as it say /
 seynge to god

And ihe goyng away
 walkide to ierico &
 lo aman zache by
 name and pis was prync
 of puphicans & he rithere
 he souzte for to see ihu who
 he was & he myzte not for
 pe awpnyng of pepul for
 he was litel in stature &
 he remynge byfore stode
 up in to a stowmore tre pat
 he shulde see hym for he
 was to passe yem / & ihu
 bysaldyng up whanne
 he came to pe place say
 hym & seide to hym zache
 hyng come dou for to day
 y mote dwelle in ym hous
 & he hyng came wolue
 & ioyng receyved hym
 & whanne alle me sayen
 pei grathiden seynge for
 he hade turned to a syn-
 ful man forsope zache
 stondyng seide to pe

Lord lo low pe half of my goo
des y zeue to pore men and
zif y haue ony ping defrau
wed ony man y zelle pe four
foler/ ihe seip to hym/ for in
pis day helpe is made to pine
hous/ for pat he is alwa
mes sone/ forsope mannes
sone came for to orde and
to make cas pat ping pat
pisthite/ hem herynge pe
se pinges he putynge to
seide a pable for pat he w
nyz ierusalem/ & for pei ges
siden pat auoon pe kyndam
of god schulde be schelwde/
perfore he orde/ Sū noble
man wente in to aser atre
for to take to hym a kynde
& for to turne hem/ sope
his ten suauitis clepid
he gaf to hem ten besauitis
& seip to hem/ marcham
dise ye pe while y come/ for
sope his cteyftines hatid
hym/ & senten a messag
after hym seynge/ We
wolen not hym for to res
ue upon us/ and it was
don pat he turned hem
pe kyndam taken/ he co
inamiddid his suauitis

for to be clepid to whom
he gaf money pat he
schulde write hou myche
eche hade wonen by chaf
parynge/ forsope pe firste
came seynge/ lord pi be
saunte hap wonen ten
besauitis/ he seip to hy/
Wel be pou good suauit
for in litel ping pou hast
be trelke/ pou shalt & be
hauynge polker upon
ten atees/ and ye to
came seynge/ lord pi be
saunt hap made fyue
besauitis/ & to pis he seip/
& be pou upon fyfe atees/
& pe pridde came seynge/
lord pi besaunte pat
y hade put up in a suau
rie or swetynge clow/ for
sope y drede pee for pou
art an austerne man y
takist alwey pat pou set
tist not & pou repist f
pat pou hast not solben/
he seip to hym/ weylbard
seruaunt of pi moupe
y deme pee/ wistist pou
pat y am aman austine
takynge alwey pat pis
pat y sette not & repiste

pat ying pat y selbe not
e lhyt hast you not yue
my money to pe lord & y
comynge schulde haue re
ceyued it sovely wyth oth
res and he seide to men
standynge nyz take ze a
wey fro hym pe besaunt
e yue ze to hym pat hap
ten besauntis & pei seiden
to hym lord he hap ten
besauntis sovely y sey to
you for to eche hauninge
it schal be zouen & he
schal habounde o k plon
trouise bot fro hym pat
hap not a pat ying pat
he hap schal be taken of
hym nepeles brynge ze
hidur po myn enemyes
pat wolten not me res
ne upon hem & sle ze
byfore me & pe se ynges
seide he wente byfore
stynge to ierusalem
and it is don whanne
he came nyz to bethsa
ze & betany at pe mount
pat is cleped of olyuete
he sente his tibo disti
ples seynge go ze in

to pe castel pat is azem
9 zolk in to whiche ze en
trynge schulen fynde
a colt of she alle tyed
to whome noon of men
ende eat onhynde ze hy
e brynge ze to me & yf
omy man aye why ze on
hynden yus ze schulen
sey to hym for pe lord
desirep his werke forsope
pei pat weren sente
wenten forp & founden as
he seide to hem a colt ston
dyngge sovely hem on
hyndynge pe colt pe lar
dis of hym seiden to he
what outyen ze pe colt
e pei seiden for pe lord
hap hym nedeful & pey
leden hym to ihu and
pey castynge her clothes
upon pe colt puttiden
ihu on hym forsope hy
goyng pe vnderstonden
hen her clothes in pe wey
e whanne nolk he came
nyz to pe comynge dou
of pe mount of olyuete
alle pe cainpanyes of
men comynge dou by

gimen wyngre for to berre god
 whi greet woode on alle pe
 duces pat pei salben seip
 sei blessed is pe kyng pat
 comep in pe name of pe lord
 pees in heuenes & glorie in
 hye pinges. // Summe of pe
 pharisees of pe companye
 seiden to hym/ maistir. bla
 me pi disciples/ to whom he
 seip/ y seip to zolb. for 3 yf
 pese schulen be sulle. sto
 nes schulen crye/ and wsha
 ue he neyde. he oeyngre
 pe atre wepte upon seip
 inge/ for if you hadst kno
 wen. & pou/ & sopeh in
 pis day pe whiche to pees
 to pee/ but nolk pei be hid
 fro mine yen/ for dayes schu
 len come in pee & mine
 enemyes schulen emyro
 lbne pee whi pale. a pey
 schulen emyro lbne pee &
 make pee streyt on alle
 sides & caste pee dū to
 pe erpe and pi schilder pat
 ben in pee/ and pei schu
 len not leene in pee. a
 stoon upon a ston. for p
 pat pou hast not know
 en pe tyme of pi onista

com. // he gon in to pe
 temple. bigan for to cast
 oute men sellynge syn
 and kyngre seynge to
 hem/ it is witten pat
 myn hous is an hous
 of preier/ forsope ye han
 made it a denne of pestes/
 & he was techynge ehy
 day in pe temple/ for
 sope ye pntes of pntis
 and pe stribes & pe pnt
 ces of pe pepul. souyte
 for to lese hym/ & pey
 founden not what pey
 schulden do to hym/ so
 rely al pe pepul was
 hanged up on al acorn
 ed herynge hym. // ende

And it was don
 in oon of day
 es. hym tech
 ge pe pepul in pe tem
 ple and euangelizynge
 on pe pntes of pntis & of
pe pntes of pntis & of
 bes camen to gader whi
 pe elder men & seyen
 seynge to hym/ seye
 to us in what polver
 pou dost pis pnt. or
 who zas to pee pnt.

polber. 7 forsope ihu answere
 ryngte sende to hem / & y
 shal aye zow o word. ans
 were ze to me / was pe bap
 tem of ioun of henene or
 of men. 7 & pe pouzte wip
 ynn^{er} self seynge / for if
 we schulen sey of henene
 he shal seye / why pfore by
 lenen ze not to hym. 7 for
 soye if we schulen sey of
 men. alle pe comune pe
 pul schulen stonwe us for
 pe ben cherye ion for to
 be a pphete / and pe answere
 ruen hem to not knowe of
 whom it was / & ihu crye
 to hem / ney y sey to you. i
 y do pese ymges. // forsope
 he began for to sey to pe
 comune pepul his pable /
 suman plauntide a synne
 zerd. & hirid it to thers.
 & he was in pilgrymage
 myche tymes. & in yme
 of gedyngte of grapes.
 he sente a dunt to pe
 thers. pat pei schulden
 zyeue to hym of pe fruyt
 of pe synnezard / pe whiche
 lesten hym beten voyde
 or wip outen fruyt / & he

put for to sende an oyr
 seruaunt / forsope and pe
 betynge his a punyssh
 ze wip contels or wronges
 lesten wyde / & he putte
 to for to sende pe prydde
 pe whiche & woundynge
 hym / casten oute / sopeh
 pe lord of pe synnezard sei
 te / what shal y do. y shal
 sende my derkorpe come
 puenture whane pei
 schulen see hym. pei schi
 len shame / whome whane
 pe thers haden even. pe
 pouzten wip yne he self
 seynge / his is pe cyre /
 sle we hym. pat pe heri
 tage he made oure / & pei
 sloken hym cast oute of
 pe synnezard / what pfore
 shal pe lord of pe synne
 zerd do to hem / he schal
 come & lese pese thers.
 & zyeue pe synnezard to op
 pe whiche yms herd. pei
 senden to hym / he it ferre
 or znd forkeide / forsope he
 byholdynge hem sende
 what pfore is his yms
 pat is writen / pe stoon
 whom men byldynge

reprouden. vis is made into
 pe hed of pe coner/ eche pat
 shal falle upon vis ston.
 shal be shaken. or broken/
 forsope upon whom it &
 shal falle. it shal breke hy
 to smale parties. And pe
 pnces of pshs and pe scri
 bis soukten for to ley on
 hym hondis in pat our.
 & pei dredden pe pepul/ for
 sope pei knelwen. pat to he
 he seide pis lickenesse/ &
 pei sepyngre senten aspy
 eris pat seymeden hem
 inst. pat pei schulden take
 hym in word. & bytake hy
or braye to pe pnapate
polber of pe prync &
 to pe polber of pe meyre
or wylle & pei axiden hy
 sepyngre/ maistir we wren
 for ryght you seist & te
 chist. & you takest not
 pe pson of man. but
 you techist in treupe pe
 wey of god/ is it lesful
 to us. for to pue tribute
 to cesar or nay. forsope
 he byholdyngre pe dysceyt
 of hem. seide to hem/
 what tempte ze me/ & se

helke ze to me a penny/ wh
 hos ymage or supstpo
 own hay it. / pei answe
 ryngre seiden to hym/ ce
 saris/ & he seiv to hem/
 zelde ze pfire to cesar. po
 ynges pat ben cesaris. &
 po ynges pat ben of god
 to god/ & pei myzten not
 reprove his word. bifore pe
 pore pepul/ and pei wond
 ryngre in his answer. hel
 den pees. Summe of pe sa
 ducris. pat denyen azem
 risyngre for to be. camen
 to & axiden hym sepyngre/
 maistir moyses wrot to us.
 if pe broper of omy man
 ganyngre alwyf shal be
 ded. & he was wip outen
 fre children. pat his bro
 per take his wyf & reist
 seed to his broper/ pfire
 seven brisen wren/ pe
 firste toke alwyf. & is de
 de wip outen fre children/
 & pe secont de toke hir. and
 he is dede wip outen sone/
 and pe priddyde toke hir/ also
 & alle oyuene & lesten
 not seed. but ben dede/
 pe laste of alle & pe woma

is ded/ perfore in pe risyn
ge aȝem. Whos wyf of hem
shal sche be/ forsope seint
haden hir wyf. & ihu seip
to hem/ Sones of his world
Weddyn & ben youen to wed
dynges/ forsope per pat schu
len he had worpi of pat world
& risynge aȝem fro deit me.
neyn/ ben Weddid neyn wed
den wyues/ ney euer schu
len moȝe dye/ forsope per
ben euen ihu aȝengeles. &
ben pe sones of god. sypen
per ben sones of risynge
aȝem/ forsope for ded me
risen aȝem. and moyses
getted hisdis pe busshe
as he seip pe lord god of
abraham & god of ysaac
& god of iacob/ for god is
not of deit men but of
lyuynge men/ forsope alle
men lyuen to hym/ sope
ly stune of pe scribis an
flewynge. seiden/ maister
þou hast þel saine/ & þu
wisten no more aȝe hym
ouy þing/ forsope he se
d to hem/ þou seyn men
arist for to be pe sone of
damp & damp hy self

say in pe boke of psal
mes. pe lord seide to my
lord. sure on my ryghalft
til pat y finte ym ene
myes a stool of my feet.
perfore damp clep hy
lord. & þou is he his sone/
sopely al pe pepul hee
rynge. he seide to his dis
ciples/ be ze war of scri
bis pat wolen wandre in
stolis & louen salutacons
in pe chepyng. & pe firste
charis in synagoges &
pe firste outynge places
in festis/ pat deuouren pe
houses of widelkes feyn
se longe preyng/ pese
shulen take more damp
nacion.

Horsope he bihol
dyng saly he
pat seuten her
yftes in to pe tresoye ri
che men/ forsope & he say
su litel pore widelke sen
dyng also litel myntes
or ferpyngis. & he seide
trently y sey to zolt. for
his pore widelke. seute
more pen alle men/ for
whi alle pese of pe ha

boundant & plenteu
 se to hem. Sente m. to
 pe ziftes of god/ forsope
 no widue of pat ymge
 faily to hir. Sente al hir
 lyfode pat she hadde/
 & sumen saynge of pe
 temple pat it lkas ourned
 wiy good stones & ziftes.
 he saide/ pese ymges pat ze
 seen. dayes schulen come
 in pe lshiche a soon shal
 not be laste on a ston. pe
 lshiche shal not be disturny
 ed/ sopeh pey axiden hy
 seynge/ comamundir lsh
 anne schulen pese piges
 be a what tolen lshanne
 pe schulen bygyne for
 to be don/ pe lshiche saide/
 see ze pat ze be not distey
 ned/ sopeh many schulen
 come in my name. seynge
 for y am. & pe tyme shal
 neze/ pfor nyl ze go aft
 hem/ forsope lshanne ze
 schulen here batayles &
 seducions. nyl ze be afard/
 it bihouey firste pese pi
 ges for to be don. bot not
 yt annoon an ende/ panne
 he saide to hem/ firste shal

rise again? folk & relbme
 again? relbme & grete mo
 uynge of erpe schulen
 be by places. A pestilen
 ce & hyngris & dredis
 fro heuene & grete toke
 nes schulen ben/ bot hy
 fore alle pese ymges. pe
 schulen prute her hondes
 to zolk & schulen pursue
 bataynge in to synago
 ges & lepyngis drallunge
 to byngis & meyns for
 my name/ forsope it shal
 falle to zolk in to witnes
 singe/ pfor prute ze in
 zoure hertis not to pen
 ke byfere. hon ze schulen
 answeere/ forsope y shal
 zyeue to zolk moupe & wis
 dom. to lshiche alle zou
 re aduissaries schulen
 not mouue zensfonde.
 and zensfere/ sopeh
 ze schulen be batayned
 of fadir & modir & bri
 pen and cosynes & fren
 dis. & by tep pe schulen
 turmentte zou/ & ze sch
 len be in hate to alle
 men for my name/ and
 an heer of zoure hed.

shal not pnt he in zoure
 patiente ze schulen welte
 zoure soules forsope wh
 aune ze schulen see jern
 salem be emyrobued of
 an oost of bataile pāne
 wite ze for pe desolacoon
 of it shal neye/ pāne pei
 pat ben in iudee fle to
 mounteys/ & pei pat i
 pe myddil of it go albey/
 and pei pat in pe citres
 entre not in to it for pese
 ben dayes of oremāunce
 pat alle pings pat ben
 witten be fulfillid for
 sope wo to women wh
 child & nuythynge in po
 dayes forsope a greet p
 sure shal be on pe erpe
 & wrape to via pepul
 pei schulen falle in to
 pe moupe of swerd &
 pei schulen be led capti
 in to alle folkes and
 ierusalem shal be desol
 led of hepen men til pe
 tyme of nations be ful
 fillid/ & tokenes schule
 ben in sūne & moone &
 sterres and in erpe on
 leuyng of folkes for

confusoun of solbne of
 pe see & walbes men
 waxinge drye for drede
 & alhdyng pat schulen
 come to al pe world for
 whi staves of heuene
 schulen be moued/ & pā
 ne pei schulen see mā
 nes done comynge in a
 cloude whi greet polber
 & maicste/ sopeh pese
 pinges hysmynge for
 to be made byholde ze &
 reyse ze zoure hedis for
 zoure redempcion ney
 r/ & he seide to hem a
 lictensse/ see ze pe fige
 tre & alle trees whane
 pei bringen forth noll of
 hem fruyt ze witten for
 somer is nyz/ so & zee
 whanne ze schulen see
 pese pinges for to be don
 wite forsope pe fūndam
 of god is nyz/ treuly y
 sey to zoll for me zūda
 acion shal not passe
 til alle pinges be don/
 heuene & erpe schulen
 passe sopeh my wordis
 schulen not passe forso
 pe perceyue ze to zour c

Self. lest pauenature.
 zoure hertis be greynyd
 Wip glotonye and dronke
 nesse & lissynessis of vicio
 liss & ilke thyng come wodey
 ne upon zou/ firslope as
 a grame or snare it shal
 come upon pe face of
 al erpe/ and so wate ze
 in eche tyme pnyng pat
 ze be had woepe for to fte
 alle yese yinges. pat be
 to come & for to stonde
 byfore maunnes coue/ ffor
 sope in dayes he was te
 chynge in pe temple
 sope in myghts he go
 ynge out. dwellede in
 pe mount pat is clepid
 of olyuete/ & al pe pepul
 hastide or came erly for
 to come to hym in pe
 temple. for to here hym/

A Drsope C. xxj
 pe haliday of
 perf loones.
 pat is sende
 paste came my & pe
 pnaas of pffis & pe ce
 bes comten hou pei schul
 den sle ihu firslope pei
 dreden pe poze pepul

sope/ satans entride in
 to iudas pat was cleped
 of scariot. oon of pe twel
 ue. & he wente & opat
 Wip pe pnaas of pffis &
 Wip pe maiestates. hou
 he schulde bitraye hym to
 hem/ & pei ioyed & maide
 couenaut. for to pnye to hy
 money & he bihite/ & he
 souyte couenablete pat
 he schulde bitraye hym
 Wip outen ciipanyes/ so
 pe/ pe dayes of perf loo
 ues came in pe which
 it was newe paste pat is
sacrifice of paste for to
 be slayn/ & he sente pe
 tre & ioon seynge/ ze
 goynge make redy to us
 paste pat we ete/ & pei
 seiden/ where wast pou
 we make redy/ & he en
 d to hem/ soze entrynge
 in to pe citee. stiman
 berynge a vessel of wa
 ter. shal come azeimes
 zoll/ oue ze hym in to
 pe hous in to which he
 entrep. & ze schulen sey
 to pe hoselbond man of
 pe hous/ pe manse seip

i to alle
 v^e fitten

a

to pee/ where is ye herber
 serje/ where y shal ete
 paste wip my disciples/ &
 he shal shewe to zow
 agreeet coupyng place
 strelked/ & pere make ze
 redy/ & pere pei goyng
 founden as he seide to
 hem/ & pei maide pere
 redy paste/ & whanne
 ye hour was made/ he ca
 te to pe mete & tibeluc
 apostles wip hym/ and
 he seip to hem/ wip desire
 y haue desired for to ete
 wip zow pis paste/ by
 fore y suffre/ for so pe
 sey to zow/ for fro pis
 tyme y shal not ete
 it/ til it be fulfilled
 in ye rellime of god/ &
 pe cuppe taken/ he dide
 graces & seide/ take ze
 & departe ze among zow/
 & pere y sey to zow/ y
 shal not drynke of ye
 generacioun of pis cy
 ne/ til ye rellime of god
 come/ & pe bred taken
 he dide graces & brake
 & gaf to hem seipng
 pis is my body/ pat for

zow shal be zowen/ do
 ze pis ping in to my
 couemoraoun in to
mynde of me. also & pe
 challice afur pat he had
 couped/ sayng/ pis
 cuppe is ye newe testa
 went in my blode/ pat
 shal be shed for zow/
 nepeles ye hond of aman
 bitraynge me/ is wip
 me in ye lord/ & & pere
 mannes sone goy/ affo
 pat it is diffyned & der
 myned nepeles woot
 pat man by whom he
 shal be bitrayned/ & pei
 bigiden for to seke a
 monge hem/ who it was
 of hem/ pat was to do
 pat ying/ & & pere is ma
 de amonge hem/ whiche
 of hem shulde be seen
 to be more/ for sove he
 seide to hem/ kynges
 of folkis ben lordis of
 hem/ & pei pat han po
 wer upon hem/ ben
 cleped good dours/ fast
 ye ze not cy/ bot he pat
 is more in zow/ be ma
 de as zowge/ & he pat

is byfore goer. as a stru
 aunt / for whi who is more
 he pat restep or he pat
 mynystrep. / wher not
 he pat restep. / forsope
 y am in pe mydel of you.
 as he pat mynystrep / so
 pely ze ben pat han alwel
 led wip me. in my tresp
 racouns / & y dispose to you
 as my fadir hay disposid
 to me a relbme. pat ye
 ete & drynke on my lord
 in my relbme & suite in
 trones. demynge pe twel
 ue byuresdis of ysrael for
 sope pe lord seide to sy
 mouit / symonit lo
 satanas hay axide you
 pat he schulde redel as
 wher / so pely y haue
 fyde for pee. pat y ferp
 faile not / & pon sette
 me cound. conferme
 y briperen / pe whiche
 seide to hym / lord y
 am redy wip pee for to
 go & in to prisoun & in
 to dey / & he saide / y sey
 to pee petre. pe cof or
 hal not crolke to day.
 til pon pries forsaie for

to haue knolde me / &
 he seide to hem / wha
 ne y seute you wip on
 ten sachel & scryp &
 schoon. wher ony yng
 fauld to zolk / & pey
 senden / no yying / per
 fore he seide to hem / bot
 nolk he pat hay a sachel.
 take also & a scryp / & he
 pat hay not. sette his
 cote & bye a swerd / so
 pely y sey to you for it
 is byhouep pat yat pig
 pat is witten for to be
 fulfild in me / & wip
 wikkid men is he put
 or demed / forsope pe pi
 gea pat ben of me. han
 ende / & pei senden / lord
 lo who swerdis here /
 & he seide to hem / it is
 ynolky & he gon. pite
 ibente after custome in
 to pe hil of olyues / so
 pely & disciples ouedra
 hym / & whanne he came
 to pe place. he seide to
 hem / yhe ze y ze enten
 not i to temptacion /
 & he is taken alwey fro
 hem. hou myche is a

stones cast & pe knees put
 he fyled saynge/ fadir zif
 pou wolt turne ouer pis
 arpe fro me/ nepeles not
 my will be don. bot yme/
 forsope an aungel apperide
 to hym fro henene- to n foz
 tyngge hym/ & he made
 in agonye or fterf ppe
 lenger/ & his elboot is
 made as dropes of blode
 remynge wben in to pe
 erpe/ & lshame he hade
 risen fro preier. & had
 comen to his disciples.
 he foud hem slepyngge
 for heynesse/ & he seip
 to hem/ what slepen
 ze/ rife ze & ppe ze pat
 ze falle not in to temp
 tacion. zif hy opeky
 ge. so a cupanye. & he
 pat. was clepede
 iudas oon of pe tibelie.
 wente byfoze hem/ and
 he came nyz to ihu. pat
 he schulle kisse hym/
 copely ihe seide to hy
 iudas wip a cosse. pou by
 trauest maun9. gone/ so
 pely per pat weren abou
 te hym. seeyngge pat
 yms pat was to come.

seide to hym/ lord zif lke
 smyten in swerd/ & oon
 of hem smot pe suant
 of pe pnce of pphs. & hit
 of his litel ryt eere/ for
 sope ihe ansueryngge seip
 suffre ze til hidur/ & lsh
 ne he hade touchide his h
 tel ere. he helide hym/
 forsope ihe seide to hem
 pat camen to hym. pe
 pncas of pphs & magistra
 tis or maistris of pe tem
ple and elder men/ as to
 a prief ze han gon oute
 wip swerdis & stanes/
 lshame y was ethe dry
 wip zolk in pe temple.
 ze strengten not out hon
 des in to me/ bot pis is
 zome hour and pe poller
 of derkeness/ copely per
 takynge hym leden to
 pe hous of pe pnce of p
 phs/ petre forsope suede
 hym a fer/ copely a fier
 kyndled in pe mydel fl
 ze or wet fons & hem
 cutynge aboute. petre
 was in pe mydel of ho/
 wshom lshame cu hond
 maiden hade een cuty
 ge at pe lyzt & hadde.

byholten hym. she seide/
 & pis was wip hym/ and
 he denyed hym seynge/
 woman y thew hym not/
 & astur a lital anon man see
 ynge hym seide/ & pou art
 of hem/ petre fersope seip/
 o man y am not/ & a space
 made of oon our. sovely
 anopr affermed seynge/
 treuly & pis was wip hi/
 for wsh & he is of galilee/
 & petre seip/ man y not
 what pou sayst/ & anon
 yt hyr opeynge. a wol
 welbe/ & pe lord turned a
 zem. by helde petre/ and
 petre hade mynde on pe
 word of ihu as he hadde
 seide. bifore pe cob wolbe.
 pries pou shalt dempe me/
 & petre gon fep. wepte
 bitturly/ & pe men pat
 hollen hym sturiden hi
 smytynge hym. and pa
 veillen oz hidden hym
 & smyten his face & an
 den hym seynge/ apseae
 pon wsho is it pat smot
 pec. also many ope pin
 ges va blaffemyngge. pa
 ten azems hym/ & as pe

day was made. pe cher
 men of pe pepul & pu
 ces of pshs & pe scribis
 camen to gider. & ledde
 hym in to he counsel
 seynge/ nif pou art i
 say to us/ & he seip to
 hem/ nif y shal sey to
 you ze schulen not byle
 ue to me/ sovely & nif
 y shal axe. ze schulen
 not ansuere to me nep
 ze schulen leue fersope
 astur pis tyme. man
 some shal be cutynge on
 pe rythalf of pe stu of
 god. / yfsee alle seiden/
 yfsee art pou pe sone
 of god. pe wshiche sey
 ze seyn for y am/ & pa
 seiden/ wshilt yt desiren
 we witnessynge/ for
 we like oure self. han hero
 of his mony. le xxii

And al pe musti
 tude of hem ry
 synge. ledde hy
 to priate/ fersope yep
 bigiden for to accuse hy
 seynge/ we han fouu
 den hym pis turynge
 opswilten pure folke and

forbedynge tribut for to be
 zoven to cesar: & saynge hy
 self for to be crist kyng: for
 sope pilate axide hy sey-
 nge: art thou kyng of ie-
 wes? & he answeringe seip
 thou saist: for sope pilate
 sey to pe pntes of pntis
 & to pe capaynes of pepul
 y fynde no pntis of cause
 in this man: & yet weren
 strongere saynge: he mo-
 uet pe pepul techynge
 word al iudee: & sayn-
 ge fro galilee til hadur
 pilate forsope herynge
 galilee: axid if he were
 a man of galilee: & as he
 knewe pat he was of pe
 polber of eroude: he sen-
 te hym azen to eroude
 whiche & he was at
 ierusalem these dayes
 forsope ihu seen: erou-
 de ioyed ful myche: for
 he was of myche tyme
 couertynge: for to seen
 hym: for pat he hade her-
 de many ymges of hy
 & hopeide for to see syn-
 tokene for to be made of
 hym: sope he axide

hym in many wordis: &
 he no yng answerid to
 hym: forsope pe pntes
 of pntis & scribis stoden
 stedefastly acusinge hy
 sope he eroude forsoke & dis-
 pntid hym wip his oost: &
 stownde hym claped wip
 a white clop: and sente
 azen to pilate: & eroude
 pilate ben made frendis
 in pat ilke day: for why hy
 fore yet weren enemyes
 to azer: pilate sope he
 pntes of pntis & pe ma-
 gistratis of pe pepul de-
 pide to geur side to he:
 ze han offrid to me no
 man: as turnynge albet
 pe pepul: & lo y axinge
 bifore thou fynde no cause
 in this man of these ymges
 in whiche ze acusest hy
 bot ney eroude: for y azen
 sente thou to hym: & lo
 no yng woepe pe dey is
 don to hym: y shal leue
 hym amending: or deshe
 hym chastised: forsope he
 hade uete for to dysmyte
 or desouer to hem oon hy
 by pe feste day: sope he

al ye aipange aried to ge
dir seynge/ do hy albey
e deliuer to us barabas/
ye whiche was sente in
to prisoun for su sedua
oun or distyrling mate
in pe cite e the mansleyn
ge/ forsope estesone pilat
opac to hem. Whilpunge
for to deliuer ihu/ e pei
vndir arieden seynge/
crucifie crucifie hy/ sope
pe pruide tyme he saide
to hem/ sopehy what of
yuel hy he don. y hy
te no cause of dey in hym/
yfre y schal chastise hym
e deliue/ e pei cotinuen
wip greet voices axunge/
pat he schuld be crucified/
e pe voices of hem waren
stronge/ e pilate demyde he
axunge for to be don/ sope
hy he deliuered to hem hy
pat he mansleynge e se
duacon was sente in to
prisoun whom pei axiden.
Sopehy he knoke ihu to
her wille/ and whane pei
leden hym pei toke suma
symount of syryen co
mynges fro pe tolln e pei

puttiden to hym a crosse
for to bere astur ihu/ so
pely y eueden hym my
che aipange of pepul e
of wyemen pat wehiden
e hymournedden hym/ so
pely ihu turned to hem
saide/ domtris of ierusalem
nyl ze wepe op me. bot
wepe ze on zoure sylf e
on zoure sones/ for loo
dayes schulen come in
whiche it schal be seide/
blessid be baren wyemen
e pe wombis pat han
not gended. e pe tetiz
pat han not zoue souke/
paine pei schulen bygy
ne for to cry to monter
nes. Palle ze tolln on us
and to smale hillis to
uere ze us/ for zif in
grene tree pei don pis
what schal be don in a drye.
Sopehy e oper tiko kic
hid men weren led wip
hym/ pat pei schulden
be steyn/ e astur pat
pei cainen in to a place
pat is clepid of caluarie.
pe pei crucifiedden hym/
e pe priefs. oon on pe

rithalf and ye toper on pe
 hylte half/ forsope ihs can
 de/ fadir forzeue to hem
 for pei witen not what pei
 don/ forsope pei departyn
 ge his clothes/ scuten lot
 tis/ and pe pepul stood
 of pte) abidinge & pe pryues/ &
 myden hym wyl hem say
 ge/ ower men he made saf
 make he hym self saf/ if
 his be crist pe chosen of
 god/ forsope & kyngtis &
 myden hym comynge my
 & offriden ovyngre to hy
 saynge/ if pou art kyns
 of ielwes/ make pee saaf/
 sovely & pe supstripaon
 was lriten on hym wyl
 grek/ lettris of latyn &
 of chrelle/ his is ihs kyng
 of ielwes/ forsope oon of
 ye pries pat pei hange
 den/ blaffemyde hym cry
 inge/ if pou art crist ma
 ke pi self saf & us/ sope
 ly pe tof an/ lberyngre/
 blamed hym cryngre/
 neyr pou dredist god/ pat
 pou art in pe same damp
 nacioun/ & treuly we iust
 ly/ for why we han reay
 ned woepi pmyges to dedis/

sovely he his dide no piz
 of yuel and he sende to
 ihs/ lord haue mynde of
 me/ Whanne pou shalt
 come in to pi byndam/
 and ihs sende to hym/
 treuly y cry to pee/ his
 day pou shalt be wyl me
 in paradise/ sovely it was
 alnest pe cyte hour &
ondurue & derknesses
 ben made in al pe woel
 til pe mynne hour & none
 & pe cyte is made derk/
 & pe weyl of pe temple
 is lit pe mydel/ & ihs cry
 inge wyl greet voyce/ say
 fadir in to pi hondes/
 y bitake my spirit/ and
 he saynge yest pmyges/
 sent oute pe spirt &
died/ forsope centurio
 cryngre pat pmyges
 was don/ glorified god
 cryngre/ owerly his man
 was iust/ and al pe ci
 panyge of hem pat were
 pe to gedir at pi ower
 tacle & sayn po pmyges
 pat weren don/ smytynge
 her brestis in myden hem/
 forsope alle his knolben
 stoden aser & wimen pat

Snedden hym fro galilee see
ynge yese ymges/ & lo amā
iuseph by natue pat was a
decuriour. or harynge ten
ynur hym. a good man
& iust. pis man consente
not to pe counsellis & dedis
of hem. of armatshy of iude.
pe whiche & he abood pe syn
dom of god/ pis came nyz
to pilate. & axide pe bo
dy of ihu/ & blaypid it don
dun in a hynden clop & put
ide hym in a graue helyn
in whiche not yt ony man
was put. & pe day was p
assauis. pat is euen of pe
haliday. & pe sabot by
gan to shyne/ sovely pe
wyemen saynge pat came
wy hym fro galilee. say
en pe graue & hou his bo
dy was put/ & pe turny
se azem maken redy. Also
te spices & oymementis.
& sovely in pe sabot pe
reiden aftir pe comān
ament.

A Drdoye in oon
of pe wode ful
erly pey camen
to pe graue. by

ynge. Alre spices pat
pei haden made redy/ &
pei founden pe stoou tur
nyde alwey fro pe graue.
& pei gon in founden not pe
body of ihu/ & it was don pe
whyle pei in pouyt weren
astonyed of pis ymge. lo also
men stonden bysidis hem in
shynge clop/ sovely wh
ame pei dreden & bolbiden
her semblaunt in to pe pe
pei senden to hem/ what
seken ze pe shynge wy
dite/ he is not here. bot
hap risen/ haue ze mynde
hou he spat to you. whāne
he was yt in galilee. say
inge/ for it byhouey mān
sone to be taken in to pe
bondis of synful men
and to be crucified. & pe
pride day for to ryse azem/
& pei bypouyten on hye
wordis/ & pei gon azem.
fro pe graue. tollen alle
pese ymges to pe essene
& to alle oper/ for sope y
was marye maudeleyn
& jon & yarie of iames
and oper wyemen pat we
ren wy hem. pat saden

to apostles yese ymges / &
 pe wordis ben seen byfore
 hem as madnesse / & pey
 byleuyden not to hem / the
 sope petre risynge ran to
 pe graue / & he boldynge
 doken say pe hymen clothes
or shens put alone / and
 he wente by hym self won
 drynge pat pat was don /
 & lo the of hem wenten
 pat day in to a castel pat
 was fro ierusalem in pe
 spate of syen furlonges.
 by name emals / & pey
 spoken to gader of alle pe
 se ymges pat haden by
 fallen / and it was don pe
 while pey talkiden / and by
 hem self sougten / & the
 hym self ueryng wen
 te way hem / sope by her
 uen weie holden / lest pey
 euellen hym / & he sey
 to hem / what ben yese
 wordis pat ye spoken to
 gader wandrynge / & ye
 ben soukeful / & oon to
 vasson pe name cleophas
 answerynge seyde / pou
 alone art a pilgryme in
 ierusalem & hast pou not

knollen what ymges be
 don in it in yese dayes /
 to whome he seyde / what
 & pey seyden to hym / of
 ihu of nazareth pat
 was aman prophete my
 ty in werk & word / byfore
 god & al pe pepul / & hou
 pe hest pphes & omre pn
 ces bitoken hym in to
 dampnacioun of deyt
 crucifieden hym / for sope
 we hopiden for he was
 to bye again ysrail / & not
 upon alle yese ymges.
 pe pridde day is to day /
 yese ymges ben don / bot
 & ou wymen of ouris
 maden us aserd / pe whiche
 byfore pe lyt weren at
 pe graue / & his body not
 founden / pey camen sey
 inge hem also for to haue
 seen a syt of anngelos
 pe whiche sayen hym
 for to hwe / & sumen of
 ouren wenten to pe gra
 ue / & so pey founden as
 pe wymen saden / bot
 hym pey founden not / the seide to
 D folles & slowe of herte
 for to byleue in alle ymges

pat pe pphens han spoken/
 Wshewr it byshofte not crist
 for to suffre. & so entre in
 to his citie. & he bigyn
 mynge at moyses & alle pe
 pphens. metode or declarie
 to hem in alle scripures
 pat weren of hym / & pei
 camen my to pe castel wsh
 dur pei wenten & he made
 countenaunce hym for to
 so ferpr / & pei constrey
 nyden hym saynge. dwel
 le wip us. for it dralwey to
 myt. & pe day is now boly
 id wben / & he entrede in
 hem / & it was don pe wsh
 le he refide wip hem at
mete. he toke bred & bles
 sde & brake & dressede to
 hem / and pe ren of hem
 ben opened. & pei knelben
 hym / & he wanythide
 fro ber ren / and pei en
 den to sider / wher oure
 herce was not breymyn
 ge in us. pe while he
 spak in pe wey. & ope
 nyde to us scripures.
 & pei risynge in pe same
 hour. wenten azeim to
 Jerusalem. & founden

eleven seidered to sider. &
 hem pat weren wip hem.
 saynge / for pe lord ros. & ve
 rily & apperide to symon /
 & pei tolen what ynges
 weren don in pe weye &
 hou pei knelben hym in
 bresynge of bred. / forsope
 pe while pei spoken pe
 ynges. wsh fode in pe
 mydel of hem. & saide to
 hem / pees to you. I am wsh
 ze drete. sopey pei diskur
 bled & agast. zessiden he
 for to see a spirit / and he
 seide to hem / what ben
 ze troblid. & poures sren
 op in to joure hertes.
 see ze myn hondis and
 my feet. for y my self
 am / sele ze & see ze. for a
 spirit hap not fleyste
 & boones. as ze seen me
 for to haue / & wshanne
 he hade seide pis pping.
 he sheldide hondis and
 feet / forsope ze hem not
 bysarynge & wondrynge
 for roye. he seide / han
 ze here ony ping. pat
 schal be eten / & pei of
 friden to hym a parte

f

to sic

of a fyste rosid. & a com
be of hony. & whanne he
hate eten byfore hem. he
takynge pe relifs zane to
hem. and he saide to hem.
pese ben pe wordis pat y
spac to zow. Whanne y was
yt wy zow. for it is ned
alle pyns to be fulfilled
pat ben wryte in pe lawe
of moyses & in pphetis &
in psalmes of me. vane
he opened to he wit. pat
pe schulten vnderstonde
scriptures. & he seide to
hem. for pus it is wryten.
& pus it shoued eft for to
suffre & rise azein fro dede
pe preide day. & penaue
a remission of synes for
to be pchid in his name
in to alle folkes. me bygy
nyge fro ierlm. for sope
ze ben witnesse of pese
pyns. & y shal oende pe
bygyt pyng of my fa
dir in to zow. Sope sh
ze in pe citee. til pat
ze be clopid wy werty
fro an hy. for sope he led
de hem forp in to bera
nye. & his hondis byfte

up. he blessed hem. & it
was don pe while he ble
sed hem. he departed fro
hem. & was bozen in to
heuene. & pe worschyp
ge wenten azein in to
jerusalem. Wy grete wyse
& woren entmore in petem
ple herpyng & blessinge
god.

Here enden pe
gospelis of luke

and bygyunen
pe prolog of jon

This is jon pe
euangelist oon
of pe disciples
of god. pe wh
che amayde

of god was chose. Whom
fro pe sposales. Withinge
be weddid. god clepide. to
Whome double witness of
maidenhode in pe gospel is
gyue. in pat. pat bifore of
he is. seide loued of god.
e to hym god hengynge
in pe crosse. bitwix his mo
dr. pat maiden schulde
sepe a maide. forsope he
openynge in pe gospel.
What he was bygyuny
ge pe werk of an incorp
tible word. ep gods come
he alone witness. sodis so
ne to be made man. & pe
lyt. pat is crist to haue be
not comprehendid of derlaes
pat bep synnes. puttyge
pe furste signe. pat god ma
de. sposales. pat he schelb
ynge. what he was. schul
de schelbe to men redynge
pat whare pe lord was
pyed to mete oure faile
pe wyne of sposales. &
pat olde ymges chaungid.
alle nelle ymges. pat bep
ordyned of crist. schulde
apere. in pe gospel. forsope
he wroot in ahe. after
pat in pe yle of patmos

he had writte pe apocalips.
pat to whom pe pnciple
of canon. incorruptible pnc
iple is. fer notid to hym
also an incorruptible ende
by a maide in pe apocalips
schulde be zold. senyng
crist. y am alpha & o pat
is bygyunyng & wyon
ten ende. & pis is ion pe
lshiche Enolbyngge pe day
of his passage to haue
be come ouer his dyspulis
clepid to gader in ephesie.
by many. puynges of to
kenes. schelbyngge crist.
desendide in to a delue pla
ce of his graue. & praye.
y mate. he was put to
his faders als. straunge
from swelbe of dep. aa
he is founde alien from
aynpoorn of fleynge.
neitheles. after alle he
wroot pe gospel. & pat
was delue to a maide.
of pe whiche ymges. ne
itheles. of pe disposaoun
of pe tyme of writynges.
of pe admaunce of ho
des. pyore by alle ym
ges. by us not expoll
ned. pat of pe lymynge

desir þæt set hope to men oþ
chynge frygte of trauel
and to god donne of uais
^{warped by kept}
Here endyþe þe plog
of Ioon and bygy
nen þe gospels of Ioon

In þe bygyrnyng
was þe word. þat
is gods sone and
þe word was at god/
a god was þe word/
þis was in þe bygy
rnyng at god/ alle
þinges ben made by
hym. & wip outen
hym is made nouȝt/
þat þyng þat is ma
de. in hym was
lyf. & þe lyf was
lyt of men/ & þe
lyt shynen in der
nessis. & derfulness
comphenden & ra
den not it/ a man
was sente fro god.
to wþome þe name
was Ioon/ þis man
came in to witnes
singe. þat he o
fulde bere witness

singe of lyt. þat alle
men schulden bylene
by hym/ he was not þe
lyt. bot þat he schulde
bere witnessinge of lyt/
he was dreȝ lyt. þe wþi
che lityney eche man co
uynge in to þis world/ he
was in þe world & þe world
was made by hym. and
þe world knelle hy not/
he came in to his owne
þinges. & hise receyuer
not hym/ forsoþe þou ma
in eide receyueten
hym. he gaf to hem wib
er for to be made þe so
nes of god. to hem þat
bylenen in his name/ þe schuld
not of blodis. ne þir of
þe wille of fleisch. ne þir
of þe wille of man. bot
ben born of god/ and þe
word þat is gods sone.
is made fleisch. & man
and hap dwelld in us/
and we han seen þe glo
rye of hym. þe glorie
as of þe son bygeten of
þe fadir/ þe sone ful
of grace & trewþe/ þon
heren witnessinge of

hym and crieþ seynge/
 þis it was þe home y seyn
 de/ he þat is to come afur
 me is made bifore me for
 he was þe former þanne
 y is of þe plenty of hym
 we alle han taken grace for
 grace / for þe lawe is ȝouē
 by moyses forsoþe grace
 & tremp is made by ihu
 crist / no man cule say god
 no bot þe oon bygeten so
 ne þat is in þe bosome
 of þe fadir. he þat telle
 oure / & þis is þe witnes
 synge of jon. whāne þe
 es semen fro ierusalem
 þat & debenes to hym
 þat þe schulten aye hy
 who art þou / & he knoll
 lechid & demed not / &
 & he knouledchid for y am
 not crist / and þei axiden
 hym / what sware art þou
 hely / & he seide / y am
 not / art þou a phete /
 & he answered us / þei
 fere þei seiden to hym /
 who art þou. þat we se
 ue an answer to þe se
 þat seuteu us. what
 crist þou of m self. /

he seip / y am a voyce
 of aman crynge in de
 sert. dresse ze þe lwey
 of þe lord. as ysai þe
 phete seide / and þei
 þat lveren sente. lve
 ren of þe pharisees / &
 þei axiden hym & seide
 to hym / what sware þat
 tist þou if þou art
 not crist. neþ helpe ne
 þat a phete. / jon answe
 ride to hem seynge /
 y baptize in watir. so
 þely þe mydel man of
 ȝou stode whome ze kne
 wen not / he it is þat
 afur me is to come. þat
 is made bifore me of
 whome y am not wor
 þi þat y onbynde þe
 þing of his chose
 se þingis þen don in
 betanye oul iordan. whe
 re jon was baptizid.
 Anor day jon say ihu
 comynge to hym. & he
 seip / lo þe lombe of
 god. lo þat is y alder
 synnes of þe world /
 þis is he of whome y
 saie. afur me comen

aman. pat is made by fore
me for he was pe former
pane y. & y. Enelke hym
not. bot pat he be shelled
in yrael. y fore y came
baptizinge in watur &
Jon bare witnessyng
seyng. for y see pe spi
rit comynge doun as a
culuer fro heuene & dwel
lyng upon hym. & y
Enelke hym not. but he
pat sente me for to bap
tize in watur. sende to
me. upon whome you
shalt see pe spirit co
myng doun & dwel lyng
upon hy. for it is pat
baptisip in pe holy gost
& y see & bar witness
ge. & for pis is done of
god. And y say Jon fowd
a tbo of his disciples
and he byholdyng ihu
walkyng sey. fowd
fowd of god. & tbo dis
phis herden hym spech
ge. & folowen ihu. so
pesh ihu comid to thys
men. and seyng hem
seyng hym. sey to
hem. What seen ye

pe lychse senden to hym
raby pat is interpretid mas
tir. where dwelst. you
he sey to hem. come ze
& see ze. pei kamen &
sagen where he dwelld.
& dwelten at hym in pat
day. sopeh pe hour was
as pe tempe. firspe and
elke bropr of symount
petre was oon of pe tbo
pat herden of ion. and
haden sued hym. pis fon
de firspe his bropr sy
mount. & he sey to hym.
We han fownden messias.
pat is interpretid crist. & he
ledde hym to ihu. sopeh
ihc byholdyng hym. sa
de. you art symount pe
sone of Iohanna. you &
halt be cleped cephas.
pat is interpretid petre.
firspe on pe morwe he
wolde go oute in to gal
le. & he fownd philip.
& ihc sey to hym. sue
you me. philip was of
bethsaida. pe citee of an
drelwe & petre. philip
fownd nathanael. & he
sey to hym. We han fownden

ihu pe sone of ioseph of
 nazareth. Whom moyses
 wrot in pe salwe & pph-
 tis / natanael cove to
 hym of nazareth may
 eu good ying be / philip
 serp to hym / come & see
 ihe say natanael co-
 minge to hym / & serp
 of hym / so wylly aman
 of yrael / in whome is
 noyde / natanael serp
 to hym / wher of hast
 pou Enolben me / ihe
 answeride & serp to hym /
 bisee pat philip depe
 pee. Whanne pou were
 vndur pe fige tre / y
 say pee / natanael ans-
 weride to hym / & serp /
 rally pou art pe sone
 of god / pou art byng
 of yrael / ihe answeride
 and sende to hym / for y
 sende to pee y saye pee
 vndur pe fige tre / pou
 byleuest / pou shalt see
 more / paine pese ym-
 ges / & he sende to hem /
 treuly y sey to yow / ze
 schulen see heuene
 opened / & pe angelis

of god / stynge up / & to
 mynge dolu / & pon
 manes sone / **no**
And pe priddy
 day weddynges
 ben made in pe
 cidue or cidre of galile-
 & pe modir of ihu was
 pe / sochly ihe is cle-
 pid & his discipulis to
 pe weddyngis / & byue
 faskynge / pe modir
 of ihu sawe to hym /
 pei han not wyne / ihe
 serp to hir / What to
 me & to pee woman /
 myn hour came not
 yet / pe modir of hym
 serp to pe mynistris /
 what eile ying he or
 hal sey to yow / do ze
 forsope ye weren put
 oye stonen pottis
 aftur pe clensynge of
 ielbes / takynge eche
 elko or pre mesures /
 ihe serp to hem / fille
 ze pe pottis wyne wat
 & pei filliden hem om
 to pe higest part / and
 ihe sende to hem / dralke
 ze wolke & berip to pe

architrychne pat is pr
ince of pe hous of pe
stages / & pei token / &
 as architrychne tust
 de pe watir made wgn
 & he list not whor of
 it was. sopeh pe my
 nystris listen pat doib
 en pe watir. architrych
 ne deip pe sponse &
 sey to hym / ech man
 putty firste good wyne
 & whanne men schulen
 be fulfild. vane pat
 pat is worse / sopeh p'
 hast septe gode wyne
 wto noll / is dre pe
 bygymyng of signes
 in pe cane of galilee.
 & schelbide his glorie
 & his dysphtis byle
 ueden in to hym / af
 ter pest ynges beca
 me wu in to caphar
 naum & his modur &
 his briden & his dys
 phtis. & pe dwelten
 pe uot many dayes /
 & pe passe of ielkes
 was my. & is the me
 up to ierusalem / and

he found in pe temple.
 men sellunge shepe &
 oxen & culles & money
 changers sutynges / &
 whanne he hade made
 of smale cordes a stom
 be. he kest alle oute of
 pe temple & shepe & ox
 en / & he shed oute pe
 money of changers.
 & turned oysen pe
 boedis / and he sende to
 hem pat sellen culles
 taky alwey hem9 pest
 ynges. & mylze make
 pe hous of my fadir.
 an hous of marchan
 dis / forsope his dysphtis
 haden mynde. for it is
 writen / pe zeel of herod
of bone of ym hous. hap
 eten me / perfore pe iell
 es answerden & sende
 to hym / what signe
 schelbist pou to us. for
 pou dost pest ynges.
 is answerde & sende
 to hem / vnde ze no
 temple. & in pe tyn
 es y chal raise it / per
 fore pe ielkes soden

to hym in fourty & six
 zeer his temple is ful
 did. & pon in þe daies
 shalt reise it forsoþe
 he seide of þe temple
 of his body pat lxxxv
outen comparisoun
was more perfore
 whanne he had risen
 fro dede men. his dish
 plis haden mynde for
 he seide his ymg & per
 sileniden to þe septu
 re. & to þe word pat
 ihe seide forsoþe ihsa
 ne ihe was at ierusa
 lem in paske in þe feste
 day many sileniden
 in his name. seeynge
 þe signes of hym þat
 he dide/ soþely ihe hy
 self. byluede not hy
 self to hem for pat
 he knelbe alle men.
 & for it was not newe
 to hym. pat ony mā
 schulte bere witnesse
 of man/ soþely he
 wytte. lxxv at was in
 man

Her soþe þ was ana
 of þe pharisees ny
 code me by name.
 a pryate of iellus/ he ca
 me to ihsu in þe nyght &
 seide to hym/ raly we
 witen for of god þ hast
 comen maister/ soþely
 no man may do þese
 signes pat þou dost
 but if god were lxxxv
 hym/ ihe answered &
 seide to hym/ treuly trou
 ly y sey to þee. bot if
 anan shal be borne
 æm. he may not see
 þe kyngdom of god/ ny
 code me saide to hym/
 hou anan be borne lxxv
 anne he is olde. lxxv
 he may entre æm in
 to his modir wombe.
 & be borne æm. ihe
 answered/ treuly trou
 ly y sey to þee. bot if
 anan shal be borne
 æm of water and of
 þe holy gost. he may
 not entre in to þe ky
 dom of god/ y þ is bor
 ne of flesche. is flesche

& pat pat is borne of spi
 rit is spirit/ wondre þ
 not for y saide to pee it
 byhouep you for to le boz
 ne ætem/ pe spirit brenn
æ quyteneþ laker it wold
 & pou herist his woys. bot
 pou wost not fro wben
 he cometh or whidur it
 goþ/ so is eche man pat
 is borne of pe spirit/ my
 code me answereð & seide
 to hym/ hou molten pest
 ynges be don. / ihs answere
 ride & seide to hym/ art
 pou a maister in ysacl.
 & knoldest not pese ynges
 trenk trenk y sey to pee
 for pat we witen we spe
 ken & pat pat we han
 seen we witnessen. & ze
 taken not oure witness
 ge/ zif y haue seide to
 zold erpeþ ynges & ze
 bileneu not. hou yif
 y chal sey to you haue
 ly ynges. shulen zee
 bylene/ & no mā stiep
 op in to heuene. hote
 ge pat came doun fro
 heuene. mann? some pat
 is in heuene/ & as moy
 ses rend op a serpent

in desert. so it byhouep
 mann? some for to be
 reysed op/ pat eche man
 pat bileneu in to hym
 þurthe not. bot haue
 eilastynge luf/ forsoþe Leyd
 god loued so pe world pat
 he gaf his oon bryeten
 sone. pat eche mā pat
 byleneu in to hym þurthe
 not. bot haue eilastyn
 ge luf/ soþeþ god come
 not his sone in to pe
 world pat he inge pe wor
 ld. bot pat pe world be
 saued by hym/ he pat
 byleneu in to hym. is
 not demed or dampnid.
 forsoþe he pat bileneu
 not is noli demyd. for
 he bileneu not in pe na
 me of pe oon bryeten
 sone of god/ soþeþ no
 is pe wme/ for hyt came
 in to pe world. & men
 loueten more derkness
 þane lycht/ forsoþe her
 werkes aþeren yuel/ so
 vely eche man pat dō
 yuel hatp lycht & comep
 not to lycht. pat his wer
 kes be not reþroued/ so
 vely he pat dō tremp

comep to lert pat his lher
 les he scheldid for pe ben
 don in god after yese ym
 ges ihe came and his disti
 plis in to pe lond of Judee
 & þe he dwelte wip hem &
 baptizyd/ soþely Jon was
 baptizinge in emon biddis
 salm for many watres
 weren þe & þe came and
 weren baptizyd/ soþely Jon
 was not at sente in to
 þisdon/ soþely a questuon
or a myge is made of Joons
 distipulis wip þe ielbes
 of pe purificacioun & þe
 camen to Jon & asiden
 to hym/ raby or maister
 he pat was wip þee on
 Jordan to wþome þ' has
 born witnessynge to he
 baptisip & alle men co
 men to hym/ Jon answeri
 de & seide/ aman may
 not take omi ymg/ bot
 if it be zouen to hym
 fro heuene/ & þe zoure cuf
 beren witnessynge to me
 pat y saide y am not crist
 bot for y am sente by
 ze hym/ he pat has a w
 ouse or a wyf is pe spouse
or pe hoisebonde/ forsoþe

a fiend of pe spouse pat
 stondeþ & herip hym
 ioyep in ioye for þe voy
 ce of pe spouse/ þfore
 in þis ymg my ioye is
 fulfilled/ it bysoniep hy
 for to wexe forsoþe me
 for to be mynystred or
made lesse/ he pat came
 fro aboue is opun alle/
 he pat is of pe erpe/ &
 erp of pe erpe/ he pat
 comep fro heuene is
 aboue alle/ and þis ymg
 pat he calþ & herde he
 witnessip & no man ta
 kip his witnessynge/ for
 soþe he pat has taken his
 witnessynge/ has mer
 tid pat god is cōfaste/
 forsoþe he wþome god se
 te/ soþely þe wordis of
 god/ forsoþe not to mesu
 re/ god zuep þe spirit/
 þe fadir louep þe sone
 & he has zouen alle þi
 ges in his hond/ he pat
 bysoniep in to þe sone
 has euerlastyng lyf/ for
 soþe he pat is onbifeful
 to þe sone/ shal not ou
 erlastyng lyf/ bot þe lrape
 of god dwellyp on hym/

Euy.

Therfore as ihu
 nelbe pat pe ppha
 ruses herden pat
 ihu maky mo
 disciples & baptisye pan
 ion. pou ihu baptised not
 bot his disciplis. he leste
 iudee & wente aȝen in to
 galilee. sopeh it bihoued
 hym passe by samarie.
 pat is cende sybar. bi side
 pe maner or feeld pat ia
 cob zaf to ioseph his sone.
 fersope pe wellle of iacob
 was. þe. sopeh ihu ma
 de wery of pe iourney.
 sat yus on pe wellle. so
 peh pe hour was as pe
 syre & ondurue. alko
 man came of samarie
 fze to dralle watur. ihu
 sey to hyr. zif to me fze
 to drynke. fersope his
 disciplis haden gon in to
 pe cite. pat rei schul
 den bye metis. yf þe.
 mille woman of sama
 rie. say to hym. hou
 pou wisme pou art a
 ielb ayist of me fze to
 drynke. pat am alkonid
 of samarie. fersope ielb
 is ofen not to comune

¶ ihu fersope
 came to pe
 cite of samaria
 þe.

Wip samaritans. ihu an
 swerde & sende to hyr. zif
 pou wiltst pe zift of god
 & wbo it is pat say to
 pee. zue to me fze to dry
 ke. pou pauenture schul
 dist haue ayid of hym.
 & he schulde haue zene
 to pee quye watur. pe
 woman say to hym.
 syre neyr. pou hast in
 what. pyng. pou schalt
 dralle. & pe put is tep.
 per fze wher of hast pou
 quye watur. wher pou
 art more yamine cure. fa
 dr iacob pat zaf to us
 pe put. & he dralle þof.
 and his sones & hyr
 bestes. & ihu answerde
 & sende to hyr. eche mā
 pat drynke of þis wa
 tur. schalt purse efters
 ne. fersope he pat schalt
 drynke of pe watur. pat
 y schalt zue to hym.
 schalt not purse in to
 wip outen ende. bot pe
 watur. pat y schalt zue
 to hym. schalt be made
 in hym a wellle of spye
 syngge up watur. in to

eilla stynge lēf yelboman
 seip to hym/ sure zene
 to me pis watur pat y
 purste not neyr come
 hidir for to drinke/ ihe
 seip to hir/ so depe ym
 hosebonde/ & come hidir/
 ye woman answerid &
 saide/ y haue not an ho
 sebonde/ ihe seip to hir/
 pou saidest wel/ for y
 haue not an hosebonde/
 forsope pou hast hate fe
 ue hosebondis/ & he wsho
 me pou hast is not ym
 hosebonde/ vis ying pou
 saidest sopeh/ ye womā
 say to hym/ lord y see
 for pou art a pphete/ on
 ye fadris worsthipiden in
 pis hil/ & ze sayn/ for at
 ierusalem is a place whe
 re it byhouey for to wor
 sthipe/ ihe seip to hir/
 woman hylene to me/ for
 ye hour shal come/ whā
 ne neyr in pis hil neyr
 in ierusalem/ ze shulen
 ppe or worsthipe ye fa
 dir/ ze worsthipen pat ze
 witen not/ we worsthipe

pat pat we witen for
 helpe is of ielkes/ hot ye
 hour come/ & nolt it is
 wshame welke worsthi
 pero shulen worsthipe
 ye fadir in spirit and
 tremp/ for why/ & ye fa
 dir sechry suche/ pat
 shulen worsthipe hym/
 god is a spirit/ & it by
 houey hem pat worsthi
 pen hym/ forto worsthi
 pe in spirit & tremp/
 ye woman seip to hym/
 y woot for messias is
 comen/ pat is seide eft/
 perfore wshame he shal
 come/ he shal wille to us
 alle ymges/ ihe seip to
 hir/ y am/ pat speke wip
 pee/ & anoon his dyspulis
 kamen/ & wondeniden for
 he spak wip ye woman/
 neples no man saide/
 what exist pou/ & whā
 at spekest pou wip hir/
 yfdee ye woman leste
 hir watur pat/ & wente
 in to ye atee & say to
 ye men/ come ze & see
 aman pat saide to me

alle pinges what eile y ha
ue don/ wher he is crist/ &
peil wenten oute of pe cite
& pei camen to hym/ in pe
mene whyle his discipulis
hyden hym sayyng/ rabi
or maister/ etc/ sopeh he
saide to hem/ y haue more
for to ete/ pat ze kute not
yfore pe discipulis saiden to
gedir/ wher ony man leuys
te to hym/ for to ete/ yf
sey to hem/ my metw is
pat y do pe wille of hem
pat sente me/ and pat
y pfourme pe werkis of
hym/ wher ze sayn not.
for 3t foure monethis ben
& ripe coene comyng/ lo y
say to you/ afte opzoure
yren & see ze pe regionis
or cuntres/ for nolk pei be
white to ripe corn/ & he
pat repyn taky hire or
mede/ and he pat gedre p
fruyt in to euerlastyng
lyf/ & he pat collyp wyse
to gedir/ and he pat re
py/ in no ping sopeh
is pe word treke/ for anoy
is pat collyp/ & anoy
pat repy/ y sente zoll

for to reye pat pat ze tra
ueliden not/ opde me tra
ueliden/ & ze entreden in
to her traueilis/ forsope
of pat cite manye of sa
maritans byleniden in to
hym/ for pe word of pe
woman berynge virtues
syng/ for he seide to me
alle pinges what euere
y did/ yfore whanne sa
maritans camen to hy
pei hyden hym pat he
shulde dwelle pe/ & he dw
elle pe thio dayes/ & ma
nye mo bylenyden for his
word/ & saiden to pe wo
man/ for nolk/ not for y
speche we byleuen/ forsope
we han herd/ & we witen/
for yis is only pe sayy
our of pe world/ forsope
he wente pen9 aftir thio
dayes/ & wente in to gal
ilee/ sopeh he haue wit
nessyng/ for a prophete in
in his owne cuntre hap
not honour/ perfore wha
ne he came in to galilee
men of galilee receyue
den hym/ whanne pei ha
den seen alle pinges pat

he had don in ierusalem in
 pe feste day of Passover & so
 pely pe haden comen to pe
 feste day / verfore he came of
 wdone in to pe cane of gali-
 lee. Where he made pe wat-
 er in to wyne. / & ou lital kyng
 was. Whos sone was seke
 at capharnaum / Whanne
 he was hade herde for ihsu
 schuld come fro iudee in to
 galilee. he wente to hyrn
 & ppe hym. pat he schul-
 de come dñ & heke his sone
 forsope he bigan for to dye /
 pfore ihsu saide to hyrn / no
 but ye schulen see wdone
 & grete wondris. & he lene
 not / pe lital kyng saip to
 hyrn / lord come dñ byfore
 my sone dye / ihsu serp to
 hyrn / so pi sone luep /
 pe man byleued to pello-
 id pat ihsu saide to hyrn
 and he wente / so pely now
 hym comynge dñ & pe
 seruauantis camen aye-
 nas hym. & telden hym
 seynge. for his sone luep
 pfore he greide of he
 pe hour in whicha he hade
 hym betur / & pe eiden

to hyrn for after day in
 pe seuente. hour & pe
 feuer laste hyrn pfore
 pe fadir Enelbe pat pille-
 it was in whicha ihsu
 de to hyrn. pi sone luep /
 & he byleued & al his hou-
 se ihsu did estones his
 sounde wdone. Whanne
 he came fro iudee in to
 galilee. / 1. 11

After pese pinges
 was a feste day of
 ielwes. & ihsu wen-
 te up to ierusalem / forsope
 at ierusalem is a stondynge
 wat. of beestis pat in elzeb-
 is named bethaida. haue
 ge fyue lital papis in pese
 day a grete multitude of
 langly byusthynges and bly-
 de trold. drye. abidynge
 pe starynge of pe watir /
 forsope pe aungel of pe
 lord after pe tyme ordey-
 ned. came dñ in to pe
 stondynge watir. & pelka-
 tr was moned / & he pat
 firste came dñ in to pe
 osthe after monynge of
 pe watir. Was made hool
 of what ende sikenesse

he was holten wip/ forsope
 en man was þe hawynge
 exte & prync zeer in his
 ordeneſſe/ whāne iſt had
 oren hym lyggynge & had
 knollen for noll he had
 myche tyme/ he cry to
 hym/ Wolt you be made
 hool/ y eſt man anſwe
 ride to hym/ lord y haue
 not aman pat whāne y
 watar is troblid/ he send
 me in to y eſtne/ forsope
 y while y come/ anoyr
 god woln by fore me/ iſt
 cry to hym/ riſe up/ ta
 ke y ſed & wandre/ & anon
 y man is made hool/ &
 toke op his ſed & wand
 re/ & ſaboth was in pat
 day/ y fore y eſtis ſaid
 to hym/ pat was made
 hool/ it is ſaboth/ it is
 not leſul to y eſt/ for to
 take y ſed/ he anſwerid
 to hem/ he pat made me
 ſaf/ ſeid to me/ take y
 ſed & wandre/ y fore y eſt
 ayiden hym/ who is pat
 man pat ſeid to y eſt/ ta
 ke y ſed & wandre/ go
 rely he pat was made

hool/ Wiſt not who it was
 forsope iſt ſolwid hym
 for y eſt companye ordy
 ned or ſet in pat place/
 aſterward iſt ſtand hy
 in y temple/ & ſaid to
 hym/ lo you art made
 hool/ noll/ nyl you wolt
 oyme/ leſt ony ynge
 woſt byſalle to y eſt/ y
 e man wente & toke to
 y eſtis/ for it was iſt
 pat made hym hool/ per
 fore y eſtis pur ſueden
 iſt/ for he dide y eſt ynge
 in y ſaboth/ forsope
 iſt anſwerid to hem/
 my fadir woſch y onto
 noll/ & y woſche noll/
 y fore y eſtis ſay
 ten more for to ſe hy/
 for not onoly he hat y
 ſaboth/ bot & he ſeid
 his fadir god/ malyn
 ge hym euene to god/
 & iſt anſwerid & ſeid
 to hem/ treuſly treuſly
 y cry to zall y eſt
 may not of hy ſelf w
 ony ynge/ no bot pat
 ynge pat he ſhal ſee
 y fadir doynge/ what

eue pmygys sopely he dw-
 yse pmyges also a yefone
 dwy forsope ye fadir louep
 ye sone. and shellep to
 hym alle pmyges pat he
 dwy/ & he shal shelle to
 hym more werkes pane
 yese. pat ye wondre/ for
 soye as ye fadir reysep de
 de men & quyenep. so
 and ye sone quyenep
 wshome he wole/ sopely
 neyr ye fadir ingep my
 man. bot hap zowen al d
 me to ye sone. pat alle
 men honoure ye sone as
 pei honouren ye fadir/
 he pat honourey not ye
 sone. honourey not ye
 fadir pat sente hym.//
 treuly treuly y sey to yow.
 for he pat herep my word
 & byle uep to hym pat
 sente me. hap eyllasty
 ge hys/ and he comep not
 in to dwme. bot passy fro
 dwy in to hys/ treuly tren
 ly y sey to you. for ye ho
 ur comep & nolk it is.
 Whanne ded men shule
 here ye woys of godis
 sone. & pei pat heren

shulen lyue. Sopely as
 ye fadir hap hys in hy
 self. so he zaf & to ye
 sone for to haue hys in
 hym self/ & he zaf hy
 polber for to make dwme.
 for he is many sone/
 nyl ze wondre yis pmyg
 for ye hour comep in
 wshiche alle men pat
 ben in burials. shulen
 here ye woys of godis
 sone. & pei pat han
 d good pmyges. shule
 come forp in to risynge
 azen of hys/ forsope pei
 pat han dnyuel pmy
 ges. in to risynge azen
 of dwme/ y may not of
 my self d my pmyg.
 bot as y herd y inge/
 & my dwme is iust for
 y seke not my wille.
 bot ye wille of ye fadir
 pat sente me/ zif y be
 re litynessynge of my
 self. my litynessynge
 is not trewte/ and yir
 is pat berip litynessi
 ge of me. and y wote
 for his litynessynge
 is trewte pat he berip

of me / ze senten to Jon and
he bare witnessyng to pe
treupe / soþe y take not
witnessyng of man / bot
y sey þese þinges pat ze
be saaf / he was a lawthe
breuynge & chynynge /
forsoþe ze wolden glade at
an honr in his lyzt / soþe
ly y haue & moze witness
synge þane Jon / forsoþe
þe werkis pat my fadir
zaf to me pat y þforme
hem / þo ilke werkis pat
y do / heren witnessyng
of me / for þe fadir sen
te me / & þe fadir pat
sente me / he bar wyt
nessyng of me / neþer ze
herden ende his woys ne
y sayen his lickenesse /
& ze han not his word
dwellyng in zolk / for
ze byleuen not to hym
in þome he sente / seke
ze scriptur is in þome
ze wenen to haue ende
lustyng lyf / & þo it
ben pat heren witness
yng of me / & ze wolden
not come to me / pat
ze haue lyf / I take not

der nesse & tholkyng of
men / bot y haue tholke you
for ze han not þe lone of god
in you / y came in þe name
of my fadir / & ze token not
me / if anyþ schal come in
his oþne name / ze schulen
receyue hym / þou molke
ze bylene pat receyuen &
taken store esse of oper
& ze token not þe store
pat is of god albone / nyl
ze sesse pat y am to auyse
you anentis þe fadir / it is
moysen pat amsen zolk
in þome ze hopen / forsoþe
þe if ze bylentyen to m
oyses / þa uenture ze schul
den bylene & to me / soþe
ly if ze byleuen not to
his letters / þou schulen
ze bylene to my wordis /
A for
þese þinges if
wente ouer þe
see of galilee pat is ty
beradior / & agreed mil
nide sued hym for þe
sayen þe toknes pat
he dide on hem pat we
ren seke / þere if þen
te in to an hyl & out þe

of me for
he wote

A

Vop his dyspulis forsope
 passe was ful nyz a fette
 day of ye ielkes / pfore wha
 ne ihs hade lyfte up ye yen
 and hade seen for a greet
 multitude came to hym
 he seip to philip / wher of
 schulen we bye loones / pat
 yese men etc / sope he sai
 de yis yng temptynge hy
 forsope he wiste what he
 was to do / philip answerde
 to hym / ye loones of elbo
 hundred pens suffisen not
 to hem / pat eche matalle
 a lare what / oon of hys
 dyspulis andrew ye trof
 of symount petre seip
 to hym / o chld is here
 pat hay fyue barly loones
 & elbo fytthes / bot what
 ben yese ynges amonge
 so many men / pfore ihs
 seide / make ze me for to
 sette at ye mete / forsope
 ye was myche hay in ye
 place / pfore men saten
 at ye mete in noumbre
 as fyue thousand / ihs
 pfore wile fyue loones / &
 whanne he hade do pan
 brynges / he departide to

men eatynge at ye mete
 also & of ye fytthes / as
 myche as ye wolden / for
 sope as ye ben fulfilled
 he saide to his dyspulis
 zede ze ye reliso pat ben
 leste / pat ye pisthe not
 perfore ye gederiden &
 filliden elwelue cosyns
 of reliso / of ye fyue bar
 ly loones & elbo fytthes
 pat lesten to hem pat
 haden eten / pfore po me
 whanne ye haden seen
 ye wolene & myracle
 pat he had don / saiden
 for yis is chly ye pphete
 pat is to come in to ye
 world / forsope whanne
 ihs hade knollen for ye
 weren to come / pat ye
 schulden ranyste hym
 & make hym kyng / he
 pleyd alone est in wan
 hyl sope as one was
 made / his dyspulis wen
 ten don to ye see / & wh
 dume ye haden styed up
 in to aboot / ye almen
 ouer ye see in to asphar
 nati / & derkeness weren
 noo made / and ihs hade

1 ende

not comen to hem / forsope
a greet mynd blowynges
pe see ros up / þfore wsa
ne pei haden roibid as fi
ue & thent furlonges
or pruty / pei seen ihu
walkyng on pe see &
to be made next to pe bo
te / & pei dreden / saych
he seide to hem / y am nyl
ze drete / perfore pei wolde
take hym in to pe boot
& anon pe bot was at pe
lond / to pe whiche pei
wenten / On pe tover day
pe cupanye pat & de ouer
pe see say for y was non
of bote / þe bot en and for
ist entrie not why his
disciples in to pe bote. but
his disciples wente alone /
forsope ower boote came
fro tiberiade lissdis pe pla
ce where pei eten breed
dynge pankyngis to god /
þfore wsa pe cupanye
haden seen for ist was
not þe ney his disciples
pei streden in to boote &
camen to capernaum
sekyng ihu / & wsa
pei haden founden hym

and pe see / pei seiden to
hym / raly / hou hast þou
comen hider / ist answe
rid to hem & saide / tren
ly y say to zow þe seen
me not for þe seyen to
kenes or myracle / bote
for ze eten of loaves &
ken fullfills / wurtze
not mete pat piship
bot pat wurtze in to al
lastyngs þof pe whiche
mete man / some zewep
to zow / forsope god pe fa
dir. bytokenyng or mark
hym / perfore pei saide
to hym / what chulen
we to pat we wurtze
pe werkis of god / ist
answerid & seide to þe
pis is pe werk of god
pat ze belene in to hym
whome he seinte / þfore
pei saiden to hym / per
fore what tofene toft
þou / pat we see & hylde
ne in to yee / what wor
dyst þou / & omne fadyng
eten manna in disert
as it is writen / he zaf
to hem breed fro heuene
for to ete / þfore ist say

to hem/ treuly treuly y sey
to you not moyses/ as to
you dreȝ bred fro heuene
bot my fadir yuey to you
dreȝ bred fro heuene/ sope
ly it is dreȝ bred/ pat co
mey don fro heuene/ &
yuey lof to ye world/ y
fore ye seiden to hym/
lord enlunge yue to us ris
bred/ sope ly ite sende to
hem/ y am bred of lof/
he pat comey to me/ schal
not hunge/ he pat hyl
uey in me/ schal neide
priste/ bot y sende to you.
for eȝe han seen me/ &
hyleuȝden not/ al ying
pat ye fadir yuey to me/
schal come to me/ eȝe ot
hal not caste hym oute
pat comey to me/ for y
came don fro heuene not
pat y do my wille/ bot ye
wille of hym pat sente
me/ for sope yis is wil
le of hym pat sente
me ye fadir/ pat al
yuey pat ye fadir as
to me/ y lest not of it/
bot aȝemreife it in ye
laste day/ sope ly yis is

ye wille of my fadir pat
sente me/ pat eche ma
pat seep ye sone and
hyleuȝe in to hym/ ha
ue enlastyng lof & y
shal aȝemreife hym/ in
ye laste day/ for ye ier
es grunthiden of hym/
for he hadde sende/ y am
bred pat came dille
fro heuene/ & ye sende/
wiser yis is not ite ye
sone of ioseph/ whose
fadir & modir we han
enoken/ yfere hon sou
he yis/ for y came don
fro heuene/ yfere ite
answere & sende to ho/
nyl ye grunthe to gide/
no man may come to
me/ bot ye fadir pat
sente me drinke hym/
& y schal aȝemreife hy
in ye laste day/ it is wri
ten in pphetis/ & alle
we schulen be able for
to be tauȝte of god/ eche
man pat har herde of
ye fadir & seruyd/ to
mey to me/ not for ony
man say ye fadir/ no
but yis pat is of god.

pis say pe fadir/ sopele co
 pely y sey to zolb he pat by
 lenep in me hay culast
 se lyl y am bred of hyf/
 zoure fadris eten manna
 in desert. & ben deed/ pis is
 bred comynge doun fro he
 uene. pat yf omg man ete
 pof. he dye not/ y am quye
 bred. pat came doun fro
 heuene/ yf omg ma chal
 ete of pis bred. he chal
 lyue wip outen ende/ &
 pe bred pat y chal yue.
 is my fleisch. for lyl of
 pe world. yf fore pe ielles
 chidden to gidre seynge/
 hou may pis yue to us
 his fleisch. for to ete/ y
 fore ihe sey to hem/ wen
 ly treuly y sey to zou/ no
 bot ze schulen ete pe fley
 sche of manny come &
 drynke his blode. ze schi
 len not haue lyl in zou/
 he pat etip my fleisch
 & drynke my blode. hay
 culastynge lyl/ ey chal
 menreife hym in pe laste
 day. fiesope my fleisch
 is dylly metec and my blo
 de is dylly drynke/ he pat

etip my fleisch & drynke
 my blode. dwellyn in me
 & y in hym/ as my fadir
 dwynge sente me. & y
 lyne for pe fadir/ and he
 pat etip me. & he chal
 lyue for me/ pis is bred pat
 came doun fro heuene/ not
 as zoure fadris eten man
 na & ben deed/ he pat etip
 pis bred. chal lyue wip
 outen ende/ he saide pef
 ynges in pe synagoge.
 techynge in capfarnay/
 yfere many of his discip
 lis herynge saiden/ no
 word is hard. who may
 here hym. for sope ihe
 witynge at hym self.
 for his discipulis gruch
 den of his ymg. saide
 to hem/ pis ymg oltan
 dryp zou/ yfere yf ze schi
 len see many come. sy
 nge up. where he was
 byfore. it is pe spirit
 pat quytenep pe fleisch
 yfitep no ymg/ pe woe
 dis pat y haue spoken
 to zou. ben spirit &
 lyl/ bot yf ben some of
 zolb. pat bylenen not!

ende

sorpely the wiste at pe
 bygytmynghe whiche the
 ren belyuynge. & who
 was to betraye hym /
 and he seide / perfore y
 seide to you. pat no ma
 may come to me. no bot
 it were zowen to hym of
 my fadir / fro his tyme
 wanye of his dysplich
 wenten abak. & nolb the
 ten not wip hym / pfore
 the seide to pe thelue /
 lusher & ze wolen go alwey.
 pfore symon petre in
 swerde to hym / led to
 whome schulen we go.
 you haue wordis of ende
 lufynge luf & we han
 belyued & knolken. for
 you art crist pe sone of
 god / pfore the answeri
 de to hem / the y ches
 not you thelue. & oon
 of you is a fendes for
 sope he seide of judas
 of symonit of scariot
 forsope his was to bet
 raye hym. whanne he
 was oon of thelue.

Horsope after pe
 he pmyges. the

walkid in to galilee for
 he wolde not walken
 to judas for ielbis con
 ten for to sle hym / so
 rely y was in pe next
 a feste day of ielbis se
 nofegia. pat is a feste
of tabernacles. forsope
 his bryden seiden to
 hym / passe heim & go
 in to iude. pat & p dis
 phis see p ierusalem pat
 you dwit / forsope no ma
 dyp ony pmyg in his
 place. as pmyg & sek
 for to be in opyn / zif
 you dwit no pmyg. st
 helke p self to pe world
 forsope neyr his bryden
 belyuden in to hym /
 pfore the seip to hem
 my tyme annep. not
 zit. bot zoure tyme
 is eunore redy / pe world
 may not haue haue
 zou / sorpely it hatry
 me. for y here wtnes
 dynges pof for pe wer
 tis of it ben yuelch oye
 ze ap at no feste day.
 for my tyme is not
 zit full. the whanne

he had sente pefe pimges
he dwelte in galilee for
fore as his bryden fyre
den up vane the fied
ap at pe fette day not
apynly bot as in puy v
fere pe ielkis comen hy
in pe fette day & saiden/
Wether is he? & myche
gruchynge was of hy
in pe cōpanye of pepul
falspe sume oiden for
he is good falspe ower
siden nay bot he dis
ceyner pe cōpanye of
pepul nepeles noman
pat apynly of hym for
pe drede of ielkis falspe
finge or goynge lially
the wente in to pe tem
ple & tauzte & pe ielkes
wondiden cōynges hou
can no man lettris
syen he hap not ler
wyd the answerde
to hem & orde my dō
tryne is not myn bot
his pat sente me /zaf
my man wold do his
wille he shal knowe
of pe tuchynge /wether

it be of god wether y ope
be of my self he pat ope
tip of hym self selip
his owne glorie falspe
whe pat selip pe glorie
of hym pat sente hy
pis is sayfast & comit
wiffness is not in hym
wether moyses zaf not
to you a talke? & no ma
of you dy pe talke /wether
seken ze fir to sle me?
pe cōpanye answerde
& orde you hast a denel
whe selip for to sle pe
the answerde & orde
to hem y haue don oo
werk & alle ze wonded
wether moyses zaf to you
arōnashon not for it
is of moyses bot of fa
dris & in pe sabot ze
arōnaden aman /zaf a
man taky arōnashon
in pe sabot pat pe lalle
of moyses be not bro
ken han ze indiguan
oun or wraye to me
fir y made al pe man
hoof in pe sabot wyl
ze derne astur pe fan
bot deme ze a ryghtful

come/ pfore sūme of ie
 rusalem seiden/ wher
 wis not whome ye iell
 is osten for to cle. &
 so he speky opynly. &
 pei sayen no ying to
 hym/ wher ye pncas &
 nelken chyl. for wis is
 crist. & bot we witen no
 man of whem he is/ for
 sove whanne crist shal
 come no man woot of
 whem he is. pfore
 he cried in ye temple
 techynge and saynge/
 & ze witen me of whe
 re y am. & y came not
 of my self bot he is.
 trelke pat sente me. w
 home ze knolken not/
 y woot hym/ & y schal
 sey for y woot hym
 not. y schal be like to
 jon a her/ & y woot hy.
 for of hy y am. & he
 sente me/ pfore pei
 smyten for to take hy.
 & no man sente in to
 hym hondis. for his
 hour came not yet/ so
 pely manye of ye am
 panye bylencen in hy

and saiden/ whanne
 crist shal come wher
 he shal do mo tokene.
 pane pat wis to. & fa
 rices herden pe arpa
 nye of pepul grynashy
 ge of hym pely ynges/
 & ye pncas & ye phari
 sees senten mynstris
 pat pei schullen take
 hym/ pfore the sander
 to hem/ yet a litel yme
 y am wy jon. & y go
 to ye fadir pat sente
 me/ ze schulen oke me
 & ze schulen not fynde.
 & where y am ze molkn
 not come/ pfore ye iell
 is sander to hem self.
 whidur is wis to go. for
 we schulen not fynde hy/
 wher he is to go in to
 scaterynge or distrucyon
 of hepen men. & is to te
 che hepen men/ what
 is wis word ye whiche
 he orde. ze schulen oke
 me & ze schulen not fynde
 & where y am ze mo
 lkn not come. for sove
 in ye laste day of ye gre
 te feste. the stood & cried

saynge/ if any wā purfay
 come he to me & dryuē he/
 he yat bileren in to me as
 pe scripture seip. flodis
 of quyle watre schule floure
 of his deombe/ sopele he
 sende his pping of pe ho
 ly goost. Whome men by
 leuynge in to hym weren
 to take/ forsope pe spirit
 was not yt zouen. for he
 was not yt stoufied/ p
 fere of yat aipamyē whā
 ne pei haden herd yese
 wordis of hym. pei sai
 den/ his is only a pphete/
 oper senden. his is crist
 forsope sūme sende wher
 crist comen fro galilee/
 wher pe scripture seip
 not yat of pe oed of da
 my & of pe castel of beth
 leem wher dauid was
 crist comen. & lo disten
 down is made in pe cum
 pamyē for hym/ forsope
 sūme of hem wolde take
 hym. bot no man sente
 hondis upon hym/ per
 fere pe mynystris comē
 to pe byschops & pha
 risces. and senden to

hem/ why brounzen ze
 not hym. pe mynystris
 answeriden/ neuer man
 opat so. as his opel ip
 yfere pe pharises and
 weren to hem/ wher ze
 ben disteyned. wher one
 of pe pūas bileren in
 to hym. & of pe pharises/
 bot his aipamyē of pepul
 yat knolke not pe kalke
 ben anfid/ mycōdeme seip
 to hem/ he yat came to
 hym in myt. yat was
 oon of hem/ wher oone
 kalke demen aman. no
 bot it furste here of hy.
 & knolke what he do/ pe
 answeriden & senden to
 hym/ wher & pou art a
 man of galilee/ seke pou
 scriptures & see pou. for
 a pphete risen not of gal
 lee/ & pei rāyden azen
 eche in to his hous. D
 Distoye the lken
 te in to pe mount
 of olyuete. &
 erly eft he came
 in to pe temple & al pe
 pepul came to hym. &
 he sittinge tanyte he/

supely scribis & farisees.
 leden to a woman taken in
 a boutrye & ceten hir i
 pe mydel & couden to hy
 maistur pis woman is
 uold taken in auoutrye/
 forsope in pe salke moyses
 comamunde us. forto stoue
 suche/ pfore what saist þe
 supely þei couden pis pring
 tenpryngge hym. pat þey
 myzten acuse hym/ forsope
 ihe holbyngge hym silt wite.
 wroot wip pe fyingrem pe
 erpe/ supely whame þei las
 tiden axinge hym. he reiside
 hym silt & saide to hem/
 he of zolb pat is wip oute
 synne. firste sende a stone
 in to hir/ este he holbyngge
 hym silt wroot in pe erpe/
 supely þei heyringe þese
 pringis liden alkei. don
 aftur anop. þei begynne
 of efter men/ & ihe diuel
 te alone. & pe woia ston
 dyngge in pe mydel/ supely
 ihe resynge hym silt.
 saide to hir/ woman wher
 ben þei. pat acuse þee/
 no man dampned þee/
 pe dechche seide/ no man

loed/ ihe saide to hy/ neþ
 y chal dampne þee/ so
 þou. & uold afturward
 me þou synne/ pfore
 ihe este spae to hem
 saynge/ y am lert of
 pe world/ he pat ouep
 me walkip not in derke
 nessis. bot he chal haue
 pe lert of lert pfore pe
 pharisees couden/ þou be
 rist witnesynge of in silt.
 in witnesynge is not trelke/
 ihe answende and seide to
 hem/ & if y here witnesy
 ge of my silt. my witnes
 synge is trelke for y wote
 of whem y come & whi
 dur y go/ forsope ze witen
 not of whem y come.
 ne whidur y chal go/ for
 sope ze demen aftur pe fle
 ishe. y deme not ony man/
 & if y deme. my deme is
 trelke for y am not alone.
 but y & pe fadir pat sen
 te me/ & in zonne lawe.
 it is writen. for pe wit
 nessynge of alko men is
 trelke/ y am pat here wit
 nessynge of my silt. &
 pe fadir pat sente me.

berp witnessinge of me/
 þfore þei couden to hym/
 where is þi fadir. ⁊ ne þi
 ze witten of Enolben me. ⁊
 þi ze witten my fadir. ⁊ if
 ze witten me. ⁊ adventure
 ⁊ ze schulen witten my fadir.
 ihs opac þese wordis in
 þe tresorie. ⁊ techinge in
 þe temple. ⁊ no mā wolde
 hym. ⁊ he his hour came
 not yet. ⁊ þfore eft ihs
 said to hem. so y go ⁊
 ze schulen seeke me. ⁊ ze
 schulen dye in youre syn
 ne. ⁊ whidur y go. ⁊ ze mow
 ne not come. ⁊ þfore þe
 ielwes couden. ⁊ her he
 schal see hym. ⁊ if þe
 he seþ. ⁊ whidur y go. ⁊ ze
 mowen not come. ⁊ he sei
 de to hem. ze ben of þyne
 þe. y am of aboue. ze be
 of þis world. y am not
 of þis world. ⁊ þfore y sei
 de to zow. for ze schulen
 dye in youre synnes.
 ⁊ þfore if ze schulen not
 bylene for y am. ⁊ ze schu
 len dye in youre synnes.
 ⁊ þfore þei couden to hym.
 who art þou. ihs seide

to hem. þe bygynninge
 of þisre of al þing. þe
 whiche ⁊ speke to zow.
 y haue many þinges
 for to speke ⁊ deme of
 þou. but he þat sente
 me is wyfaste. ⁊ y spe
 ke in þe world. ⁊ þe þingis
 þat y heide of hym. ⁊
 þei enolben not. for he
 saide his fadir god. þe
 fore ihs seþ to he. wha
 ne ze han dreised many
 sone. þine ze schulen
 enolbe. for y am. ⁊ of my
 self y do no þing. but
 as my fadir tauhte me.
 y speke þese þinges. ⁊ and
 he þat sente me is wyf
 ast. ⁊ lefte me not al
 one. for y do enmore þe
 þinges þat þei plesen
 to hym. ⁊ hym speke
 ze þese þinges. many
 bylenen in to hym. ⁊
 þore ihs saide to þe ielwes
 þat bylenen in to hym.
 if ze schulen dwelle in
 my word. ⁊ ze schulen
 be my disciples. ⁊ ze schu
 len enolbe þe trewe.
 ⁊ trewe schal selue.

zou/ pſtee pe iolbis anſ
 weriden to hym/ We ben
 pe ſeed of abraham/ &
 to no man we ſerveten
 hou ſaiſt you for ze ſhu
 len be free. & iſt anſwe
 ride to hem/ trenly trenly
 y ſey to zou. for eche man
 pat wyſſyme. is pe ſer
 uant of ſyme/ ſowely
 pe ſhaunt dwellyſſy not
 in pe hous in to wyſſy oute
 ende/ pe ſone dwellyſſy in
 to wyſſy oute ende/ perſee
 zif pe ſone ſhal deſuer
 zou. dily ze ſhulen be fre/
 y wot for ze ben abrahams
 ſones. for ze ſeken ſwep
 ſte me for my word taky
 nat in zou/ & y ſpek po
 pynge. pat y ſak at my
 fadir. & ze dn po ymge.
 pat ze ſakken at zoure
 fadir/ per anſweriden &
 ſanden/ abraham is oure
 fadir/ iſt ſey to hem/
 zif ze ben pe ſones of
 abraham. to ze pe wer
 tis of abraham/ ſowely
 wolke ze ſeken for to ſte
 me amyn. pat haue ope
 ren to zou treupe. pat

y herde of god/ abraha
 sa & not pis ynyng. ze
 dn pe wer tis of zoure
 fadir/ & ou per ſanden
 to hym/ We ben not born
 of forny caciou. We ſim
 oo fadir god/ pſtee iſt
 ſand to hem/ zif god.
 were zoure fadir. ſowe
 ly ze ſhulden loue me/
 forſope y proceded & ca
me ſey of god. & came/
 nepir ſowely y came of
 my ſelf. for he ſente
 me/ why knowden ze not
 my ſpeche/ for ze wolkn
 not here my word/ ze be
 of pe fadir pe dnyſe.
 & ze wolkn & pe deſires
 of zoure fadre/ he was
 ananſleer fro pe bygy
 nyng. & in treupe he
 ſtood not. for treupe is
 not in hym/ whanne
 he ſpekly leſyng. he
 ſpekly of his owne pi
 ges. for he is a lyer &
 fadir of it. ſowely y
 ſay treupe. ze liſe
 nen hot to me/ who
 of zou ſhal reprove
 me of ſyme. & zif y

say trewe. Whi by beleuen
 ze not to me. He pat is of
 god. Herip pe wordis of
 god. For ze heren not
 for ze ben not of god. For
 pe ielwis answeriden & sei-
 den. Wher we sayn not
 wel. for pou art a samari-
 tan. & hast a deuel. & ihe
 answeride & seide. y haue
 not a deuel. For y honou-
 re my fadir. & ze han vn-
 honoured me. Forsope y
 seke not my glorie. For
 pat seky & demep. treuly
 treuly y sey to zon. If any
 man schal kepe my word.
 he schal not see dey in
 to wry outen ende. For
 pe ielwis sanden. No we
 we han knolken for pou
 hast a deuel. abraham
 is dved & pe apphetis &
 pou sayst. If any man
 kepe my word. he schal
 not taste dey in to wry
 outen ende. Wher art
 pou more. pane oure
 fadir abraham. pat is
 dved & pe apphetis be dved.
 Whome makist y. y.
 self. ihe answeride. yf

y glorie my self. my
 glorie is nouzt. my fa-
 der is pat glorie. y me-
 whome ze sayen for he
 is zour god. & ze han
 not knolken hym. For
 pe y haue knolken hy
 & yf y schal sey for y
 woot hym not. y schal
 be a lyer. liche to zolb.
 For y woot hym & y kepe
 his word. abraham zoure
 fadir gladiu. pat he
 schuld owe my day. &
 he say. & ioyed. For
 pe ielwis sanden to hym.
 pou hast not yf. For
 zeer. & hast pou seen.
 abraham. For fore ihe
 seide to hem. treuly treu-
 ly y sey to zolb. by fore
 pat abraham was made.
 y am. forfore pe toben
 stoues pat pe schulden
 caste in to hym. sope
 ihe hidd hym. & wente
 oute of pe temple. &
 and ihe passinge
 say. Anna blynd
 fro pe burpe &
 his discipulis. &
 den hym. raby pat is

maister What synned pro
man or his fadir & modir
pat he schuld be bore blynd
ihs answered ney prs ma
synned ney his fadir & mo
dir. bot pat pe werkis of
god be shewed in hym/
it byhouey me fir to wor
che. pe werkis of hym p
cente me. pe while day
is. pe myzt shal come.
Whanne no man may like
che/ houlouge y am y in pe
world. y am pe lzt of pe
world/ Whanne he seide pe
se pinges. he spatte in to
pe erpe & made clay of
pe spoul. & leide pe clay
on his ren & saide to hy
go and be pou wasschen
in pe watir. or as the of cy
de. pat is in pretide.
Senti pfre he wente &
wasschide. & came seyn
ge/ & so neyboris and pei
pat hadden seen hy by fte.
for he was a leuier. san
den/ wher mo is not he
pat dat & beggar. ower
men sanden/ for prs w
is. ower men forso pe
nay. but it is a lache of

hym/ forsope he seide/ for
y am pfre pei seiden to
hym/ hon ben pyne ren
openyd to pec. he answe
ride/ pe ilke man pat is
seide ihs. made clay & anoy
tid myzt ren. & seide to
me/ go pou to pelbair or
osterne of siloe. & wassche
& y wente & wasschide &
saiy & pei sanden to hy
wher is he/ he seip/ y
boot not/ pei leden hy
pat was blynd to pha
risces/ forsope it was on
boch Whanne ihs made
clay. & opened his ren/
efte pharisses axiden
hym hon he had seen/
covech he seide to hem/
he putide to me clay on
pe ren. & y wasschide
& y see/ pfre sicme of
pe pharisses sanden/
vid man is not of god.
for he kepey not pe sa
bat/ ower men seiden/
hon may aman synner
do pte signes or myra
cles. & dyuysion was
amonge hem/ pfre pei
sain ctesnes to pe

blinde man/ what caust þ
 of hym pat opened þyn
 yen/ & copenly he seide: for
 he is a pphete/ þfor þe iell
 is bylemyden not of hym
 for he was blind. & had
 seen. til þe deydiden his
 fadir & modur pat haden
 seen hym. & þe axiden
 hem seynge/ þis is zoure
 sone. whome ze sayn for
 he is born blind. Holbe
 þfor seep he nolke/ his
 fadir & modur answerde
 to hem & saiden/ we wi
 ten for þis is our sone.
 & he is born blind/ so
 þek hon he seep nolke.
 we witen nere/ & who op
 mys his yen we witen
 nere/ ax ze hym/ he hap
 age. speke he of hym
 self/ his fadir & modur
 saiden þek ynges. for
 þe dreden iellke/ for
 so þe nolke þe iellkes con
 furiden. pat if ory ma
 kuonleche hym crist.
 he schulde be mad oute
 of þe synnysage/ þfor
 his fadir & modur sai
 den. for he hap age ax

ze hym/ þfor estones
 þe deydiden þe man
 pat was blind. & sende
 to hym/ zene þon glorie
 to god/ we witen for þis
 man is a synner/ þfor
 he saide/ if he is a sy
 ner y woot nere/ o þis
 y woot. for whanne y
 was blind. nolke y see/
 þfor þe saiden to hy
 what did he to þe.
 he answerde to hem/
 y saide to þou nolke. &
 ze herden/ what wolen
 ze estones here. & wher
 and ze wolen be made
 his dysaple. þfor þe
 warden acuriden.
 & saiden/ be þou his
 dysple. we ben dysaple
 of moyses/ we witen for
 god spak to moyses. for
 so þe witen not þis
 of whem he is/ þfor
 man answerde & saide
 to hem/ for so þe in þis
 þing is wondurful pat
 ze witen not of whem
 he is. & he hap opened
 myn yen/ copenly we
 witen. for god herp

not symers. But if ony
is worshyper of god. & dy
his wille. hym he herip/
fro pe world it is not hard.
pat ony man openyd pe ye
of ablynde born man. no but
his were of god. he mygt
not do ony pring. pei ans
weriden & sanden to hym/
pou art al boen in syues.
& pou trechist us. & pei
castiden hym oute. ihs
herde for pei han casten hy
oute. & whanne he hade sun
den hym. he saide to hy
blyneest pou in to pe soue
of god. he answered &
saide. lord who is he. pat
y blyne in to hym. & ihs
saide to hym. and he it
is pat spekyt wy pei. &
he seip. lord y blyne. &
he fallynge doun. worshy
pide hym. þfore ihs sa
de to hym. y came in to
pis world in to dome. pat
pei pat oren not oren
geofly. & pei pat oren. he
made blynd. & oune of
pe pharisees herden pat
weren wy hym. & pei
sanden to hym. wher &

we ben blynde. ihs saide
to hem. if ze weren blynde.
ze schulden not han syne/
but nolk ze saien for we
seen. þoure syne dwellyt.

Treuly ¹²⁸
treuly y sey tazon
he pat comep not
in by pe dore. in to pe folde
of shepe. bot stiep up by
anopir wey. he is mygt
pief & dag pief. forsope
he pat entrip by pe dore.
is pe shepherde of pe
shepe. to pis pe porter
openep. & pe shepe he
ren his woys. & he clep
his olkne shepe by name.
& ledy hem oute. & wha
ne he hap cente oute his
olkne shepe. he gop by
fere hem. & pe shepe en
en hym. for pei knolke
his woys. supely pei
ouen not an alien. bot
fleen fro hym. for pei
han not knolken pe vois
of aliens. ihs saide to
hem. pis quierke. forso
pe pei knolken not what
he spak to hem. þfore
ihs saide to he estedone.

truly truly y sey to yolk.
for y am dore of shepe/ alle
hou manye eue camen hys
de me. ben nyzt yenes &
day yefor bot pe shepe
herden not hem/ y am pe
dore/ yf my man shal en
tre by me. he shal be sa
ued/ & he shal go in and
shal go oute. & he shal
fynde lylf. anyzt yef
comy not. nobot pat he
stele. & stele a lylf. y ame
pat pei haue hys. & haue
more plementous by/ y
am a good herde/ a gode
hird ynyer his soule pat
is hys. for his shepe for
sope a marchant & hird
kyne. & pat is not hird.
whos pe shepe ben not
his olkne seep allwolt to
myng. & he leuey & for
salye pe shepe & pteep/
& pe wolt ranyng. &
dyssepe pe shepe/ for
sope pe marchant pteep
for he is a marchant.
& it pteyner not to hy
of pe shepe/ y am a gode
hird/ & y knolke any she
pe. & my shepe knolke

me/ as pe fadir hay kno
wen me & y knolke pe fadir.
& y putte my hys for my
shepe/ and y haue ower
shepe pat ben not of mo
fold. & it by honer me.
for to lede hem. & pei shn
ben here my wyys/ & it
shal be made o fold & o
hird. verfore pe fadir
louey me. for y putte
my soule. pat estepe
y take it/ no man taky
it fro me. but y putte
it fro my self/ y haue
powber for to putte it.
and y haue powber for
to take it. yem/ pro
maundement y haue
taken of my fadir/ &
so distenacoun was ma
de amonge pe ielbis.
for yese wordis/ forsope
many of hem sanden/
he hay a deuel & mad
dyr. what heren zo hy
ower men sanden/ yese
ben not of anan ha
wyng a fend/ wher pe
deuel may opene pe ye
of blynde men/ for
sope nelke fester of

Galesbrynge of pe temple.
 ben made in ierusalem. &
 it was bynter / & the wal
 side in pe temple. in pe
 porche of salomon / þese
 iellis enuyroumeden hym.
 and cadden to hym / hou
 longe dost thou alwey oure
 soules? if thou art crist.
 say to us pleyntly & openly
 the answeride to hem / y
 speke to yow & ze bilyuen
 not / pe werkis pat y do in
 name of my fadir. þese be
 ten witnesynge of me / bot
 & ze bilyuen not. for ze be
 not of my shepe / my she
 pe heren my voyce. and y
 knowe hem. & pei cume me /
 & y ryue to hem enlasyng
 lyf. & pei schulen not pul
 che in to my ende & ony
 man schal not ravyssh the
 oute of myn hond / pat pis
 pat my fadir zaf to me.
 is more þane alle / þese
 no man may ravyssh fro
 my fadir hond / & pe fadir
 & y beu oþing iellis to
 hem vp stones. for to stone
 hym to deþ / the answeride
 to hem / y haue schelbide

to you many good werkis
 of my fadir. for whiche
 werk of hem stonen ze
 me. / pe iellis answeride
 to hym / we stonen þee
 not of good werk. bot
 of blasphemye / & for þou
 sayen þou art a man. ma
 kist þi self god / the answe
 rid to hem / wher it is
 not writen in youre lawe.
 for y saide ze ben goddis.
 if he saide hem goddis
 to whome pe word of god
 is made & pe scripture
 whiche pe fadir hallowid
 & sente in to pe world
 may not be vndon. &
 ze sayn for y blasfeme.
 for y saide y am godis
 sone. / if y do not pe
 werkis of my fadir. nyl
 ze bilyue to me / soþely
 if y do. þou z ze wolen not
 bilyue to me. bilyue ze
 to pe werkis. pat ze kno
 we & bilyue for pe fadir
 is in me & y in pe fadir.
 þerfore pei souzten for
 to take hym. & he wente
 oute of her hondis. / &
 he wente eftersone ouer

Jordan in to pat place where
 he Jon was firste baptizinge
 & dwelte he/ & many came
 to hym & couden for Jon
 dre no signe or miracle
 forsope alle ymages what
 eue ymages Jon cande
 of his liden cope/ & ma
 nye belyyden to hym//

A Drispe [x]
 he was a cete ma
 Lazarus of beta
 nye of the castel of marie
 & martha his sistris/
 forsope it was marie
 ye whiche anoynted the
 lord with oynement &
 wiped his feet with hir
 heere. Whos brother
 Lazarus was seck/ & for
 his sistris sente to hi
 cerynge/ led to his home
 you luyt. is seck. the
 forsope herynges cande
 to hem/ his sekenesse
 is not to the dep. but for
 the glorie of god. pat
 many coue be glori
 fied by hym/ sope
 the luyde martha
 & hir sistir marie &
 Lazarus/ were as the

herde pat he was seck.
 pane sope he dwelt
 in the same place also
 sayes/ for after pest y
 ges. he cande to his dis
 aples go we este in to
 Jude/ the disciples cain
 to hym/ raly or manfir
 nolt the iellous souther
 for to stone the. & este
 pengost ydur. the an
 swerde/ wher y ben not
 the lue hours of the day
 if any man shal wan
 dre in the day. he hurt
 not. for he seep the luyt
 of his world/ sope if
 he shal wandee in the
 nyzt. he hurt for luyt
 is not in hym/ pest y
 ges he seep/ & after pest
 ynges. he seep to hem/
 Lazarus cure friend est
 pip. but y go for to reise
 hym fro stepe/ & for
 his disciples canden/ led
 if he stepe. he shal
 be cast forsope the had
 sende of his dep. but y
 gesiden pat he had on
 de of cleynging of stepe/
 pane for the sende

to hem oppynly/ Lazarus is
 ded. & y emoye for you put
 ye bilyuen for y was not
 de/ but go lke to hym/ per
 fore thomas pat is coud
 dwim? sende to enen dñi
 phis/ & go lke pat lke dye
 wip hym/ & so lke came.
 & found hym hawayng nolt
 fure daves in pe grave/
 sopeky betaype was hy
 ptes ierusalem. as fiste
 ne fur longes/ forsope ma
 nye of ieldis comen to
 marie & martha. for to
 conforte hem of her brop/
 pfore as martha herde
 for ihu came. she rennep
 to hym/ marie fustope sat
 at home/ pfore martha
 coud to ihu/ lord zit you
 hadyt hen here. my bro
 pr hadde not hen ded/
 bot & nolt y lkte pat lke
 at eide ynges you shal
 axe of god. god shal
 ryue to pee/ lke sayp
 to hyr/ y broyer shal
 rise azen/ martha sayp
 to hym/ y lkte for he
 shal rise azen in pe
 azenryng. in pe laste

say/ lke sayp to hyr/ y
 am azenryng & lke
 he pat bilyuen in to
 me. zhe ponz he shal
 be lke. he shal lyue/
 & al pat lyuey & bily
 uey in to me. shal not
 dye in to lke oute ende/
 by lkeyst pon pis yng/
 lke sayp to hym/ for
 sope or zhe lord y hane
 bilyuen for you art
 crist pe sone of quyl
 god. pat hast comen
 in to pis world/ and
 wshame she hadde on
 & pis yng. she lken
 te & clepde marie hir
 afor in silence saynge/
 pe maistr comey & cle
 pey pee/ she as she her
 de ros anon. & came to
 hym/ sopeky lke came
 not zit in to pe castel
 bot he was zit in pat
 place. where martha
 hade comen azen/ hy/
 pfore pe ieldis y were
 wip hyr in pe hous &
 confortiden hir wshame
 pei seen marie for soone
 she ros & wente oute.

ouer hir seynge / for
 she goy to ye grane for to
 wepe / ye forsoye marie whane
 she hadde seen where
ishe was seeynge hym
 felde to his feet / & saide
 to hym / lord if you had
 dist be here / my broper
 hadde not be dede / yshe
 say hir wepynge
 and ye ielkis pat were
 wry hir wepynges / he
 made noys in spirit &
 wolld hym self & saide /
 where han ye put hym /
 yei sauen to hym / lord
 come & see / & ishe wepte /
 yshe ye ielkes sanden /
 lo hou he louyde hym
 forsoye sūme of hem sei
 den / ishe his man pat
 openyd ye yen of ye bō
 ne blynd man / myght not
 make pat & his dyed not
 yshe este sones ishe este
 makynge noys in hy self
 came to ye grane / forsoye
 y was adinne & a stone
 was put from ishe sayp
 take ye alkei ye stone /
 martha ye syster of hy
 pat was dede / sayp to

ishe / lord he sturp noll
 sopele he is of fourday
es dede / ishe sayp to hir /
 haue y not said to ye
 for if you shalt beleue
 you shalt see ye glorie
 of god / yshe yei toke alkei
 ye stoon forsoye ye yen
 reised opward / ishe saide /
 fadir y do pancelynge
 to ye / for you herd me
 forsoye y wiste for you
 euermore herist me / bot
 for ye pepul pat stondy
 aboute y saide pat ye sh
 leue / for you hast contē
 me / whanne he hadde sei
 de yeste ymges he criede
 wry agreeet wyte / ishe
 come forp & anon he pat
 was come stey bounden ye
 handis & feet wry bounden
 & his face was bounden
 wry a sudarie or sudary
se dede / ishe sayp to hem /
 onbynde ye hym & suffre
 ye hym / for to go alkei /
 yshe manye of ye ielkes
 pat camen to marie &
 martha and caryen whāt
 ymges ishe dide / bylew
 den in to hym / sopele

stime of hem benten to
 pe pharisees. and saide
 to hem what pinges is
 ditte/ perfore pe bishopis
 and pharisees gederiden
 a counseil aem⁹ ihu &
 saiden/ what don we for
 his man dry many sig
 nes & myracles if we
leue hym pus. alle me
 schulen bileue in hym/
 & romayns schulen come
 & take oure place & folde/
 forsope oon of hem caryp
 has by name whanne he
 was bishop of pat zeer.
 saide to hem ze wite no
 pings ne pinken. fortt ge
 dyt to jou pat o man dye
 for pe pepul. & pat al pe
 folke puthe not/ forsope
 ho saide not vis pyng
 of hym self. bot whanne
 he was bishop of pat zeer.
 he pphenede. for is was
 to dye for pe folke. & not
 onely for pe folke. but
 pat he schulde gatiere
 in to oon pe sones of
 god. pat weren scate
 ride/ pfore fro pat day.
 pei sonzten for to cle

hym/ forsope is walske
 not nolk opynly at pe
 ielvis/ bot he bente in
 to a regionn or cite by
 sidis desert in to a citee
 pat is seide effrem. &
 pe he dwelliche wip his
 discipulis/ forsope pe pas
 te of ielvis was next.
 & manye of pe amtre
 styeden op to ierusalem
 pe day before paste for
 to halke hem self/ p
 fore pei sonzten ihu
 & spoken to geder stondy
 ge in pe temple/ what
 sessen ze for he comep
 not to pe feest day. &
 forsope pe bishopis &
 farisees hadden zonen
 amandement. pat if
 ony man thabe where
 he is. he schelke pat pei
 take hym/ le. xii.

I herfore is by
 fore styx dayes
 of paste. came
 to betamyne where laza
 rus was ded. whome
 ihu rei hde/ forsope pei
 maaden to hym a oxper
 pe. & martha mynystre

to hym/ Lazarus forsope.
 Was oon of men sittyn
 at pe mete/ wip hym/
 þfore marie toke a poun-
 te of oynement. Spikenard
 þaous & anoyntid pe fet
 of ihu/ & wiped his feet
 wip hir heeris/ & pe hous
 is fullfillid of sauoure
 of pe oynement/ þfore
 Judas scariot oon of his
 dishpils. pat was to hy
 traye hym/ whi is his
 oynement not sold for
 þre hundred pens. & zo
 uen to neddy men/ for
 soþe he saide vs ymg.
 not for it þteyned to hy
 of neddy men. bot for
 he was a prief/ & he ha-
 uynge pe pursis. bar
 þo þinges pat weren
 sent/ þfore ihe saide/
 suffre ze hir. pat into
 pe day of my burynge
 she kepe pat/ forsope
 ze schulen eilmore ha-
 ue þoe men wip zow
 soþe ze schulen not
 eilmore haue me/ þfore
 in þese alþanye of pe
 iellis finelli. pat ihe

was þe/ & þe came not
 onely for ihu. bot forto
 see Lazarus. whome he
 reusid fro deþ/ forsope
 þe þuas of þhis þou-
 ten for to sle Lazarus for
 manye of pe iellis for
 hym wenten alþey & hy
 leuyden in ihu/ forsope
 on pe moelbe a myche
 cumpanye pat came to
 gader at pe feste day. wh
 ayme þei hadden herd for
 ihu came to ierusalem.
 token þramchis of pal-
 mes & camen forþ azem/
 hym & crieten/ osanna.
 blissid is he pat comen in
 pe name of pe lord. kyng
 of israel/ & ihe foond a
 litel asse & sat upon hy.
 as it is witen/ pe duy-
 tir of syon. nyl þou die
 de/ so þi kyng comen to
 þee sittynge on a colt
 of a she asse/ his dishp-
 lis knellen not þir for
 þese þinges. bot whanne
 ihe is glonified/ þene
 þei recorden or haden
 wynde. for þese þinges
 weren witen of hym.

& yese pringes pei diden
 to hym / yfere pe arpanye
 bare witnessynge pat
 was wy hym. Whanne
 he cleped lazarus fro pe
 graue. & reised hy fro
 deed / þfore & pe arpany
 came metynge hym. for
 pei herden hym to haue
 don his signe / perfore
 pe farisees couden to
 hem sylf / ze seen for lye
 yfren. no ping / lo al pe
 world Wendip aftir hy //
 fforsope þe weren stinne
 hepen men of hem pat
 hadden fayed op. for to
 worshipping in pe feest day /
 perfore yese camen to phi
 lip pat was of bethsaida of
 galilee. & yfren hy sey
 ge / sure we wold see ihu
 philip comen & sey to an
 drewe / efre andrew and
 philip couden to ihu / so
 pely ihu answerde to
 hem seynge / pe how
 comen pat namy / some
 be clarified / treuly tren
 ly y sey to you no bot pe
 corn of whete fallynge
 in to ye erpe shal be dede.

it dwellyp alone / sopehy
 yf it shal be dede. it
 bringip forp myche fruyt /
 he pat louep his soule
pat is hyf. he shal lese
 it / & he pat hatip his
 soule pat is hyf in his
 world. kepep it in to
 eilla stynge hyf / yf any
 man serue to me. & he
 he me / & where y am.
 þe & my mynystre oz ser
 uant shal be / yf any
 man shal mynystre to
 me. my fadir shal wor
 shippe hym // nolke my
 soule is trobld / & what
 shal y sey. / fadir came
 me fro his honr / bot for
 pat ping. y came in to
 his how / fadir clarifie
 y name / perfore a awis
 came fro heuene seyn
 ge / & y haue clarified.
 & yet y shal clarifie /
 yfere pe arpanye pat
 stode & herde. saide þu
 dur for to be made / of
 men couden / an angel
 quat to hym / ihu answe
 red & seide / vis ayoys
 came not for me. bot

f

for 3ou/ wol is wme of pe
 world/ nolbe pe prync of
 his world shal be caste ou
 te/ & if y shal be enhaū
 sed fro pe erpe. y shal
 dralbe alle pings to my
 self/ sovels his ping he
 saide. signe flynge by wght
 dey he was to dye/ pe cū
 panye answere to hym/
 we han herde of pe salbe/
 for crist dwelley in to wy
 cūten ende/ & hou crist
 pou. it byhouey mann?
 some for to be arerid/ who
 is his mann? some/ yf
 the seip to hem/ 3it lūel
 lyzt is in 3ou/ walke ze pe
 while ze han lyzt. pat
 derkeness catchen 3ou not
 & he pat wandry in derk
 ness. moot uide whidr
 he gop/ pe while ze han
 lyzt. byleue ze in lyzt.
 pat ze be pe sones of
 lyzt/ the spat veld pin
 ges. & wente & hidde hy
 fro hem/ sovels whāne
 he hadde don so manye
 signes byfore hem. pei
 byleunden not in hym.
 pat pe word of ysaye

pe pphete shuld be ful
 filled. whiche he saide/ lād
 who byleuede to oure he
 ryng. & to whome is pe
 arme or myght of god othe
 wade. yf fore pei myght not
 byleue. for estesone ysaye
 seip/ he hap blyndid her
 yen. & he hap endured or
made hard pe hert of he.
 pat pei seen not wy yē
 & andurstonde wy herte
 & pat pei ben coultid or al
turnyd. & y held hem/
 ysaye saide veld pinges/
 whāne he say pe glorie
 of hym & spat of hym/
 nepeles & of pe pndas.
 manye byleunden in hym/
 bot for pe pharisees pei
 knouleschten not. pat
 pei schulden not be caste
 oute of pe synagoge/ for
 sope pei lonyden pe glau
 of men/ thesye the red
 & saide/ he pat byleuep
 in to me. byleuep not one
 ly in to me. bot in to hy
 pat sente me/ he pat seip
 me. seip hym pat sente
 me/ y lyzt came in to his
 world. pat ethe y byleuep

in to me dwelle not in derke
nessis / & if any man shal
here my wordis & shal not
kepe hem. y deme hy not
forsope y came not pat y
deme pe world. bot pat y
make pe world safe he pat
disseye me & taky not my
wordis. hay hym p^r shal
inge hym pe word pat y
haue spoken. pat shal
me hym in pe laste day
for y haue not spoken of
my self. bot pe fadir pat
seide me. he zaf to me a
maundement what y shal
sey. & what y shal speke /
& y wout for his maunde
ment. so endlastyng he
p^rse vo ymges pat y
speke. as pe fadir seide
to me. so y speke.

A Dr sope before
pe feste day of
passe ihu wy
tyng for his
hour comyng pat he passe
of his world to pe fadir.
Whanne he loued hys
weren in pe world. in to
pe ende he loued hem / &
pe cov made. Whanne pe

deuel hadde sente nolke
in to pe herte of Judas
of symount carioth.
pat he shulke bytraye
hym. he wytyng pat pe
fadir zaf alle ymges to
hym in to his hondis.
& pat he wente oute fro
god & gup to god. rusep
fro pe soper & puttyng his
clotyng a whanne he had
de taken a hymen clotyng
he bifore gurd hym / afur
ward he sente watyr in
to a bassyn. & ligan for
to wasche his disciples
feet. & to wyse wy pe ly
uen clotyng. Wy pe wasche
he was gurd / p^rse he
me to symount petre.
& petre cry to hym / lord
waschest thou to me pe
feet. / ihu answeride &
seide to hem / what ymges
y do thou wost not nolke.
forsope thou shalt wyte
afurward / petre cry to
hym / thou shalt not wasch
the to me pe feet. in to
wy outen ende / ihu answe
ride to hym / if y shal
not wasche pe. thou.

shalt not haue part wth
 me: synount petre say
 to hym/ lord not onely my
 feet. bot a myn hond is a
 pe hed/ ihs saide to hym/
 he pat is waischen hap no
 nede. bot pat he waische
 pe feet. bot he is cleue al/
 & ze ben cleue. bot not
 alle/ forsope he wiste who
 schulde betraye hym/ &
 fore he seide. ze ben not
 alle cleue/ yfore aftur
 pat he hadde waischen
 pe feet of hem. he toke
 his clopis & wshame
 he hadde restid azeim.
 eftre he saide to hem/
 wite ze what y haue don
 to zou. ze clepen me ma
 ister & lord. & ze sayn wel
 for y am/ yfore if y lord
 & maister haue waische
 zoure feet. & ze schuld
 waische anoy pe topers
 feet/ for y haue zouen
 ensampel to zou/ pat as
 y haue don to zou. so
 ze don/ treuly treuly y
 sey to zou. pe seruunt
 is not more paine his lord
 nes apostle. paine he

pat sente hym/ if ze bi
 ten pese ynges ze schuld
 be blessed. if ze schulen do
 hem/ y say not of zou alle/
 y boot wshome y haue cho
 sen/ bot pat pe scripture
 be fulfilled. he pat ety my
 bred. schal reise his hold
 azeim me/ treuly treuly
 y say to zou byfore it be
 tou. pat wshame it schal be
 don ze bylene for y am/
 treuly treuly y sey to zou.
 he pat taky wshome eide
 y schal sende. receyuep
 me/ forsope he pat recey
 uep me. receyuep hy
 pat sente me/ wshame
 ihs hadt sende pese ym
 ges. he was trobled &
 saide/ treuly treuly y sey
 to zou. for oon of zou or
 gill betraye me/ yfore pe
 disciplo lobden to ordn.
 dactynge of wshome he
 saide/ wite oon of his
 disciplo was rethynge
 in pe besome of ihs. w
 ome ihs lowde/ yfore
 synount petre bekened
 to hym. and sey to hy/
 who is it of pe wshiche

he seip. / & so Whāne he
 hadde restid hem on pe
 brest of ihu. he seip to
 hym / lord who is it. / ihs
 answeride / he it is to who
 me y schal dresse bred in
 deppid. / Whāne he hadde
 deppid in lired or wente it
in wyne. he zaf to him
 of symonut scariot. /
 & after pe wæsel. pāne
 satanas entride in to hy
 & ihs seip to hym / what
 ymg pou wist. do pou it
 synner. / forsope no man
 of synge at mete wist
 pis ymg. to what pig
 he cōde to hym / forsope
 sume gessien for judas
 hadde pursio. / pat ihs ha
 de cōde to hym / bye pou
 po ymgos pat ben nete
 ful to us at pe fress say.
 or pat he schulde hanc zo
 uen eu ymg to uedy me
 perfore Whāne he hadde
 taken pe wæsel. he wen
 te oute anoon / forsope it
 was myzt. / pāne Whāne
 he hadde gon oute. ihs
 cante / now man? cone
 is clarified. & god is

clarified in hym / 3if god
 is clarified in hy. & god
 schal clarifie hym in hy
 oif & anoon he schal cla
 rifie hym. / litel sones.
 3it a litel y am wip 30lb /
 ze schulen seke me. & as
 y cande to pe ielwis. whi
 dir y go ze mōyn not co
 me. & to 3ou y caye nōlb /
 y zeue to 3ou anelwe mōi
 cement. pat ze loue to ge
 dir as y loue 3ou. pat
 & ze loue to gader in pis
 ymg alle men schulen
 Enolke for ze ben my dis
 aphio. 3if ze haue loued
 to gader symonut petre
 cōip to hym / lord whidur
 goft pou. / ihs answeride
 whidur y go. pou maist
 not sue me nōlb. but
 pou schalt sue me after
 lward / petre seip to hy
 why may y not sue pee
 nōlb. y schal punte my
 soule pat is luf. for
 pee / ihs answeride / pou
 schalt punte in soule
pat is luf for me. tren
 ly trenly y sey to pee.
 ye wif schal not crolke.

f

to you shalt denye me.
pries/ and he seip to his
disciples.

Be not zowre hor-
te disturbid-
ne drede it/ zee
bilenen in god.

a byleue ze in me/ in pe
hous of my fadir. Ben
many dwellynges/ n' ony
p'ng lesse y schulde haue
said to you. for y go furth
make redy to you a place.
estresone y come & y schal
take you to my self. pat
where y am. & ze be/ &
whidur y go ze witten. &
ze witten pe wey/ thomas
seip to hym/ lord we wite
not whidur you gost/ and
hou mollen we wite pe wey.
the seip to hym/ y am
wey treupe & lyf/ noman
comet to pe fadir. no bot
by me/ n' ze hadden kno-
wen me. sopeh ze hadden
knolwen & my fadir/ &
asturward ze schulen kno-
we hym. & ze han seen
hym/ philip seip to hy
lord schawe to us pe fa-
dir. & it suffisep to us/
the seip to hym/ so mych

tyne y am wryp you. & han
ze not knolwen me/ philip
he pat seip me. seip &
pe fadir/ byleuest thou not
for y am in pe fadir. and
pe fadir is in me/ y speke
not of my self. pe wordis
pat y speke to you/ sopeh
pe fadir dwellynge in me.
he wy pe werkis/ byleue
ze not for y am in pe fadir.
& pe fadir is in me. & ekkis
byleue ze for p'ble werkis/
treuh treuh y seip to you.
he pat bilenep me & he or
shal do pe werkis pat y do.
& he schal do more werkis
pat me wese. for y go to pe
fadir/ & what eile p'ngs
ze schulen axe pe fadir in
my name. y schal do p'p
p'ngs pat pe fadir be gho-
rified in pe come/ n' ze or
schulen axe ony p'ng in my
name. y schal do it/ n' ze
louen me. kepe ze my co-
mandementis/ & y schal
p'p' pe fadir. & he schal
zyne to you an o'p' con-
fession. pat he dwelle wryp
you in to wryp outen ende/
pe spirit of treupe wryp

spirit pe world may not ta
 ke. for it seep hym not ues
 wote hym/ forsope ze schule
 knolke hym. for he schal
 dwelle at zou. & he schal
 be in zou. y schal not leue
 zou fadir les. y schal come
 to zou. yz a litel & pe world
 seep not noll me/ forsope
 ze schulen see me. for y
 hve & ze schulen hve in
 pat day ze schulen knolke for
 y am in my fadir & ze in me
 & y in zou. he pat hap my
 comandementis & keep
 hem. he it is pat louey me
 sopek he pat louey me.
 schal be loued of my fadir/
 & y schal loue hym. & y
 schal schelke to hym my
 self. judas seep to hym.
 not he of scariot. fied wch
 at is don. for pou art to
 schelke to us y self & not
 to pe world. yhe answer
 de & seide to hym. zif
 omij man louey me he
 schal kepe my word/ &
 my fadir schal loue hy.
 & we schulen come to hy
 & we schulen make dwel
 linge at hym. he pat

louey not me. keep not
 my wordis/ & pe word wch
 che ze han herd. is not
 myn. bot his. pat & ate
 me pe fadiris. yese p m
 ges y haue. when tr ou
 dwellinge at zou. forsope
 pe holy swoft confortour.
 whome pe fadir schal son
 de in my name. he schal
 teche zou alle pinges. &
 schal schelke to zou alle
 pinges. what else pinges
 y schal sey to zou. pees
 y leue to zou. my pees y
 yue to zou. not as pe
 world yuep. y yue to
 zou. be not zoure herte
 disturblid. ne drede it/
 ze han herd for y seide
 to zou. y so & come to zou/
 yz ze louen me. forsope
 ze schulen ioye for y go
 to pe fadir. for pe fadir
 is more pame y. & noll
 y haue seide to zou. bish
 re it be don. pat wch
 it schal be don. ze bilene/
 noll y schal not speke
 many pinges to zou. for
 sope pe prince of pe
 world comep. & he hap

not in me any thing but
pat ye world knowe for
y loue ye fadir & as ye
fadir yf comaundment
to me so y do / rife ze go
we hem? / Le. x

a

Tam a verey vyne &
my fadir is an erpe
tiller / eche vyne or
braunche not beryn
ge fruyt in me he
shal do it alwey / &
eche pat berip fruyt
he shal purge it pat
it bere more fruyte /
nolk ze benctene for
ye word pat y haue
spoken to you dwelle
ze in me & y in you /
as a vyne or braun
che may not make
fruyt of it self but
yf it dwelle in ye
vyne tre so nepir
ze bot yf ze shulen
dwelle in me / y am
ye vyne tre ze ye
vyne or braunche /
who pat dwelleth in
me & y in hym / is
berip mychto fruyt
for wy outen me
ze mowen no pyns

b

do / yf any man shal not
dwelle in me he shal be
sent oute as a vyne &
shal waxe drye / and ye
shulen gedir hym & ye
shulen send hym in to
ye fier & he breimeth / yf
ze shulen dwelle in me
& my wordis shule dwelle
in you / what else pyns
ze shulen wille ze shule
axe & it shal be don to
you / in pis pyns my fadir
is clarified / pat ze bringe
most fruyt & ze be made
my discipulis / as my fadir
loueth me & y loueth you /
dwelle ze in my loue / yf
ze shulen kepe my coman
dementis / ze shule dwelle
in my loue as & y haue
kept ye comaundmentis
of my fadir & y dwelle
in his loue / pise pyns
y spak to you pat my ioye
be in you & youre ioye
be fulfilled / pis is my
comaundment / pat ze
loue to gedir as y loue
you / no man hay more
loue than pis / pat any
man putte his soule for

d

his frendis/ ze ben my fren
dis/ if ze schulen do po p
ges pat y comaundide to you/
nolk y schal not sey you
seruauntis. for ye shal
wote not what his lord
shal do/ forsope y haue
seyd you frendis. for alle
pymes what eyle y herde
of my fadir. y haue made
knolken to you/ ze han not
chosen me. bot y ches you
a pinte you pat ye go &
brynge fruyt. a youre
fruyt olkelle/ pat what
eyle ymy ze schulen axe
ye fadir in my name. he
roue to you/ pese pymes
y comaunde to you. pat
ze loue to god/ if ye worlde
hate you. wite ye for it
hadd in hate me. firste
paine you/ if ze hadden
be of ye worlde. ye worlde
schulde loue pat pyng.
pat was hye/ bot for ze
ben not of ye worlde. per
free ye worlde haty you/
haue ze mynde of my word.
ye which y sende to you.
ye seruaunt is not more
paine his lord/ if ye.

han pursuied me. a per
schulen pursue you/ if
ye han tepte my word.
a ye schulen tepe youre/
bot ye schulen do to you
alle pese pynges for
my name. for ye wite
not hym pat sente me/
if y hadd not come a
hadd not spoken to he.
ye schulen not han sy
ne/ forsope nolk ye han
noon excusacion of her
syne/ he pat haty me.
haty a my fadir/ if
y hadd not don werke
in hem. ye which noon
oper man dide. ye schul
den not han syne/ for
sope nolk a ye han see
a haten me. a my fa
dir/ bot pat ye word be
fulfild pat is writen
in youre lawe. for ye
hadden me in hate wip
outen cause/ forsope
whamme ye confortour
shal come. ye which y
shal sende to you fro.
ye fadir. a spirit of tr
eue ye which y sende
or comen fro of ye fadir.

he schal bere witnessynge
of me: & ze schulen bere
witnessynge: for ze be wyf
me fro ve bigymynge:

Ihesu. xi.
punges y haue
spoken to you:
pat ze ben not
standrid: pei schulen
mak or to you wyf outen
synagogs: bot ve hour
comen. pat eche man pat
slepe you: deme hym forto
ryue seruyce to god: & pei
schulen do to you velle vi
ges: for pei han not knoll
en ye fadir neyr me: bot
pese pinges y spak to you.
pat whanne ye hour of
hem schal come: ze haue
mynde for y saide to you:
y saide not to you pese vi
ges fro ve bigymynge:
for y was wyf you: & noll
y go to hym pat sente
me: & no man of you xep
me: whadir goft you: bot
for y haue spoken to you
pese pinges: sothe or he
winessse hap fulfilled you
re herte: bot y cepe to
you treupe: it spedid to
you pat y so: sopeh zif

y schal not go allei: pe
comfortour schal not come
to you: forsope zif y schal
go allei. y schal sende
hym to you: & whanne
he schal come he schal
reproue ye world of synne:
& of rygtysshess: & of dome:
forsope of synne. for pei
han not bilened in me:
sopeh of rygtysshess:
for y go to ye fadir: and
noll ze schulen not see
me: forsope of dome: for
ye pryncce of pis world:
is noll demyd: zif y haue
manye pinges for to sey
to you: bot ze mollen not
bere noll: sopeh whanne
vilke spirit of treupe:
shal come: he schal witte
you al treupe: sopeh he
shal not speke of hym
self: bot what eide vi
ges he schal here: he ot
hal speke: & he schal telle
to you: ye pinges pat
ben to come: he schal cla
rifie me: for of myn he
shal take: & telle to you:
alle pinges what eyu
pinges ye fadir hap:

ben myne/ þfore y said to
 you. for of myne he schal
 take & telle to zolli/ A litel
 & noli ze schulen not see
 me & eftesone a litel & ze
 schulen see me. for y go
 to þe fadir/ þfore sume of
 his discipulis saiden to gader/
 what is þis þing pat he
 say to us. a litel & ze schi-
 len not see me. & eftesone
 a litel & ze schulen see me.
 for y go to þe fadir/ þfore
 þei saiden/ what is þis þ
 he say to us. a litel. & we
 witen not what he spe-
 keth/ forþope ihs knewe for
 þei wolden axe hym. &
 he said to hem/ of þis þing
 ze seen amonge you. for
 y saiden/ a litel & ze schulen
 see me. & eftesone a litel
 & ze schulen see me/ treuly
 treuly y sey to you. for ze
 schulen mourne & wepe.
 forþope þe world schal en-
 ioye/ forþope ze schulen
 be sorowful. bot þoure
 sorowe or heynesse. schal
 turne in to ioye/ sorow
 a woman whanne sche
 berip child. hap sorowe

or heynesse. for þur hour
 cometh/ forþope whanne
 sche hap borne a sone.
 noli sche puley not of
 þe þsure or payne for
 ioye. for a man is be me
 in to þe world/ & þfore ze
 han noli sorowe/ sorow. þe eft
 sone y schal see you. &
 þoure herte schal enioye.
 & no man schal take fro
 you þoure ioye/ & in þat
 day ze schulen not axe
 ony þing. treuly treuly
 y say to you. if ze schulen
 axe of þe fadir ony þing
 in my name. he schal
 geue it to you/ til noli ze
 axiden not ony þing in my
 name/ axe ze. & ze schulen
 take. þat þoure ioye be ful/
 y haue spoken to you þese
 þingis in þerbis or dreyk
enfaumples. þe hour co-
 meth whanne noli y schal
 not speke to you in þro-
 uerbis. bot opynly of my
 fadir y schal telle to you/
 þat day ze schulen axe in
 my name/ & noli y say
 to you. for y schal þe
 þe fadir of zolli forþope

pe fadir louey you for ze
han loued me & han byle
uede for y wente oute fro
god y wente oute fro pe
fadir & y came in to pe
world / estesone y leue pe
world & y go to pe fadir /
his dyspliche canden to hy
lo noll you speke openly
& cast no puer be / nolbe
we witten for you wooste
alle ynges & it is no
uede to pee pat ony man
aye pee / in his pyng we
byleuen for you wentest
oute fro god / ihs answeri
de to hem noll ze byleue //
"lo pe hour comep & noll
it comep pat ze be dis
parplid or scaterid / eche
in to his owne ynges
& leue me alone / & y am
not alone for pe fadir
is wip me / yese ynges
y haue spoken to you
pat ze haue pees in me
in pe world ze schule ha
ue pssyng / bot t're ze y
haue ouercome pe world //

Thesse pynges
ys ihs spak &
pe yen lyft op

in to heuene / he said /
fadir pe hour comep / cla
rifie y sonne / pat y come
clarifie pee / as you haue
zouen to hym polker of
eche pleisthe or man
pat al ynges pat you haue
zouen to hym / he yue to
hem cillastynge by firs
pe pis is ouerlastynge by
pat yei knolke pee alone
o'rey god & w'home you
sentist ihs crist / y haue
clarified pee on erpe y ha
ue endid pe werk pat y
haue zouen to me / pat y
do / & noll fadir clarifie me
at y cill / way demesse
pat y hadde at pee byfere
pe world was made / y haue
schelbid y name to pe men
w'home you haue zouen to
me of pe world / yei weren
pyne & you haue zouen
hem to me & yei han
kepte y word / & noll yei
han knouen for alle yng
ges pat you haue zouen
to me / ben of pee for pe
word is pat you haue zo
uen to me y iaf to hem
& yei han taken & knouen

Wyl for y wente oute fro
 pee. & pei byleuyden for
 pou sentist me/ I prey
 for hem not for pe world.
 bot for hem pat pou hast
 zouen to me. for pei ben pi
 nel and alle my pnyges be
 yme. & pi pnyges be myne.
 & y am clarified in hem/
 & nolt y am not in pe worl-
 d. & yest ben in pe world.
 & y come to pee. Holi fa-
 der. beir hem in pi name.
 Whome pou zonest to me.
 pat pei ben oon. as a be-
 whanne y was wip hem.
 y kepte hem in pi name/
 Whome pou zonest to me
 y kepte. & no man of ge-
 ptynd. But pe sone of ge-
pdycau & dampnacion
 pat pe scripture be ful-
 filled. fufsoye nolt y come
 to pee. & yest pnyges y
 speke in pe world. pat
 pei haue my roye fulfilled
 in hem self. y zaf to he
 in word & pe world had
 de hem in hate. for pei
 ben not of pe world as
 y am not of pe world.//
 y prey not pat pou take

hem alwey of pe world.
 bot pat pou kepe hem
 fro yuel. pei ben not
 of pe world. as & y
 am not of pe world. hal-
 we pou hem in trempes/
 pi word is trempes as pou
 sentist me in to pe world.
 & y sente hem in to pe
 world. & y halwe my self
 for hem. pat & pei be
 halwed in trempes. sope
 ly y prey not onely for
 hem. bot & for hem pat
 ben to beleue in to me
 by pe word of hem. pat
 alle ben oon. as y fadir
 in me. & y in pee. pat
 & pei in us ben oon. pat
 pe world beleue for pou
 haste sente me. & y haue
 zouen to hem pe clerenes
 le pat pou hast zouen
 to me. pat pei be oon.
 as & be ben oon. y in he
 & pou in me. pat pei
 ben endid in to oon. &
 pat pe world knowe y
 pou sentist me & hast
 loued hem. as & pou
 hast loued me. fadir y
 wole pat & pei whome

you zaneft to me. ben Wip
 me where y am. pat pey
 see my clereuſſe. pat pou
 haſt zonen to me. for pou
 loudeſt me. biſore pe ma
 kyng of pe world. Qadu
 niſt o rightful. pe world
 knelle peo not. for y knelle
 pee. & peſe knollen for
 pou ſent iſt me. & y haue
 made pi name knollen to
 hem. & ſhal make knollen
 bi pe loue bi whiche pou
 haſt loued me. be in hem.
 & y in hem. l. c. xiii.

A

Whanne iſt hadde
 ſaide peſe ymges.
 he wente oute.
 Wip his diſcyples ouer pe
 ſtronde of adron. where
 was a zerd. in to whiche
 he entred & his diſcyples
 ſorely & judas pat byt
 raied hym. Wiſte pe place.
 for ofte iſt came to gedur
 ydur Wip his diſcyples.
 pfore whanne judas had
 de taken a companye of
 Enyſtes. of pe biſchops
 & pariſees myniſters.
 he came ydur Wip lau
 thies & brondis & aarines.

& so iſt Wipuge alle
 ymges pat weren to co
 me. Wente fyr & ſcrip to
 hem. Whome ſeken ze.
 pei anſweriden to hym.
 iſt of nazarep. iſt ſaide
 to hem. y am. forſope &
 judas pat intraned hy.
 ſtoode Wip hem. pfore as
 he ſaide to hem y am.
 pei wenten abak & felten
 dū in to pe erpe. eſteſone
 he axide hem. Whome
 ſeken ze. & forſope pey
 ſeiden. iſt nazaren. he
 anſweride to hem. y ſai
 de to you. for y am. pfore
 pf ze ſeken me. ſuffre
 ze peſe for to go alwey. pat
 pe word whiche he ſaide
 ſhulde be fulfilled. for y
 loſt not ony of hem. pe
 whiche pou haſt zonen
 to me. pfore ſeynount
 petre hauyng a ſword.
 drolbe it oute. & ſmoot
 pe ſeruaunt of pe byſ
 hop. & bytte of his lute
 ryt ere. forſope pe name
 to pe ſeruaunt was mal
 chus. perfore iſt ſaide
 to petre. ſende pou pe

alkerd in to pe shepe/boft
 pou not pat y drynke pe
 ke coupe. pat my fadir zaf
 to me/ yfore pe compaigne
 of buytis & pe tribune &
 pe mynistris of ielkes. to
 ben ihu & bounden hym.
 & leden hym firste to annas/
 sovel he was fadir of
 camphas wyf. pat was
 byschop of pat zeer/ sove
 ly it was camphas pat zaf
 counseil to pe iellis pat
 it spedir o man to dye for
 pe pepul/ fursore symon
 petre oued ihu. & anoyr
 dystiple/ fursore pilke dis
 aple was knowen to pe
 byschop. & he entrid in
 wip ihu in to pe halle of
 pe byschop/ sovel petre
 stood at pe dre wip oute
 forp/ yfore pe typer disti
 ple pat was knowen to
 pe byschop wente oute.
 & saide to pe bounden ke
 pyngre pe dre & ledde in
 petre/ yfore pe hondman
 den keper of pe dre. saide
 to petre/ wher & pou
 art of pe dystiplys of
 pis man. & he saide/ y

am not/ fursore pe ovi
 nuntis & mynistris
 stoden at pe colles. for it
 was cold & pei war my
 ten hem/ sovel & petre
 was wip hem stondyng
 & war mynge hym/ yfore
 pe byschop axide ihu
 of his dystiphs. & of
 his techynges/ ihe answe
 erid to hym/ y haue spo
 ken opynly to pe world/
 y tainte ennoce in pe
 synagoge & in pe temple.
 whidur alle pe iellis.
 camen to sider. and in
 pryng y opat no pmyg/
 what axist pou me. &
 axe hem pat herden
 what y haue spoken to
 hem/ lo pei witen. what
 pynges y haue seide/
 whaume he hadde seide
 pese pmyges. con of pe
 mynistris stondyng
 myz. zaf a buffet to ihu.
 sayng/ answerist pou
 so to pe byschop. & ihe
 answerid to hym/ zif
 y haue spoken yuel.
 here pou witnesse of/
 sovel zif wel. & he

Smyast pou me? & An-
 nas sente hy bounden
 to caiphas pe byschop/
 forsoye symount petre
 was stondynge & war
 mynge hym / pfore pei
 saiden to hym / wher &
 you art his disciple? &
 he demyed & saide / y am
 not / oon of pe bishop
 seruantes cosyn of hy.
 whos litel ere petre.
 bit of saide / wher y sty
 pee not in pe zerd luy
 hym? pfore petre este
 sone demyed / & anoon
 pe col aelwe / pfore pei
 leden ihu to caiphas
 in to pe motehalle / so
 pely it was moelwyse
 & pei entruden not in to
 pe motehalle. pat pei
 schulden be defouled
 bot pat pei schulden
 ere pafte / pfore pilate
 likente our wy outen
 fap to hem. & saide /
 what accusynge byn
 ze ze ageynng pis man /
 pei answerden & ovy
 den to hym / if py o
 were not answer.

We hadde not bitale hy
 to pee / pfore pilate.
 Ouy to hem / take ze hy.
 & deme ze hym after
 zoure lalle / pfore pei
 saiden to hym / it is not
 leful to us. for to ste
 oay man / pat pei wad
 of ihu schulde be ful
 fillid pe wshche he sei
 de. signefynge hy w
 at dey he was to dye /
 perfore estesone pilate
 entrude in to pe motehal
 le. & clepde ihu and
 saide to hym / art pou
 kyng of ielbes? & ihu an
 swerde & saide to hy /
 saist pou pis pyng
 af pi self / or ovy to
 pee seiden of me? pi
 late answerde / wher
 y am a ielb? pi self &
 bishops bitoken pee
 to me / what hast pou
 don? & ihu answerde /
 my kyndom is not of
 pis world / if my ky
 dom were of pis world
 oupely my mynystre
 schulden stryue pat
 y schulde not be take

to ye iellis / nolk forsope
my Eyndam is not of
hem? or of pis place /
et so pilate sende to hy
perfore art thou kyng / the
answerde / thou sayst for
y am a kyng / y in pis rig
am borne & to pis y come
in to ye world. pat y bere
wit nessyng to tremp / case
pat is of tremp herp my
cois / pilate seip to hym /
what is tremp? and wh
anne he hadde sende pro
mys. estedone he wente
oute to ye iellis. and sei
de to hem / y fynde no can
se agens hym / forsope it
is a custome to thou. pat
y leue or deliue oon to
thou in paske / yfoure wold
ze y shal distynge to
thou ye kyng of iellis /
where ye crieden ested
ue alle seyinge / not
pis but baraban / forsope
barabas was a prief.

Therfore le. xix
pauwe pilate
take ihu & oon
in gade & knyzt
et foldyng a crolle

of porces. puerden
to his hed. & diden also
ute hym a cloy of pur
pure & camen to hym
& oreden / heil kyng of
iellis / & yei zauen to
hym buffetis / estedone
pilate wente oute. &
sende to hem / lo y lide
hym to thou way buten
for y pat ze Enolke for
y fynde no cause in hy
yfore the wente oute
beryng a crolle of
porces. & a cloy of pur
pure / & he seip to he
lo ye man / yfoure wha
ne ye bishoppis & my
nistris hadden seen hy
yei crieden seyinge / cru
cifie crucifie hym / pi
late seip to hem / take
ze hym. & crucifie ze /
seip he y fynde no can
se in hym / ye iellies
answeriden to hym /
like han a kalke. & af
ter ye kalke he shal
dye. for he made hy
soudis ome / yfoure wh
anne pilate hadde herd
pis word. he drede

more / a he wente in to
 pe morehalle of stone
 & camde to ihu / of wgen
 nes art you. & pfore ihu
 zaf not to hyan answere
 pilate seip to hyan spe
 list you not to me. &
 Wost you not for y haue
 polker for to crucifie pe.
 & y haue polker for to
 deliue pe. & ihu answere
 rid / you schuld not
 haue any polker theyn
 me. no bot it were jo
 uen to pee from above.
 pfore he pat bitoke me
 to pee. hap ye mee sy
 ne / Yof & fro pem?
 pilate soupte forto de
 lyde hym / forsope pe
 ielbis crieden sayng
 if you leuyt hy mus
 you art not frend of
 cesar / for eche man pat
 maky hym self hye
 themsen cesar / pfore
 pilate wthame he had
 herde pese wordis. led
 de ihu frep & sat for to
 mesman in a place pat
 is orde lastratos in
 chelwe forsope wolde

thsa / forsope in englysh
 place of caluarie / forsope
 it was pe euentide of
 paske. as ye seye han
andur ne / a he seip
 to pe ielbis / lo zourne hye
 forsope pei crieden sey
 inge / do allei do allei
 crucifie hym / pilate seip
 to hem / schal y crucifie
 zourne kyng. & pe biidho
 pis answere den / we han
 not a kyng. no bot ce
 sar / pfore pame pilate
 brot hym to hem. pat
 he schulde be crucified
 forsope pei tolen ihu &
 leden hym oute / a he
 beringe to hym self a
 crosse. wente oute into
 pe place pat is orde
 of caluarie in chengal
 sathsa. where pei ana
 keden hym / a ower al
 way hym. oon on pis o
 de & oon on pis syde
 forsope ihu. pe mydel
 forsope pilate wrot a
 title. & putte on pe
 crosse / sopeh it was
 writen / ihu nazaren
 ng of ielbes / perfore

maire of þe ielkis radde
 þis tide for þe place
 where ihu is crucifiede
 was my þe cite / & it was
 written in chrewe. greke
 & latten / þfore þe bapty
 þis of ielkis saide to
 pilate / myl þou write
 kyng of ielkis. bot for
 he saide y am kyng of
 ielkes / pilate answered
 þat þat y haue written
 y haue written / þfore þe
 baptytes whanne þei had
 den crucified hym / token
 his clothes & maide foure
 þis to eche baptyt a part
 & a cite forsoþe þe cite
 was wy outhen seen &
 abouen bouen byal / þfore
 þei saiden to gide /
 lute we not it. bot lye
 we lot whos it is / þat
 þe scripture be fulfilled
 seynge / þei piden my
 clothes to hem. & in to
 my clow þei senten lot
 and oþer baptytis diden
 þese þinges // forsoþe hi
 sidis þe crosse of ihu fro
 de his modir & þe sis
 ter of his modir marie
 cleophe & marie maide

þeyn / þfore whanne ihe
 hadde seen his modir
 & þe discipule stondynge
 whome he louede he
 seip to his modir / wo
 man lo þi sone / after
 ward he seip to þe disci
 ple / lo þi modir / & fro
 þat hour þe discipule
 toke hir in to his mo
 der // after ward ihe by
 tynge for nolk alle þi
 ges ben endid / þat þe
 scripture schulde be ful
 filled. he seip / y rise /
 soþely a vessel was o
 put ful of cynegre /
 þei forsoþe puttynge
 aboute wy ysop þe
 spounge ful of cynegre
 re offriden to his mou
 þei þei þore whanne ihe
 hadde taken þe cynegre
 he seide it is endid / &
 þe hed holked doun. he
 birote azaf þe spire /
 þfore whanne it was
 passe euene þat þe lo
 dyes schulden not dwel
 le in þe crosse in þe sa
 bot for þis day of
 saboth was greet þe
 ielkis þiden pilate þat

pe hyppis of hem schuld
be broken. & taken away
þine knyghtes camen &
sopely þei braken þe pries
of þe furste. & of þe toþ
pat was crucified wip hy
forsope whanne þei hadde
comen to ihu. as þei say
en hym ded. þei brate
not his pries. bot oon of
þe knyghtes opened his syde
wip a spere. & anon
blode & water wente oute
& he pat say. bare wit
nessinge þof. & his wit
nessinge is trewe. & he
wote for he saw trewe
þinges. pat ze bilene
forsope þese þinges ben
don. pat þe scripture
schulde be fulfilled. ze
schulen not breke & ma-
ke lesse a boon of hym.
& eftson anoy scrip-
ture say. þei schulen see
in to whom þei prizen
wilk. sopely after þese
þinges ioseph of ara-
math. proued pilate
pat he schulde take a
wey þe body of ihu.
for pat he was a disciple

of ihu. forsope pryuy
for þe drete of ielbis. &
pilate suffrite. þfore he
came & toke away þe bo-
dy of ihu. sopely & wy-
deme came pat hadde co-
men to ihu furste in þe
nyzt. her mge amedlinge
of nyrrer & aldes. adan
hundred pounte. þfore þei
toke þe body of ihu. &
bouden it in hymne clo-
pes wip silere clynemē-
tis. as it is þe custome
of ielbis for to burie. so
pely in þe place where
he was crucified. was
azerd. & in þe zerd ane
we graue. in þe which
not zit ony man was
put. þfore þe. for þe pas-
se euene of ielbis. for pat
þe graue was wy. þei
put in ihu. **L**
forsope in oon
of þe sabot pat
is þe weke. ma-
rie maudeleyne came er-
ly to þe graue whanne
zit derkenessis weren.
& she say þe stoue tur-
ned ayen fro þe graue.

transfere
ent

þfore she ran & came to
 symon & petre & to ano
 þ disciple. Whome ihs fo
 ned & say to hem/ þey
 han taken þe lord fro þe
 grane. & we witen not
 where þei han put hy
 þfore petre wente oute
 & pilke oþer disciple. &
 þei comen to þe grane/
 forsoþe þei tbo riuen
 to gedir/ & pilke of disti
 ple ran bifore. Simer þa
 ne petre & came firste
 to þe grane/ & ihsanne
 he hadde mholbed hym.
 he say þe schens put
 neþeles he entride not
 in/ þerfore symonut þe
 tre came cnyngge hym.
 & he entride in to þe gra
 ne/ & he say þe schens
 put & þe outerie pat
 was on his hed. not put
 wip þe schens. Got hy
 it self wlaþpid in to o
 place/ þfore þane & pilke
 disciple pat came firste
 to þe grane entrid. &
 say & bylened/ forsoþe
 þei wisten not 3it þe
 scripture. for it bihoued

hym for to rise azem fro
 ded/ þfore þe disciples
 wenren eftesone to hem
 self/ forsoþe marie sto
 de at þe grane. Wip ou
 ten forþe wepynges/ þfore
 þe while she wepte she
 bolbed hir & biþede stay
 in to þe grane. & she
 say tbo aungelis. Sit
 tynge in white. oon at
 þe hed & oon at þe feet.
 wger þe body of ihs was
 put/ þei sayn to hir/
 woman what wepist þu/
 she saide to hem/ for
 þei han taken alþey my
 lord. & y woot not wge
 re þei han put hym/
 ihsanne she hade sent
 þese ymges. she is tur
 ned abak & say ihs stin
 dyngge. & wiste not for
 it was ihs/ ihs say
 to hir/ woman what
 wepist þou. ihsanne se
 list þou she geþynge
 for he was a gardiner.
 say to hym/ Sir 3if þu
 hast taken hym up.
 say to me where þou
 hast putte hy. and y

shal take hym aboy/ the
saide to hir/ marie/ she
coudid. sayp to hym/
rabori/ pat is seide mas-
ter/ the seip to hir/ nyl
you touche me/ for y ha-
ue not yett ascendid. az
thied op to my fadir/
forsope go to my brue-
ren. and say to hem/
y oye up to my fadir.
a zoure fadir. to my
god. a zoure god/ marie
maudelyn came. tel-
ge to pe dysaplis. for y
haue seen pe lord. and
pese pinges he seide to
me/ Whanne euen was
in pat day in oon of pe
sabotis. a pe zatis were
schit. where dysaplis we-
ren gederid for drede of
pe ielvis. the came &
stode in pe mydel of pe
dysaplis. a seip to hem/
pees to zou/ a Whanne
he hadde seide pe ping.
he schelide to he his
hondis a pe oye/ where
pe dysaplis roiden. pe
lord oren/ pfre he sei-
de to hem este/ pees to

zou/ as pe fadir sente
me. a y sende zou/ nysa
ne he hadde seide pese pin-
ges. he bleb in a saide to
hem/ take ze pe holy gost/
Whos cyres ze schulen
forzene. pei ben forzene/
a Whos ze schulen wiphol-
de. pei ben wipholden. p
forsope thomas oon of
pe tvelue. pat is seid didi-
mus. was not wip hem
Whanne the came/ pfore
oper dysaplis saiden/ we
han seen pe lord/ forsope
he seide to hem/ no bot
y shal see in his hondis
pe fisting of nayles a
shal sende my fynge
in to pe places of nayles
a shal sende myn hend
in to his side. I shal not
silence a after eynre day-
es estresone his dysaplis
weren wip yue. a thomas
wip hem/ the came pe
zatis schit. a stode in
pe mydel a saide/ pees
to zou/ asturward he seip
to thomas/ bringe in
hidur pi fynge a see
myn hondis. a bringe

to ryse hond & sende in to
my side: & nyl pou be on
byleueful bot feyful: tho
was answerid & sende to
hym/ my lord & my god: ihs
sey to hym/ thomas for
you hast seen me: you
byleuedist/ blessed pei pat
salben not: & hau byleued/
fresope & manye ower oys
ues ihs dide in pe syt of
his dysaplis: pe whiche
ben not writen in pis bo
ke/ forsope pefe ben writen
pat ze byleue: for ihs is
pe sone of god/ & pat ze
byleuynges haue hyf in his
name: lc. xxi.

Afterward ihs esteso
ne shewid hym to
his dysaplis: at pe
see of tyberiadis.
sope he shewid piis/ pe
weren to gedir symount pe
tre & thomas pat is sende
didan/ & nathanael pat
was of pe cane of galilee.
& pe sones of zebede & ilko
ower of his dysaplis/ sy
mount petre sey to hem/
I go fe to fische/ pei say
en to hym/ & we comen
wip pee/ & pei werten

oute & fisheden in to a
boot: & in pat nyzt pe
tosen no ping/ forsope
pe moelbe made ihs fo
dem pe brynke/ nepe
les pe dysaplis/ Enelbe
not: for it is ihs/ pfore
ihs sey to hem/ child
ren: wher ze han omg son
pynges pmys/ pei answe
riden/ nay he said to
hem/ sende ze pe nette
in to pe rythalf of pe
rollyng: & ze shulen
fynde/ pfore pei senten
pe nett: & nolk pu myz
ten not dralbe it for mul
titude of fische/ pfore
pilke dysaple pat ihs
lonede: said to petre/ it
is pe lord/ symount ^{apetre} psh
anne he hade herde for
it is pe lord: gude hym
wip a cote/ sope he
was naked: & sente hy
in to pe see/ sope he
dysaplis camen hy boot
or rolynges to pe lond/
for pei weren not fer
fro pe lond: bot as ilko
hundrid cubitis: dralby
ge pe nette of fische/

þfore as þe camen to þe
in to þe lond. þe salben
woolis put. & a fische put
upon & bred. ihs seip
to hem/ þyngge ȝe of þe
fisthes. þe wiche ȝe ha
taken nolt/ symount þe
tre fized up & drew þe
nette in to þe lond ful
of greet fisthes. an hu
drid fifty & þre. & wiche
þe weren so many. þe
nette is not broken. ihs
seip to hem/ come ȝe. ete
ȝe/ & no man of carige
at mete durste ære hy
who art þou. wiche ȝyngge
fize it is þe lord. & ihs ca
me & toke bred & gaf to
hem. & fische also/ now
his prid tyme of day.
ihs is shewide to hy
disciples. wiche he ros
men fro ded. þfore wiche
ne þe hadden eten ihs
seip to symount petre//
symount of jon louest
þou me. more þanne
þese. he seip to hym/
ȝhe lord. þou wost for ȝ
loue þee/ ihs seip to hy
fete þou my lambren/

est he seip to hym/ sy
mount of jon louest þou
me. he seip to hym//
ȝhe lord. þou wost for ȝ
loue þee/ he seip to hy
fete þou my lambren/
he seip to hym þe pride
tyme/ symount of jon
louest þou me. petre
is sorȝ of þou. for he
seip to hym þe pride
tyme louest þou me. and
he seip to hym/ lord þou
wost alle þinges. þou
wost for ȝ loue þee/ ihs
seip to hym/ fete my she
pe/ treuþ treuþ ȝ seip
to þee wiche þou were
yongre þou gurdist þee.
& wandredist wiche þou
woldist/ soþe wiche
þou shalt were alter.
þou shalt holde for þin
hondis. & anopre schal
gide þee. & lede þe wiche
du þou wilt not/ soþe
hy he seide þis þing. sig
nifyngge hy wiche deþ
he was to gloufygod.
& wiche he hadde seide
þese þinges. he seip to
hym/ sue þou me petre

comfide say pilke duple
 synge whome the lonyd.
 A ye which restide in ye co
 per on his brest. & he sai
 de to hym/ lord who is it
 pat shal btraye pee. &
 shone whanne petre hadde
 seen pis. he seip to ihu/
 lord what forsope pis/ ihe
 seip to hym/ so y wole hy
 dwelle til y come/ what
 to pee/ sue pou me/ shone
 pis word wente oute amo
 ge brisen. for pilke duple
 diep not/ & ihe said
 not to hym. for he dyep
 not. but so y wole hym
 dwelle til pat y come. wh
 at to pee/ pis is pilke dis
 caple pat berip witness
 ge of yese ynges/ & wrote
 yese ynges/ & lke witen
 for his witnessinge is trell
 forsope y ben many ope
 signes or myracles pat
 ihe dide. ye whiche if ye
 be writte bi eche by hi self.
 y deme nesh ye wold hym
 self molle take po holes.
 pat ben to be witen.

Then endyn ye

Gospelis of Jon
After ye Lettre

And bygymer
ye plog of poule

Hirst us by
 honey on
 dur stonde
 to whome
 oper wh
 ye apostle
 poule wry
 ty his ep
 istles/ first
 apert is not to trouble
 hem after ye gospelis.
 pat ben ye fulfillingge
 of ye lawe may onto au
 se haue write yese epus
 tles to alle churchis/ mo
 ke oip to us in yese epus
 tles pceptis & ensum
 ples of luyinge fullest
 or mozte plentuously.

ben defied bot in ye bygynnyng
ynge of ye bemyng churche
the uelke causes beynge
also questyouns to comp
se after he excludid not
onek yis ye apostle bot
also ye pphetis diden for
whi after ye salve of moy
ses yrene in ye whiche
alle maundementis we
ren conteyned. ye pphetis
also eside not wip her
prechyng to priste doun
ye symmes of ye pepul
et in bokis of oure memo
rie seide in to whome ye
endis of ye world bep
come he writen perfore
to ye romayns ye whiche
beynge same of iellus
et same of paynyms by
bemyng wolde wip prou
de contencium condur
putte eyer opur ye iellus
thysore gode we ben an
goly folle ye whiche god
fro ye bygynnyng han lo
ued et noursched we of ye
byrned of abraha of an
goly bynaye han disten
did we deliuid fro egypt
han passid ye dry see
on fote fro us pharao.

drenchid wip his oost dyc
de to us god manna et au
gelis were reyned in desert
and ope ryges pe seide
pat to rehersy were ryt
longe onch. Here we seip
pat yllle lord in ye whiche
also ze ben seide to bileue
to us of ye salve was byhyte
ze forsope ben gentiles et
paynyms fro ye bygynny
ng firsle ye whiche nede
hadde knoulesche of god bot
eile to denchis hanep ser
ued is it wher yf we eq
te pat ze turnyd to dry fro
malmetis to us be copari
soned et not raper ze be
as me turnyd to ye olde
lawe as eile ze han be in
ye lawe of moyses and y
same ze haue anapir
ayen romaynes.

Romayns ye whiche
are cite of rome bried
to ihu est so of false apost
lis were de prayd yf andir pe
name of oure lord ihu est
it to ye olde lawe et cōfession
ye were ledi yere remokip
ye apostle to ye ihu et ye
gospelis bileue wryteto
go from atthenys.

Dule ser
uant of
ihū crist
deped ap
ostle dep
tid in to
pe euan
gelie of
god. pe
whiche
he by hit byfore by his ap
phets in holy scriptur is
of his come pe whiche is
made of pe seed of damp.
after pe flesche pe whiche
pe whiche is pdestinate
or byfore ordyned by grace
pe come of god in vertu.
after pe spirit of halibye
of pe azemysynge of dide
men of ihū crist oure lord.
by whome we han restey
ued grace and apostlehed
or state of apostle to obey
the to pe fere in alle fol
kes for his uame in whi
che & be ben pe cleped of
ihū crist to alle pat be
at come. pe loued of god.
clepid holy. grace to zon
& pees of god oure fadir.
& of pe lord ihū crist. the
ste sodely y to panchyngis

to my god. by ihū crist
for alle zow. for zoure
fere is schelid in alle
pe world. forsope god is
albitnesse to me to whome
y serue in my spirit in
pe gospel of his come. for
my outen celynge y make
mynde of you enmore in
my preiers. if by any ma
ner afterward cūtyme
y haue esy or sped. wey
in pe wille of god of co
mynge to zow forsope y
desire for to see you. pat
y zyne to you cū pms
of spiritual grace to you
to be confermyd pat is
to seye for to be confort
tid to gide in you. by p
fere zoure & myne pat
is to gedir or of cke to
oper sodely bryden y
myl you for to conknoke
pat after y purposed for
to come to you. and y am
forbeten til zit. pat y ha
ue cū fruyte in you as
in oper folkis to grekis
and barbaris or lepen
men to wise men & unwise
men y am dettour. so p

pat is in me is redy forto
 euangelize & to you pat
 ben at Rome forsope y
 shame not pe gospel for
 it is pe wille of god in to
 helpe to eche man by le
 uynge to pe iell first &
 to pe greke. Specially pe ryt
 witnessse of god is shewid
 in it of feip in to feip as
 it is writen forsope aunst
 man Guier of feip for
 sope pe wrape of god is
 shewid fro heuene vpon
 al corrupte & corruptibyl
 nesse of po me pat wip
 holten & holten abac pe
 treupe of god in vnyrt
 witnessse for pat pat is
 Enolwen of god is shewid
 & made open to hem for
 sope god shewid to he
 for pe vnkynde ymages
 of hym of pe creature
 of pe world by po ym
 ges pat ben made vni
 derstonen ben holten
 & pe enclastyng of
 of hym & pe godhed
 so pat per ben vney
 asfable for vshame per
 hadde Enolwe god. per

stoufiden not as god
 or diden panynges bot
 per awysshiden in her
 pouertis and pe conlyse
 herte of hem is derk
 or made derk Specially per
 seynge hem self for to
 be vnde men. be made
 foolis & per chawngen
 pe glorie of god vnyrt
 corruptible. pat may not
dye ne be pepyred in to
 licnesse of an ymage of
 corruptible man & of bird
 dis & of foure foud bes
 tes & of serpentis for
 whiche yng god bitole
 hem in to pe desiris of
 her herte in to vnder
 nesse. pat per pynysche
 wip wronges & dispytes
 her bodyes in hem self
 pe whiche ma chawngi
 den pe treupe of god in
 to lityng & herieten
 & serueden to a creature
 raper ymage to a creature
pat is maker of nouyt pat
 is blessed in to worldis &
 vny ouren ende Amen & so
 be it. ptere god bytote he
 in to passionis & yuel

fame or chenshyre forlysh
 pe lymen of hem chann
 giten pe kyndely use in to
 pat use pat is azeynes kn
 de also forsope a pe malis
or men pe kyndely use of
 woman forsaken. breynge
 in her desires to godu ma
 tys in to malys. Wm. ch
 ge filpe hole. and resseyu
 ge in hem self pe mede
 or hire pat bysofte of sin
 erroure and as pe prony
 den not for to hane god.
 in Enolkyng. god hitole
 hem in to a reprovabill hit
 pat pei do po ynges pat
 acciden not or bisemen not
 hem fullfild wip a lye
 bidnesse malice fornyca
 om. concupse. weywardnesse
 ful of enye. mansleynge.
 styf gyle. yuel wille.
 pryuy hachters or solb
 ers of distord. detracou
 res or oppyn hachters.
 hateful to god. wrongly
 dispisers of ower men.
 proude. hye. or ouer me
 hire frideris of yuel
 ynges. not oberstym
 ge to fadir a modir.

oulyse. onouenable in be
 ryng. wip outen foy. wip
 outen affection. or loue.
 wip outen goond of pees.
 wip outen mergi. pe wsh
 che wshame pei haden
 sholde pe ryztwysnesse
 of god. and understonden not
 for pei pat don suche y
 ges. ben worpi pe depe
 not onely pei pat don
 suche ynges. but also
 pei pat consenten to
 man deringe.

In Dr wshche yng
 pou art onex
 cusable. pou icht
 man pat demest
 sovely in what yng
 pou demest anoy man.
 pou condempnest in gylt
 forsope pou doft pe same
 ynges. wshche pou de
 mest. sovely we witen.
 for pe dome of god is up
 treupe in to hem pat don
 suche ynges. gessist
 pou man forsope pat be
 myst hem pat don su
 che ynges and y doft
 hem. for pou shalt a
 scape. pe dome of god.

Wher dyffest you pe rebes
 sis of his goodnesse & paa
 ence & longe abidynges
 outnolkest you fir pe be
 wygnete or good Wille of
 god. ledy pce to penitence
 forsope astur ym hardnesse
 & vnrepentaunt herte.
 you tresonst to pce. Wrappe
 in to pe day of Wrappe
 & of shalpyng of peryt
 ful dome of god. pat shal
 zelde to ethe man up his
 werkes. sope to hem p
 up pance of good wert.
 glorie & honour & amany
 aion. to hem selvyng eide
 fastyng hys forsope to he
 pat ben of Grys & pat
 assenten not to treyde.
 bot byleuen to wickednesse.
 Wrappe & indignaion.
 tribulacion & anglyste
 in to ethe soule of man
 worchyng yuel pyng.
 of ielle first & of grete
 sope glorie & honour
 & pces to ethe worchyng
 gode pyng to iell firste
 & to grete. for acceptions
 of psonys. pat is to put
oon to fore any wry oute

desert. is not anentis
 god. forsope. Wher ener
 synen wry outen lawe.
 shulen pyste wry oute
 lawe. & wso eide in pe
 lawe synen. shulen be
 demed by pe lawe. sope
 pe herets of lawe ben
 not iust anentis god.
 bot pe doers of pe lawe
 shulen be made iust for
 sope. Whanne hepen pat
 han not lawe. don bynde
 by or by fyringe of lawe
 po pmyes pat ben of pe
 lawe. pei not hanyng.
 suche mane lawe. be lawe
 to hem self. pat shewe
 pe werk of lawe wryten
 in her hertis. pe consence
 of hem zeldyng to he
 albitnessyng & bitwix
 hem self of poyntes ac
 cusinge or also defendy
 ge in pe day. Whanne god
 shal deme pe pny pmy
 ges of men up my gos
 pel by ihu crist. forsope
 if you art named a iell.
 & resist in pe lawe. &
 haste glorie in god. and
 hast Enolke his Wille

& you lemyd hy pe lalbe
 pruyft more pfitable
 ymges trusty p cilt
 for to be a leder of blynde
 men. pe litz of hem pat
 ben in derfnesses. atterher
 of conbyse men. amastur
 of zonge children. haryn
 ge pe forme of slence &
fymyng of treyde in pe
lawe. pfor pou pat te
 chist anopr. techist not
 p cilt. pou pat pchist
 to not stole. stole. pou
 pat cast to not to leche
 rye. doft lecherpe. pou p
 wlatist ydles & maldine
tis. doft sacrilege. pat is
peste of holy ymges. pou
 pat gtonest in pe lalbe.
 brekyng of pe lawe. con
 wofshipist or di. Anst god/
 forsope pe name of god.
 hy jon is blassemyd amon
 ge hepen men. as it is wri
 ten. sovely aradisonn
 pfitte if you kepe pe lalbe/
 forsope if you be a tpasso
 ure of pe lalbe py aram
 asionn is made ppuac
 or custome of hepe men
 fepe ryzfulness of lawe
 where ho ppuac chal

not be retid in to aradisonn.
 and pe ppuac pat is of by
 & fulfyllinge pe lawe. or
 hal deme pce. pat by let
 tre and aradisonn art t
 passoure of pe lalbe. for
 sope not he pat is a ielbe
 in open. ne pe aradisonn
 pat is in pe fleaste open.
 Got he pat is a ielbe in hid.
 & pe aradisonn of herte
 in spirit not in letre.
 whos ppsyng is not of
 men. but of god.

Therfore what is
 more to a ielbe. or
 what pfit of ar
 adisonn. thyche by al ma
 ner. firste sovely for pe
 spekyngis of god. ben by
 taken to hem. what sovely
 if sume of hem by leue
 not. & wher pe onbilen
 of hem hay anoyed pe fep
 of god. & for be it. forsope
 god is trelle. sovely eche
 man a lyer & vntable as
 it is wryten. pat pou be
 iustified or founde trelle
 in pi wordis. and outwme
 whanne pou art dmed/
 forsope if oure wrednessse
 or vnequyte comende pe

abse
 ryttyfuesse of god. What
 schul we seie? Where god
 is wickid. pat brynges in
 wraþpe. up man y sey for
 be it. ellis hou god schal
 deme his world. forþe if
 pe treupe of god hay abou-
den or be plenteuous. in
in my leofynge. in to pe
glorie of hym. what a
yt am y y dmed as a syn-
ner. and not as we ben
blasphemed. a as sume
seyn. us for to sey. do we
yuel pmyng. pat good pi-
ges come. whos sampana-
nom is iust. what þfæc
passen we hem. nay cipe
ly we han schewid by oþle
ielkis a greþis alle for to be
undir syne as it is writen
for þis not ony mā iust. þ
is not amā condurtondy
ge. neþ sekyge god. al folk
den alkeþ to giden. þei ben
made unþfitable. þis not
pat doþ good pmyng. þis not
til to com. a cepulre ope
nyge is pe profe of hem.
Wip her tiges þei dūn
alyngly or trecherously.
pe weym of eddis. pat

ben cloped aspis. undir
 her lippes. pe moupe of
 whome is ful of ansyn-
ge or weryngge a bithnesse
pe feet of hem be cwyþ.
for to chete oute blode
contrauoun or defouþnge
to gedir and mfeilate.
or anfidnesse in pe wo-
es of hem. a þei knelle
not pe way of pees. pe
drede of god is not bifæc
her yen. forþe we wy
ten for what eke pmyng
pe lakke speþ. it speþ
to hem pat ben in pe lakke
pat eke moupe be stap
pid. and eke world be
mad enget to god. for
of pe werkis of lakke.
eke flesþe. pat is mā
fynde schal not be mfa-
ried byfore hym. forþe
by pe lakke is knowyge
of synne. forþe nolke
wip outen pe lakke. pe
rytlyfnesse of god is
schewid. witnesid of pe
lakke a apþetis. cypels
pe rytlyfnesse of godis
by pe fay of ihu crist
on alle pat byleuen in

to hym forsope þis no dis
tinction or deptynge for
alle me symmeden and han
ned to þe stone of god. þe
iustified flesh by his grace
by þe redempcion or pe are
kyng pat is in crist ihu
thome god purposid or
acceptid an helpere by
ferp in his blode to þe
schelwyng of his rythwis
nesse for remyssoun of þe
fore synge synes in þe
sustentaoun or berynge
op. of god to þe schelwyng
of his rythwisnesse in þis
tyme. pat he be iust and
iustifyinge hym pat is
of þe ferp of ihu crist.
Where is þore þe gloryfy
mge. it is excluded or put
oute by what lawe. of de
dis wyng. nay. but by
þe lawe of ferp. forsope
we demen aman for to ius
tified by ferp. wip outen
werkis of þe lawe. wiser
of ielbis. is god onely. wh
er he is not of hepe men.
is & of hepen. for sope
by oon is god þe iustified
araisoun of ferp. and

þynae or hepen men.
by ferp. þore distre. þe
lawe by þe ferp. fer be it
but no stabilisthen þe lawe.
What þerfore schu
len we seie oure
fader abraham
for to haue founden op
þe fleish. þe firsop if a
brahim be iustified of þe
werkis of lawe. he hap
store. but not anentis
god. what copelþ seip þe
scripture. abraham by
loued to god. and it is ret
tid to hym to rythwisnesse
forsope to hym pat wor
chip. mete is not zouen
to or retid op grace. bot
op dette. bot to hym þe
worchip not. forsope by
leuyng in to hym pat
iustified þe wicked mā
or unprouse. his ferp
is retid to rythwisnesse
op þe purposyng of
goddis grace. as and
damp seip þe blessede
nesse of aman to ielso
me god acceptyng ryth
wisnesse wip oute þe
werkis of þe lawe. claf
sed þe wyllos wickednes

ben foreuen. & alhos syn
nes ben kelyd or hid blis
fid pe man to whome god
rettid not synne/ perfore
pis blessednesse dwellyn not
onely in arānshoun. or also
in spūae or state of heven
men/ forsope we seuen for
pe fere is rettid to abraham
to ryghtwysnesse/ hou pfore
it is rettid/ in arānshoun
or in spūae/ not in arā
nshoun bot in spūae/ & he
told a signe of arānshoun
amarkynge or tokenynge
of ryghtwysnesse of fere pat
is in spūae. pat he be fa
dir of alle men bylenynge
by spūae. pat it be remd
to hem to ryghtwysnesse &
pat he be fadir of arān
shoun/ not onely to he
pat ben of arānshoun.
but & to hem pat suen
his steppis of pe fere of
oure fadir abraham. pat
is in spūae/ forsope not
by pe lakke is bihest to
abraham or to his seed.
pat he be pe er of pe
world. bot by ryghtwysnesse
of fere/ sovely if pei pat

ben of pe lakke ben cyris.
fere is anentistid & distri
ed/ by heste is don alle/ for
sove pe lakke boechip wrap
pe sovely wher pe lakke
is not neyr is putriciam
or spassynge perfore of
pe fere. pat op grace by
heste is stable or stedefaste
to eche seed. not to pat
seed onely pat is of pe
lakke. bot to pat pat is of
pe fere of abraham. pe whi
che is fadir of us alle. as
it is writen/ For y haue
sette pee fadir of manye
folkis biforn god to whome
you hast byleued/ pe whi
che god quykeny deid
men & clepep po pynge
pat ben not as po pat
ben/ pe whiche abraham
apeynes hope byleued in
to hope. pat he shuld
be made fadir of manye
folkis. op pat pat is sei
de to hym/ pis shal p
seed be as steris of he
uene. & as grauel or sand
pat is in pe bynke of
pe see/ & he is not made
unstedfaste in pe bylene.

neþ he byþelste his body noll
 myz ded whanne he was
 almeft of an hundred yere
 & pe wombe of care myz
 ded; also in pe byþeest of
 god. Be dwiled not wry on
 trust. bot he is confitide
 in hylen zeuyngge & there
 to god wryngge most fully
 for what eide ymges god
 hay byþt. he is myz
 for to do; þfore it is reitid
 to hym to ryt wisnesse; for
 sope it is not wryten onely
 for hym. for it is reitid to
 hym to ryt wisnesse. bot
 & for us to whiche it chal
 be reitid. bylenyngge into
 hym pat rehid oure lord
 ihu crist fro ded synne
 pe whiche is bytaken for
 oure synnes. and ros a
 zein for oure iustifyngge;
 her fore
We iustified of
 feip. haue pees
 at god by oure lord ihu
 crist. by whome we han
 acesse or myz goyngge to
 by feip in to his grace
 in whiche we stonde &
 han glorie in pe hope of

glorie. of godis ones; for
 sope not onely. bot & we
 glorie in tribulaciouns.
 wryngge pat tribulacioun
 wrythp paaence. sopeþ
 paaence promyngge. forþe
 pe puyngge hope; for sope
 hope confumdyng not. for
 pe charite of god is oped
 abroad in oure hertis by
 pe holy gost; pat is zoned
 to us; wher to sopeþ dyed
 crist for wrythid men. wha
 ne we weren zit oek &
vuntable op tyme; sope
 by amecp's dyen ony ma
 for pe iust; for whi for
 pe good. paaenture su
 man ear dize; for sope
 god comendip his cha
 rite in us; for if whanne
 we weren zit synners
 op tyme. crist is ded for
 us. myche more nolle
 we iustified in his blod
 schulen be saaf fro wry
 pe by hym; sopeþ if
 whanne we weren ene
 myes we ben reconfuld
 to god by dep of his come
 myche more we reconfi
 led schulen be saaf in pe

lyf of hym/ for cōpely not
onely. bot & we glōnen in
god. by onre lord ihu crist.
by whome we han resseyued
nōw reconseylynge. or acq
dyngre perfore as by o mā
cyme entride in to this
worlde & by cyme dep. so
dep passide for in to alle
men in whiche man alle
men cymeden/ cōpely til
to pe lalbe. cyme was in
pe worlde/ forsope cyme
was not lalyd or retid.
Whanne lalbe was not/
bot dep regued fro adam
til to moyses also in to
hem pat cymeden not
in licnesse of trespasyng
ge of adam. pe elliche
is forme or licnesse of oon
to comynge/ bot not as
gilt or trespas. so & pe
riste/ cōpely if porly pe
gilt of oon many ben
ladyd. myche more pe gra
ce of god and riste in pe
grace of o man ihu crist
hay aboundide in to ma
ny men/ and not as by
o cyme. so & by riste
for whi cōpely donne of

oon in to condempnaci
oon. grace forsope of
many gyltis or trespasyng
is in to instyfificaciōn/
forsope if in pe gilt of on
dep reguede porly on. my
che more men takynge
plente of grace & riste
& rytlyfnesse in by schi
len regue by oon ihu crist
perfore as by pe gilt of
oon in to alle men in to
condempnaciōn. so &
by pe rytlyfnesse of oon
in to alle men in to ius
tifyinge of by cōpely.
as by pe moledience of
oo man. manye ben ac
dynd cymenis. so
and by obediēce of oon
manye schulen be ordy
ned iust/ forsope pe lalbe
entride. pat gilt schuld
be plenteuous/ cōpely
where gilt was. plente
uous & grace abound or
was plenteuous. pat as
cyme regryde in to dep.
so & grace regue by ryt
lyfnesse in to edyfifyge
by ihu crist onre
lord.

a b

Therfore / c. vi /
 What schulen we
 dope? schulen we
 dwellen in synne. pat gra
 ce be plenteuous. For bent
 copely we pat ben ded to
 synne. hou schulen we ly
 ue 3t hymes. Wsher bryp
 en ze onknolken for wshu
 ende ze ben baptisid in criste
nyd in criste ihu in his dey
we ben baptisid copely
 we ben to gedir buried wip
 hym by cristenidome in to
 dey pat as criste ros fro
 dede spiritus by glorie of
 pe fadir. so a we walk
 in ye newbenesse of hys
 forsope if we plawnde
 to gider. ben made to ye
 licnesse of his dey. also
 and we schulen be of ry
 syngge azem. Wtyngge y
 oure old man is to gedir
 crucified. pat pe body of
 synne be distruied. pat
 we serue no more to sy
 ne. copely he pat is ded
 to synne. is iustified fro
 synne. forsope if we ben
 ded wip criste. we bylene
 pat also we schulen lyue

to gedir wip hym. Wty
 ge for criste risynge azem
 fro dede spiritus. nolke
 dey not. dey schal no
 more lodeschipe to hym
 forsope he pat is ded to
 synne. he is ded conys
 copely he pat lyuep.
 he lyuep to god. so a ze
 deme to zon for to be ded
 copely to synne. forsope
 hyngge to god in ihu. et
oure lord perfore regne
 not synne in oure dedly
 body. pat ze okeaste to
 his conuetyngis. bot ney
 if ze zoure mebris. arme
 ris of wickednesse to synne.
 bot if ze zon gilt to god.
 as of dede men hyngge
 a zoure mebris. armis
 of rytlwisnesse to god. for
 sope synne schal not lode
 schipe to zon. copely ze
 ben not vndur kalbe.
 bot vndur grace. What
 more? schulen we synne
 for we ben not vndur
 ye kalbe. bot vndur gra
 ce. For be it. Wten ze
 not for to wshome ze
 zeuen zon seruantis

ende
ff

for to obersthe: ze ben serua
untis of pat ying to whiche
ze han oberstid: ep of sy
ue to dep: epr of obedience
to rytlyshesse/ sopeh y d
pachynges to god: pat ze
weren suantis of syne:
forsope oberstid ze han of
herte in to pat forme of
techyng: in whiche ze ben
bytaken/ forsope ze dely
uerid fro syne: ben ma
de seruuntis of rytlysh
nesse/ y ore mannes yng
for pe infirmyte or onsa
kenesse of zoure fleish:
sopeh as ze han zouen
zoure mebris for to serue
to vndermessse and wicked
nesse to wickednesse: so
nolt zeue ze zoure mebris
for to serue to rytlyshes
in to holynesse/ forsope
whanne ze were seruun
tis of syne: ze weren
fre of rytlyshesse/ fore
what fruyt hadden ze
putte in yo ynges: in
whiche ze shamen nolt/
noon fore pe ende of
hem is dep/ forsope nolt
ze deliuerid fro syne:

made sopeh seruuntis
to god: han zoure fruyt
in holynesse: pe ende for
sope everlastyng lyf
treuly pe hris of syne:
dep/ pe grace of god: ale
lastyng lyf in ihu crist
oure lord.

ende

Beripen wher
ze onenollen/
forsope y speke
to men wyng
pe lawe/ for pe lawe hap
lodshys in a man: hou
longe tyme it dure/ for
whi pat woman pat is
vndur an housbonde:
is bounden to pe lawe
hyngge pe housbonde/
sopeh if hir housbonde
be ded: she is deliuerid
or vnbonden fro pe lawe
of pe ma/ perfore hyngge
pe man: she shal be de
ped auontresse: if she
shal be wyf anoy man/
forsope if hir housbonde
be ded: she is deliuerid
fro pe lawe of pe man/
she be not auontresse:
if she shal be wyf anoy
man: treuly bryden.

157
A 3e ben made deed to pe
lawe purz pe body of crist
pat ze be an opers p^roces
agem fro ded spiritis
we here frugt to god^d for
sope whemic we were in
fleische. passions of sy
nes pat weren by pe lawe
wroughten in oure natures
pat we schuldea here fr
ugt to dep/ noll forsope
we ben vnbounden fro
pe lawe of dep/ whiche
we were holden so p^r we
serue in newnesse of
spirit. & not in oldenes
of lettre/ what p^roce it
hulde we seye. pe lawe is
syne/ for be it/ bot q. knel
not syne. no bot by pe
lawe/ for why. y. naste
not couetyse fro to sy
ne. no bot pe lawe seyd/
you shalt not coueyte/
forsope occasiō taken.
syne by pe mandmet
hap wrought in me al co
uetyngre or couetyse. so
pely wy outen pe lawe.
syne was ded/ forsope
p^r huede wy oute pe lawe
sith me bot whemic pe

comandment had comē
syne kynd agem/ sopeh
q. am ded. & pe coman
dmet is found to me pat
was to h^l. p^ris p^ris fro to
be dep/ for why syne oca
sion take by pe coman
dmet aspyued me. &
by it slew me/ & so pe la
we sopeh is holy. & pe
comandmet holy & iust
& good/ p^roce pat p^ris
good. to me is made dep.
for be it/ bot p^r syne ape
re or be knowen. synne
purz good p^ris wrought
dep to me. pat pe be mad.
syne synnyngre oīd man.
or mesure by coman de
met. sopeh we write for
pe lawe is spiritual or
goodly forsope q. a flei
sche. seeld vnder syne/
sopeh q. vnderstonde
not pat. p^r q. whiche/ so
pely q. & not pe good
p^ris pat q. wolle. bot
q. & yllk yuel p^ris pat
q. hate/ forsope yf q. &
pat p^ris pat q. wolle not
q. consente to pe lawe for
it is good/ noll sopeh

¶ Wiche not pat pyng
now. Bot pat syne þe dwel
lep in me. Sopeþ. ¶ Wote
for in me. pat is in my
fleische dwelþ no good
for why. Wille hy to me.
trewly forto pfour me
good þis. ¶ fynde not.
forsope y. & not yllk good.
þis pat q. Wole. Bot. ¶ & y
illk yuel þis pat y. Wole
not. Sopeþ. 3if y. & y. þis
pat y. Wole not. ¶ Wiche
not it. Bot pe syne pat
dwelleþ in me. þfore. ¶
fynde a lawe to me wyllyge
for to do good þis. pe whi
che yuel þis. lary to me.
perfore pe lawe is good
to me wyllyge. forsope. ¶
dhyte to gidur to pe lawe
of god. op pe mer ma.
Sopeþ. ¶ See anoy lawe
in my meþis. agensy
tyng to pe lawe of my
soule. and makynge me
caryf in pe lawe of sy
ne. pat is in my me
þis. ¶ Allwoful man
who shal delide me. þo
pe body of þis syne.
forsope pe grace of god.

by ihu crist oure lord. þ
fore in my self by resou
of pe soule. serue to pe
lawe of god. Sopeþ. by my
fleische. to pe lawe of syne. a
Therfore now no þis
of dampnacion. is
to þe pat ben in ihu
crist. pe whiche wanden
not after pe fleische. forsope
pe spirit of luf in ihu.
haye delided me fro pe lawe
of syne & depe. for why
pat y. was imposs. ble to
pe lawe. i. what þis it was
seek or free. by fleische.
god. And ynge þis syne
in to pe lichness of flei
sche of syne. & of syne
þe dampned syne i. flei
sche. pat pe iustefyge
of lawe were fulfilled
in us. pat not after pe
fleische we wanden.
Bot after pe spirit. þis
pe pey pat ben after pe
fleische. sauereþ þo in
god pat ben of pe flesh.
Bot pey pat ben after
pe spirit. felen þo in
god pat ben of pe spi
rit. for why pe þence

of fleische is dep/fforfope
pe prudence of spirit: list
A pees// for pe wisdom of
fleische is enemy to god
fforfope it is not soget to
pe lawe of god. Soperly nep
it may/ fforfope pei pat
be in fleische. moun not
plese to god/ soperly ze ben
not in fleische. Bot i spi
rit. nepeles if pe spirit
of god dwellip in zou/ffor
fope if ony ma hy not
pe spirit of crist. no is
not his fforfope if crist
is in zou. soperly pe body
is ded for syne. Bot pe sp
rit lyuep for iustifyinge/
ffor if pe spirit of hym
pat reikid ihu crist fro
ded spiritis dwellip in
zou. he pat reikid ihu
crist fro ded spiritis. schal
quylen & zoure dedly bo
dyes. for pe spirit of hy
dwellip in zou/ perfore
breyden we be detoures.
not to pe fleische. if we
lyue after pe fleische/ffor
fope if ze schuld lyue af
ter pe fleische. ze schuld
de/ fforfope if ze by pe

spirit schuld slie pe de
des of fleische. ze schuld
lyue/ soperly who end be
lid by pe spirit of god.
yese be pe sones of god/
forfope ze han not take
esteeone pe spirit of
change in dred. Bot ze
han take pe spirit of ad
apacion of cones. pe is
to be sones of god by hye.
Whiche spirit we are
abba fadir/ fforfope yll
spirit zeldip witness
de to oure spirit. if we
be pe sones of god/ ffor
fope if sonys. A cryis/
soperly cryis of god/ so
pely end cryis of crist
if nepeles we to godir
suffre. pat a we be gfu
nished to godir/ treuly
of deme yf pe passious
of no tyme be not
end worp. to pe stone
to amygge. pat schal be
schelwed in us/ ffor wh
pe abidye of creature.
pat is ma. abidip pe
schelwyge of pe sonys
of god/ soperly pe crea
ture is soget to vanyte.

not willige. Bot for hyt
sogetide it or made it soget
I hope for a mille creature
shal be desired. fro serua
ge of occupaciō. I to lyste
of glorie of pe sonys of god
seply we write. p^recher crea
ture I sell wy wy me a chil
dip. or Wyrdip w^r angell
till it. forsope not onely
it. Bot & we oure silt ha
uige pe fuste feyntes
of pe spirit. & we oure
silt oure wy me no re
adapaciō of godis sonys.
p^ris wy gret moynge
we desire pe state of go
dis sonys by grace aby
dyge pe assemblige of
oure body. Sepely by ho
pe. we be made saf. for
sope pe hope pat is seen.
is not hope. for why.
what hope a mā p^ris
pat he seep. forsope
if we hope p^ris p^r
we seen not. we abide
by p^raciōce. also & pe
spirit helpe oure ifu
myte. for why. what
we schule p^ris as it by
honey. we write not bot

p^ris spirit axy for us
wy conuysio. p^r moiben
not be told oute. forsope
he pat seep pe hartis.
wote what pe spirit as
rep. for as god. p^ris as
godis will. he axep for
holy mē. forsope we wy
te. for to mē longe god. f
alle p^ris worche to god
I to good p^ris to he p^r as
p^ris be clepid spiritis.
for why & who he wiste
by fore. & he by fore ordey
ned by g^ree for to be made
liche of pe ymage of his
sone. p^r he be pe first by
gete in many bryd sope
p^ris he by fore ordey
to blisse. & he he clepid.
& who he clepid. & he he
iustified. Sepely who he
iustified. & he he glory
fied. what p^ris schule
we say to p^ris p^ris. if
god be for us who is a
nes us. pe whiche also
spared not to his olme
sone. but for us alle by
toke hyt. hou also as he
not to us alle p^ris wy
p^ris who schal acuse axy

ende

153.
 ye chosen sonys of god. god
 is þ' iustifier. who is þ'
 condempner. ihe est þ' is
 ded. ihe þe whiche & ros
 hem. þe whiche is on þe
 riht half of god. & þe whi
 che þiep for us. who per
 fore schal departe us fro
 þe charite of god. tri b
 liss. or angwisthe or gu
 gur. or nakednesse. or yse
 aiaon. or þe. or ewer de
 as it is writen. for we be
 slayne alday for þee. we
 be gessid as sthepe of slan
 tre. bot in alle þese þingis
 we oiscomen. for hy þat
 loued us. Soperly q. iiii
 artheyne. for nesh. & þe
 þ' lyf. nesh. angelis. nesh
 þ' uapatis. nesh. dñes.
 nesh. potestatis. nesh. þ' s
 þ' ingis. nesh. þ' ingis to cu
 myge. nesh. strengþe. nesh
 heyt. nesh. dñes. nesh
 oper creature schal mow
 depte us fro þe charite
 of god. þat is in crist
 ihu. our lord. *Le. 9. 47*

Iþe treuþe in est
 ihe. q. lyze not. my
 consacre berygebot

nessyge to me ipe boole
 goft. for gret heynesse
 is to me. & dymiel seke
 to my herte. for þe. q.
 my self. shired. for to be
 cursid or dypid fro est for
 my bresen. þat ben my
 bresen. þat ben my cosyns
 after þe fleisthe. þat ben
 isralites or of yrael. whos
 adopcion is of sonys &
 glorie. & testamēt. & zeir
 ge of lawe. & dyge. & by
 heftis. whos ben þe fadris.
 and of whome est after
 þe fleisthe. þ' is god aboue
 alle þingis. blessid in to
 worldis amen. soperly
 not þat þe word of god.
 gay falle don. or fauld
 unfild. soperly not alle
 þat ben of yrael. þese be
 isralites or sonys of israhel
 nesh. þe þat ben þe seed
 of abraham. ben alle his
 sonys. bot in ysaac. seed
 schal be cleped to þee.
 þat is to seye not þe
 þat be sonys of þe flei
 sthe. be sonys of god. bot
 þe þat be sonys of by
 geste. ben demyd in seed

of byhest / sopeh yis is
 pe word of byheste / up
 yis tyme / I schal come
 and a sone schal be to save
 forsope not onely sthe bot
 A rebecca of oo kygngely
 or of oo knowyge of man
ganyge they sonys of
 Isaac oure fadre / sopeh
 whene pey weren not
 yt born / ep had don om
 yis of good or yuel / y pe
 spos of god schulde dwelle
 up pe electioun / not of
 werthys bot of god cle
 pyge it is sayd to hym
 for pe more schal serue
 to pe lesse / as it is wri
 te / I loued Jacob / forso
 pe esau / had in hate
 what yf schul we seye
 wher wickidnesse be a
 nens god / for be it / for
 sope he seip to moyses
 I haue inoye of whome /
 schal haue inoye / & /
 schal yue inoye of who
 y schal haue inoye / yf
 it is not nep of ma wil
 lyde nep renyge bot
 of god ganyge inoye / for
 sope pe scripture seip

to pharao / for in to mo
 yis / I haue stured pee /
 I schewe i pee my stur
 & pat my name be told
 in al erp / yfne of whom
 god wole he hap inoye / &
 who he wole he endure
 or hardener / & so y schal
 to me / what yis is yf
 soughe / sopeh who pat
 wyfston dy / ho wille / O
 ma who art y / pe whiche
 answerist to god / wher
 a pot or made yis seip to
 gy pat made it / what
 hast you made me so / wher
 a potter of clay hap not
 power / of pe same gobet
 for to make sopeh oo yel
 sel in to hond / anoy for
 sope i to dispite or losse
office / pat yf god wille
 se forto schewe wrape
 and for to make powder
 knowen / susteyned in
 grete patience pe vessels
 of wrape able in to ydi
 non or dampnacioun / y
 he schulde schewe pe ri
 chesse of ho glorie in
 vessels of inoye / pe whi
 che he made redye into
 glorie / & whiche he cleped

not only of ieluis. bot also of
hepe me. as he seip i dsee/
¶ schal clepe not my pepul
my pepul. & not my loued.
my loued. & not hanngge uidae.
hanngge mae. & it schal be
place wher it is seid to ge
not je my pepul. se pei schi
len be cleped pe sonys of hy
nyge god. forsope ysay de
for yrael. if pe noubre of
yrael schal be as gravel of
pe see. pe relise schulen
be made oaf. forsope y allrod
endye & a breggynge i egm
te. for pe lord schal make a
word breggynge or made nioot
vpo al erp. And as ysaye
bifore seyde. no bot god
had laste to us seed. we
hade be made as sodomie.
& we hade be lix as gomoz/
¶ fore what schulen we
seye. pat hepe me pat
hiede not ryt wisnesse.
han canyte ryt wisnesse/
Sopely pe ryt wisnesse
pat is of ferp. forsope
yrael suye pe lawe of
ryt wisnes. ain not p
fely in to pe lawe of ryt
wisnesse. why. for not of

fery bot as of wer bis. so
pely pe offendiden in to
pe stoon of offencion & p
nyge. as it is wryten/
loo i putte a stoon of offe
cion in syon. & a stoon of
schandre. & eche p schal
bylene in to it. schal not
be conformedid or schent/
Breyden sopely pe lal
le of my herte &
my byschynge is
made to god for hem in to
helpe. forsope y bere wit
nessge to hem for pey ha
loue of god. bot not of hy
nyge. Sopely pey vnknow
ynge godis ryt wisnesse
and swelinge for to make
stedfast her olyn. ben not
soget to pe ryt wisnesse of
god. forsope pe eend of pe
lawe is aist. to ryt wisnes
to eche man bylenynge/
Sopely moyses wroot for
pe man p schal d ryt wis
nesse pat is of pe lawe.
schal byne in it. forsope
pe ryt wisnesse pat is of
bylene. seip yus. seye
you not in ym herte. who
schal stye in to heuene.

7
A

pāt is to seye for to lēde
dun cft. & who shal go dū
in to depnesse of helle. &
is for to aemedepe crist fro
ded spūtes. Bot what say
pe scripture. pe word is nū
in py moupe. & in pī herte
pis is pe word of bylene
pe whiche we pēhen. & nū
you knoulesche in pi moupe
pe lordshī crist. & byleneft
in pī herte pāt god reþ
side hy fro ded spūtes.
pī shalt be saaf. forsoþe
by herte me byleneþ to
ryghtwisnesse. by moupe
sopely knoulescheþinge is
made to helpe. sopely pe
scripture seip eche pāt
byleneþ in to hy. shal
not be confounded. sopely
pis no distincion of iek
& greek. for why pe litme
lord of alle. ricke to alle
pāt cōþen hy. forsoþe
eche man who wil shal
mēþe pe name of pe lord.
shal be saaf. hon þfore
shulen pe mēþe hy.
in to whome pey hā not
bylened. & hon shal pey
bylene to hy. whom pey

herden not. Hon fast pe st
hulen pey here wry outen
pēþinge. & hon schulen
pey pēþe. bot nū pey ben
sent. as it is wryten.
Hon fayre pe feet of men eua
selinge pees. of pēþinge
good þingis. bot not alle me
obeyen to pe gospel fford
pe ysay seip. who byleneþ
to oure heerþinge. þfore say
is of heerþinge. heerþinge
forsoþe by pe word of cft. bot
I seye. wher pey herden not.
and sopely pe word of hem
wente oute in to al erpe. & in
to pe eendis of pe roundenes
of pe erpe her wordis. Bot
I seye. wher þrael knew not.
furst moyses seip. I shal
led you to eipe for þoure
weywardenesse in to not a
folke in to an vndyþe folke.
I shal send you in to wryp
forsoþe ysay dare & seip. I
am founden of men not see
þinge me. apynly I apperid
to hem. pāt ayden not me.
forsoþe to þrael he seip.
al day I frente oute my
hondis to apynly not byleneþ
se to me. bot ayein seym
se

Therfore I seye/ wher god
 hay putte alreys his
 pepul/ for bett for wher
 and I am an Israelite. of pe seed
 of Abraham/ of pe kynage
 of Beniamyn/ pe lord putte
 not alreys his pepul/ wher
 he byfore wiste/ wher ze wyl
 ten not in hely what pe sty
 ture seip. hou he geyt god
 aymes yracl lord pey han
 slayne py pphers/ pey han
 vnderdollen ym and. & I
 am left alone. & pey seken
 my hyl/ bot what seip godis
 answere to he/ q haue leste
 to me seven thousand of
 me/ pat han not bolled her
 faces byfore baal/ so yfore
 and in yowre tyme pe relise
 ben made saf. op pe che
 syng of pe grace of god/
 for yf by pe grace of god/
 noli not of ver kys ellys
 grace/ is not noli grace/
 what yfore yrael hay not
 seken pat pat he sougte/
 fforsope eleccion hay geten/
 sopeh pe opyr ben blyddid.
 as it is wryten/ he zaf to
 he a spirit of copmmon.
 eeyen pat pey seen not. &

155
 eeris pat pei here not
 til in to yowre day/ & damp
 seip/ be pe bood of hem
 made byfore hem in to a
 snare. & in to catchynge & in
 to stamde. & in to zeeldy
 ge hem to hem/ be pe yen
 of he made derk pat pey
 see not. & in toke al gatis
 pe bar of he/ yfore I seye/
 wher pey offendiden so/ pat
 pey shulden falle doun. only
my oute ppyte to oper. for
 bett/ bot by pe gylt of he.
 helpe is made to hepe me/
 pat pei sue hem/ pat yf
 pe gylt of hem. be richessis
 of pe world. & pe menusthy
 ge or makke lesse of hem. be
 richessis of hepe me/ hou
 myche more pe pleite of
 hem. sopeh y seye to you
 hepe me/ hou longe sopeh
 I am apostle of hepe men.
 I shal honoure my mynyre
 or synne/ yf on ony man
 I fure my fleynthe pat is
 my kynage for to folow. &
 I make synne of he saaf/
 fforsope yf pe losse of hem
 is reuynfulynge of pe
 world. what pe takynge
 op of he/ no bot byf to ded

men. For if ye sacrifice or
 litel part of taffye be hooly
 and ye hool gobet is hooly
 if ye root is hooly. & ye bran-
 ches pat if any of ye bran-
 ches ben broke. pou sope-
 ly where pou were a wylde o-
 lyue tre art sette amoge
 he & art made felawe of ye
 root & of fatnesse of ye olyue
 tre. nyl p' shewe aymes ye
 branchis by yd or enuie
 for if pou stonest y beriste
 not ye root. bot ye root pec-
 yfye p' cast ye branchis ben
 broken pat y be in sette wile
 for vnkilene ye branchis
 ben broke. forsope y' stondis
 by feip nyl pou sauer hie
 yis prondly. bot drede pou
make pat y' falle not ffrin
 ye if god spare not to ye
 kyndly branchis. drede lest
 pamenture he spare not to
 pecy p'fne see ye goodnesse
 & ye feernesse of god sope-
 ly ye feernesse in to he y' felle
 don. sope-ly ye goodnesse of
 god in yee if y' shalt dwelle
 in goodnesse. iellis & y' shalt
 be lute don. bot & pecy shulde
 be in sette. if pecy shulde. if
 pecy shulde not dwelle in
 unkilene. forsope god is my-
 ty. estborne for to in sette

for. Why if pou art lit doil
 of ye kynde wylde olyue tre
 and ayein kynde art in sette
 in to a good olyue tre. hou
 myche more pecy y' by lyde
 shulde be in sette to her olyue
 tree. forsope breslen y'
 nyl pou conknothe mo myche
 pat ye be not wylde to your
 lyf for kyndnesse hay falle
 of yis y' yrael. til ye plente of
 hepe me entride and so al y'
 rael shulde be made saaf as
 it is writen. he shal cu of y'
 on y' shal delyue & turne
 weye. ye comyte of iacob. &
 mo testament to he of me
 where y' shal & alweye her
 synes. sope-ly op ye gospel
 pat is for ye gofel amys
 for you. forsope most derly
 op ye elemou for fadens
 sope-ly ye iustis & cleynse
 of god. ben my oute ffrin
 lyde or reuolunge. sope-ly
 as outyme & ye bylensden
 not to god. wold forsope ye
 han gete myche for ye onby
 laue of he. so & yese not
 bylensde not in to your
 myche. pat & pecy zete mae
 forsope god clofid to gedu
 alle pygis in conbylence.
 pat is hope iellis & hepe
 me. pat ye hane myche on
 alle y' is on hem hope.

Of pe heegness or depness
 of pe riches of of Wisdum
 & Eunge of gods; how much
 pphensible ben his domes
 and his weyes consercha
 ble; forsope also Enelbe pe
 Writ of god; or who was his
 conselere; & who former
 zaf to hy; & it schal be quyt
 agen to hy; for of hym
 and by hy; & i hy be alle
 pphes; to hy honour and
 glorie in to Eualdis tyme;
 And so brisen i hisse
 che you by pe myde
 of god; pat ze pue
 youre bodies almyge cost
 & holi samfice plesyre
 to god; youre seruyce reso
 nable; & myze be confour
 med or made lre to p^rwe
 bot be ze reformmed i well
 nesse of youre Writ; & ze
 pue; whiche is pe Wille of
 god; good & weele plesyre
 & pphes; forsope i sey by
 pe grace pat is zoue to
 me to alle pat be amoge
 you; for to saule or Eune
 more pan it byhouep for
 to Eune of puye myde;
 bot for to Eune to sobre
 nesse; Writ oute pphes

and to eche ma as god has
 depte pe mesure of pph/
 forsope as in o body we ha
 many mebris; sopeh alle
 pe mebris han not pe same
 acte or dede; so we be many
 oo body in est; ech forsope
 mebris; pe top of anoyr
hanpe need or surpe pphes
 we hanynge pphes dyuers
 ge op pe grace pphes zoue to
 us; exp pphes up resou
 of seip; es mynyste or ser
 uice in mynyste; & pphes
 he pat techy in techynge;
 he pat sturp softly in exor
 tacion or monestye; he
 pat zenev in symplenes;
 he pat is byfore or zone
 reyn in bysynesse; he pat
 hape myde in gladnesse;
 lone Writ oute feynge;
 hatyge yuel; cheynge
 or fastedra; & to good
 ying; ldringe to god; pe
 charite of bressede; cūny
 ge byfore to god in hono
 not sturp in bysynes; ser
 uent or breynge in spi
 rit; seruyge to pe lord;
 mynge in hope; patie
 in tribulacion; bise in p
 er; comounge to pe nee
 dis of seyntes; enynge

xi^o

A

xij^o

or Eppynge hospitalite: pat
 is herborunge of pore men/
 blesse ze me purfuyge zow/
 blesse ze & myl ze curse or wa
 rye/ for to roye wip men
 wpyng: for to wepe wpy
 me wepyge/ felynge pe sa
 me pis to gidir: not canery
 ge or fymyge heez pyngis
 bostyge for pele wftis: bot
 bot consentyge to meke pi
 nis folowye meke fadris
 nyl ze be prudent anctis
 zowre sylf: to no ma zel
 dyge yuele for yuel/ pur
 weyge good pyngis: not one
 ly byfore god: bot also by
 fore alle mē/ zif it may be
 don: pat pat is of zow: ha
 nyge pees wpy alle men/
 ze mozte dre brysen not
 defendyge or wengynge
 zowr sylf: bot zyne ze pla
 ce to yre or wrath/ for sope
 it is written/ pe lord seip/
 to me vernamte: & I
 schal zelde aem/ bot zif
 ym enenye schal gure:
 fede you hy/ zif he purstip
 zyne you drynke to hym/
 forsope you doynge pele
 pyngis: schalt gedir to ge
 dir cooles on his heued/
 nyl pon be outcomen of

yuel pig: bot outcome p^r xij^o
 yuel ma i good pyngis/ xij^o
Every soule or fymyge
 man: be soget to hee
 er polwer s/ forsope
 per it not polwer: no bot
 of god/ sopehy po pyngis
 p^r be of god: be wele ody
 ned/ and so he pat aem
 stondip polwer: aemstondy
 pe ordynance of god/ forsope
 pey pat aemstondy: gete
 to hem sylf dampnacion/
 for why pyngis of polwer
 ben not to pe dreed of go
 d werke: bot of yuel/ so
 rely wolte p^r not dreed
 polwer: & do p^r good pyngis
 and pon schalt haue pre
 syge of it/ forsope he is
 pe mynystre of god: to pe
 in to good enditid to de
de pe/ sopehy zif pon doft
 yuel pyngis: drede p^r forsope
 not wpy oute cause he be
 rep pe wengraffe ewerd/
 for he is pe mynystre of
 god: wenger in to wraye
 to hy pat dop yuel pyngis/
 and forsope by need be ze
 soget: not onely for wray:
 bot & for consuetude/ sope
 ly forsope & ze zeue shutis/
 pey be pe mynysts of god.

for his same p^ris seruyce/
 p^ris zelde ze to alle men/
 settis to whome tribute/
 tribute to who toll & cus-
 tu for p^ris born aboute
 toll or such custu to who
 breed breed to who hono-
 honour to no ma othe ze
 ony p^ris y^e ze schuld not
 alle no bot pat ze loue to
 gedur/ copely he pat loue
 his myzore gape fulfilled
 pe laue/ for why you schalt
 not d no lecherie y^e schalt
 not clec y^e schalt not stels.
 you schalt nat seye false
 witnessye/ you schalt not
 coneyte pe p^ris of py nen
 bore/ and if y^e be ony op
 mandement it is in stard
 or enfold in his word/ y^e
 schalt loue py nen bore
 as py self/ pe loue of nen
 bore worship not yuele/
 p^ris loue is plente or ful
 fyllge of laue/ And we
 wytyge no tyme for how
 is now/ as to ryse of cle
 pe/ Copely now oure helpe
 is neer/ pan where we
 hylen den/ pe myzt wen
 to by fore/ for sope pe day
 schal neu/ p^ris cast we
 alye pe werks of dyf-
 nessis. & be we clopid pe

armers of lytt/ as in day
 wandre we honestly/ not
 in ofte ethys & dyf lygys/
 not in conchis & ynchafa-
 tees/ not in stryff & tinge-
 bot be ze clopid pe lorde
 ihu crist/ and so ze not pe
 pe are or by pynesse of
 flandr & desirys/

For sope take ze a se-
 ke ma in hyleue/
 not in dysceptacon/
 or disputacon of pouytis/
 copely anoyr hylener hy
 hilt for to ete alle yingys/
 for sope he pat is seel or du
 hylfaste ete he wotis or
 potage or such metys p^r
 nouthen hy not to frue/
 he pat etip dyspise he not
 pe man not etynges/ and
 he pat etip not/ deme not
 pe man etynges/ copely god
 hap taken hy/ who art y^e
 pat demyst anoyr seruant/
 to his lred he stondy or
 fallay down/ for sope he st
 hal stonde/ for sope pe lred
 is myzty for to odayne
 or make hy hylfaste for
 sope anoyr demyst a day
 lyttlye/ pe day/ anoyr
 demyst eche day/ eche ma
 abound or be plentenous
 in his wit/ he pat sal ep

¶my^o

or vnderstandyng pe day.
vnderstandyng to pe lord
and he pat ety. etc to pe
lord. for he dōp panke
to pe lord. & he pat ety not
ety not to pe lord. It is he
abteyney hy for warship
of pe lord. and dōp panke
as to god. forsope no mā
of us lyncy to hy. It is
hy wher we lyncen. we lync
to pe lord. wher we dyc.
we dycen to pe lord. It is
wher we lync or dyc. we
be of pe lord. It is pyns
sopely crist is deed & woos
ayen. pat he be had and
of quyt & of deed. forsope
what deemyt you py bro
per. or why distyfyt you
py brop. It is alle we
shuld. forsope. byfore pe
trone of est. for it is wri
ten. It is dery pe lord. for
to me ethe knee shal be
holwe. and ethe tynge
shal knowleche to god. &
so ethe of us. It is shal
reson to god for hy. It is
It is no more dery. we
to gide. It is ethe. It is but more
deemeze py pyns. pat
ze putte not hurtye or shyn
dre to a brop. It is It is
and trust in pe lord. It is

for no pyg is comon or vnde
ne. by hy. no bot to hy. pat
demep emy pyg to be vnde
ne. to hy it is vnde. so
pely. It is py. brop. he made
sary. or hary in consue.
for mete. noli you walky
not astur charite. nyl you
pyns py mete. lest hyt for
lho. crist dyed. psee be not
oure good. It is blassemyde
or distyfyd. Sopely pe reb
me of god is not mete &
drynde. bot ryzalnesse.
& pees & wyte in pe hoole
goost. forsope he pat i mo
pyg. Serney est. plest god.
& he is pned to me. and so
sue we po pyg. pat be of
pees. & kepe we to gedir po
pyns. pat ben of exfusa
oun. It is to bilde soules to
hevene. nyl you for mete
distrype pe werke of god.
Sopely alle pyg. be clene.
bot it is pnel to pe mān
pat ety by offendyng. It is
It is stande. it is good for to not
ete fleshe. and for to not
dryle wim. nyl in what
py. py brop. offendyng.
It is stande. or is maad
seel. It is distyfyd. It is It is
fey anens py. nyl. hane

you before god/ blessed is he
 pat deemyt not or dampneyt
not hy sylf in pat yng
 pat he pneyt fforsope he pat
 deemyt his mete clene & his
undene if he ete pe on
clene is dampnyd/ why
for his etege is not of feip
forsope alle yng pat is
not of feip is cyne

L Or sope we sadder
 olte feto susteyne
 or bere up pe feble
 nesse of seke me or vnsad
 in feip/ & not plesse to oure
 sylf/ eche of us plesse to his
 neyboze in to good to edifi
 canon/ and fforsope crist
 plesse not to hy sylf/ bot
 as it is writte/ pe replis or
shewyngs of me dispishe
pe/ felle on me/ fforsope
what eile yngis ben writen
pe ben writen to oure techy
ge/ pat by paaence and con
fort of scripturis we haue
hope/ fforsope god of paae
ce and solace or confort zene
to you for to vnderstonde pe
same yng eche in to oper
astur ihu crist/ pat ze of
so wille or writt/ vny may
worshype god & pe fadir
of oure lord ihu crist/ for
whiche yng take ze to g
dy/ vber ynge pe feble/ as

as & oft to be you in to pe
 honour of god/ sope/ & sey
 the crist for to haue be a my
 nistre of curiafoun for pe
 treupe of god/ for to conferme
 pe by bestis of fadris/ sope/ly
 hepe men for to hono^r god/
 vpon udy/ as it is writen/
 More lord/ i shal buouliche
 to pee in heven me/ and i
 shal syng to y name/ and
 estesone he seip/ gladi &
 enoye ze hepen me/ pyt ze
pe lord/ and alle pepis mas
nesie ze hy/ & est ysaie seip/
i shal be a root of iesse/ &
hepe me/ i shal hope in to
hy/ i shal ryle for to goiue
hepe me/ fforsope god of ho
pe fulfille you in alle ioye
& pees in bylenyge/ pat ze
abounde in hope and true
of pe hoole goost/ sope/ly bre
den & i my sylf am cheryne
of you/ for & ze youre sylf
be ful of loue/ ze fulfille
vny al shene or fuyryng
so pat ze moidu moneste
eche op/ sope/ly brise more
hardly/ i wrote to you a pty
as ager bringyng ze in to
myde for pe grace pat is
zoue to me of god/ pat i be
pe mynistre of est ihu i hepe
men/ halawinge pe gospel of
god/ it is schelinge it to be hole

220

pat ye offryge of hepe me
 pat you me offren he cilt
to ye kelen. be made auct-
 and halewid in ye holy gost.
 pfore I hane glorie in crist
 ihu to god. forsope y dare
 not eny pnyg of po pnyg.
 ye whiche crist makep not
 by me. in to obedience of he
 ven men in word & dedis. in
 true of tokenes and grete
 wonder is in you of ye holy
 gost. So pat fro ierusalem
 by cypris til to hylirik. I hane
 fulfilled ye gospel of crist.
 forsope so I hane pchide ys
 gospel. not wiser eft was na
 med or pchide of fals aposte
he. lest I bide upon opers
 grounde bot as it is writen/
 for to whome it is not told
 of he. per schulen see. and
 per y herden not schulen
 vnderstonde. for whiche
 pnyg I was lettid ful my
 che for to come to you. and
 I am forbode til to 3m. for
 sope noll I not hanyng
 fays place or cause of len
ger dwelinge. I per attres
 copely hanyng conetis
 of counye to you. of many
 yeeris noll goyge by faze.
 wher I shal bygyne for to
 passe in to spayne. I hope
 pat I passige forp schal
 see you. & of you I shal be
 led indir. yf I shal ofe

you firste in pty. pfore noll
 I shal passe forp to ierlm.
 for to mynystre to seyntis/
 forsope macedonije & aage
 pnedd for to make in collao
 on or geider yge of monere.
 to poze me of seyntis. pat
 ben in ierlm. Copely it pleid
 to he. & pe ben detouris of
 hem. for wher yf hepen men
 ben made pends of her gost.
 pnyg. per olven & in fleatly
 pnyg for to mynystre to hem.
 pfore wher I shal ende pnyg
 & assigne he pnyg frunt
 by you I shal passe in to sp
 ayne. forsope I wrote pat I
 counye to you shal come. I
 pe abondance or pleate of pe
 blessing of crist. pfore by
 I byseche you by our lord
 ihu crist. and by charite of
 ye holy gost. pat ye helpe
 me i yourre pphers to pe lord.
 pat I be deliydes fro pe con
 treire me pat be in iudee.
 and pat ye offryge of my
 shyte be acceptid in ierlm.
 to seyntis. pat I come to
 you in joye by ye wyll of
 god. & pat I be refreshed
 wip you. Copely god of pees
 be wip you alle amen.

E Drlope bypen I co
 mende to you selen
 ourre sistre pat is

in pe seruyce of pe church pat
 is clepid tencris. pat ze receyue
 hie in pe lord worship to seruis.
 and pat ze stonde my or helpe
 hir in what eise ying the
 shal mede of zow for sope and
 the stood my or helpe to ma
 ny. & to my silly Galli or gre
te ze psta & aquila my helpe
 ris in crist ihu. pe whiche
 ondur putteden her neckis
 for my soule or helpe to who
 not I alone so pautyngis.
 bot & alle pe churchis of he
 pen me/ and grete ze wele
 pen homely church or me
ne grete wele ephreiete lo
 nyd to me. pat is pe furste
 of asye in crist ihu grete
 wele marie. pe whiche hap
 travelde myche in no gre
 te wele androny & iulia
 my cosyns. & my enen cay
 tifs or prisounis. pe whiche
 pe whiche be noble amoge
 pe apostles. & pe whiche
 weren byfore me in crist/
 grete wele amphiate. most
 derliorp to me in pe lord gre
 te wele orbane oure help in
 crist ihu. & staethem my lo
 nyd grete wele appelle pe
 noble man in crist grete
 wele he pat ben of aristo
 blos house grete wele ei o
 diet my cosyn grete wele
 he pat ben of marthies

house. pat ben seipulle
 pe lord grete wele triphse
 nam & ffonam. pe whiche
 byme tuals in pe lord/
 grete wele phida most dr
 wep woma pat hap myche
 travelde in pe lord grete
 wele rufus chosen pe lord.
 and his modur & my. for
hir holynesse grete wele
 ansirete. plegonaa. herme.
 patroban. herman. & bry
 den pat ben wy hel grete
 wele plegonaa & iulian and
 venera & his sistre. & oly
 piades. & alle pe seyntis
 pat ben wy hem grete
 wele zow alle to gedur in
 holy cosse/ alle pe churchis
 of crist grete zow wele//
 forsope brysen y ppe zow
 pat ze aspe hem pat ma
 ken distenciois & hartyn
 sis or pldundis shidis
 pe doctryne pat ze han
 lerned. and holwe ze alwey
 fro hem/ sopeh daffe me
 serue not to pe lord. & bot
 to her wombe/ and by
 elvete wordis and blessy
 sis. pey distyne pe her
 tis of innocent melsorpe
 zowre obediene is purpys
 chid in to enery place/ p
 fore I roye in zow. bot I.

wolden for to be wyse in
 good wys- and oþþer yuel
 wys. Forsoþe god of peccode
 foule satanas vnder zour
 feet swiftoke pe grace of
 oure lord ihu crist. Greeting
 you to mothe my help. Greeting
 to you wele. & also hugene
 and Jason & Cospat my co
 synos. I trow notone grette
 you wele. pat haue writen
 his epistle in pe lord say
 us my herberger gretip
 you wele. & al pe church
 craftis trefere or kep of
pe cite gretip you wele. &
 quart pe broþer. The
 grace oure lord ihu crist
 be wyþ you alle amē. For
 soþe to hy pat is myzty.
 for to conferme you by my
 gospel & pteþynge of ihu
 crist. vþ pe reuelacioun of
 mystle. holden stille p^r is
 not sheldid in tymes en
 lastyge. pe whiche mystle
 is now maad opþ by scrip
 turis of pphetis. vþ pe co
 maiment of god wyþ
 oute luyng & endyge
 to pe obedience of fery in
 alle hepen mē. pe mystle
 Enowen to wys god alom.
 by ihu crist. to wsome ho

nour and slope in to worldis
 of worldis. Amen //

Duile clepide
 apostle of ihu
 crist. by pe will
 of god. & softe
 nes broþer to
 pe church of
 god pat is at
 corinthe. to pe
 hallewed in est. ihu. clepide
 seyntis wyþ alle p^r indepe
 pe name of oure lord ihu crist.
 in eche place of hem. & in
 oure grace to you & pecc
 of god oure fadir. & of pe
 lord ihu crist. **U**nd þano
 kyngis to my god ennoze
 for you in pe grace of god
 pat is zounen to you in ihu
 crist. For in alle þingis ze
 den richen in hy in eche word
 & in eche kyngis or saue
 as pe witnesþing of crist
 is confermed in you. So
 pat no þing fayle to you
 in eny grace. abyng pe
 reuelacioun of oure lord ihu
 crist. pe whiche & shal con
 ferme you til in to pe ende

My outen cryme or gret synne
 in pe day of pe comynge of
 oure lord ihu crist. for
 god is trewe. by whome ze ben
 cleped in to pe felaweshipe of
 his sone ihu crist oure lord. for
 sope bristen byscheppe ion by pe
 name of oure lord ihu crist. pat
 ze alle seye pe same ping. and
 pat synnis or dyscordis ar
ar amonge you. Sopely be ze p
fitte in pe same wit. in pe
same kyngde. for sope bresen
 it is signefied or tolde to me.
 of he pat ben of ches. for stry
 nes ben amonge you. for sope
 I seye no ping. pat eche of you
 seip. for sope I am of poule.
 for sope I am of apollo. trenly
 I of cephas pat is petre. for
 sope I of crist. wher crist is
 depyd. wher poule is crua
 fied for you. ey ben ze bap
 tized in pe name of poule.
 I do panchys to god. pat I
 baptize no man of you. no
 but epus & garys. lest ony
 ma seye pat ze ben baptized
 in my name. sopely & I bap
 tized pe house of steuene
a Roma. bot I wot not pat
 I baptized eny ower. for est

sente me not for to baptise.
 bot for to euangelize or seche
 pe gospel. not in wisdom
 of word. pat pe crosse of est
 be not weidid allwey. for
 pe word of pe crosse pat is
passion. is folly. sopely to
 me purthynge. for sope to
 he pat ben made saaf. p^t
 is to seye to us. it is pe
 wyl of god. sopely it is
 writen. I schal lese pe wis
 dam of wyse me. and I
 schal repne pe prudence
 of prudent men. wher is
 pe wise man. wher is pe
 writer or man of lalle.
 wher is pe purchasoure
 of no world. wher god
 hay not made pe wisdom
 of no world. folisthe or
fooly. for why. for in pe wis
 dam of god. pe world knew
 not god by wisdom. it ple
 sde to god for to make hyle
 wyngde me saaf. by pe fo
 ly of pchys. for & iellus
 seken signys. & grebis
 oeken wisdom. for sope we
 seken crist crucified. to
 iellus sopely it is plann
 dre. to hepe me for sope
 folly. for sope to he depyd

albis & grekis to pe fep. is
Enolwe eft to be pe son of god
and pe wisdom of god. for
pat p. is fol. ping of god
as eftis passion and dep. is
wyser pan men can conserue
and pat p. is seek ping or
freel of god. as to cheefe p. is
to ouercome pe world. is
stronger pan men. for sope
see ze youre clepinge bryden
for not many wyse me aft
pe flesche not many myght
not many noble. bot god
ches. pe pingis pat ben fol
tis of pe world. pat he can
founde wyse men. and god
ches pe seek pingis or freel
of pe world. pat he comforte
de pe stronger pingis. and
god ches pe vnnoble pingis.
& dispisable pingis of pe
world. and vo pingis pat
ben not of ony p. is. p. he
schulde distruye vo pingis
pat ben in gret p. is. p. eche
p. ische or man glorie not
in his own syt. for sope
of hy ze ben in est. ihu.
pe whiche is maad to us
wisdom and ryghtynesse
and holynesse. & aymby
inge. pat as it is writen.
he pat glorie. glorie i pe
word.

And I bryden I shenne. I
 came to you. came not
 in heernesse of word
 or wisdom. telle ye or schew ye
 to you pe witnessyng of crist
 Godeh. I shewde & demyde
 me not for to write or p. is
 eny ping amonge you. no bot
 crist ihu and hy crucified to
 oue. and I in seeknesse and
 dyced & myche tremblyng
 was anentis you. & my word
 & my p. ische was not in
 p. isable or sotil glorie. was
 as of manes wisdom. bot i
 shewde of spirit & p. is
 youre fep. be not in wisdom
 of me. bot in pe son of god.
 for sope we speken wisdom
 amonge p. ische me. for sope not
 wisdom of mo world. ney
 of pryncis of mo world. p.
 be distruyd. bot we speken
 pe wisdom hode of god. pe
 whiche in myste or p. ische
 pe whiche wisdom god hy
 fore ordeyned byfore worldis
 in to oure glorie. pe whiche
 no man of pe pryncis of
 mo world Enolwe. for zif
 pe haden Enolwe. pe schuld
 den neide hane crucified
 pe lord of glorie. bot as it

is written/ pat ze salbe not ue-
 ere herde not. neþ n stude i
 to herce of man. what puges
 god made redy byfore. to hem
 pat loue hy. forsoþe god schell
 ide to us by his spirit. forsoþe
 pe spirit sekþ alle puges.
 the pe depe puges of god. so
 pely wþo of men wot what
 puges ben of mā. no bot pe spi-
 rit of man pat is in hy. for
 what puges ben of god. no mā
 knowþ. no bot pe spirit of
 god. forsoþe we han not res-
 ceined pe spirit of no wold.
 bot pe spirit pat is of god.
 pat we wite what puges
 ben zowen to us of god. pely
 the puges we speken. not i
 tanzt wordis of mānes. wyl
 sam. bot in doctryne of pe
 spirit. comparidunge spi-
 rituel puges to gofþly men.
 forsoþe a beestly mān prey-
 uer not po puges pat ben
 of pe spirit of god. soþely
 it is pely to hy. & he may
 uot condur stonde for he is
 examyned & asayed gofþly.
 forsoþe a spirituel mān de-
 mey alle puges. and he is
 demed & dampned of no
 mā to his harme. as it is
 written/ wþo soþely enelle

pe bot of pe lord. & wþo tam-
 te hy. forsoþe we han pe
 wit of crist. to chese po pi-
 ges of crist.

And brysen i myzte
 not speke to zow. as
 to spirituel me. bot
 as to fleischly. as to litel
 children in crist. i zaf to zow
 myll drynk. not mete. so
 pely ze myzten not zit en-
 dur stonde. bot neþ noll so
 pely ze mow. for zit ze ben
 fleischly. wþene dyne and
 stryff is amonge zow. wþe
 ze ben not fleischly. & as
 man ze zow. for wþen en-
 cery. i soþely am of poult.
 anoyr forsoþe i am of apol-
 lo. wþer ze ben not fleisch-
 ly me. what þfore is apol-
 lo. what forsoþe poult. ze
 ben mynystre of hym to
 wþome ze han byleenyde.
 and to eche mā as god hap
 zow. i planitide. apollo
 watrid. bot god zaf enare
 synge. and so neþ he pat
 planitry is eny puge ne
 þir he pat moysty. bot
 god pat ryneþ enareþge.
 forsoþe he pat planitry
 & he pat moysty. be oo

m

ring/ Copely eche schal ta
 ke his propre hire. aft his
 travel for we ben pe helpe
 of god. ze ben pe criftling
 of god. ze ben pe bildegge
 of god/ aftir pe grace of god
 pat is zoven to me. as a wy
 se carpent. I sette pe fonde
 ment pe feyn of est. Forsope
 anopir bylder above god
werkis. Copely eche man
 see hou. a what pyngis
 he bildaþ upon/ Copely no
 mā may sette anopir fonde
 met. bi hisdis pat ytis sette
 pe whichche is est ihe. For
 sope yf ony man bylde on
 upon his foudemet. gold
 siluer þionis stonys.
 stichis. hay. stoble. eny
 mānes werk. it shal be opy.
 pe day of pe lord. it shal be
 clere. For eche māns werk
 it shal be shewid in fire.
 What maner it is. pe fire
 shal pue. yf pe werk of
 ony man shal dwelle pe
 whichche he bildaþ upon.
 he shal resteyne meed/
 yf ony māns werk shal
 breime. it shal suffre þe
 ryng. Forsope he shal
 be saaf. so nepales as

by fire. Write ze not for
 ze ben pe temple of god.
 and pe spirit of god dwel
 lyþ in you. Forsope yf eny
 shal defoule pe temple of
 god. god schal distrewe
distrewe hy. Forsope pe te
 ple of god is holy. pe whi
 che ze ben. no mā distrewe
 hy. Alf. yf ony mā amo
 ze you is seen to be wyse
 to hy. Alf. in his world. be
 he made a fool anethis. Alf.
Alf. pat he be wyse anethis
 god. forsope pe wisdom of
 his world. is foly anethis.
 god. forsope it is witen/
 I schal carke wyse me in
 her fool wisdom. or sotil gy
ly. and este. pe lord. hap þis
 wen pe pouztis of wyse
 worldly me. for þey ben
 weyn. Forsope no man ston
 in me. Forsope alle pynges
 be zowre pat is alle pynges
be ordeyned to shew you. ep
 pou. ep apollo. ep cephas
pat is petre. ep pe world.
 ep hy. ep deþ. ep pynges
 pstant. ep pynges to comy
 ze. Forsope alle pynges be
 zowre. ze forsope of est. est
 copely of god.

e o

So aman gesse or de
me us as mynys
of est. & aspenders
of pe mysses of god. nolte
it is sougte here amonge
pe aspenders. v. amā be
foudeu twelb. fforsope to me
it is for pe beste pīs. p. 1.
be deeming of you & of thurs
day pat is here in the lē.
bot nep. i. deime my self. so
pely i am no pīs. alty to
my self. bot not in pīs
pīg. i am iustified or made
rytly. fforsope he pat
deemys me is pe lord. And
so wylt ze deime bysore pe
tyme. til pat pe lord come.
pe whiche & shal bytome
pe hys ynges of dreenessho.
and shal shelve pe coun
sailes of hertor. & pāne
pysinge shal be to eche
man of god after his deser
uice. Sopely brisen pro
ving i have transfiguride
in to me. & in to apollo.
pat i us ze lerne. lest pat
oil pat it is writte oon azeim.
anop be inblosben wip pri
de. for an op. man. who for
sope deimep pec. What
sopely hast pou. p. pou

hast not resteyned. sope
ly if you hast resteyned.
What shouest p. as pou
hadist not resteynyd. nolt
ze ben fulfilled. nolt ze
ben made riche. ze regne
wip oute us. & i wolde
ze regne. p. & we regne
wip zou. sopely i weene
pat god shelve us pe
laste apostlis. as made re
dy to pe dey. for we be ma
de a spectacle to pe world.
and to angels & to men.
we foolis for est. Deinge
his passion & sufferge
thre reples. ze fforsope
prudent in crist ben gessid
byngre stille. we seeke
for timentye. ze fforso
pe stronge in ioure mag
este. ze noble. we sopely
vnnoble. til in to pīs
houre. and we hmygren
& presten & ben nakide.
and ben smytewip buf
fets. & we ben constable
monye fro place to pla
ce. and we traneylen for
chynge wip oure hondis.
we ben cursid. & we bles
sen. we suffer psema
oun. & we susteynen

or hidden souer we be blas
 femyd. & we by sechen god
 for he as clenfingis of vs
 world we ben made. pe pa
 ryges or outcastyges of
 alle ryges til yt / I write
 not pefe ryges pat I con
 fonde you. bot I amonest
 or warne as my moste
 drelborpe sonys / For why
 if ze han ten thousand
 of hitel mistris in crist
 ihu. bot not many fadris
 for why in crist ihu I haue
 sendride you. by pe gospel
 pfore I ppe you be ze sole
 wers of me. as I of est
 pfore I sente to you tymo
 the. pat is my moste der
 warpe sone & fersful in
 pe lord. pe whiche schal
 moneste you or teche my
 weyes pat ben in crist
 ihu. as I teche eue wher
 in eche churche. as I be not
 to come to you for speed
 ful lettynge. so hane be
 mblowen wy pryde not
 demyge to come / I schal
 come to you soone if god
 schal wole. and I schal
 not knowe pe word of he
 pat be mblowe wy pry
 de. bot pe alu in good

wurchynge / Sopele pe rell
 me of god or cause to haue
 pe rellme is not in word.
 bot in wtu of by leene / what
 wole ze. schal I come to you
 in zerd of chastynges or in
 charite & in spirit of delouer
 nesse or myldenesse.

Hort or al maner for
 mytacion is herde a
 monge you. and sicke
 for mytacion what man nep
 amonge hepe men. so pat
 synner haue pe wyf of his
 fadre / and ze ben bolne wy
 pryde. and not more haden
 weylunge. pat he pat ad
 vs abhominable weyb. be
 taken allwey fro pe mydyl
 of you / sopele I absent in bo
 dy. bot pssent in spirit. nati
 hap demyde as pssent in pe
 name of oure lord ihu est.
 hy pat vs hap wronzte /
 you & my spirit gederid to
 gedir. wy pe wtu of pe lord
 ihu. for to bitake sicke and
 to satanas in to psshyde
 of flesche. pat pe spirit
 be saaf in pe day of oure
 lord ihu crist / oure edy
 inge is not good. suffre
 ze sicke on amoge you wite

ze not for althil souredunpe
corumpit al ye gobet. clen
se ze oute olde souredunpe
pat ze be nelle springing
to gedir. as ze ben perf. or
wip oute our pynge / ffor
crist is offside oure paske
and so ete we / not in olde
sourdolb. nesp in sourdub
of malice & weywardnesse
bot in perf pynge of clen
nesse & treipe. / I wrote to
you in epistle. pat ze be not
mengid ne comon not wip
lechos. / Sopehly not wip le
chos of mo world. or wip
conetouse me or wip rane
nouris or wip me cunye
to ydhis. ellis ze schulden
haue gon oute of mo world
noll sopehly I wrote to you.
for to not be mengid or comon
not wip ouche / if he pat
is named a broper amoge
you is a lecho. or conetous
or cunye to ydhis. or curser.
or fil of drunkenesse. or ra
uenour. wip ouche ney ze
olbe to take metel fforsope
what to me. for to deme
of hem pat be wipoute
for out of pe church. wif
ze deme not of he pat ben

wip me. for why god schal
deme he p. be wip outen
forp. & ze alwey ffore yuel
pynge of your self. where
wip ze be fyled.

1. cor. 5.

O are any of you hany
ze a canle dremes an
of be dremyd at wit
hid men. & not at seyntis
or hoole men. wif ze wite
not. for seyntis schulen
deme of mo world. and
if pe world schal be dremyd
in you. ze be conuorpy pat
deemen of leste pynge. w
ten ze not for we schulen
deme anngelis p. felle. gon
nyche more worldly pynge.
ffore if ze schulen haue
worldly meedis. or dyne
ze pe contemptible me. or
lil reputaoun. pat ben
in pe church. for to deme
I seye mo to zoure schame.
Gof is not any wise ma.
pat may deme bulby
a broper & ho broper. bot
a broper wip ho broper.
stryney in deme & p. and
tis confesful me. noll
forsope tffas is alhatis
in you. for ze ha donys
amonge you. why more
taken ze not wronge.
why not more suffre ze

fraude or dispur. bot & ze don
 wronge and frauden or brag
ten and pat to briden/wher
 ze witen not for wickid me
 schulen not welde pe kynda
 of god. nyl ze erre/ ne pur
 lescho. ney me synge to y
 dho. ney auoutherio. ney
 neyhe ne lescho of me p
don syne of sodom. ney p
 ney conuentione me or ny
 gardis. ney me ful of drim
 tenesse. ney ourferio. ney pr
 rauend. schulen welde pe
 kyndam of god/ and sopeh
 pese pyges ze were or diden
 outyme/ bot ze be waiphe.
 bot ze ben halelled. bot ze
 ben iustified. in pe name
 of oure lord ihu crist/ and
 in pe spirit of oure god.
 Alle pyges to me be lesful.
 bot not alle pyges opede.
 alle pyges ben lesful to me.
 bot i yndir manes polber
 shal be broughte doun/ in
 to pe wombe and pe wom
 be to metis. forsope god shal
 distruye pis & p. so
 pely pe body not to forny
 caaon. bot to pe lord. and
 pe lord to pe body/ forsope
 god reside pe lord. & shal
 reise us in his odu. wite
 ze not for your bodyes ben

mebris of crist. p. foretaly
 ze pe mebris of est. shal
 make he mebris of an hoore.
 for he it/ wher ze wite not
 for he p. cleuep to an hoore.
 is made oo body to hir. sope
 h he scrip. p. schulen be illo
 in oo fleische/ forsope he pat
 cleuep to god. is oo spirit/
 fle ze fornycaon. al synne
 what eile. syne ama shal do.
 is vny oute pe body. p. re
 souly. forsope he pat dy for
 mycaon. syne in to his body
 wastage it/ wher ze witen not.
 for your mebris ben pe tem
 ple of pe holy gost. pat is in
 you. whome ze han of god. &
 ze be not your owne. forsope
 ze ben boughte vny grece pris.
 glorifie ze & here ze god your
 bodie. //

Hespe of whiche p
 zes ze han write to
 me. it is good to ama
 to touche not alboma/ sopeh
 for fornycaon. eche ma hane
 his owne wyf. & eche woma
 hane hir hosbonde/ pe hosbonde
 jelde dette to pe wyf. also p
 pely & pe wyf to pe hosbonde/
 pe woma hap not polber of
 hir body. bot pe hosbonde/
 also flespe & pe hosbonde

hay not polber of his bodye
 bot ye woman/ nyl ze defraun
 de to gider wydrallysse your
dette. no bot penitence of co
 sente of atyme. pat ye moze
byssh ze yue tente to pber/
 and este turne ze agetu in to
 ye same yng. lest satanas
 tempte you for your inconti
 nente. forsope I seye yos
 yng op in dilgence or frize
uenesse. not op comanement/
 sopeh I wale alle me to be as
 my self chast. bot ethe ma hay
 his ppre yste of god/ sopeh
 an opny yus to hve chast. bot
 anoy yus to hve in mat mo
we. forsope to not wedded &
 wdelbis. it is good to he. yf
 pey dwellen so & as I for yf
 pey qteynen not he self or
 ben not chast. be pey wedded/
 forsope it is betre for to be wed
 did. pan for to be brent. for
 sope to hem pat be ioynede
 in matrimonie. I comaunde
 not. bot pe lord. ye wyf for to
 not departe fro ye hosbonde/
 pat yf ethe sthal depte. feto
 dwelle onwedded. & for to be
 reconfulide to hir hosbonde/
 and ye hosbonde forsake not
 ye wyf. for why to oþ y seye
 not pe lord. yf ony broþ haue

an onsepyful wyf & she
 consentip for to dwelle wyf
 hy. leue he or forsake he
 hir not. and yf ye woma
 hay an hosbonde onsepy
 ful. & yos consentip for to
 dwelle wyf hir. leue she
 not ye hosbonde. forsope
 ye onsepyful hosbonde is
 halellide by ye sepyful wo
 man. & ye onsepyful wo
 man is halellid by ye sepy
 ful hosbonde. ellis your chel
 den weren condene. noll
 forsope pey ben holy. pat
 yf ye onsepyful departip.
 departe he. forsope ye broþ
 or sistre is not soget in ser
 uage to sichel. forsope god
 clepde us in pees/ sopeh
 wher of wost you woma.
 yf you shalt make ye man
 saf. & wher of wost you
 ma. yf you shalt make
 ye woma saf. no bot as
 ye laed hay depede to ethe/
 as god hay clepde ethe
 ma. and eu go he. and as
 I teche in alle churchis/ Cu
 ma arctidid is clepid. bry
 ge he not to. pmae/ Cima
 is clepid in pmae. be he not
 arctidid. Cima lionu
 is nouzt. and pmae is nouzt.

200

D

bot pe keepyng of pe comen
demetio of god/ eche man in
what clepyge he is clepide
in pat dwelle he/ p a seruicia
art clepid. be it not charge
to pee/ bot yf p maist be fre
more use pou freedom he p
in pe lord is clepid duant
is free ma of pe lord/ also
e he pat fre man is clepid
is pe duant of crist/ my
pe ze ben bougte/ mylze he
made duantis of men/ pat
ze putte manes duice byse
ze godis duice eche ma per
fore in what clepyge he is
clepid/ in pat dwelle he a
neutis god/ ffesope of
vngyno/ I haue not pcept
of god/ sopeh/ I yne consel
as hanngye nioye of pe lord
pat I be trew/ pfore/ I gesse
or deeme no pmyng forto be
good for pssent need. for
is good to amā for to be so/
pou art bounden to a wyf.
npl pou seel onbyndyge/
pou art onbonden fro a
wyf/ npl pou seel a wyf.
pou hast not syned/ e npl
amayden be wedd. she
syned not/ nepelos othe
nshul haue tribulacion
of flurth/ ffesope I opare

you/ and so bryden/ sey mo
pmyng/ pe tyme is short/ pe
to per pmynges/ p a pei pat han
wyues/ be as not hanngye/
e pei pat weepen/ as not
wepyng/ and pey p ioyen/
as not ioyng/ e pey p bye
as not hanngye/ e pei p oken
no world/ as pey p oken
it not/ ffesope pe figure or
ferrenesse/ e pssm of no
world passy/ ffesope I wole
you for to be wyf outen byse
nesse/ sopeh/ he pat is wyf
oute wyf/ is byse what p m
no ben of pe lord. hou he st
hal plesse to god/ ffesope he
pat is wyf allwyf/ is byse wif
nyges ben of pe world. hou he
shal plesse pe wyf/ and he is
departed. gndel to god e gndel
to pe world/ and a womā on
wedd e mayden p mēp wif
nyges be of pe lord. p ppele
holly in body e apurit/ ffesope
othe pat is wedd. p mēp
what pmynges ben of pe world/
hou the shal plesse hir hof
bonde/ sopeh I sey pese
pmynges to zome pssm/ not
pat I caste to you a snare/ bot
to pat p is honest e zener
faculte/ or eynesse wyf oute

Do

bm

letyngge forth biseche to pe lord
 Sopely yf any kep of virgyns
 deme hy self for to be seen
 foul on his virgyn: pat she
 is real olde and so it by honer
 pat it be done pat she take
an hosbonde. Do hir kep what
 she wole he synep not yf
 she be weddid, for why he
 p^rordayned stable & indefat
 in his herte not hanyngge
 need. Bot hanyngge powber of
 his wille & hap deemyde
 in his herte his p^ris. for to
 kepe his virgyn. do wele/
 fore he pat ioynep his vir
 gyn & matrimonye. do wele/
 and he p^r ioynep not. do y
 betre/ pe woma is bounden
 to pe lawe. hou myche tyme
 hir hosbonde shup/ p^r yf
 hir hosbonde schal slepe
 pat is dyer she is desyred
 fro pe lawe. be she weddid
 to whom she wole. onesh
 pe lord/ forsope she schal
 be more blessid. yf she shal
 dwelle his aftir my com
 sole/ forsope I wene p^r &
 I haue pe spirit of god.

reueren pe conseil. bm

A E forsope of pese pringes
 p^r be offrid to ydolis.

pat ben symylacris made
 to mans licenese. we w
 ten for alle we han knowis/
 Sopely nience or frayge
 in blowyng wypride cha
 rite edifiep/ forsope yf
 any man gesse or deeme
 hy for to write any ying
 he hap not yet knowe hou
 it by honer hy for to kene/
 forsope yf any man knowe
 god. his is knowen of hy/
 forsope of metis pat ben
 offrid to ydolis. we witen
 for an ydol is no pring i pe
 world. and pat his no god
 no bot oon/ for why & yf
 p^rben pat ben god godis.
 ey in heuene ey in erpe
 forsope p^rben many godis
 & many lordis. neyelles to
 us is oo god/ pe fadir. of
 who alle pringes. & we in
 hy. and oo lord ihu est. by
 whome alle pringes. & we
 by hy. bot not in alle me
 is frayge/ Sopely shup
 consience of ydol til noll
 eten as pring offrid to yd
 les. & her consience is
 anclene. whene it is oock/
 mete comendyng us not to
 god/ ney forsope we schuln
 fayle. yf we schuln not eta

neynt we eten we schulen
a bounde in fery. See ze for
sope lest pauenture þe ȝe
licence or leue. Be maad
grytunge & stande to þe
þe me in fery. sopeþ nfor
man schal see hy pat hap
kynge restye in a place
Wher ydole ben worshipid.
Wher ho qstence syt it is
seel schal not edfied & sy
rid for to ete pinges offride
to ydole. & pe seel or consc
defast bropr for whome
crst dede. schal qusthe in
in kynge fforsope nio ze
grytunge in to bryden. and
grytunge her seel consuede.
Synen in crst. Wher fore nif
mete stande my bropr.
I schal not ete fleische in
to my outen ende. lest I
stande my bropr.

Wher y am not free.
am I not apostle. W
her I sarve not ch
rist oure lord. Wher ȝe
ben not my werc in pe
loed. And pou to oper
I am not apostle. Bot ne
pelles to ȝou I am ffor
Whe ȝe ben pe signade
or lital signe of my apos
tled in pe lord. my de
fense to hem þat age me
is no. Wher we han not

polber for to ete & drynke.
Wher we ha not polber for to
lode aboute a woma syster.
as of apostlo & bryden of
pe lord. & cepha & petre
or I aloone & barnabas. han
not polber for to wryte pe
þe pinges. Whe fnytt & hal
dy fnyttade emy tyme. W
ho olwe colldis. Whe plan
ty a kynged. & ety not of
ho fnytt. Whe fwy & le
fnytt a flou. and ety not
of pe myll of pe flou. Whe
after man I syge þese þe
ȝes. Wher & pe lawe syge
not þese pinges. fforsope it
is wryte in pe lawe of moy
ses. pou schalt not bynde
pe monye of pe oge pres
chye or traneshinge. Whe
of oge is charge to god.
Whe for no sopeþ þe fery
þese pinges. for whe. f
no þey be wryten. þe þe
ery. wry to ere in hope.
and þe pat preiship or
neiship. in hope for to per
seyue fnytt. fforsope nif
we gouden spiritual pinges
to ȝou. it is greet nif we re
pe ȝoure fleischly pinges.
nif of þen þe send of oure

poller. Altho not raper we
 bot we cufen not p^r poller.
 bot we cufteene or cufte
 alle p^rges. pat we zeuen
 not lertige or cufteindre
 to pe enagehe of crist. Wi
 teze not for p^r pat wreche
 in pe sacarie. pat is a pla
celdere holy p^rges be kept
eten po p^rges pat ben of
pe sacaries. and po p^r ser
 uen to pe auter. taken p^r
 wip pe auter. So & pe lord
 ordeyned to hem pat telle
 pe gospel. for to hve of pe
 gospel. fforsope I oke noon
 of pese p^rges. sopeh. I
 wrot not pese p^rges. pat
 wu be don so me. fforsope
 it is good to me more for
 to d^re. pan p^r any ma aboy
 de my glorie. ffor w^rh^rif
 I schal p^rse pe gospel. glo
 rie is not to me. fforsope
 ned kep to me. fforsope wo
 to me. if I schal not end
 sohe. fforsope if I willy
 ge & p^r p^rges. I haue med
 sopeh. if azemes my wille
 dispensaoun. o bytalen
 to me to p^rite to ope me.
al he it pat for my wille
wille I p^rite not to my

cist. What ffore is myn
 hire or meed. pat I pre
 chize pe gospel. putte
 pe gospel wip oute ope
take or sustynance ffore.
 pat I myse not my pow
 er in pe gospel. ffor w^rhe
 w^rhehe I was fre of alle
 me. I made me suant
 of alle me. pat I schulde
 w^rne mo me. & to ielbis
 I am made a ielb. pat I
 schulde w^rne ielbis. to he
 pat ben andur pe lawe.
 as I were andur pe lawe.
 w^rhe I was not andur pe
 lawe. pat I schulde w^rne
 he pat weren andur pe
 lawe. to he p^r were wip
 oute lawe. as I were wip
 oute pe lawe. w^rhe I was
 not wip oute pe lawe of
 god. bot I was in pe lawe
 of crist. pat I schulde w^r
 ne he p^r were wip outen
 lawe. I am maad oek to
 oek me. pat I schulde
 w^rne oek men. to alle
 me. I am made alle p^rges.
 pat I schulde make alle
 me saafi. fforsope I do alle
 p^rges for pe gospel. pat
 I be made p^renere of it.

W
S

Werte not pat pey pat re
ue in a furlonge. alle forsope
reue. bot con takip pe po/
so reue ze. pat ze take. eche
man pat frey uey in fytte
abstenei. he fre alle pigo
pat letten he. and pey for
sope pat freue i hit pat
pey take a corruptible aolm.
we forsope an vncorrupt/
pfare i reue so. not as in
to onteyn pig. pus i fi
te not as betyngge pe eu.
bot i chastise my body and
i bryge it in to suage. lest
pauence whe i have pshid
to oper. i my self be made
rephable.

W
A

Sopely bryperen
mylzon for to
vntroble. for
alle oure fadris weren
arid in a cloude defendyng
he fro pe espayens. and
alle passiden pe see. and
alle be baptid i moyse.
in pe cloude & in pe see/
& alle ete pe same spiri
tual brede manna. & alle
draken pe same spiritu
el drynk. fforsope. pei dri
ken of pe spiritucl. a ston
folowhyge hem. fforsope

pe ston was crist. bot not i
ful many of he. it was wel
plesant to god. ffor why pey
ben cast don in pe desert. ffor
sope yese pigis ben don in si
gure of us. pat we be not co
ueteris of yuel. as & pey co
uertiden. ney be ze made ydel
trieris. pis washipis of false
malice. as on of hem as
it is writen. pe pepul sate for
to ete & drynke. and pey han
rise up for to playe. ney do
we fornycaoun. as on of he
denfornicaoun. & pre & tle
ty poussand fallen or dreden
in o day. ney tempte we oft
as on of he temptide. and
pistide of spentis. ney gruc
che we as on of he grucche.
& pey pistiden of pe waast
or distruder. fforsope alle yese
pigo felle to he in to figure/
sopely pei be writen to oure
correctioun or amendyng. i to
Whome pe cendis of pe world
han name. and so he p gessir
he for to stonde. see he pat
he falle not. temptaoun
take not you. no bot man
forsope. so diu. wele pe whiche
shal not suffre you for to
be temptid. on p pze molten

Insteyne wherfore ze most dere
 bovy to me. He ze fro Worschi
 pyse of ydolis; as to pruden
 me I speke. ze ion oylf deme
 p^ring p^rye oseye/ ye cuppe of blys
 syng ye whiche we blessed wite
 it is not ye comynyns of chis
 blode. and ye bred ye whiche
 we breke. wher it is not ye
 delynge of ye body of ye lord.
 for oo brede & oo body. we many
 be/ alle we p^rtake pt. of oo
 bred & of oo cuppe/ See ze yra
 el astur ye fleynge wher pey
 pat ete oostis or sacrificis in
 ye lalle of moyses. Ben not
 preneris of ye aitre of oostis.
 What p^race say I. p^ring of
 frid to ydolis is eny p^ring. As
whio say nay/ Bot vo p^ring
 pat hepen men offre. pey of
 fre to deueld & not to god.
 e fforsoye I nyl zou forto be
 made felabris of seendis. offer
 ze moln not dryke ye cupp
 of ye lord. & ye cupp of fen
 dis. ze moln not be preneris
 of ye bord of ye lord. & of ye
 bord of fendis. wher we oue
 by drye ye lord. wher we be
 strengier pan he. alle p^ring
 be lesul to me. Bot not alle
 p^ringis opeden or helpe to my
 course/ alle p^ringis be lesul to

me. Bot alle p^ringis edifieu
 not my neybores/ no ma
 oke pat p^ring pat is of
 anoy. p^ring p^ring may edifie an
 oyl. Al p^ring p^ring comep i pe
 bocherie ete. no p^ring axi
 ze for consience. of vis me
te or of vis ye erpe & ye
 plente of it. is of ye lord/
 fforsoye zif ony of onsepy
 ful or hepe men clepy zou
 to super. & ze wole go. al p^ring
 pat is oete to zou ete ze zif
it nede zou mesurablely. no
 vis axige for consience. zif
 ony man copelely ohal oseye
 vis vis or vis mate is offrid
 to ydolis. nyl ze ete for hy
 p^r oshelwde. no p^ring & for
 consience/ fforsoye ze
 not py consiere. Bot of
 anoy mans/ copelely wherto
 is my liberte or freedom de
 myd of an oy mans consiere.
 p^race zif I take part Wyp
 grace or panchys. What
 am I blassemyd. for pat I
 do graces or panchyngis.
 p^race wher ze eten or dry
 ken or du ony oy p^ring. do
 ze alle p^ringis in to ye glo
 rie of god. be ze wip onte
 offension or schandre to iell
 is and hepe me. and to

pe churche of god. as a by
alle ynges plesse to alle in
wy oute stande not se
eche what is profitable to
me. bot pat pt to manye
me pfit. pat pei be ma
de of.

Be ze folowers of me.
as I of god. for sope
dry I pise you. pat
by alle ynges ze be myddel
of me. or of my antozite or
poller. & as I by toke to you
my comandement. ze kepen/
for sope I wole you for to bi
te. pat trust is pe heuyd of
eche man. for sope pe heuyd
of pe woma. is pe man.
for sope pe heuyd of crist.
god. eche man pynge or
pheyng. pe hed hild.
defoulp his heuyd. for so
pe eche woma pynge or p
pheyng. pe hed not hild.
defoulp hir hed. for sope it
is con. as if she be made
balkid. for if a woman be
not weild or leidd. be she
pollid. for if it is foul p
to a woman to be pollid. or be
made balkid. wile or hilde
she hir hed. Sorely ama
shal not weile. & hilde his
hed. for he is pe ymage
of pe glorie of god. for sope
a woman is pe glorie of

man. Sorely aman is not fir
re made of pe woman. bot
pe woma of pe man. & for
sope pe man is not made for
pe woma to mysuse hir or on
ledd hir. bot pe woma for pe
man to helpe his & obeyntle
to hir. pfore pe woma shal
hane a over on hir hed. and
for angelis or pfit. neples
nef pe ma wy oute pe wo
man. nef pe woma wy ou
ten ma in pe load. for so
as pe woma of ma. so a ma
by woma for sope alle ynges
of god. ze your sile deane/
bitwney or bisemey. it alwa
man not weild or leidd
to ppe god. nef pe hinde it
sile. techy us. pat for sope
pat if ama norsthe longe
heer for his hilt. it is ynel
fanne or standre to him.
bot if a woman norsthe
longe here not for ppe. bot
enayge his firste & ppe
& obeyntance. it is stane
to hir. for heer is ben zond
to hir. for weyl a leidd.
for sope if ony man is oer
for to be ful of stoff and
ge you. we han not siche
custome. neyr pe churche
of god. Sorely no pings
I commande. not ppyng. y
ze come not to gedir in to

C bette yung. bot in to wasser firste
forsope your conyng to gedir in
churches. I heere deptyng of
distenonnes for to be. and of
tye I byleene for whyt byso
nep heresies for to be. p^rey
Whiche ben p^rind. be maad
Knolven to you. I fore you comy
D ge to guder in to oou. noll it
is not for to ete pe lordis so
per. Syr je ben deptyde fro
conscience for sope ethe man
byfore takyng his sop for to
ete. & sopeh anoyr is hungry
anoyr forsope is drynken
wher je han not housis for
to ete & drynke ray at home.
or je dyspisen pe church of
god. & fonde or shame he
pat han not. what schal
I seye to you. I p^rey you.
in mo p^ris I p^rey you not.
I fore I haue taken of pe
lord pat p^ris pe Whiche & I
haue bytaken to you. I fore pe
lord ihu. in what myt he
was betrayed. toke bred &
dyngge gtes or vanchym.
he brake & sende take ze &
ete ze. p^ris is my body. pe
Whiche schal be betrayed
for you. do ze p^ris p^ris in to
my myde. also & he toke pe

cuppe after he hap souped.
seynge. p^ris cuppe is pe
newe testament in my
bloode. do ze p^ris p^ris. hou
ofte eile ze schuld drynke
it. in to my mynde. Sope
h^e hou ofte eile ze schulen
ete mo brede & drynke p^r
cuppe ze schuld shewe
depe of pe lord. til he come.
and so Whiche eile schal ete pe
bred or drynke pe cuppe of pe
lord gyltynly. he schal
be gilty of pe body & bloode
of pe lord. I fore sope que
aman hy self. and so ete
he of p^ris brede & drynke
of pe cuppe. I fore sope he p^r
etip & drynke gyltynly.
etip & drynke dome or dyp
nagoun to hym. not wise
ly deynge pe woypp
of pe bodye of pe lord. I
fore amonge you ben many
ceel & constronge or feble.
& manye slepen or dyen.
I fore if we deynge wisly
oure self. forsope we schul
de not be deynge. Sopeh
pe Whiche we ben deynge
of pe lord. we ben chastysid
pat we be not dampnyd
wip p^ris world. and so my

bripen. When ze sit to gedere
for to ete. abyde ze to gedere.
pat an acceptable sacrifice
be of zoll alle. if ony man
hungre. etc. he at home
in fnyte. pat he stande
not in apert. pat ze come
not to gedere in to done. so
peh. I shal dispoise of pigno.
Whene I shal come. /

Herfope of pe spirit
el pingis bripen. I
nys. I am for to conkno
we. sopeh. ze write for. When
ze were here. me. as ze were
led. goye to dwibe. o my
lacris. / p. I make knowe
to you. p. no ma. spekyng
in pe spirit of god. / seip
deptyng. fro ihu. / and no ma
seye. pe lord ihu. is. no bot
in pe holy gost. / sopeh. dep
tyngis of gtes. ben. forsope
pe same spirit. is. pe. ien.
and deptyngis of synnis.
forsope. pe same lord. is. pe.
deptyng. and deptyngis of
wurchyngis. ben. forsope.
pe same god. pat wurchip
alle pingis. in alle. / p. /
forsope. to ethe. man. pe
shewyng. of spirit. is. to
ne. to. p. / to. anoy. forsope.

by spirit. pe word of wisdom
is. zonen. / to. an. op. sopeh. pe
word of fynyge. after. pe. o.
me. spirit. / fery. to. an. op.
in. pe. same. spirit. / to. an. op.
grace. of. helpis. in. oo. spirit.
to. an. op. pe. wurchyng. of. ihu.
es. / to. an. op. p. / to. an. op.
distreyn. or. drey. knowyng.
of. spiritis. / to. an. op. / kyndis
of. tongis. or. fangis. / to. an.
op. / intpretyng. or. ceryfying.
of. wordis. / forsope. alle. pe. se.
pingis. oon. / &. pe. same. spirit.
wurchip. deptyng. to. ethe. by.
he. o. as. he. wote. / sopeh. pe.
as. p. oo. body. / &. hap. many.
mebris. forsope. alle. pe. men.
bris. of. pe. body. / whene. pe.
ben. many. / ben. oo. body. p. /
cris. / and. sopeh. in. oo. spirit.
alle. eke. ben. baptisid. into.
oo. body. / eper. i. i. e. e. p.
men. e. p. / in. a. u. n. t. i. s. e. p. free.
and. alle. we. han. drunken.
in. o. spirit. / for. why. / &. pe.
body. is. not. oo. mebre. bot.
many. / if. pe. foot. shal.
seye. for. I. am. not. pe. hand.
I. am. not. of. pe. body. not.
p. / it. is. not. of. pe. body.
and. if. pe. ere. shal. seye.
for. I. am. not. pe. eye. I. am.

not of pe body. not yffore it
is not of pe body. yif al pe
body be ye ne. wher is hee
ryng. And yif al pe body be
geerynge. wher is smellig.
noli forsope god hap punte
mebris. & eche of he in pe
body as he wolde. pat yif
alle weren oo mebre. wher
is pe body. Bot noli sopehly
many mebris. sopehly oo
body. for sope ye ne shal not
mou seye to ye hond. I ha
ue no need to py werk. or
eft ye hed to ye feet. ye be
not necessarie to me. bot
myche more po yf ben seen
for to be more seke or lalber
mebris of pe body be more
uede ful. & to hem pat we
zessen for to be arimobler
mebris of pe body. we iene
more hono in cupas. ofte
tymes chyringe hem. and
po mebris pat ben unhonef.
han more honeste. And sope
oure honest mebris of no
han need. bot god terti de
pe body. ynyunge more wor
sthip to it to whom it fay
hede. pat debate be not in
pe body. bot pat pe men
bris be hisse in to pe same

ping for eche op. and yif
oo mebre glonep. alle me
bris ioyen to gedur. for
sope ye ben pe body of chi.
& mebris of mebre. &
sopehly god punte on in
pe chyrche. ffurste apostho.
ye secunde tyme apstho.
ye prid techens. after
ward stues. after ward
graces of helyngis. hel
pingis. godneiths or ga
dingis. kyndis of sin
sagis. interpretacions of
wordis. wher alle ben
apstho. wher alle apstho.
wher alle techens. wher
alle stues. wher
alle me han grace of he
lyngis. wher alle ope
fen wip limgagis. wher
alle interpreten or expoit
nen. forsope one ye pe
beter gostly ziftis as is
charite. and yif i shalbe
to you a more excellent
or worpy weye.
if i speke weyy
tongis of men &
aungelis. sopehly
if i haue not charite.
i am maad as brasse son
nyge or a sydal tyngge.

¶ xij. a

And if I shal haue pphesye
 and haue knowen alle mys-
 tries & al knowynge of thence
 and if I shal haue al fey.
 so pat I ouer bere hillo
fro oo place to anoth. for
 sope if I shal not haue
 charite. I am nougt and
 if I shal depte alle my
 goodis in to metis of po-
 re me. and if I shal by
 take my body so pat I
 breue. forsope if I shal
 not haue charite. it pro-
 fitip to me no pingich-
 ritte is patient. it is be-
 myge or of good wille.
 charite enyeip not it do-
 not gile. it is not t blowe
wypp wynde. it is not am-
 bionse or couetousse of
worstchips. it sekyp not
 po pinges pat ben her
 oibn. it is not sturde to
 wrape. it pulyp not puel.
 it ioieip not on wickid-
 nesse. forsope it ioieip to
 gedur to treupe. it suffey-
 alle pises. it bylennyp al-
 le pises pat ben to byle-
ue. it hoipyp alle pinges.
 it suffeyney alle pises
 charite fallip not down.

Wher pphesies schuld be
 voidid. eny langagis schuld
 ceese. eny mence shal be dis-
 troned. forsope of pte the
 han knowen. & of pte we
 pphesien. forsope wherme
 pat shal come pat is pte.
 pat pis pat is of pte shal
 be auoyd. Whene I was
 a litil child. I spake as a li-
 tel child. I vnderstod as a
 litil child. I pougt as a litil
 child. forsope whene I was
 made man. I auoyd po py-
 gis pat weren of a litil child.
 forsope we seen nobb by a
 myronr in dercnesse. pan
 forsope face to face. nobb I
 know of pte. pan forsope
 I shal knowe. as & I am know-
 en. nobb forsope dwelle far
 hope & charite. yese pre-
 forsope ye more of he is cha-
 rite.

So ne ze charite. loue ze
 spiritual pingis. more
 forsope pat ze pphesie.
 Sope he pat spekip i ton-
 zer. spekip not to me bot
 to god. forsope no man heerip.
 sope ye opirit spekip.
 my ples. for wher he pat
 pphesie. spekip to me to

edificatiō. & monestynge
 & comfortynge or counsaillynge
 he pat spekyt in tonge. & de-
 fies by sylf. for sope he pat
 pphesay. & defies ye churche
 of god. for sope I wole zolb
 alle for to speke in tongis.
 bot more for to pphesay. for
 why he p^r pphesay. is more
 wey pan he pat spekyt
 in tongis or langage. no
 bot pauente he p^r int^rprete
 or declare. pat ye churche
 take edificatiō. noll for so
 ye brufen yf I schal come
 to you spekyng in tongis.
 what schal I p^rte no bot
 yf I schal speke to you eny
 in reuelatiō eny in sciēce
 eny in pphesay. & eny in techyn-
 gis. neples so p^ris pat
 ben in oute soule or hert.
 zenyge voices. eny pipe eny
 harpe. no bot yf ye schule
 zene distynctiō of soules
 nyngis. hou schal it be found
 pat is synge. eny p^r pat
 is harp. and sope yf
 ye trupe zene oncteynē
 voice. who schal make hy
 sylf redy to bataille. So
 & no bot ye schul zene an
 ope word by tonge. hou

schal pat p^r is seide be
 knowen. sope ye schule
 be spekyng in ye cyres.
 so many ben tynio or fan-
 sagis in p^ris world. &
 no p^ris is in oute
 voice. p^ris yf I schal
 not knowe ye true of
 voice. I schal be to hym
 to whome I schal speke
 a barbar or not vnder-
 stonden. & he p^r spekyt
 to me a barbar. So & ye
 for ye ben lous of spiritis.
 desirynge his p^ris. to ye
 edificatiō of ye churche.
 seke p^r ye be plentenouse.
 and yf he p^r spekyt
 in tynge. prege pat he
 int^rprete or expolnys for
 why yf I p^r in tynge.
 my spirit p^rep. for sope
 my myde or resoun. is
 in oute synge. p^ris
 what p^ris. & schal
 p^ris tynge. I schal p^r
 & in myde or resoun. I
 schal seye psalme tyn-
 ge. I schal seye psalme
 in myde or resoun. for
 why yf you schal blesse
 in spirit. who fulfillep
 ye place of an ydiote.

or oulernd mā. thou shal
 he seye and upon pe bles
 ynge for he wote not w^{ht}
 you seist for why you
 sopele do w^{le} g^o or
panctynge. bot & oper
 mā is not edified. I do
 g^o to my god. for I ope
 le in pe langagis of alle
 you. bot in pe churche I
 wole speke fyne wordis
 in my Witt p^r & I teche
 of mē. pan ten poustis
 of wordis in tinge oonk
wey oute & claryge. by
 pen m^{yl} ze be mad chil
 den in Wittis. bot i mā
 lize be ze litel ffor sope in
 Wittis. be ze p^rst. sopele
 in pe lawe it is writen.
 ffor in of tinge & oper
 lipes. I schal speke to mo
 pepul. and ney so it shal
 here me seip pe lord. &
 so langagis ben in to
 tokene. not to feipfulmē.
 bot to mē out of pe feip.
 ffor sope pphesies be not
 to mē out of pe feip. bot
 to feipful mē. p^rfore n^l
 al pe churche come to
 gidir in to oon. & alle mē
 opeken in tinge oonk. so

pely n^l ydatis entre or
 mē out of pe feip. wher p^r
 seyn not. what be pe wood.
 ffor sope n^l alle mē pphesie.
 ffor sope n^l eny unfeipful
 man or ydot entre. he is
 count of alle. he is w^lsely
 demyde of alle cushable. ffor
 sope pe h^ld p^rngis of his
 herte be knowen. and so
 he fallge doir in to pe fac
 schal wouthepe god. schal
 ynge w^lly pat god is in
 you. p^rfore brypen w^lstatio
 w^lhe ze come to gidir. eche
 of you hap a psalm. he hap
 techyng. he hap apocalips
 or revelaoun. he hap tinge.
 he hap mēpretyng or ex
 pounyng. be alle p^rngis
 don to edificacoun. wher
 amā o^lky in tinge astir
 also to gidir. or as mychel
 ast^rre. and by p^ries ope
 linge in pe churche. pat
 oon mēprete or declare to
 pe pepul. ffor sope n^l p^rbe
 not an mēpreteour. be he
 stille or opele not p^r opeky
 in pe churche. sopele ope
 be he to hy o^llf & to god.
 sopele pphesie also or pe
 seip. & of w^lsely demē

What ye seyn pat if any man
of harte shal be schewid woun-
dourge be ye former stille/
for sope ye moov apheare alle
eche by hy self. pat alle me
lernen & alle me moneste &
pe spiritus of apheare. be so ge-
tis to apheare. eche mekly ler-
nyge of ap & comynyng wip
owr sope god is not of dis-
cenaon. bot of pees/ as & in
alle churchis of holy me i pre-
che. wip me in churchis be stille/
sope it is not suffride to
he for to speke. bot for to be
soget as pe halve seip/ for
sope if pey wolen eny pis-
terne at home axe pey her
hofelondis feipful i pe lord/
for sope it is foul pms to a
woman. for to speke i pe chir-
che/ wher of zon pe word of
god came forp. or to zonal-
ne it came. if eny man is
seen for to be apphetie or spi-
ritual. Enolke he po piges
pat i wite to zon. for pey
ben pe comatidementis of
pe lord/ for sope if oty ma
unknowen. he shal be un-
knowen/ and so brisen some
ze for to apheare & sylze
forbede for to speke i tngis/

myche more forde ze not p-
phetis/ for sope be alle pi-
gis dn honestly wip pees.
& astir ordre in zon before
leyd. /

Sope brisen i.
make pe gospel
knowe to zon. pe
whiche i have schid to zon.
pe whiche & ze han taken.
in whiche & ze stonde. by
whiche & ze ben saved/
by whiche restit. i have
schid to zon if ze holden/
if ze han not byleind idly/
for sope i bytok to zon in
pe first. p^r p^r p^r & i by-
tok of pe holy gost wip
oure fornyge for crist
was ded for oure synes
astir pe septuris. and for
he was buried. & for he
ros agen in pe prid day
astir scripturis/ and for
he was seen to cephas p^r
is petre and astir p^r
p^r to elleue asturward
he was seen to mo pan
true hundrey brisen to
sider of pe whiche many
dwollen til to zo. feipful
in pat bylene/ for sope
siune witnessis in pe same

c xv

a

Gylne. han slept or dyed
 afterward he was seen to
 James. afterward to alle
 apostles. forsope at pe
 laste of alle he was seen
 to me as to a myshome
 child. forsope I am pe lest
 of apostles. I am not we
 py for to be clepid apostle
 for I perswede pe church
 of god. forsope by pe gra
 of god. I am p'pyng pat
 I am. And his grace was
 not weyde or ydel in me.
 bot I treuillde more plen
 tiously. ven alle pey.
 forsope not I bot pe grace
 of god Wip me. Sopeh. we
 pr. I. Wepir. pey. colke ha
 p'chide eft to haue risen. &
 sope han bylencyd. forsope
 if crist is p'chid. p' he roos
 azein fro deed. spiritus. hon
 Geyn. stime in ion for pe
 azeinysinge of deed men is
 not. forsope if pe azein
 rysinge of deed me is not.
 nesp. eft roos. Sopeh. if eft
 roos. not. oure p'chynge. is
 weyn. oure fep. is weyn.
 forsope & we ben fonde
 false witnessis of god. for
 we han orde witnessige

en de

azeines god. pat he reside
 crist. Whom he resided not. if
 deed me risen not azein. for
 why if deed me rise not a
 zein. nesp. eft roos azein. pat
 if eft roos not azein. oure fep.
 is weyn. forsope if ye be in
 joure synis. not troubynge
his coprysinge. Wep. a. pey
pat slepten or dyeden in crist
pat is in his fep. han pe
risthde. if in his fep. only
 we ben happyng in crist.
 we ben more breache. ven
 alle me. nold forsope. if roos
 azein fro deed. me. pe firste
 fructis of slepyng me. or
dynge. forsopeh. by ama
 dep. & ama azeinysinge of
 deed me. and as in adam
 alle me diene. so in crist
 alle me schuld be quene.
 eche ma forsope in hys
 orde or dynge. firste fuy
tis eft. for he worpy. har
refurste & moost dynge.
 afterward pey. p' ben of eft.
 pat bylencyden in to his
 comynge. afterward au
 cendi. w' hane he schal p'ri
 ke pe kyngdom of god. and
 to pe fadir. & hane he schal
 auoyde al prynces. &

posse & stue. sopeh it byso
 uep hym for to regne. til he
 he putte alle hys enemyes
 andur his feet. forsope at
 ye laste. ye chye depe schal
 be destruyed. forsope he hay
 made soget alle pigis andur
 his feet. forsope whene he
 seip. alle pigis ben sogetis
 to hy. wip oute doute out
 taken hy pat sogende alle
 pigis to hy. sopeh whene
 alle pigis schuln be soget
 to hy. pan he pe sone schal
 be soget to hy. pat sogende
 alle pigis to hy. pat god be
 alle pigis in alle ynges/
 ellis what schuln pey an
 pat be baptyside for ded
 me. yf in al maner ded
 me risen not azem. wst
 & we ben in pel every hour
 ethe day. I dye & am I pel
of dey. for youre glorie bre
 den. ye the glorie I haue
 in crist ihu oure laad. yf
 ap man I haue fouzten to
 beestis & azem beestis at
 yphel. what pstep it to me.
 yf ded me rise not azem.
 yf it be so. etc me & dryk
 the. to moure forsope & hal
 tly. the schuln dye. wyl ze
 be dysteyned. by fals redyng

forsope ynel spechis &
 false doctryne. arispen
 & destruyed good pelvis
 & stues. a wabeze in st
 men. & wyl ze oyne for
 sope sti han ignorauce
 of god. not hilenye p
 crist roel to reidence. I
 speke to you. pat ze nra
me to consente to he pat
hylene not. bot cu
 man seip. hon schulen
 ded men rise azem & in
 what man body schuln
 pey come. conbise man.
 pat pig pat p' solist
 is not qnylened. no bot
 it dye first. and p' pig
 pat p' solist. not pe bo
 dy pat is to come you.
 solist. bot a naked corn
 as of whete or of otime
 of pe op. forsope god ze
 uep to it a body as he wold.
 and to ethe of seedis pe
 appre body. Not ethe fl
ische pe same fleische.
 bot forsope an of of me.
 an of sopeh of beestis
 an of forsope of briddis
 an of forsope of fishis.
 & heuenly bodies & erpe
 ly bodies. an of clernes
 of pe otime. an of of pe

more an of clernesse of
 pe sterre / forsope a sterre
 dyllip fro a sterre in cler
 nesse. so & pe azenrisshe
 of ded men / it is solwen
 in corrupcioun. it schal ry
 se in corrupcioun / it is
 solwen in vnnobley. it
 schal rise in glorie it is
 solwen in fir myte. it
 schal rise in vtrue / it is
 solwen a beestly body. it
 schal rise a spirytuel body.
 if y^e is a beestly body. y^e
 is & a spirytuel body. as
 it is writen / pe firste ma
 adam is made in to a son
 le synge. pe laste adam
 in to a spirit quyeuere.
 bot not firste was y^e body
 pat is spirytual. bot pat
 y^e is beestly afturwarde
 pat y^e is spirytuel / pe first
 man or body of erpe erpely.
 pe secounde man or spirit
 is heuē. heuēly. what ma
 ner pe erpely man. oche
 pe erpely men. & what
 man pe heuēly man. o
 che pe heuēly men / ffore
 as we han boren pe ymage
 of pe erpely man. here we
 & pe ymage of pe heuēly
 bryden y^e sey prs ymg.

for fleisch & blode moln not
 welde pe kyngdam of god.
 to a flouthech ged be purged.
 ney corrupcioun schal welde
 incorpacioun. bo i sey to
 you mysterie or myte of
holy ymgis. ffore sope alle we
 hope good & yuel schulen
 rise azen. bot not alle we
 schulen be inchaunged / in
 a moment in pe synge
 of an ye in pe last trump.
 alle men schuln rise / ffore sope
 pe trump schal synge. &
 ded men pat ben in crist
 schuln rise azen / pe firste
 incorrupt. & we schuln be
 inchaunged / ffore sope it by
 honer prs corruptible ymg
 or body. clope in corrupcioun.
 and prs dedly ymg. ffore
 clope vnderlynesse / ffore sope
 we heime prs dedly ymg it
 schal clope vnderlynesse.
 pane schal be made or ful
 filld. pe word pat is word
dep of body. is conpud up
 in corrupcioun. pat is in genal
refurement dep. wher is
 ancone. dep. wher is y^e
 pric. ffore sope pe pric of
 dep. is synne / ffore sope due
 of synne is lawe / ffore sope
 panalyngis we ollen to god

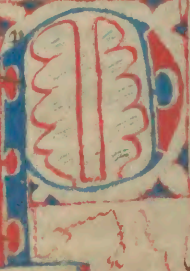
pat zane to us vnuone. he
oune lord ihu crist pat was
deed for us/ and so my dere
worpe bryden. be ze stidefast
& conuonable. beynge plen
teuous in werk of pe lord.
euenmore wytynge pat oure
tranel is not ydol in pe lord.

In hope of pe collec
tis or rederyngis of
monce. pat he made
in to seruis. as I ordeynede
in pe churchis of galathy.
so & do ze by oon day of pe
weeke. eche of you kepe a lxx
up at hym self. depynge yf
y schal plesse to hy. pat not
when I schal come. pan be
made collectis. forsope we
I schal be pssent. whom ze
schulth pue by epistho. he
I schal sende for to pfitely
bere zourre grace to ierlm.
for yf it schal be vborpy
y & I go. pey schulen go
wey me. Sopenly I schal ai
to you. vshene I schal passe
by macedonye. for whi. q.
schal passe by macedonye.
Sopenly paventure I schal
skelle at you. & also dwelle
by winter. pat & ze lede
me vshidw eide I schal go.
sopenly I vbole not noth

see you in passynge. for
sope I hope skelle at of
tyme for to skelle at you.
yf god schal suffice. for
sope I schal skelle at
ephesie. al to witsityde.
Sopenly a grete dre & ay
dent or opyn or pe herte
of many heereris. is ope
nyd to me. & many adu
sarie. Sopenly yf tymothe
schal ai. see ze pat he be
wey outen dreed at you.
for he wirchir pe werk
of pe lord. as and I per
fore no man dispise hym.
forsope lede ze hy i pecor
pat he ai to me. forsope
I abide hym wey bryden.
forsope bryden. I make
knowe to you of apollo.
for q pyde hym myche.
pat he schulde ai to you
wey bryden. and sopenly
it was not his wyll
pat he schulde come noy.
forsope he schal ai. we
it schal be word to hy
or not. wake ze
& stonde ze in fery. do ze
manly. & be ze conformed
in pe lord. and be alle
zourre ymgis don in cha
rite. forsope bryderen

I besche you: ye han knowe
 pe house of stene & wo
ma and of fortunaty &
 acaye. for pei ben pe first
 fructis of acaye. and in
 to myste of ovyntis. pey
 han ordeyned hem self.
 pat & ye be sogetis to fi
 che. and to eche wiche
 to god & trauekyng.
 floope I enioye in pe
 ssence of stene & of for
 tunate & acaye. for pey
 fullfilden p^ring pat
 feild to you. floope
 pei han fullfild & my
 spirit & zoure. p^rore kno
 weze he p^r ben such ma
 ner me. alle pe churchis
 of asle. grete you wele.
 aquila & p^rsa grete you
 myche in pe lord. at whi
 I am herbond. wy her
 homely church. alle bry
 den greten you wele. gre
 te ye wele to god & holi
 cisse. stherynge eche
to of toke of genty
stue my gretynge is
 witen or genty to you
 by poules hond. p^rze
 Enowe it to be of hym.
 nif eny man loue not
 oure lord ihu est. be

he curis maranatha. pat
 is in pe cūpunge of pe lord.
 pe grace of oure lord ihu
 crist. be wy you alle. t^rst
 ihu oure lord. Amen. y
 here endey pe firste pistle to
 to pe corynthes. ad brynn
 pe seconde pistle to pe corynthes.



Dile apos
 tle of ihu
 crist by pe
 wille of god
 and tymore
 brof. to pe
 church of
 god pat is

at corynthe wy alle se
 tis p^r ben in al acaye. gre
 to you & pees of god oure
 fadir. & of pe lord ihu est.
 bleffid be god & fadir of
 oure lord ihu crist. fadir
 of nityes & god of al con
 fort or solace. pat confor
 tid us in al oure tribula
 noum. pat & we moln con
 ferte he p^r be in alle ps
 sure or oylfynge. by pe
 exortacion or monestye.
 by whiche & we be monest
 tid of god. p^rre alle pe pas
 sions of est be plemenous
 in us. so & by est oure con

forte is plenteuouse / forsope
 wher ze ben trobled or affli
ed for zoure techynge and
 helpe eper ben confortide
 for your confort / eper we be
 monestrid for zo monestryng
 & helpe / pe whiche wurchip
 in you pe suffrynge of pe
 same passiois / pe whiche
 and we suffer / pat oure
 hope be sad for you / wryt
 ze for as ze ben felawis
 of passiois / so ze schuld
 be & of confort // forsope
 bryp we wole not you forto
 comferte / of oure tribulac
 ion pat is don in a shew / for
 on maner we ben greuyd
 aboue due or myt / so p
 it annoyed us / the forto sy
 ne / bot we oure self & oure
 self haden answer or ofern
te of dep / pat we be not
 trustynge in oure self / bot
 in god pat reishp deed me /
 pe whiche deliueride us
 and deliuerd fro pe grete
 pils / in to whome we ho
 pen / for & yet he schal de
 liuer / helpe & you dpy
 or fe us / pat of pe psones
 of many faces / of p'ten
 ge pat is in you / be many
 p'tens / graces or panctis

be don to you / for
 why oure hope is in
 pe witnes of oure
 consuetude / pat in
 plenesse & demerit of
 god / & not in fleschly
 wisdom / bot in pe
 of god / we huen in p't
 wold / forsope more plen
 tenously / I wryte to you
 forsope I hope pat at
 pe end ze schuld know
 as & ze han knowen no
 p'te / for we ben zoure
 glorie / & ze oure in pe day
 of oure lord ihu a / st / in
 mo t'ing / I wolde furste
 ai to you / pat ze haden pe
 secunde grace or confermye
 and pat I schuld by zour
 passe in to unadonys / &
 este fro unadonys / I schuld
 de ai to you / & of you be led
 in to judee / forsope when
 I wolde me p'ng / wher I
 of d'lytence / or po p'ng
 pat I p'me / I wold app
 pe flesche / pat at mo be
 the & nay or doubtful
 forsope god is trewe for
 oure word / pe whiche was
 at your p't is not in it / the
 & nay / bot it is the / pat
 is trewe / Gode ihu

pe some of god. pe whiche
is schide in you by us.
by me & siluan & tymo
the. I was not in hyzhe
& nay. bot zhe in hy was
pat is pedefast treupe
ffor sope hou many eu be
by hieftis of god. in hy
is. pat is in hy pei ben
fulfilled pfore & by hy
we oeyn ame to god. to
oure ioye. pe whiche so
pely confermey us wip
you in est. & pe whiche
god anoyntid us. & pat
marke us. & jaf a wred
or cenes of pe spirit in
oure hertis. ffor sope I in
cepe god witnesse in to
my soule. pat I sparynge
you came not on crunche
not for we ben lordis of
zoure seip. bot we ben
helpe of zoure ioye. for
whiche poynt. bileneze us
to

Her sope I ordeyne
de pis pille pyg
at me. pat I
shulde not come ested
ne in to swlbe to you.
Sopely jif I make you co
ry or heye. & who is he
pat stady me. no bot

he pat is swlbe of me.
and pis same ping I wrote
to you pat whome I schal
ci. I haue not swlbe upon
swlbe. of hem of whome
it byhouede me to ioye
tristunge in you alle. for my
ioye is of you alle. ffor whiche
of myche tribulacion and
angusthe of herte I wrote
to you by many teeris. pat
ze be not ovy. bot pat ze
write what charite I haue
more plentiously in you.
ffor sope jif ony man hap ma
de me swlbe. he hap not
made me swlbe. bot of
pye. pat I charge or disp
not you alle. no blamege
pat is made of manye su
flap to hym pat is sicke
a maner man. dyngge oph
standre wip his padu
wep. so pat azeimwande
ze zeue more & conferte
to hy. lest pauenture
he pat is sicke a maner
ma. hisoupe up or dyspe
re. by more grete heynies.
ffor whiche ping I byscche
you. pat ze conferme cha
rite in to hym. for pille
pe syne. ffor sope pfore
and I wrote to you. pat

7 Enolbe zoure assauryng.
 Wher in alle yngis ze ben
 obedient/ fforsope to us home
 zehan ony yng zoue or for
zeien. and I haue forzeue/
 ffor whye I pat I zane of
forzeuenes. if y ony yng
 zane. I haue forzeue to you
 in pe psons of crist. p we
 be not asperued of sat-
 nas. Expyng scrip the us
any malice. sopele we
 knowen not his poutis.
 hou he wolde hy to dysper-
 // re fforsope whenne I hade
 armen to troade for pe gos-
 pel of crist. & adore pat is
redy hertis. was openyd
 to me in pe lord. I hade not
 reft to my spirit. for pat
 I foonde not my brop tite.
 bot I seynge to hem fare
 weel. passide in to mace
 domye/ pfore be panche
 his to god pat eilemore
 maky us to haue victorie
 in crist ihu. & schelvy by
 us pe odour or sweetnes
 of his Enolvyng in eche
 place/ ffor we ben pe good
 odour or sauor of crist to
 god. in pese pat ben made
 saaf. & in pese p^r p^rishe/
 to ope sopele odoure of

of dey in to depe. to ope
 fforsope odour of hyf in to
 hyf and to pese yngis. who
 is so able. sopele we be not
 as ful manye falso apostles
 be. auourtyng pe word
 of god. bot of clemette/
 bot as of god. hfore god
 in crist. we speken/

Byspyne we estone
 for to comende or
pysle oure self.
 or we needen as cūmen
 p^risynge lettis. to zon or
 of you. ze ben oure make.
 witten in zoure hertis.
 pe whiche is bound & rad
 of alle men/ ze made apy
 for ze ben pe make of crist
 mynystre of us & writte/
 not of ynk. bot by pe spi-
 rit of quye god/ not in
 ny tablis. bot in fleischly
 tablis of herte/ fforsope
 we han such trust by est
 to god. not pat we be suf-
 ficient for to p^rishe ony yng
 of us self as of us. bot
 oure suffience is of god/
 pe whiche & made us alle
 mynystres of pe newe tes-
 tament. not by lettre. bot
 by spirit/ fforsope pe lettre
 sleep. fforsope pe spirit
 quyetep/ ffor if penny

in fauon

of depe desoured by lot
tris in stones. Was in
glorie. so þat ye childre
of yrael myght not by
holde in to pe face of
moyses. for pe glorie of
his cheere. ye whiche
ne is anoyd. for not
more pe mynistracion
of spirit schal be in glo
rie. For why if pe myn
tracion of dampnacion
is in glorie. myche more
pe mynistracion of synge
of ryghtnes. is plente
nouse in glorie. for why
neþ þat was clere in
mo þat as ye cheere of
moyses was glorified.
for excellent glorie. of pe
newe testamēt. Soþely
if þat is anoyd is by
glorie. myche more þat
dwellyp is in glorie. where
we haunge a che hope.
as in myche t̃. and not
as moyses putte a key
le on his face. þat pe chil
dren of yrael scholden
not byholde in to his
face. ye whiche overleap
is drecnesse of septuor.

is anoyd by grace of t̃.
for ye wittis of he ben
astoyed. Soþely til in to
mo day ye same wel in re
dyng of pe olde testamēt
dwellyp. not scheldide. for
in crist it is anoyd. for
til in to mo day in herme
moyses is rad. ye weyle
is putte upon her hertis
þat byleuen not. for soþe
in herme yrael schal be con
uertid to god. ye weyle
schal be don allewe. for soþe
ye lord is a spirit. for soþe
where is pe spirit of god.
ye is liberte or freed. for
soþe alle we myp scheldide
face. byholdyng pe glorie
of ye lord. be t̃. schourmed
in to pe same ymage. for
cleernes in to cleernes.
as of ye spirit of ye lord.
O herfore we han
ge mo admyns
tracion or office.
up whiche we han gete
mercie. Paylen not. for
don allewe ye þue yngis
of shame. not scheldide
in vtil gile neþ anou
tryng pe word of god.

alle ymages ben don for you.
 y grace beynge plenteuous
 by manye in doyng of
 panchis. be plenteuous
 in to glorie of god. for Whos
 pyngs yre oue cos. We for
 sen not in tribulaciouns.
 bot pouy wille pat is Whys
 oue for oue man. or fle
the be corruptid. nepeles
 pat ma pat is Whys yne
 forpe is reuelid fro day
 to day. forsope pat yre
 sent or not. a lital moment
 lastyng. and hit or est yis
 of oue tribulacioun. Myr
 chyd on maner or mesure
 in to haer nesse. ye ende las
 yngs wente of glorie. us
 as not byholdyng po pi
 as pat ben seen. bot po
 ymages pat ben not seen.
 ben temporel or duryng
 bot thet tyme. forsope
po ymages pat ben not
seen. ben ethe or ende las
tyngs.

Spych welbren
 for if oue etye
 h house. of
 pis dwellyng be dissol
 ued or distrued. p we haue
 hane a bilydng of god. an
 gons not maad by hondis.

clastyng in heuenes. for
 Whys in pis yng we monne.
 conertyng for to be clopyde
 aboue oue dwellyng of he
 uene. if nepeles we ben for
 den clopyd & not nakid. for
 Whys and we pat ben in no
 tabernacle. sothen wip yne
 forp greynyd for pat we wo
 len be dispoiled bot in clopyd
 aboue. pat wille yng pat
 is dedly. be soupen op or
 don alweye of luf. forsope
 he pat makis us in to pis
 yng is god. pat zaf to us
 alwedd or cruyes of spirit to
 fulfille pis yng. pfore we
 beynge hardye algaus &
 wityng. for while we be
 in pis bodye we gon in pil
 grymage fro pe lord. forsope
 we wallen by fep. & not
 by cleer syti forsope we be
 hardy & han good wille mo
 re for to be in pilgrymage fro
 pe bodye. and for to be p sent
 to god. & pfore wa stryuen.
 weheyr absent weheyr pre
 sent. for to please to hym.
 forsope it byhoney it byho
 uey no alle for to be schawid
 byfore pe trone of crist. p
 eithy man pshelwe or telle hem

pe ppe pingis of pe bodye as
 he hap don. epir good epynel
 pfore we witynge pe dreed of
 pe lord. softely moue or counsey
len to men. pat pey dreed
pe dome. / Sorely to god we be
 opyn or knolken. his trewe loue
 res. / Sorely I hope & in youre
 consuetudo. as for to be knolke
 feryful. We comenden not oure
 olt estidone to you. bot we zeue
 to you occasiō or mater fere to
 stone for us. pat ze haue on
 dur stondynge to hem pat
 stonen in pe face Wip oute
forz as y potting. and not
 in pe hert in spiritual pmi
ges. Sorely wher we be by my
 de or redun passen to god by
 goostly byholdynge. wher we
 ben sobre to you. Sorely pe
 charite of crist dryuep us. ges
 finge pro pms. forz if oon is
 deed by adam and est drede
 for aller. pat & pey p lenen
 lyue not now to hem all oore
fyng erpely vms. bot to hy
 pat ded for hem and roose
 azen. and so we fro pro ty
 me of grace han knolken no
 ma. lymyge astir pe fleyste.
 pat couetey to regne wip
 crist. and if we knolken est

astir pe fleyste byfore he
oppryngge dedly. bot
 now we han not knolke
hy m dedly. pfore if eny
 newe creature is in crist. that
he for olde pingis of pe flei
ste. han passid. and so alle
 pingis ben made new. forso
 pe alle pingis ben of god.
 pe whiche reconterlid. or
acorde us to hym by crist.
 and zane to us mynyste
or dryce of reconterlyngge.
 Sorely for god was in est.
 reconterlyngge to hym pe
 weold. not retynge to hem
 her gyltis. & putte in us
 pe word of reconterlyngge. /
 fore we ben sett in legace
or message for crist. as
 god monestynge by us. we
 byschesen zolt for crist. & be
 ze recommanled to god. god
 pe fadir made hym pe sy
 ne for us. pat is redemp
cion or sacrifice for synne.
 pe whiche knew. .et. y
 ne. p we schulde be made
 pe vyrgynnesse of god in
 hym.

I Or sope we helpe
 ge you in veer
& word monest

pat ze resteyne not ye grace
of god in weyn. Sopely. he
seip. In tyme accept or wylle
plessynge I haue herde pee-
and in day of helpe I haue
helpede pee/ loo noll a tyme
acceptable. loo noll a day of
helpe/ to no man zeynyng
ony offensioun or hertynge.
pat oure mynyste or ser
wyte be not rephyd/ bot
in alle yngis zene we oure
self as mynystris of god.
in myche patience in tri-
bulacioun and in needis.
in angwistis in betyngis.
in prisonis in aduacioun
wip yne forp or monyngis
of peple in tranelis in
watynge in fastynge
in chastite in shence or
hunger in longe abydyng
in swetnesse in pe holy
gost in charite not fey-
ned in word of trewpe-
in pe p[er]son of god/ by arme-
ris of ryghtwysnesse on
pe ryth half & liffte half/
by stoune & conuolley/
by p[er]uel fame & good
fame/ as disteynos &
trewe me/ as per y^e ben
confermen of god and
of hy knolou & p[er]uys

as men dyngge fallynge fro m
ce in to vng and lo we hyem
good werkis/ as chafasid of
greet trespasse & not maad
deed/ as sorowful forsope en
more ioyng/ as hanynge uede
or as maad uede in me forsope
makynge many riche/ as no
yng hanynge and weeld
ynge alle yngis. Oze we
thies oure moupe is opyn
to you oure herte is alargid/
heze not maad streat in
bot be ze maad streat or be
re angwistid in zoure cut
rayles/ forsope ze hanynge
pe same rellarde. I seye
as to songis and heze alar-
gide by pleute of hunger
of stues and of hope in ch[er]ch
nyl ze lede 30c wip onsef-
ful me/ Sopely what p[er]-
se or comoungis of rythwys-
nesse. wip wechidnesse or
what felawshipe of byt
to derouessis/ sopely what
acordynge of wyrt to belias
or what part of a feyful
witten man. wip onsef-
ful me/ bot what consent to
pe temple of god wip y^e
lis/ forsope ze ben pe te-
ple of quyt god/ as pe

178
Lord seip/for I schal dwelle
in hem and I schal be pe god
of hem and pey schul be to
me a pepul/for which pis
go ze oute of pe myddil of
hem and be ze deydil seip
pe lord and touche ze not
ouderne pyng and I schal
resourne zolb/and I schal be
to you in to a fadir and ze schu
lew be to me in to sonye &
doughtis seip pe lord almyg
ty

Therfore most derlworpe
gryden we haunge
pese nistis cense we
us fro al filthe of fleische
& spirit outward & inward
pfitely makyng halellynge
in pe dred of pe lord take ze
us to zoure ledenis/we han
herte no man by yuel enstai
ple we han corrupt no man
we han bygiled no man/ I sey
not pese ynges to zoure com
dempnyng/ forsope I seyde
byfne pat ze ben & oure her
tis forto dyeto gedir & hene
to gedir/ mythe est is to we a
hentis zour mythe & fornyng
is to me for zour I am full of
wip confort I abounde or au
phtenously in roye i alle

oure tribulacoun/for why
& weheme we haden comd
to macedonye oure fleische
hade no reste bot we suf
fiden al tribulacoun/for
sope wip outenforz fytz na
wip yane for dreddis bot
he pat confort mele we
confortide & us god in pe
cūnyge of tate/ forsope
not onely in pe cūnyge
of hē bot also in pe cou
fort by which he confort
tude me in zour tellynge
to us zoure & stre zoure
wepyng zoure loue for
me so pat I joyde more/
for & if I made zolb sory
in a pistle forpmyng
zoure syme noll it rell
ey not me/ and if it rell
id I seeynge p^r p^rom I
made zour sory in pat
epistle at an houre noll
I haue roye/ not for ze we
ren made souful bot
for ze weren made sou
ful to penauunce/ hope
ly ze ben made sory af
god pat in no ynges
suffre payement of
us for al oure dōynge
profit to zour couid

forsope pat corlbe pat is
 after god. Wherfor penaunce
in to faste helpe forsope
corlbe of pe world. Wherfor
dep[re]s to corlbe p[ro]fume p[ro]
you for to be corlbe ful after
god. Hou myche by synesse
it wherfor in you of amen
ding. & not onely amending
it wherfor. Bot defendyng
fro the fallowynge. Bot idig
nacon. Item hym self sha
rynge his ruck. Bot dreed
bot desire. Bot loue. Bot ven
iaunce. to punyssh the synne
in alle punyshe ze han youen
your self for to be condemp
ned. in cause or need pat
ze doj perforce & if i wrote
to you. not for hym onely
i wrote p[er] dide unure ne
p[er] for hy p[er] sufferide. Bot
for to shelle oure by synnes
pe whiche we haue to you
alle for your amending.
Byfore god. pfors we ben
conforted. for p[ro] p[ro]
we p[ro]siden and speedful
by it byfelle. forsope in
oure confort more plente
uously. We wyde more
ou pe wyse of t[ri]te. for his
spirit is fulfillid of alle
you. hoppyng your ame
ding. & if y[et] standem

pyng anentis hym of you to
 mending you. i am not con
foundid or shamed. Bot as
we han spoken to you alle p[ro]
ges in treupe. so & oure glo
rie pat was at t[ri]te. is maad
treupe. And pe entayles of
hy pat is his unward affec
cions. ben more plenteuous
in you. harynge in mynde
pe obedienc of you alle. Hou
we dreed & tremblunge ze
restreyueden hym. i haue wyse
pat in alle ynges i truste
in you.

Brysen forsope we
 maken knolben to you
 pe grace of god pat
 is youen in pe churchis of
 maadomye & pat in myche
 assaynge of tribulacoun.
 pe aboundaunce or plente
 of pe roye of hem was and
 pe best p[ar]t of hem. Was
 plenteuous in to riches
 of pe symplenesse of hem
 for i here witnessynge to
 hem. up pe for or p[ro]dew
we myche monestynge.
by sechynge us grace and
comonynge of mynyste.
pat is made in to holy wo
don pe myste made her

apre goodis amonst. to ye need
of holy men/ and not as we haue
du. pei jaf hem self furste to
ye lord. after ward to us by ye
Wille of god/ so p^r the p^reden
tyte. p^r as he liganne. so p^r he
p^rfourme in you also p^ris grace/
bot as ye abounden in alle p^r
ges in fery word & shenar or
fidynge. & al good by synesse.
more ouer and in youre charite
into us. pat & in p^ris grace
ye abounde/ i seye not as co
munidynge. bot by ye byp
nesse of oper men. also p^rnyge
to gedir ye good wint of youre
altes charite/ copely ze witen
ye grace of oure lord ihu x^p.
for why he was made needy
for us. Whene he was ryche
pat ze schulden be made rich
by his myseste or redynesse/
and y zeue counseil in p^ris
p^ring/ copely p^ris p^rfitable
to you. pat not onely for to d
mystraaon of youre goo
do to poze men. bot & for
to wolen ze bygyne fro ye
former zeer/ nolle forsove
in dede p^rfourme ze p^r as ope
mbut of Wille is redy to
Wille good. so p^r be it of p
fourmynge in dede dinge
of p^r p^ris p^r ze han/ copely

179
 if ye Wille be redy. it is ac
 ceptid after p^r p^r it hap in
 zeunge to relene ye need
 of needy men. not after p^r
 p^r it hap not/ the sope not
 p^r ye largeness of youre
 almes be sleipe to oper
 pat taken it. for sope to you
 tribulacoon for youre sob
 zeunge/ bot i wold of ene
 nesse in p^ris p^rsent tyme
 youre aboundance of Wille
 by goodis fulfillle ye myse
 ste of hem pat ben needy
 pat p^r ye aboundance of
 he pat is ye plente of
 her goostly help. be sup
 plyment or fulfylling of
 youre myseste. p^r euenesse
 be made as it is writen/
 he p^r hade myche abounda
 not. and he p^r hade litel. hade
 not lesse/ the sope i do vanc
 hynge to god p^r jaf ye same
 bysynes for you in ye herte
 of tye. for copely he restey
 ned oure exortacion of a
 monestynge to enfourme
 you to abounde in p^ris o
 plenesse/ bot Whene he was
 bysier. why p^r Wille he
 wente forp to you the sope
 the same why by oure

Grop Luke or barnabas Whoo
 p^r singe is in pe gospel. Wri
tinge or p^r singe by al chir
 chis. ffor sope not onely. pe
p^r singe of h^r is in pe gos
pel bot a he is ordeynede
 of churchis. pe felawe of oure
pildrymage in to pis graa
pat is mynistride of us to
 pe stone of pe lord. and to
 oure ordeynd Wille ep^r chell
 yng pis p^ring. p^r no ma bla
me or disp^rise us in pis pla
te p^r is mynistride of us. to
 pe stone of pe lord. Sopely
We fuere good p^ringes not
 onely byfore god. bot also
 byfore alle me. ffor sope we
 sent Wyp he & oure bro
 per aposto. Whom we ha
 p^rys in many p^ringes of
 te for to be byse uold fast
 pe myche bisier in myche
 trist in zon. ep for tye pat
 is my felawe and in zon
 hely. ep oure. brisen apas
 telis of churchis. of pe sto
 ne of crist. ffore p^r helpe
je in to pe f^ras of churchis
ap^rly p^r ope take in sample
 pe schelgye p^r is of zoure
 charite. & of oure stone
 for you in to hem. ffor Wyp

of pe mynistrle pat is made
 in to holy me. it is to me
 of abundance or plente on
 mesure. to write to you.

H Drlope I wrote zoure
 milbut redy for pe lsh
 che. I haue stone of you
 aneunt macedonies. for and
 acapere redy fro a zeer passid.
 and zoure loue hay stured fil
 many. ffor sope we han sente
 brisen to you. to enfourme you
distreth pat ze be redy p^r pat
p^ring pat we stone in you.
 be not anoydd in pis p^ripe
pat as I seyde ze be redy &
Wys in dynge. Test Wyp
 macedonies schuld come w^t
 me. and schulen fynde you in
 redye. We schamen p^r I saye
 you not in pis substance
or p^rte p^r refenece pore me
to be redy. ffore I esside
 necessarie for to p^rse brisen
 pat pey cume byfore to zon.
 and make redy pis lshyt
blessing. p^r causy enlasty
ze blessing for to be redy.
so as blessing for zoure
good Wille and distreth
and not as anerie or my
garde ney to plente
uth pis p^ring for sope I.

seye for he pat collyp scarssly. n
 hal a starssly repe/ and he p collyp
 up in blessingis. schal repe e
 of blessingis/ othe man as he
castide or ordeyned in his herby
 not of heynesse or schame or of
need oftyred. bot of myrled
ue wilfully to pe needye zeue
he his blessinge to pe pore/ for
 sope god louep a glad zyner/
 forsope god is myzty for to ma
 ke al grace for to abounde in
 zow. pat ze in alle ynges eile
 more havyng al suffiaence.
 abounde in to al good werke.
 as it is wryten/ he dehide also
 de. he zaf to pore me. his ryt
 wysnesse dwellyp in to world
 of world/ forsope he p mynys
 trip seed to pe man collyp.
 a schal zeue brede for to ete.
 and he schal multiplye zowre
 seed. & make myche pe enres
 ynges of fruytis of zowre ryt
 wysnesse. pat ze in alle y
 gis made riche abounde in to
 al symplenesse of ffe. pe
 whiche wryship by us do
 yns of panckis to god/ for
 pe mynsterie of no office
 not onely fillip po yngis
 pat feylen to holy me bot
 also aboundy by manye

in dyngge of panckyngis to
 pe lord. by pmyngge of no
 mysterie glazfynge god in
 pe obedience of zowre knoll
 lechfynge in pe gospel of est.
 and in symplenesse of comy
 nycauon in to hem and in to
 alle of and in byschfynge
 of hem for you to god. desy
 ryngge you to be in blisse for
 pe cleer grace or charite of
 god upon pe onenarrable
or pat may not be tolde yst
 of hyu/ forsope i poule by
 seche zow. by pe homelynes
or mylence and astenes
or paaence of est. pe whiche
 awely in pe face or wypp
 outefor am make amonge
 zow. forsope y absente criste
 in zow.

Forsope lrypen i ppe
 zow. pat i pssent be not
 hardye in to pe ille
 tryste in whiche i am ges
 tid for to be. hardye in to on
 anarect. pe whiche deend
 us as we wandren astur pe
 fleische/ forsope we wal
 fynge in fleische. bere out
 oure enyghode fyttinge a
zein pe world & pe demyl
 astur pe fleische/ for why.

ye armouris of oure knyghtshode
 ben not fleischly. bot myt by
 god. ye distruccon of waard
 as of strengis. distrucconge ye
 counseles and al hecnesse of
Worldly Walk me reside azenes
 ye stence of god. and drynunge
 in to canste in p^r in vs is
 al vnderston dunge. in to ye
 swyche of crist and also we ha
 uunge in redynesse for to venge
 al onobedience. We zour
 obedience. schal be fullfills.
 See zee po ynges vat he aft
 ye face or apynly if eny ma
 trustip to hy self. hy forto be
 of esty pynke he no yng est
 anetis hy self. for as he is of
 crist. so a we. for why a nif
 y schal glorie eny nig more
 of oure of oure posses. which
 ye lord zaf to us in to edes
 inge and not ito zour dis
 truccon. I schal not schame.
 for sope p^r I be not gesside.
 as for to fere zou by epistlo.
 for why pey seyn ye epis
 telis ben heuye or greuous.
to vnderstonde & strong.
 bot ye p^rence of bodie oret
or vnnur. and ye word
 contemptible or weopy for
 to be dyspysed. he vat is
 sicke maner man. pynke

no for what man men be
 absent by epistlo. sicke man
 men vite no p^rent in deed. so
 pely we dzen not putte us
 amonge or gpyson us to fume
 vat comenden hem self. bot
 we metynge or mesurynge
 us in oure self. vat is hysol
dunge ito oure consience. &
 coryp dymnge oure self. no.
 Copely we schulen not glorie
 in to ful myche. bot after ye
 mesure of reule by which
 god mesure to us ye mesu
 re of stretchynge to zoll. not
 forsope we as not stretch
 ge to zou. on holden no offe
 sope vnto zou we came in
 ye gospel of crist. not glory
 inge in to ful myche in of
 mens traueles. Copely we
 haununge hope of zour fery
 wexinge in zou. forto be
 magnifiede ap oure reule
 in aboundaunce. also facto
 p^rche in to po ynges p^r ben
 by zondis zou. not forto gl
 rie in of mans reule or re
chynge. in vese ynges p^r
 ben made redye. forsope
 he vat glorie. glorie he
 in ye lord. forsope not he
 vat amending hy self is

quede. bot wchom god co
mendy or prey?

I Wolde ze schulde sustene
or suffre a lital prync of
my conuyls. bot & sup
pore me or bere me. Sope
ly I loue you by ye loue of god
sopely I haue byghyte or hau
me borke ffor to take you a ch
ast virgync to amā est fforso
pe I dreed. lest as ye spent dys
caynede ene wyth his soule
fraude. so zoure wittis be cor
rupt in hie fraude. & falle
doun fro ye cymplenesse p
is in crist ffor why nif he p
auncy pchyp anoy est wch
we pchen not. or yf ze taken
anoy apunt. wchom ze restey
neden not. or anoy gosselp pe
whiche ze resteyneden not.
rythly ze schulde suffre. so
pely I been for to haue don
no prync lesse fro ye grete a
postho. ffor why nif I be not
leryd in cermosn arrounly
opelunge. bot not in science
or lunynge. I am onleryd/
ffasope in alle pryncs I am
scheldid or made knokken
to you. or weper I haue
don gyune. meekynge or ma
hunge losse my self p ze

be enhamysid. for feely. &
euangelhyde to you ye euā
gelic of god. I cymplide or
made haldid or to be nftis
of op churchis. takynge solke
to zoure enyre. & weheme
I was anentis you anec
ade. I was chargeous to
no man. ffor why bryden p
came fro macedonye. fulfil
liden p pat faulde to me/
Em alle prynces I haue kept
a schal keepe me wyponne
charge to you. pe trenpe of
crist is in me. for no gloue
schal not be broken in me.
in ye regiotis of acaye. why.
for I loue not you. god wote
for I loue you. ffor sope pat
p I do. & I schal do. p q.
litte alweye pe occasiō of
hem pat wolen occaon
or plente or posse. p in
pe yng in whiche pey
glouen. pe be founden
suche. & as we. ffor why
riche fals aposthis bentre
cherouse or glouke. wch
me transfigurynge hem
in to aposthis of est. & not
wondre. sopely he satanas
her heed transfigurep hye
in to an aingel of lyte.

More it is not grete. if his
mystry be transfigured.
as pe mystry of crystis
nesse. Whos end schal be af
tir here Werke. Pfte I se
lest eny ma deeme me vnwis
ellis take ze me as vnwis.
I & I haue glorie a litil Wgt
p p I speke. I speke not af
tir god. but as to vnwisdom
in his substance of glorie
for why manye me glouen
after pe fleische. I schal
glorie. p suche be repuede
forsope ze sufficien glady in
wise men. Wgeze ze oik
be wise. opeke ze sufficien
if eny ma dryue zoll in to
chaer. if eny ma deuour.
if eny man taky. if eny
ma is enhaunsid by pride.
if eny man onytip joui
to pe face. after vnnobley
I sepe. as we weren oek
in pro pte. in what ping
eny ma dare. in vnwisdom
I sepe. I dar. pei ben be
chrestes. I pei be vvaltes.
I pei ben pe oed of abra
ham. I pei ben pe myn
tris of crist. I as lesse
wise I sepe. more I in ful
many traueilis. in pssimo

more plenteuously. in won
do aboue man or of measure
in depe ofte tymes. I reser
uede of pe iellus. fyne oies
fourty stolis oon lesse. pnes
I was beten. Wp zerho ony
I was stomyd. pries I made
puchynge in schip. Wgt I
dar I was in depesse of pe
see. in weies ofte. in pilis
of floodis. in pilis of pefes.
in pilis of ten. in pilis of
hepen men. in pilis in ate.
in pilis in desert. in pilis in
see. in pilis in fals beyden.
in trauele. I myneste. I ma
nye Walynge. in Hungur. I
purst. I many fastynge. in
colde. I nakednesse. Wp onre
po ynges. p be Wp onre
for. my eche day Walice
or studyng. pe by synesse
of alle churche. Whe is seek
and I am not seek. Whe is
standid. I am not bier
or purgid Wp multitude of
standid.

if it bhouep forte
glorie. I schal go
ue in po ynges
pat ben of myn enfirmyte
or friche. god and pe fadir
of onre laed ihu anst. pat

740

290

is blessed in to ye worldis
 Note pat I lye not / ye quost
 or kep of damask of ye king
 of ye folk arethe / kepte ye ate
 of damastens for to take me /
 and by a Wyndolke in a lepe
 I Was laren don by ye Wal
 and evq stapide his hondos
 pfit byhouer for to glorie
 copely it opedip not / ffor so
 pei schal ai to ye visshons and
 reuelacions of ye lord / I Woot
 amā in est byfore fouretene
 yer. Wher yn body / Wher out
 of body / I Wote not god Wote
 sicke amā ranystid vnto
 ye prid heue and I Wote hy
 che amā. Wher in body or out
 of body I note god Wote for
 he Was ranystid in to pa
 dyo and herde puyr wordis
 ye Whiche it is not lesful
 to eny mā for to pte / ffor
 sicke mind pms I schal glo
 rie forsope for me no pms
 no bot in my enfirmytes
 ffor Why a nif I schal Wolen
 for to glorie / I schal not be
 onwylse / copely I schal exo
 treupe / fforsope I spare lest
 eny man sesse me on p^r p^r
 p^r the seep in me or hecrip
 eny p^r of me / a leste ye

gretuesse of reuelacions
 enhansse me / ffor ye pte
 of fleisthe an angel of
 satanas is zoue to me
 ye Whiche buffetp me / ffor
 Whiche pms pries I p^red
 ye lord / pat it schulde go
 addege fro me / and he seide
 to me / my grace suffray
 to pee / ffor Why due is
 pfitly made in enfirmyte
 ffor glady I schal glorie
 in my enfirmytes / p^r ye
 due of est dwelle in me /
 for Whiche pms I pte to
 me or gretly delite in myn
 enfirmytes in Wronge d^r
 p^r syngis in needis in p^r
 maonds in angustis for
 crist / Copely Wgen I am se
 le pan I am unygy I am
 made onwylse / pms come
dyng my giff ze gstryne
den me for pms zoure bli
me I Was con fcreynede / ffor
sope I schulde or ongt for
to be comedid of zou / Sope
ly I side no pms lesse fro
ham p^r Ben apostho / Aloue
my man / ffor Why nif I be
not apostle as it omeip
to ome / nepeles pe p^r
mys of my ptelesed ben

made on you in al patience. &
 sigys and grete woundes &
 stunes. Copely What is it p
 ye hade lesse of techyng by
 fore opschirchis. no bot p q
 my self greyns zore not lita
lynge of you. for eue ze to
me no ping. lo no pada
tyne i am redye for to ai to you.
 and i schal not be greuouse w
you ffor sore i seke not po piso
pat ben zoure. bot you ffor so
pe nes sonys owen for to tre
soure to fadir & modir. bot
pe gysstly fadir & modir to
pe sonys forslope i moste
wisfully schal zeue. & my
self schal be on zonen for
zoure sonlys. pou i more lo
nyge. be lesse loued. bot be
it i greyns de not you. bot
when i was gouel chise. q.
told or disteyned you wip gile.
when i disteyned you by eny
of hem. whom i ente to
you. i phed tyte. & i ente
wip hy a drop. wher tyte
gysled you. when not & pe
same stepps or werks. on
tyne ze weenen p the schu
ten exaust us auentis you.
byfore god in cryst. we ope
ben forslope most deu bre
pen alle pinges for zoure
edfymge. Copely i dreed.

lest paucature whem e q.
schal aiue. i schal not fynde
you whiche maner me i wole.
and i schal be founde of you.
whiche man ma ze wolen
not. tharpe punys thynge
you i dreed lest paucature
steynyngis. chies steynyngis.
distenacions & detractions. any
specis of distorde. bolmyng
by pe debatis be amoge you.
i dreed lest est stone whane
i schal aiue god make me hi
ble or lost auentis you. so pat
and i wyle many of hem
pat byfore synedr & aden
not penaunt of pe ynclenes
& fornycauoun & unchastite.
pat vey han done.

I no ind tyne i.
aiue to you. & in
pe moupe of tdo
or pre witnesse. enly word
schal stonde. i seyd byfore.
& seyd byfore as psent thies.
and not absent to hem pat
byfore han syned & to al op
for ps q. schal aiue est stone
i schal not spare. when ze
seen an expunent or asam
ge of hym pat opely me
aiue. pe whiche is not ma
& seel or dynnyty in you. bot
he is wyzt in us. for whiche

you be was censured of infirmy
te of mankynd. bot he hup of
pe wu of god. ffor wthi & nif
the ben oek in hy. bot the sth
len hne wip hy of pe dros
god in uor. Dempte or asape
your self nif ze ben in pe fep.
ze your self pue. wther ze kno
we not your self for est ihu
is in zoll. no bot pauent
ze ben repronable. Copeh we
phen pe lard. pat ze do no
wping of ynesh. we phen not
pat we ceeme pmyd of god
in wping oure polker. bot
pat ze do p. pat is good. ffor
sope we ben as repuable. ffor
sope we molka no ping. wem9
treupe. bot for pe treupe.
ffor sope we ioyen for we be
oek no ping. mo thinge of
oure self. ffor sope ze ben
wizy. not dredynge. and
we phen pis ping. your een
dng. pat ze be pfin. Cope
h. perfore I absent. wite
pis ping. pat I pssent do
not harder. astw pe polker.
pe wthiche pe lord zane
to me in to edification.
and not in to destruction.
wipen hennes foyr zoze
ze. be ze pafite. and teche

ze. vnderstonde ze pe same
pms. haue ze pees. and
god of pees and lone sthal
be wip zoll. grete ze wth
to gader in holy cosse. alle
hooly men grete you wth.
The grace of oure lord ihu
crst. and pe charite of god.
and pe conynginge of pe
hooly goost. be wip zoll
alle. Amen.
*here ender pe pistles to pe cori
thians. & by gynnec pe pistel to
pe galathies.*

Paul apostle
not chosen
of me neyr
by me. bot by
ihu crst and
god pe fadir.
pat reside hy
fro deed me.
& alle pe brisen pat ben
wip me. to pe churche of
galathie. grace to zon and
pees of god pe fadir. & of
oure lord ihu crst. pe wth
che zane hym self. for oure
synes. pat he sthulde de
lyner no of pis pssent. w
ward wold. astw pe wille
of god & oure fadir. to w
is glorie & honour. in to

to galat

Worldis of Worldis Amen/
 I Wondre pat p^{re} soone ze ben
 borne ouer fro hym p^{re} ch^{re}pide
 you in to pe grace of est in to
 anoy^{re} gospel; ye sch^{re}che is not
 op^{re} no bot p^{re} ben o^{re}me p^{re} as
 timblen you. A Wolen mysthe
 ye euangelie of crist bot pom
 we or an angel of he nene ena
 selhe to you bihidis p^{re} pat we
 han enagelyzed to you. tursh
 be he/ as I byfore seider nolt
 estesone I seye. if ony schal
 enagelyhe out taken p^{re} pat we
 han taken. urshid be he/ nolt
 consale I to me or to god. or
 ceel I to plese to me. if I rit
 plehde to me I were not pe
 seruitant of crist. Copely
 bresen I make pe gospel know
 en to you. ye sch^{re}che is ena
 selized of me. for it is not
 after ma/ copely neq^{re} q^{re} toke
 it of man. neq^{re} l^{re} myde. bot
 by pe reuelacion of ihu est/
 fforsope ze herden my l^{re}myde
 o^{re}tyme in ielberie. for on
 maner or mesure I p^{re}lied pe
 ch^{re}rch of god. A fangte az
 emy it/ A I p^{re}lied in ielbery.
 aloue many my eueneldis
 in my l^{re}me. beyng more a
 bondaunty l^{re}uer or fuleber

of my fadus tradicion/
 fforsope wehene it plehde
 to hy p^{re} d^{re}pide me fro pe
 robe of my modir. and de
 pide by his grace pathestul
 de schelle in me his soue. p^{re}
 I schulde p^{re}che hy in hepen
 me. anoon I acordid not to
 flesthe & blood. ye nemy
to dices of my flesthe neq^{re}
to byred of blood. neq^{re} I ca
me. to ierlm to my bifore
se/ ers apostlo. bot I wede
forpe in to arabie. & estidue
I tynde hem in to damask
afterward. after preyer. I
came to ierlm for to see pe
tre. and I wellide andis
hy fiftene dayes. fforsope
I salbe noon of ma of pe a
postlo. no bot Jamys pe bro
per of pe lord. fforsope what
ymys I write to you. loo
byfere god takyng hym
to witnesse pat I lye not
afterward I came in to pe
pyres of arie & aliae. ffor
sope I was conknoben by
face or assence of body. to pe
ch^{re}rchis of iude pat were
in crist. only fforsope pey
hadden geeryng. for he pat
pursuede us. o^{re}tyme. nolt

euangelijer pe feip azemes
 Whom he fauhte sūty me/
 & in me or in my thyng
to cristis bykene pey cō
 refieden god.

Afturward aftur fouerte
 nezeer eftsoone i fey
 zed to ierusalem Wh
 barnabas & tye taken to / for
 sope i feydes aftur reuelacion
 and to gader ogyde or dyspūde
 Wh he pe gospel pe blythe
 i pte amonge hepe me / for
 sope asdis bond or by hem
 olt to he p^r were seen for to
 be sūlthar. lest pament
 i schulderne in peyn or
 hade vūne / bote nē tne p^r
 Was Wh me wgo he Was
 hepen Was copellid for to be
 arundis. bot for fals bryp
 ondu brougte pe blythe
 pūchly entred for to aspe
 onre fredam. p^r the han ni
 crist ihu. p^r pey schulden
 dryue us in to seruage / to
 Wh nē at an houre the
 zand fude to subemoun
 as gūit of pe lalle. p^r pe
 tremp of pe gospel dwelle
 anentis zou / forsope of he
 pat were seen for to be sū
 What. What man me pey

Werē sūty me. it pteyne
 no pīng to me / forsope god
 tady not pe psonē of man /
 forsope pe pat were seen
 for to be sūlthar. no pīng
 to me zand to gader / bot the
 Ward. Whē pey haden sen
 pat pe gospel of huic or
hepen me is bytaken to me.
 as of arūaflou to petre / for
 he pat brougte to petre to
 apostleshed of arūaflou. br
 ougte & to me amōge hepen
 me / & Whē pey hadē knoll
 pe grace of god pat is zōnd
 to me. Jamys & cephas & jon
 pe blythe werē seen for to
 be pīleris zand to me and
 barnabas pe rythondis of
 felalesthepe. pat the ptehen
 amonge hepen men. pey
 copely in to arūdaflou one
 ly p^r the schulden be mynde
 ful of pore me / p^r also i Was
 bly for to do pe same pīng /
 forsope Whēne cephas came
 to antioche. i stode azemes
 hy in to his face or ogyly
 for he Was repūable / forso
 pe byfore p^r on ielkis and
 fwo Jamys. he ete Wh he
 pen me / forsope Whēne
 pei came. he brydrolle hy

and aptide hy dyngre he pat
 Were of arcaushoil and of con
 futeide to his feynynge so p
 barnabas was led of he into
 pat feynynge bot wehene i hade
 seen pat pe walkiden not
 rytly to pe treupe of pe gos
 pel. i seide to petre bifore alle
 me. if you oye you art a well
 huest hepeh & not ielsh. hon
 ostreynest p hepe me for to
 by come ielsh. We be ielsh
 of bynde & not syners of he
 pe me etynge budene pma
ney doynge wasshete nepe
 les sopeh we wrytze for ama
 is not unad rytlyse of pe
 werkis of pe lalke no bot by
 pe fep of ihu crist. & we m
 crist ihu byleud. p we be
 mistafied of pe fep of est. &
 not of pe werkis of lalke. eche
 fleische or ma shal not be
 made rytlyse. p. if we see
 kyngge forto be iustified. & est
 & we oure self be founden
 syners. Weh est is unyngre
 of syne. fer be it. Sopal. if
 p bilde azen po pma pat i
 distraye. i make me forto be
 a tpassio. fforsope by pe lalke
 i am ded to pe lalke. p. i
 hne to god. wip crist i am

fichid to pe crosse. fforsope
 i hne nols not. bot crist
 luyep in me. fforsope p. i
 hne nols in fleische. i hne
 in pe fep of godis some pe
 whiche loued me & bytok
 hym self for me. i caste not
 aweiye pe grace of god. ffor
 sope if rytlyshness is by
 pe lalke. est ded weyne
 or kyp oute cause.

O ze witlesse me of sa
 lathie who dysteynde
 zoll for to uot hyle
 ue to pe treupe bifore who
 zen ihu crist is dampnd
or exiled and in zou casied.
 no pma oonly krole i lerne
 of zou. han ze take pe spirit
 of pe werkis of lalke. eger
 of heerynge of byleue. so
 ze ben foolis. pat wehene
 ze bigune by spirit. nols
 ze ben eendis by fleische.
 ze han suffrid so manye
 pmas wip oute cause. if
 nepeles wip oute cause.
 ffor he pat zener to zou
 pe spirit. and wrych p
 tued in zou. wehew of pe
 werkis of lalke. or of hee
 ryng of fep. as it is
 wryte. abraham byleued

to god. & it is reioyced to hy
to ryghtwysnesse. pfore knowe
ze. p^rei p^r ben of pe fere
pat rey ben sonys of abraham/
ffor sope pe scripture p^rueyng
for of fere god iustfies. Hopen
me tolde before to abraham
for in pee alle folkis of byde
schulde be blissid. pfore pe p^r
ben of pe fere. n^richul be blis
sid. By fereful abraham. for
sope who eile ben of pe werke
of lalle. ben andir curse. ffor
it is writen. curse is eche man
pat n^richal not dwelle in alle
p^rmys. pat ben writen in pe
boke of lalle. pat he d^r hem/
for sope for no man is maad
ryghtwys in pe lalle anentis
god. it is knowen for a rygt
ful ma. h^ruep of fere. ffor sope
pe lalle is not of bylene. bot
of drede of p^reu. bot he p^r
n^richal d^r po p^ris. n^richal h^rue
in he. crist deliuid us fro pe
urse. p^r is sacrifice for curse.
for it is writen. curse is
eche ma. p^r hangip in pe tre/
pat pe blessing of abraham
in hope me. n^richul be ma
de in off^r ihu. pat we take
pe byhese of spirit. by
fere. / Writen y oye afe

ma. nepeles no ma disp^ris
pe confermyng testamēt of am^r
or aboue odyney of y^rid. by
hestis ben oyd to abraham
and to his oved. he fere noti
oved. as in manye. not as
in oon. and in py oved pat is
crist. ffor sope y oye p^ro ates
tament confermyng of god. pe
whiche after foure hundre
zeeris. & pritty is made lalle.
makip not word for to d^r alle
pe byhese. ffor why n^r of lalle
is pe heritage. not not of
byhese. ffor sope god zaf to
abraham. h^razem byhese. p^r is
by fere. whiche pfore p^rueyng
lalle. for t^rpassyng. it is
putt til pe oved came to us.
god byhite p^ris. ordeyned
by angelis. in pe hond of a
mediatoure. ffor sope a media
tour is not of so p^ris. ffor
sope god is oon. pfore is pe
lalle azemes pe hestis of god.
for bent. ffor sope n^r pe were
a lalle zone. pe quiche myte
quylene. whiche ryghtwysnesse
were of lalle. bot pe n^rich
endofide alle p^ris. andir
ome. pat byhest schulde be
zonen of pe fere of ihu. et.
to me bylenyng. ffor sope

by fire pat pe feryp came. We
 were kept vnder pe lasse.
 schit to gedu in to pat feryp
 pat was to be oghelid/ and
 so pe lasse for it kept us fro
unlesful pias was oure lital
 maistr in est. pat we be ma
 de rythful of pe feryp/ bot
 whether pe feryp came. now we
 be not vnder pe lital maistr/ he
offreyninge of lawe forsope
 alle we be pe sonys of god by
 feryp in est. ihu forsope. who
 euer ze be baptizid in est. ze
 ha claid est. yis not ielle
 neyr. greek. yis not chaut
 ne fre mar. yis not ney male.
 ney female. y^r hay comclaid
cris. pat ben baptizid i ihu
 copeth alle ze ben oon i est.
 ihu. forsope. nif ze ben of est.
 yfze ze ben seed of abraham.
 attir pe byhest ze ben cyris.
Iseye forsope. hon myche
 tyme pe ere is a lital
 chld. he dristp no pias
 fro a chaut. whether he is
 lord of alle. bot he is vnder
 tutos and kys. vnto pe
 tyme detymyng or byfore
ordyned of pe fader/ so
 a we whether we were lital
 were synge vnder pe ele
 medis of pe world/ pat is

vnder pe lasse. y^r passide as
elementis/ bot whether pe ple
 te of tyme came. god sepe
 his cone maad of allema.
 maad vnder pe lasse. pat
 he schulde azem lye he y^r
 were vnder pe lasse. y^r we
 schulde restyue pe sonys
of est of sonys/ forsope. ze
 ze ben pe sonys of god. god
 sente pe spirit of his sone
 in to zoure hertis. crynge
 abba y^r is fader/ and so not
 yis not chaut. bot sone/
 pat nif sone. pen a yre
 by god/ bot pan copeth ze vn
 Enokynge god. syn den to
 hem y^r weren not goddis
 in synde. bot in opymyon
of me nolle fersope. when
 ze han Enoked god. zhe rap
 ze ben Enokke of god. hon
 ben ze turnyd to god. est
 soone. to seke a freile and
 nedy elementis. to whome
 ze sholen die est soone. ze be
 pen or weyde dys a mone
 yis and tymes a zeer. o
whether ben oon whether
an of forsope. y drede zon
for zour constableness
 lest pmenture i trauesha
 in zon whyp outen cause/
 be ze now as i gylmyng

2
 myo

in crist for and was as ye
ben now repyng albe tradia
ous abresen i lystche zofte
ye han no pis berte me pon
hachtes acuse ye to me
Sopely ye write for by enfirmy
te of fleyste i haue enageh
ed to you now by fore zoe
temptaoun in my fleyste
ye dispyde not ney forsoke
ye resternde me as an
angel of god as it is had
ane wher is ysore zoure
blissdnes ye had by fore
time Sopely i bere whites
ynge to you for ye it myte
be don ye shulde haue put
oute zoe yen z hine you to
me ysore i am made enye
to you geyng twelle pis
to you Sopely we rethold
ue you not wele but pey
bole exclide or put you on
te of bylene pat ye sue ha
ffor sope sue ye good enmore
in good and not only we
i am ysent amentis you
oy lial sonys whom i
childe or byng for by
trauel effdone til it be
fourmed in you ffor sope i
Wolse now be at you and
chaunge my voice in to
sharpe repue of he pat

ben at you. For i am oform
As or shamys in you / Sey
ye to me pat Wolse be ondr
ye lasse fleyste han ye
not red ye lasse Sopely
it is write for abraham
had elbo sonys oon of pe
hond maiden z oon of pe
free Wysf ffor sope he y was
of pe hond maiden was bor
ne after pe fleyste but he
pat was of pe fre Wysf
was born by by hest pe W
che pyngis ben seyd by alle
gone or goostly ondur ston
dyngs Sopely rese pyngis
ben two testamentis Sopely
ye to restained was in pe
mout syna zendryng i
to enage pat is agare ffor
sope syna is an hil in ara
bie pe Whiche is woynede
to it pat now is ierlu z
simp Wysf her sonys for
sope pat ierlu y is aloue
is free ye Whiche is
ouwe modur ffor sope is
write be glad y bareyn
y childe it not or pat br
zist for not children bre
te oute z me pon y chil
dif not for many sonys
of pe for sake Wouan more
ye of hur y hap ahusband

ffor sope brysen we ben after
ysaac. pe sone of bybest. bot
hou yene he p was born after
pe fleische punished hy p was
born after pe spirit. so and
nolls. bot what seip pe scpte/
caste oute pe hond made and
hur sone. ffor sope pe sone of pe
hond mayde shal not be gyve
wip sone of pe wyf. & so breste
we be not sones of pe hond
made. bot of pe free wyf/
by which liberte. est. hap
made us free.

Therfore stonde ze &
restesone nyl ze be to
gedyr holder in zot
of seruage. loo i poule sepe
to zom. for if ze ben arcuadid.
est shal phte to zom no pig.
Sopely i here witnessinge of
tesone to ehy ma arcuady
ge hy self. for he is detour
of al pe lawe for to be don. ze
be annoyd fro est. ze pat ben
unfied in pe lalle. ha. falle
all epe fro grace. ffor sope we
by spirit of fsep. abyde pe
hope of ryghtwysnesse. ffor we
i est ihu. ney arcuasion is
eny pig. wep ney puae.
p is man of here me. bot
fsep p worship by charite.
ze vane wele dyne werke

of fsep. Who lettide zom
for to not oberste to treupe
to no ma osente ze p daller
zom fro est. ffor sope pis phia
hou or soft mouthe. is not
of god pat clepde zom. aly
til conredoliz corrup al
pe gobet. i truste of zom i pe
lord. p ze sthule ynd stonde
noon of pig. bot p i hane
taunte. ffor sope he p datur
blyp zom. shal bere pe dome.
Who eide he is. ffor sope bres
en if i pise zit arcuadon
as barchis. seyn what zit
suffre i pscuadon. pfore
standre of pe masse is annoy
did. wold & pei p dist blyen
zom were kut of. ffor sope bry
sen ze ben clepde in to liber
te onhy. zeue ze not liberte
in to occasion of fleische. bot
by charite of spirit serue ze
to gedyr. ffor sope al pe lalle
is fullfilled in oo word. pou
shalt done py neyboze as
py self. for if ze bunt to ge
dyr & eten. see ze lest ze be
waa stide fro attlyne. p
eche fro omy. ffor sope i sepe
in est. standre ze in spirit. &
and ze sthulen not pfoine
pe desir of pe fleische.
ffor pe fleische comitey aym.

pe spirit. Sopely pe spirit a
 zemes pe fleische/ fforsope pe
 be aduissaries to he olt to ge
 du: pat ze don not po pinges.
 What else ze wolen/ ffor if ze
 be led by pe spirit: ze ben not
 onder pe lasse/ fforsope pe
 werke of pe fleische be oppo
 se pe fleische ben fornycauon.
 unclennesse. vnchastite. lecho
 rie. dnyge to ydolys. dyngis
 of veny or venymouse dedis
 amyties. stryues. dynges. or
folowynge in yuel Wrappis.
 chydnyngis. distenaouis. searis.
 or heresies. dynges. mansleyngis.
 drakenesse. stonynge. shake
 nyngis to pese/ pe fleische q
 pthe to you as byfore seyde.
 for pey y^t don pese pinges.
 shuln not haue pe kyngda
 of god. fforsope pe fruyt of
 pe spirit. is charite. ioye.
 pax. paaence. benygnyte. or
good wille. goodnesse. long
 abyndyng. myldeenes. fey
 tepante. geynence. chastite.
 zemes such pe ynges pe lasse
 is not/ fforsope pey pat be
 of crist. han crucified her
 fleische. vpp croys. & coney
 tises/ if the hve by spirit.
 & by spirit shal the be the
 not maad couentouse of vey

gatorie. to gedir styrynge to
 wrape. haunge dynges to gedir
 riven and if amale. vi.
Be byfore occupied
 or madaun in ey
 ght or spao. ze pat be oppo
 ritual. teches. such amaa
 ma in spirit of softenes.
 byholdyng pe olt. y^t a
 be not temptid fallynge in
pe same wyse. bereze char
 ge. pe top of pe top. and
 soze shul fulfille pe lasse
 of crist. ffor why if ony ma
 sessy hy olt for to be ouzte
 wene he is nougt. he dy
 ceuue hy olt. fforsope eche
 ma pue his owne werk. &
 so he shal haue glorie in hy
 olt. & not in anoyr. fforsope
 eche ma shal bere his owne
 charge. fforsope he pat is
 taught by word. comon to hy
 pat techy hym in alle good
 yngis. nyl ze erre. god is
 not scornid/ fforsope what
 yngis amaa shal colke. and
 pese yngis he shal repe. ffor
 he pat colke in his fleische.
 & of pe fleische shal repe
 corrupcion/ fforsope he pat
 in spirit. of pe spirit shal
 repe euylastynge lyf/ fforso
 pe the doynge good. fayne

We not sodely in his tyme we
schulen repe not seylinge p
fore ye while we han tyme
Wiche we good to alle men
forsope most to ye household
meynes of ye seip // se ye wip
ende
0
What man lettis i haue ver
te to you by my hond: pat ic
be not dysturned by oy falo
lettis sodely we go eile wole
please in fleisch: pefte 9 stey
ne you for to be aruadid one
ly: pat pey ouffre not of relio
psecucion of efts: crosse / for
sope ney: pey p^r be aruadide
kepe ye same: bot pei wolden
farto be aruadid p^r ye glorie
i 3oe fleischel: forsope be it fa
to me for to glorie: ne bot ipe
crosse of oure lord ihu est: by wch
ye world is crufied to me: & i
to ye world: forsope i est ihu
nepl: aruadid is ougt: & oup
nepl: frumie p^rio hepe me auto
bot a nelle creature: & who eile
shulde oue p^rio renle: pees
cyp: he & moje: & cyp: yrael
of god: fro ghen9 forp no ma be
ghen9 to me: forsope i bere i my
body: pe to kins q^d kande of ou
re lord ihu est: pe etc of oure
lord ihu est: w^r 3oe opunt bre
ven: Amen:

for endy ye pistle to ye gala
thies: & biginny ye pistle to ephes.

Ourle apostle of
miste by ye while
of god: to alle
holi me pat ben
at ephesie: & to
seipful in est ihu:
grate to you & pees of god
oure fadir: and of ye lord ihu
crist: blessed be god & ye fadir
of oure lord ihu est: p^r bap
us in al spiritual blessynge
in heuichly w^ris in est: as he
ches us i hy: before ye ma ly
go of ye world: p^r we shulde
be holy & w^rite oute w^rime
i his oyt: in charite: w^rite
che byfore ordyned us i to
adopaon: q^d p^rio of comes
by ihu est: i 3oe: ast pe p^rio
of his while: to ye p^rio
of ye glorie of his etc in pe
wch he made us able to
his grate i his drelkorp: oue
i wch we han grembyng: by
his blode: & remysion of oy
mys: astur pe richess of his
grace: p^r abound: grech: i no
al wisda & prudea: p^r he
shulde make pe factment
of his while: Enle to us
ast pe good p^rio of hy
p^r he p^rio: i hy: i pe dis
pensacon of p^rio of tymes:
for to i store alle w^ris i est:

pe which be in heuene & in
 erp in hy in whom alle be-
 cort or grace beu eke. By fo-
 re ordyned after pe wos of
 hy wat wryth alle pingis
 after pe counſail of his wille
 wat he be in to pe piffinge
 of his glorie. We p by fore
 haide in crist in whom &
 ze wene ze haide heid pe
 word of tremp. reſtaured
 pe goſpel of ioe. helpe. whi-
 che & ze by lunge. be in to
 wy pe holy goost of biſteſt
pat is alled & erme of ioe
 heritage in to pe redemp-
 cion of purchaſing in to
 piffinge of his glorie. // fore
 & i heeryng your ſer pat is
 in crist ihu. & lunge in to alle
 oeyntis. I cek not doringe
 pauchyngis for you. maſyge
 myd for you in my pperis.
 p god of oure lord ihu crist.
 fauor of glorie. geu to yoll
 pe ſpirit of wiſdam & of re-
 nelacion. to pe knollynge
 of hy pe euen of ioe herite
 in lityned. pat ze wene whi-
 che is pe hope of his cleyn-
 ge. and whiche pe riſeſt
 ſo of his glorie of his he-
 ritage in oeyntis. & whi-
 che is pe onſtunge gretnes

of his chur in to us p han-
 dlenyng after pe wryth
 of pe myght of his chur. pe
 which he wrynte i oft
 reſyngis by fro deed me.
 & certyn in his wythalf
 in heuene. in to above eche
 puchpat in pe wryth
 and potestade. & ou and
 lordſhippe. & alle name
 p as named. not con in
 mo world. bot i pe world
 to come. & he made alle
 his ſeget andir his feet.
 & af hy hed upon al pechu-
 che pat is pe body of hym.
 & pe plente of hy. pe which
 alle pingis in alle pingis
 is full.

And wherme ze weren
 deed ioe gyltis & synis
 in which ze wanden
 den certyn after pe ſpate
 & laſtunge of mo world. af-
 pe pnce of palſer of mo enre.
 of pe ſpirit p wryth noſt
 in to pe ſonys of contriſt or
 onſilene in whome we alle
 lyuede certyn i deſires of
 oure fleiſhe. doringe pe wille
 of oure fleiſhe & poyntis.
 & we weren by bynde pe co-
 nyng of wryth. as and oper
 forſope god pat is ryche

in myge for his ful myche cha-
rite in Welche he lounde us.
¶ Whenne we weren deed in
synes. he quickened us to god
in crist. by Whos grace ze ben
saned. and to goddys agem rey-
side. ¶ To goddys maad to sitte
in heuenly pingis. in crist ihu.
pat he schulde in pe worldis
admyge ouer pe plenteuouse
richessis of his grace. in go-
denesse apoun us in crist ihu.
fforsope by grace ze be saned
by feip. and pat not of you/
owely it is pe riste of god.
not of Werke. pat no man
gloze. fforsope we ben pe ma-
kyng of hy maad of nougt in
crist ihu in good Werke. pat
god maad redye byfore. p^r in
hem we go for Welche pis
be ze myndeful. p^r sidyme ze
pat weren hepen in fleische.
pe Welche weren seide hu-
ae. fro p^r pat is seide ar-
hosi in fleische maad by hond.
pat were in pat tyme wey
outen crist. aliened or made
strange fro pe luyge of gra-
ce. and herberid in geho-
of testamētis. not hānyng
hope of lydest. and wey ou-
ten god or knolynge of hy
in pis world. nolke fforsope

in crist ihu ze pat weren su-
tyme fer. ben made my in pe
blood of crist. fforsope. he is
oure pees. pat made hope pe
perpet oon. and pe myddel wal
of a longe wal pat is per-
olde obseruancis. he conlyd
dyinge emmytees i ho fleische
anoydinge pe lakke of man-
dementis by dūnyng. p^r he make
also peplis. in hy oyl in to
anell man. makinge pees.
pat he reuisele boy in oo
bodye to god by pe crosse. old
eyngge pe emyte pat is ome
in hy oyl. and he admyng
euangelized pees to zells p^r
wren fer. and pees to he
pat weren my. fforsope by hy
we hope haue my admyge
in oo spirit to pe fadir. p^r f
fere nolke ze ben not gestas
¶ admyng. bot ze ben atey-
seynes of synnis. and pe
heuenly meynce of god. a
bone bildid on pe foundemet
of apostolis and of apheris. by
pat hezist corner stou crist
ihu in Whome eche hyly-
ge maad. wey in to an
holy temple in pe lēd. wey
and be ze bildid to god. in
pe habitacle of god in pe
hooly sooth.

In grace of p^ro p^ris.
 I poul bounden of
 crist ihu for you hepe
 men. 3if nepeles ze ha herd
 pe dispensaatiō of godis gra
 ce pat is zonen to me in you/
 for aftir reuelatiō pe sacra
 unt is made knollen to me.
 as I aboue wrote in othert
 pms. as ze redynge molben
 vnderstonde my prudence. i
 pe mysterie of crist. pe whiche
 is not knollen to ope genera
 tiōis to pe somys of mē. as
 it is now shewide to his holy
 apostles & pphes. i spirit
 hepen mē for to be end cyris.
 and to godis bodily. & to godis
 p^resens of his bygeest in est
 ihu by pe euangelie. Whos
 mynystre I am made aftir pe
 gift of godis grace. pe whi
 che is zonen to me aftir pe
 vntychinge of his stue/
 forsope to me lest of alle
 seyntis p^ro grace is zoned.
 for to euangelie in hepen
 mē. pe vnsercheable riches
 p^ro of crist. and for to in
 lytue alle mē. Whiche is
 dispensaatiō of sacramēt
 his fro worldis. in god p^r
 made alle p^ris of nougt/
 pat pe myche fold v^risid

of god be knollen to p^ras
 & potestas in heuently p^r
 zis by pe church aftir pe
 settinge of worldis. pe whi
 che he made in est ihu oure
 lord in whom we han trust
 & my aumynge i trustynge
 by pe fers of hym. for whi
 che pms I axe. pat ze fayle
 not in my tribulaciōis
 for you. pat is zoure stone/
 for grace of p^ro vng. I bolde
 my knees to pe fadre of
 oure lord ihu crist. of whi
 che fadrihed of heueneo
 and of erp is named. pat
 he zoue to you aftir pe riches
 p^ro of his stoue. v^ru for to
 be strengyd by his spirit
 in pe iner man. est for to
 stelle by fers in zoe her
 tis. ze rootide & groundide
 in charite. pat ze molben to
 phende or take to godis wip
 alle seyntis. Whiche is pe
bred of charite. & lengpe
of longe p^rseuerance. and
hegnesse of clemensse
meed. & depnesse of pe my
redful dmyt also for to
 write pe charite of crist abo
 ue seymynge to sciēce. pat
 ze be fulfilled in to al pe
 plente of god. forsope to hy

pat is myzte for to make alle
pynge more plenteuouſly pa
we agen a bnd in ſtonde. aſt
pe ſtu pat wriſchp in uor
to hē be gloue in pe church
and in criſt ſtu in to alle pe
generaacione of pe world of
woldis. Amen.

ende

m.

And ſo I bounden in pe
loze byſeche you pat ze
walle worſchp in pe
clepyng in wſche ze be de
pid. wip alle mekenesſe and
myldenefſe. wip patience
ſupportyng or up beryng
to god in charite. byſt for to
bepe counte of ſpirit in pe bond
of pees / oo bodye and oo ſpirit
as ze ben cleped in oon hope
of zowre clepyng / or dæd oo
ſerp oo bapteme oo god. a fa
der of al. pe wſche is aboue
alle men and by alle pynge.
and in xpo alle. // To eche of
us grace is zowen aſtur pe
meſure of pe zeuynge of aſt.
for wſche pynge he ſerp /
he ſteyng in to hez. leſe
pe caritiſtee carit / or prys
myge pſoned. he zawe iſtis
to men / forſope pat he aſ
tendide wſat is it. no bot
for and he deſtendide firſt
in to pe loller pyes of pe

erpe / he it is pat came
dow and pat ſteyede xpo
alle heuenes. p^t he ſchul
de fulfille alle pynge / a
he zawe etime ſopely apoſt
lis. oſtane forſope pphetis
oper forſope euangelis. o
pe forſope ſhepdis and
techeris. to pe ful eendy
ge of oſyntis. in to pe wold
of mynſtſle. in to edificaa
on of criſtis bodye. til we
renen alle in comyte of ſerp
a of knoſhyng of godis
ſone in to a pſit. mā. in
to pe meſure of age of pe
plente of criſt. pat we
be not noll lill children
mouyng as walle. a be
boen aboute. wip al wyl
of techyng in pe wſchbar
dneſſe of men in ſoul wyl.
to pe diſteyngyng of erro
forſope we dyngyng trenpe
in charite. wege we i hē
by alle pynge. pat is aſt
pe honed / of wſhom al pe
bodye sette to god. a bon
den to god by eche ioy
ture of vnderſeruyngyng aſ
tur wſchhyngyng in to pe me
ſure of eche membre. mā
wip enaſhyngyng / of pe bodye
in to pe edificacion of it.

in charite. þfore þis þing
 I cove and butnesse it ipe
 lord. þat ze befallen in þe
 myttee of her but i derces
 ho. þaninge her condurffo
 dyngre dercnyd. aliemyd or
made for fro þe luf of god.
 by ignoꝛaunce or onkynge
 þat is in hem. for þe kynd
 nesse of her herte. þey dy
 poyryngre. bitoken þe olt
 to onchastite. in to þe br
 chynge of al vndermesse
 & conetise. þfore þe ze ha
 not so lernyd by. þat ze ne
 peles ze herden hym. and
 ben tange in hym as is
 treupe in ihu. do ze alyge
 aftr þe firsste þyryngre þe
 olde man þat is corrupt
 aftr þe desir of errour. forso
 þe þe ze reuelled by spirit of
 þoure mynde. and clope ze þe
 new mā þat aftr god is made
 of nougt in ryghtwysnesse and
 holynesse of treupe. for whiche
 þing ze puttyngre alweye lesse
 speke ze treupe. eke man
 his neyþe. for þe be men
 bre to gedre. þe ze vroye &
 myl ze syne. þe sone falle
 not don on þoure vrapmyl
 ze zeue fced to þe denyl. þe
 þat stalle. uell stalle þe not

more forsope transele þe in
 brachynge. vry þis hondis
 þat þis good þing. þat þe
 haue wherof þe shal zeue
 to amā sufferynge need. eke
 yuel word so not oute of þe
 moupe. bot if ony is good to
 þe edificacō of fep. þat it
 zeue grace to þe heeryngre. &
 myl ze to gedre make þe holy
 gost of god cove. or hem. in
 whom ze ben mark. in þe
 day of redempcō. al bittres
 and vrap & indignacō. a te
 & blassemye. be taken alwey
 fro zon. vry al malice. þore
 sope be ze to gedre benygne
 or of good wille. in a ful for
 zeuyngre to gedre. as a god
 fuzano to zon in crist.

I herfore þe ze folowe
 ris of god. as most
 derelborpe comys.
 & walle ze in loue as a ch
 loued us. and jaf hym olt
 for us an offryngre & sacrifici
 ce to god. in to þe odur of ovet
 nesse. fformyacion forsope
 al vndermesse. or auerice
 be not named in zon. as
 it bytomey holy mā. eper
 filye or folh speche. or harbo
 trie þat þeyney not to
 vry. bot more dyngre of
 pancel yngis. þfore þe þis

ende

þe

ying wite ze vnderstonðye
 pat eche leghour or vnderene
 man or auerouse ma pat is
 dyngge of ydolis or malmetes
 hap not crytage in pe kyngda
 of est & of god/ no ma dystoyne
 zou by peyne wordis or fforsope
 for pese ynges. pe wrape of
 god came in to pe sonys of myf
 bylene/ þfore wyl ze be maad
 pcceris of hem/ fforsope ze
 wereu chytme drcnessis. note
 fforsope ze ben lyt in pe lord/
 Walke ze as pe sonys of lyt/
 fforsope pe fruyt of lyt is
 in al goodnesse & ryghtwysnes
 & trewe/ þyngge what is
 wele plesyngge to god/ & wyl
 ze comoit to vnfriuctuose
 werke of drcnessis/ fforsope
 more reprie ze hem fforsope
 what yngis ben don of hem
 in hem in þyng. it is poule/
 & for to crye/ fforsope alle þi
 des pat ben repued of pe
 lyt/ ben maad oppn/ fforsope
 al yng pat is made oppn.
 is lyt pat may be enobled/
 ffor whate yng he crye/
 ryse pou pat clepist i yue.
 & azen ryse fro ded yng &
 crist ghal lytne pee/ And
 so brisen see ze hou warly
 ze schulen goi not as vnklise
 me/ bot as wise me/ azen
 kyngge tyme/ for pe dyes
 ben yueh þfore wyl ze be

made vnprudent/ bot be ze
 vnderstonðyngge whate
 is pe wille of pe lord/ &
 wyl ze be maad drunken w
 wyne/ in what is lyte.
 bot be ze fullfilled wyth pe
 holy gost apelyngge to zoure
 self in psalmys & spirituuel
 songis & ymninge. dyngge
 & cryngge salme in zoure
 hertis to pe lord/ eadmore do
 yngge panceyngis for alle
 ynges in pe name of oure
 lord ihu crist to god & pe fa
 der/ be ze soget to god in pe
 dreed of crist/ Be wyimmen
 sogetis to her hofebondis
 as to pe lord/ for pe man is
 hened or godhoure of pe wo
 man/ as crist is hened of pe
 chyrche/ he is sauoure of
 pe chyrche his bodye/ bot as
 pe chyrche is soget to crist
 so & wyimen to her hofeb
 dis in alle yngis/ men loue
 ze zoure wyues. as & crist
 loued pe chyrche and zane
 hy self for it/ pat he schul
 de make it holy/ clensyngge
 it wyth pe wasserhyge strou
 & lauouroure of wau in
 pe word of crist/ pat he schul
 de take pe chyrche glouise
 to hy self not/ hanyngge we
 me or ryuelyngge or eny siche

ende

pyng of synne. Bot pat it be
 holy and undefouled. So & me
 schulen loue her wyues. as
 her owne bodyes. he þat louep
 his wyf. louep hy self. for
 sope no mā hande eide his
 fleisch. Bot norsthyr and
 forsthyr it. as & crist dope pe
 church. for he ben menbris
 of his bodye. of his fleisch
 and of his bloomy. Synne
in oek or freke. & synne
stronge and holy. for no pis
 pat is for no trelke. hine.
 and schal forsaie his fadir
 & modir. and he schal cleue
 to his wyf. or schal schipe
hy to hyr in holynesse. and
 pe schulen be eke too flesche
 accordyng an oo good wille.
 forsope no sacrament is
 greet. forsope i oxe in est
 as in pe church. no can me
of wedlake. in be kepte i me
fourme. nepeles & ze alle.
 eche man loue his wyf.
 as hym self. forsope pe wyf
 deed hir husbond.

Some oberste ze to
 your fadir & modir
 in pe lord. forsope no
 pms is inst. honour pou py
 fadir & py modir. pat is pe
 firste mandemet in byheest
 of pe second table. pat it

wel be to pee. and pat pou be
 longe hyng on pe erpe. and
 ze fadir. tyl ze terre your
 some to wyf. Bot norsthe
 ze hem in pe dyscipline and
 correccion. or chastyng of
 pe lord. Seruamtis oberste
 ze to fleischely lord. Wyf
loue deed & tremblinge in
symplenesse or mekenesse.
 of your herte. as to est. not
 seruyge at ye as plesyng
 to men. Bot as seruamtis
 of crist wyge pe wille of
 god of inbitt. or resou. Wyf
 good wille. Seruyng as to
 pe lord and to men. Wyng
 pat eche mā what eide good
 pms. he schal do. no he schal
 reseyne of pe lord. Wegew
charit. Wegew free man.
 and ze lordis to ze pe same
 pms to hem. forzeyng
 manassie. Wyng for her
 lord & your is in benenes.
 and takyng of pldoms. is
 not anentis god. her astir
 ward bryden be ze confort
 tide in pe lord. & in pe myt
 of his. Wu. clope you Wyf
 pe armour of god. pat ze
 molken stonde azen. pe aspy
 ingis. or aspyng of pe de
 uyl. for styngyng. or banel
 is not to us azen. pleische
 and blood. pro. it is not to

ſeſſe pat we molken vnto diſ-
 tynge oure olde fleiſchely
 ſtryngio. Bot ſtryue we in
 hope to outdome. ayeines pe
 pryuaſe & poteſtatis. ayein
 gonimouris of pe Worlde of
 peſe derceſſiſſe. Which be
pe demyl & ho lynes ayei-
 nes ſpiritual pingis of the
 kidneſſe. io to ſtryue i heile
 ly pingis. or wiſthi ſtrues. ſo
 fore take ze pe arimoure of
 god. pat ze moſt ayeiniſtode
 in pe yuel day. & in alle þy
 zes ſtonde þfir. þfore ſtode
 ze gud abonte zoure leendis
 in ſopefaſtneſſe. & cloþide
 pe haberiou of ryghteſneſſe
 and pe feet ſhod in maky
 ze redye of pe goſpel of
 pees. pat ze þſchyngge. tou
che not erpely affectioni in
 alle pingis takynge pe
 ſheeld of feip. in pe which
 ze moſt queneche alle pe
 firy dartis of pe Worlde
 emyſel & take ze pe helme
 pat is hope of help. & pe
 ſword of pe goſt. pat is
 pe word of god. by alle þyng
 and byſchynge. preyngge
 al tyme in ſpirit. & in þy
 pat is in pat ſpirit. Wa-
 tynge in al byſyneſſe and

byſchynge for alle holy me
 and for me. pat pe word be
 zouned to me in openyng of my
 moun. Wyp eft for to make
 knowe pe myſte or myſte
 of pe goſpeli for which goſ
pel I am oett in legace or
meſſage in þis chyn. ſo þ
 in it I be hardy for to ſpeke
 as it byhouep me. Forþe
 pat & ze wyte what þis
 ben abonte me. what I ſhal
 do. tynge my moſte derceſ-
 per. & trelle my myſte in pe
 lord ſhal make alle pingis
 knollen to you. Whome I
 centre to you in to þis ſame
 þis. þ ze knowe what þy
 zo ben abonte us. pat he
 wiſforze zoure hertis. pees
 to brufen. & charite Wyp
 feip of god oure fadir. &
 of pe lord ihu criſt grace
 Wyp alle me pat louen
 oure lord ihu criſt. in þn
 corrupcioun. Amen.

heren by pe pille to epheſios &
 byſynge pe pille to philipolis.

Dule & tyme
 the ſerua-
 tis of ihu eft
 to alle hooly
 me i eft ihu
 þ ben at þi
 lymis Wyp

b
 bishoppes & dekenes. grace
 to you & pees of god our
 fadir & of pe lord ihu crist
 I so panchyngis to my god. I
 al myde of you ensemore in
 alle my pperis for alle zelle
 Wypp ioye. makynge abise
 chynge on your comynge
 in pe gospel of crist. fro pe fir
 ste day to now. I teneyge pro
 pult pping. for he y bigane
 in you a good werk. I shal
 pfigure me al to pe day of
 ihu crist. as it is iust to me
 for to feele pro pping for
 you alle. for pat I haue you
 in herte & in my boondis
 and in defendynge & offer
 myge of pe gospel. alle
 you for to feladris of my
 ioye. forsope god is a wit
 nesse to me. hou I couerte
 you alle. in pe botchels of
 ihu crist. and pro pping
 I ppe you y soe charite be
 plenteuouse more & more
 in flouce or brynnyng and
 al whit. pat ze pue beter
 pping. pat ze be clene &
 wypp oute offense the day
 of crist. fulfild wypp pe
 fruyt of ryghtwysnesse by
 ihu crist. in to pe pissege
 & edone of god. forsope

bripen I wole you forto wy
 te. pat pe pigis pat ben
 aboute me. han cumen to
 more pfitte of pe gospel.
 So pat my boondis were
 made knolke in crist. I seche
 moothalle & in alle ower
 plaas. pat mo of bripen
 in pe lord trustyge in my
 boondis. more plenteuouse
 ly durste wypp oute drede.
 speke pe word of god. I sime
 forsope & for aye & fryf.
 sime forsope & for good
 wille. pchen crist. I sime
 forsope of charite. wypp
 ge for I am put in pe de
 fence of pe gospel. forsope
 su of gtenaon or stryde
 schelden crist. not cleerly
 sessinge hem for to reise
 pssure to my boondis
 what copely pe schypon
 al maner ep by gtenaon
 ep by treupe crist is
 schelden. and in pro pping
 I haue ioye. bot & I pro
 pping I shal haue ioye.
 copely I wote pat pro
 pping schal cume to me
 in to helpe. by soe pper.
 & pe winder mynnyng
 of pe apitt of ihu crist
 after my abydinge in

hope! for in no ping / nshal
 be ofoudid or nshamed. bot
 in al trust as eilemore and
 now. nshal est be magnify
 ed in my bodye. epur by
 by epur by depe! for sove
 to me for to lyue est is pe
cause. & for to dye. Wynnge
 pat if for to lyue i floure
 pis is frunt of were to
 me. and what i schal
 chese. i knowe not / for sove
 i am of freynnge of elbo
 vris. hange desire for
 to be dissoluyd or deytide pe
soule fro pe bodye. & for to
be lyp aris. it is myche
more beter to me! for sove
to dwelle in floure
is nedeful for you! and i
tristynge pis pyng. Wote
pat i schal dwelle and
pschely dwelle to alle you.
to zaire pte & ioye of
seip. pat zaire pntey
ge abound in crist qst i
me. by my dymnng est
spone to you! onely lyue je
Worship to pe gospel of
crist! pat wether i schal
come & see you ep absent
i nshal geere of you. for
ze stonden in oo spirit
of oo wille traualge
to gedu to pe seip of pe
gospel and in no pyng

ze assend of adissures pat
pursue you pe wiche is
to hem cause of pdaon!
for sove to you cause of helpe!
and psoing is of god! for
it is zoue to you for crist
pat not onely ze by leuen
in to hy. bot also pat ze
suffren for hym! hange
pe same strep. Item emye.
What ze sauen in me. &
now ze han herde of me!
Herfore if emy con
 fort in est. if emy
 solace of churite
 if emy felawshipe of sp
 rit. if emy entralis or ef
 femone of myde dyngge
 be in you. fulfille ze my
 ioye. pat ze vndurstonde
 pe same pyng. hange pe
 charite of oo wille. feely
 ze pe same pyng! no pyng
 dyngge ney by strep ney
 by weyn glorie. bot i me
 kenesse dymnng of anoy
 to gydre to hem self. hee
 er or weynier. or eche hol
dyng of heger i eche chur.
 not eche by hem self by
 holdyng what pyng is
 ben her alme. bot po pi
 zes pat ben of oye. for
 sove feele ze pis pyng in
 you. pe wiche was as

6

and crist ihu pe which
 vngene he was in pe four
 me of god. And not rany
 ne hy self for to be ene to
 god. Bot he mekide hy self
 takyng pe four me of a ser
 uant in to lictnesse of men
 made. And in habite fonde
 as ama. He mekide hy self
 made obedient on to pe
 depe. Forsope to pe depe of
 a crosse. And which prync
 and god enghaile hym. A
 jaf to hy a name pat is
 aboue al name. pat in pe
 name of ihu eche knee be
 bowbed of heuently prynces
 and erpely. A of helia. A
 eche tuge knouliche. For
 pe lord ihu est. is in pe
 glorie of god pe fadir. A
 so my mozte drelwope. As
 euimozie ze han oberstide
 not onely in my p'sence.
 Bot myche more now in
 my absence. Wiche ze w
 dreed A tremblunge zoure
 helpe. Forsope it is god
 pat worship in you. A for
 to wille A for to p'foure me
 for good wille. Forsope d
 ze alle prynces. Wip oute
 zruachyngs A dutyngs.
 pat ze be wypp oute pleynt.
 and pe synple obngs of
 god Wip oute repue in

pe myddil of a schellide na
 aon. A Wipward. Amonge
 vngome ze schynen as iouls
 of lgt in pe wold. Holdyng
 to god. pe word of lgt to
 my glorie in pe day of est
 for I haue not rime in weyn.
 neyr in weyne trauelide.
 Bot A if I be offnde or schyn
 upon pe sacrifice A schyn of
 ioe fep. I haue ioye A to ge
 dr panke you alle. pe same
 ymz forsope. Ze han ioye
 and so to god. panck me.
 Forsope I hope in pe lord
 me for to sende tymothe so
 ne to you. A I be good in
 witt or gladnesse. po prynces
 knouen pat ben at you. For
 sope I haue no ma so of oo
 wille or a word. prynces lgt for
 you Wip clene affection or
 desire. Forsope alle me sue
 ten po prynces pat ben her
 abne. not po pat ben of
 est ihu. Forsope knoube ze
 pe experiment or a line of
 hy. for as a sone to pe fadir.
 he seruyde wypp me in pe
 gospel. Forsope I hope me
 for to sende hy to you. And
 as I schal see what prynces
 be abonte me or wgt. schal
 byfalle of me. Sope I pe
 lord I triste. for A I my

sull nhal ai to zoll pooneffor
 sope / I gesfide it nedeful for to
 sende to you in mene tyme / e
 paphrodite my broþur / eue
 brother & my eueningzt in
admittre / for sope your apostle
 & pe seruaut of my need my
mystryge to me / for sope he
 desired you alle / & he was
 sorellful / for þe herden
 hy made seek / for why and
 he was made seek to pe
 depe / bot god hade myge of
 hy forsope not onely of
 hy / bot also & of me / lest
 I hade heynesse upon heyn
 nesse / yfore more hasaly / I
 sente hy / þe hy seen oft ze
 haue ioye / & I be wypp oute
 heynesse / & so resterne ze
 hy wypp al ioye in pe lord
 and haue ze such man me
 wypp hono / for why for pe
 werk of crist / onto pe depe
 he wente / ze myge his lyf þe
 he schulde fulfille / pat þe
 falide to you anentis my
 suþer /

Hernefforward my
 brþen haue ze ioye
 in pe lord / for to wri
 te to you pe same p̄gis / for
 sope to me þe not oðer
 forsope to you necessarie /
 see ze hono / see ze yncke

Werk me / see ze dnyfion /
 sope he ben aradion
 þe spirit due to god / and
 stone in est hy / & not haue
 ge trist in pe flesthe / you
 I haue trist in pe flesthe / þe
haue more matir if it were
opedful pan my ouer / 3 þe
 emy oðe man is seen for to
 tte / þe flesthe / I more tr
 cund / I pe ente day / of pe
 fyrde of yrael of pelynage
 of beniamyn / an chine of ebru
 es / astir pe lalle aphansee
 astir loue p̄myge pe church
 of god / astir ryghtwysnesse / þe
 is I pe lalle myge wypp ou
 te pleyut / bot whyche p̄gis
 were to me wyppis / I haue
 demyde pese p̄gis p̄p̄gis
 for trist / nepeles / I gesse alle
 p̄gis for to be p̄p̄ment /
 for pe clere science of q̄hu est
 for whome I made alle p̄
 gis p̄p̄ment / and I deme
 as toordis / pat I wyne est
 and pat I be fouden in hy
 not haue my ryghtwysnes
 pat is of pe lalle / bot þe
 pat is of pe feip of crist
 pat is of god ryghtwysnes
 in feip for to knolle hym
 and pe due of his ryghte
 azem / & pe felawshipe of

his passion. I figurid a made
lic to his dey nif on eny man
 I schal cumme a renne again to
 pe resurrection pat is of deed me
 not pat noli I haue taken. or
 noli am parfist. I foresope I sue
 nif eny man gprehende a take
 and in what ying I am gphen
 die of crist Ihu. Grien I deme
 me not for to haue gphendide
 oo ying forsope I forgetinge so
 pe po yinges pat ben by hy
 de stretchyng my self forsope
 to po yingis pat be pe former
 to pe ordeyned pps. pursue to
 pe pris of pe hec clepyng
 of god in est Ihu. I fore obhe
 euere we ben pfit. feele we
 pis ying. pat is vis curse
a rethunge and nif ze vndur
 stonden ower mail eny ying.
 a p pis god schal schewe to
 you neples to what ying we
 han cumme p we vndurstode
 pe same ying. a p we pfitly
 dwelle in pe same reule. f
 Grien be ze my folowers. a
 weyte ze he pat walke so.
 pat is dyscently byholde ze e
hem. as ze han oure fourme
 forsope manye wallen. who
 I haue seide ofte to you for
 sope noli and I weepinge
 seye hem pe dayes of othis

cross. whos ende is dep. of wgo
 god is pe wombe. And stoue
 i gfusion of he. pat saneten
 erpely yingis. forsope oure by
 ying is in heuen. Whem
 also we a biden pe shauoure
 oure lord Ihu crist. Whiche re
 four me pe bodye of oure me
 tenesse. gfigurid a made lic
 to pe bodye of his cleernesse.
 after pe church by which
 he may also make alle yingis
 soget to hym. my

And so my Grien most
 dereworpe and moste
 desired. my ioye a my
 coronne. so stoude ze in pe lord
 moste dere Grien. I precento
 dian. and I blesche synnere.
 for to vndurstande pe same
 ying in pe lord. also and ppe
 and pe germane felawe helpe
 you pulle ym p trauelen
 wy me in pe gospel wy de
 ment a ope my helpe. whos
 names ben in pe boke of lif
B Joye ze in pe lord almore.
 este I seye ioye ze. Be zoure
 polmonidenesse a pagent.
 knowen to alle men. pe lord
 is my. be ze no ying Grien
 bot in alle pper a blesche
 by doynge of pntyching.
 Be zoure axingis knowen at
 god. and pe pees of god p
 passy al. Wit. keep zoure

betis & condur stoungis. in
 crist ihu oure lord. fro hem
 fory brisen. What eile pyngis
 ben sope. What eile chap. What
 eile inft. What eile holy. What
 eile loucable. What eile of good
 fame. if eny. Ju. if eny. pphig
 of disciplin. penke ze pese in
 ges. pe Whiche & ze han lerynd
 & taken & herd & oren in me/
 do ze pese pynges in me. & god
 of pees schal be Wypp zold.
 forsope brisen & ioyed gretly
 in pe lord. for cityme astur.
 Ward ze gem flou schiden for
 to feele forme. as and ze feel
 sen or vnderstoden forsope ze
 weren occupied in an aduiste
 I seye not as for need. forsope
 I haue lerynd. in Whiche py
 nis I am for to be sufficient.
 I can & be lolkid or mekide.
 I can & aboude or haue plen
te enery Where & in alle pi
 nis I am ordeyned. and I can
 be fulfilled. and hungre &
 aboude. & suffre mysseste. I
 may alle pyngis in hy pat
 conforty me. nepels ze han
 don wel. comynge to my
 tribulaaon forsope and ze
 phlipenses witen. pat in
 pe bigynnyng of pe gospel.
 Whenne I wente fory fro

macedonye. no Gyrche comyned
 Wip me in resou of pig. iouen
 & taken. no bot ze alone. for
 & to tessalonys ze sente comys
 & tldies in to oke to me. not
 for I seeke zift. bot I zeynse
 le fruyt aboumdyge in ioure
 resou. forsope I haue alle pi
 nis & aboude. I am fulfilled
 Wip po pyngis taken of epa
 phrodite. pe Whiche ze sente
 in to pe odur of wetnesse.
 a conuenable sacrifice plesher
 to god. forsope my end ful
 fille alle ze desire astur his
 richessis in glorie. in crist ihu
 forsope to god and oure fadir.
 be glorie in to worldis of world
 is amide. Grette ze wele eny
 holy man in crist ihu. pe bry
 den pat ben wip me. grette
 zon wel. alle holy me gre
 te zon wele. most dovely rey
 pat be of cesaris house. pe
 grace of oure lord ihu crist.
 be wip zoure spirit amide.
 here endy pe pistle to pe phi
 lipenses. & bigynner pe pistle to
 ze cololenas.
Dule apostle
 of ihu crist
 by pe wille
 of god. and
 tymothe bro
 ther. to hem

pat ben at colosse. Holy and
feyful briden in est ihu. & to
you and pees of god onre fa-
dre. & of pe lare ihu est. & de
paukyngis to god & pe fadir
of oure lord ihu est. & more for
you pkyng. We heerynge & o-
fayr in est ihu. and pe loue p-
ze haue in to alle holy me for
pe hope pat is kepte to you
in heuyn. & we heere ze her-
den in pe word of treupe of
pe gospel p'came to you. as &
in al pe world. & makip
fruyt & wey as in you of
pat day in weiche ze herden
& knellen pe grace & treupe
as ze leryden of ep'aphras
oure enen seruaunt most
derly. & weiche is a
trewe mynstre of ihu est
for you. & weiche also schew
id to us. & oure louyng
in spirit. & f'are & we f'ore
day in weiche we herden.
ceft not for you pkyng &
ayng pat ze be fullfilled
wip pe knollyng of ho
wille. in al wisdom and
softly condurstandyng. p-
ze walke weyly to godly
alle plesyng p'mas ma-
kyng fruyt in al good wer-
& weyng in pe stence of

god. in al. & in confortid aff-
pe myzt of ho cleernesse &
al patience. in longe aby-
se. & wip wey. & weyng p'kyng
to god pe fadir. & weiche ma-
de us wey in to pe part
of oer. & grace of holy me
in hzt. & weiche deluded
us fro pe power of d'ernes
for. and translatid in to pe
kyngdam of pe soue of ho
louyng. in weiche we ha-
weyng & remysion
of synis. & weiche is pe
ymage of god indyble. &
fiste bygeten of eche crea-
ture. for in hy alle p'gys
ben made. in benenes & in
erpe. v'isib'le & indyble. ep-
troye. ep' d'mynacoun. &
ep' p'ynapatis. ep' potesta-
tis. alle p'gys ben maad
of nougt by hy and in hy.
& he is bifore alle. & alle
p'gys ben in hym. and he
is heued of pe bodye of pe
churche. & weiche is pe
bygyngyng & fiste p'g
of alle. and fiste bygeten
of ded me. pat he be hol-
dyng p'mas & pe fiste
de net in alle p'gys. for
in hym it pleside to gedre
al plente for to inhabite.

ende

11

and by hy alle ymgyis for to
 be reconseiled in to hy. he pee
 synge by pe bloode of hy
 or. es. po ymgyis pat ben i erp
 es. pat ben in heuene. & wiche
 ze obere styne alhynd or
made straunge & enmyes
 by witt in yuel werke. nat
 forsope he has reconseiled
 you i pe body of his fleische.
 by dey. for to haue you holy &
 vndermed and vby outen re
 pue byfere hy. i. n. neples. ze
 dwellen in pe fep. foundid &
 stable & vmmouable for pe
 hope of pe zospel pat zeo
 han herde. pe wiche is pre
 chide in al creature pat is
 vndre heuene of wiche i
 pou am maad mynyste. pe
 wiche now i haue ioye in
 passiois for you. and i ful
 fille as is ordeyned to me
and eche synne. po ymgyis
 pat fallen of pe passiois
 of est. pe wiche in my lot
fallen to me to fulfille in
my fleische. for his bodye
 pat is pe church. of pe wiche
 i pou am maad kernaunt
 aft. pe dispensaciois of god
 pat is zoue to me in you.
 pat i fulfille pe word of
 god. pe myste in hyte pat
 was his fro worldis and

generaciois. now forsope it
 is shewid to his seyntis
 to whom god wolde make pe
 richessis. knowen of pe glorie
 of his sacrament in heven
 me. pe wiche sacramet is
 crist in you. pe hope of glorie.
 Whome we shewen repre
 mynge eche man & techyng
 eche ma in al wysdam pat
 we zoue eche ma pfit hope
 ielle & hepe man in crist
 ihu. in wiche ymgyis i tra
 nel stryngze aftur pe vby
 chynge of hy. pat he wyl
 chy in me in ihu.

Sorly i wole you for to by
 tr. what bysynesse i haue
 for you. and for hem pat
 ben at loadur. & wiche eide
 callen not my face i fleische
 pat pe bertis of hem be comfor
 tid taunte in charite. & in to
 alle rycheffis of plente of v
 dirstondyng. i to knowyng of
 pe myste of god. pe fadir
 of ihu crist. in whom ben
 alle tresouris hid of wysd
 and scienc. forsope po ymgyis
 i seye pat no ma disteyne
 you in hefte of wordis for
 wiche and if i be absente in
 bodye. bot by spirit i am
 vby you. ioyngze & seynge
 zoure ordre. or zoure ordynel

maner and pe sadnesse of þ
 youre bylene þat is in eþer
 fore as ze han taken iſt crist
 oure lord. Walke ze in hy wode
 aþildid aboue in eþt. & offermyd
 in pe bylene as & ze ha lernyd
 aboundynge in hy in dnyng
 of paulis. See ze þat no man
 dīſteyne you by philoſophie
 & weyn falace or alouſe falſe
 god aftir pe tōdrou of men
 aftir elementis of þis world
 and not aftir crist. ffor in hy
 woldly body al plete of
 pe godhede. & ze ben fulfild
 in hy þat is heird of al þu
 apate & polver in w home
 and ze ben aratid in arat
 aſion not maad wþ hono
 in nakednesse of pe bodye
 of fleiſche. bot in arat
 on of eþt to gydre buried to
 hy in bapteme in w home
 and ze han in ſen aem by ſey
 of pe wurchyng of god þat
 reſide hy fro deed me and
 w hene ze weren deed i gal
 tis & in pe ſpue or aſt
 of youre fleiſche. he quyle
 myde to gedir you wþ hy
 forzenyng to you alle gyl
 tis. dnyng alle þe þat wry
 tynge of deare or dome þat
 was aem þou þat was con
 trarie to you. and he toke

þat fro pe myddil of you þe
ſyne of adam purgynge
it to pe croſſe cleuynge it
by his blod. ſpynnyng þu
apatis & polveris of ſeendes
kedde oute triſtaly fro hem
his choſen. apynly oucomy
ze hem in hym gilt þfore
 no man iuge you in mete
 or drynk or in part of ſceft
 day or neomenye þat is pe
feſte of uelke mone or of ay
mage or of ſabotis. þe wliche
 ben pe ſhadw of þingis to
 ar. forþe þe bodye is of eþt
þat is þe trewe god vndir þe
ſhadw. Signefyey eþt. norma
 dīſteyne you wlytze in meke
 neſſe & religiou of augeho.
 þe wliche þingis he hay not
 ſeen. Walke ynge weynly i blyu
 en wþ wut of his fleiſche &
 not holdyng þe heird of w
 alpe bodye by boondis & roy
 myngis to gedir vndre wþ
 nyſtrid and made. weyn in
 to pe encreſynge of god. for
 þe nif ze ben deed wþ eþt
þat is ful dēþid fro þe ele
 mentis of þis world. w hat
 zit as me þynge to þe world
 dome ze. neþ ze ſchiken tou
 the neþ tlaſt. neþ trete wþ
 hondis þo þingis. þe wliche
 alle ben in to depe by piſke
 roſe. aftir preceptis & techy
 nis of men. þe wliche ben

sopehly harynge resou of wis
 dam in supstaon or verue
 religioun or honour & mekenes
 for by pefe syngis pei moubu
 most deservue and not for to
 spare pe bodie lygettyng it
wy penance not harynge
 it in omy honour to pe ful
 nesse of fleische as pei for
nen

A **H**erfore if ze han ry
 sen to gyde wypp
 crist. Seeke ze po
 yngis pat ben aboue wher
 crist is sutyng in pe ryt
 half of god / sauer ze po py
 zes pat ben aboue not po
 pat ben vpon pe erpe / for
 sope ze ben deed. & zoure
 lyf is hnd wy crist in god /
 forsope whenne est pshal
appere & schelle zoure lyf
paine & ze schulen appere w
 hy in glorie / perfore slee
 ze zoure mebris pe whiche
 be on pe erpe fornycaon
 onclennesse. lechorie. yuele
 conetise & auerite pe whi
 che is seruage of synnyla
 ris / for whiche yngis
 pe wrap of god came vpo
 pe souys of conbylenc / in
 pe whiche & ze walkiden
 sityme. whenne ze hny
den in hem / now forsope
& putte ze alwey alle yngis

wrap indignaon make blas
 phemye soule word of zoure
 moupe / nyl ze hve to gyde
 synnyng pe old man wypp
 his dedis. And clopyng pe
 new man pat is made newe
 ayein in to pe knowlege of
 god. vpon pe ymage of hym
 pat made hy / wher it is not
 male & female. open ma
 ielke. arnacion & pnae
 barbara & pita. seruauit &
 free ma. bot alle yngis &
 alle yngis est / forsope
 you as pe chosen of god &
 holy & sonyd. pe entrailes
 of merce. benygne & me
 kenesse. tempozante pacle
 supportyng & leryng up
 to gyde. and forzeryng to
 zoure self / zif emy man ayein
 emy hap querel or pleynt
 as & pe laud crist forzas pefe
 yngis is more blyss. haue
 ze charite. pe whiche is
 boond of pfection / & pe peos
 of est emoye in zoure hertis.
 in pe whiche and zeben the
 pidd in oo bodye. and be ze
 hynde lastyng in oo good
thille in alle pefe. pe word
 of crist dwelle in you plen
 tionysch in al wyddam. te
 chyng & monestrye you
 self in psalms & ymymis
 and opuritual songis. in

strate Syngynge in joe hertis
to pe lord/ al pings what eide
ze don in word or dede alle pi
go in pe name of onre lord
ihū crist/ dyge panlyngis
to god pe fadir/ by hy wyne
be ze suget to joe husbondis
as it byhouep in pe lord/ me
loue ze zoure wyues/ a myl
ze be bittir to hein/ Sonysobere
ze to fadir & modir/ by alle
piges/ fforsope pis is weel
plesynge to pe lord/ fforadris
myl ze dre zoure comys to in
Aganoun/ pat pei be not ma
de of hul miltit oz resoun/
Seruatis obeie ze by alle
piges to fleschely lordis not
shyge at ze as plesynge to
me/ bot in symplenesse of
herte/ dredge pe lord god/
What eide ze don/ wiche ze of
miltit as to pe lord/ and not
to me/ Wittege pat of pe lord
ze schuld take retribuoun
oz men recedynge of erunge/
Serue ze to pe lord crist/ ffor
sope he pat dope turre oz
wonge/ schal resteyne pat
p he dide puele/ and accepta
on of pldoms/ is not ane
tis god

A Ordre pat pis inst
denen/ zene ze to ser

nautis/ Wittege pat & ze ha
a lord in heuene/ be ze blyse
to pper/ Waalpege in it/ in
dyge of panlyngis/ of pynge
to godre and for us/ p god
opene to us pe dre of word
for to speke pe mystie of est/
ffor Whiche also i am bounden
pat i schewe it/ so as it by
houep me for to speke/ i us
dam Walke ze to heia/ Ben
Wip oute forpe/ azemb/ ynge
tyme by prudence/ kon zee
schulen best ede sie pe pypul
zoure word be samid in salt/
pat is Wisdam/ eithmore in
strate/ p ze wite houit by ho
uep zon for to answere to ede
maaities/ most dre bropr
a feipful mynstre/ denene
Seruait in pe lord/ schal ma
ke alle pings/ Enolben to zour
pat ben aboute me/ Whome
i sette to zon to pis same
pings/ pat he Enolke what
pings/ ben aboute zon and
confort zoure hertis/ Wyp
onestimo most dre a feip
ful bropr/ pe Whiche is
of zon/ pe Whiche schal ma
ke alle pings/ pat ben don
here/ Enolben to zon/ aristark
my eny carif/ oz p~~re~~ Wyp
me gretep zon Welle/ a mark

ye cosyn of barnabas of w^h h^o
 ze ha take maudemetio. Hon be
 dytude fro me/ if he schal
 in to zow/ resteyne ze hy mⁱ
 & he pat is o^uer wⁱst. pe wⁱsh
 che be of creatioun/ pey alme
 be my helpe in pe kyngdam
 of god. p^r there to me i colone/
 epaphras p^ris of zow. gretip zow
 abele. pe dnamit of. hⁱu crist
 eile bish for zow i p^reris. p^r
 ze stonde pfit and ful in al
 pe wille of god/ Copely q be
 re wⁱtnessynge to hy p^r he
 hap myche trauel for zow &
 for hem pat ben at loadice
 and p^r ben at ierapohm/ li
 be pe lesse most d^re & d^rmas
 greten zow wⁱle/ grete zewⁱle
 be pe bryden pat ben at loa
 dice and nynpham. & pe
 church pat is in ho house/
 and wⁱhene p^ris pistle schal
 be rad at zow. so ze pat it
 be rad in pe church of loa
 dicensio. & pat p^ris of loa
 dicensio be rad at zow/ and
 seye ze to arcypp/ See pe
 my p^rle pat pon hast taken
 of pe l^red. pat pon fulfille
 it/ my salutaoun. hy pe
 hond of p^rouls be ze myn
 dful of my boondis/ pe
 grace of oure lord ihu
 crist. be wⁱth zow. am
 en.

ye i pistle to pe addmytrase
 here endy ye pistle to ye colosai
 se: and bygyner ye firtte
 pistle to ye addaloucanles

Dul apostle &
 alman & ymo
 the to pe chr
 che of iessalony
 tence in god on
 re padre & pe
 lord ihu crist.
 draw to zow &
 pees/ We don p^rand p^ringio
 to god eilemore for alle zow
 makysse myde of zow ioure
 p^reris p^ris oure c^resynge/ we
 mynde ful of zoure o^uert &
 fep & trauel & charite. &
 susteynyge of pe hope of
 oure lord ihu crist. byfore pe
 lord & oure padre/ we wⁱryte
 moste l^roned bryden of pe lord
 zoe chesynge. for oure gospel
 was not at zow in word onely.
 bot i d^ru & i pe holy goost
 & myche p^rente. as ze wⁱry
 ten what man me we l^re
 re i zow for zow/ & ze be made
 oure folowers and of pe lord.
 resteynyge pe word i my
 che tribulacoun wⁱth iope
 of pe holy goost. so pat ze
 be made fourme or enshu
 ple to alle me bylenyge
 in macedonie and actye/
 fforspe of zow pe word of

pe lord is defamyd or gretefully
told oute to synne. not onely
in macedonye & acaye. bot
in eche place youre fey pat
is to god is pfit. So þat it is
not need for to speke to yow
enij þing. ffor soþe þei schelle
of you. What man entree we
haden to you. & how þe ben con-
uited to god fro symylacris.
for to due to quye god & oþer.
and for to abyde his done fro
heuenes. Whom he reuise fro
deed in. ihu pat deliuered

us fro þis wray to comynge.

For why þe writen bryuen
oure entree to you. for it
was not weyn. bot fir-
st we suffrid & ben pynnysshid
wip wrongis as þe writen in
psalms. We haden trist in
oure lord for to speke þe gospel
of god in myche bysynesse. So
rely oure exortand in or trefly
ge was not of erro neyr of
conclhesse neyr in gile. bot as
we ben pnyede of god. pat þe
gospel schulde be taken to
us. so we speken. not as
pleyge to me. bot to god.
þat wep oure hertis. ffor soþe
neyr we were enij tyme in
word of flaterynge. as þe
writen neyr in occasioun of a
uerice. god is witnesse. neyr

sekyngu glorie of me. neyr
of you neyr of oþer. where we
myghte han ben chargeous
to you. as this apostles to
Whome þe schulde mynistrye
we ben made litle in þe my-
nd of you. as þat a norische
fostre her sonys. so we de-
siringe you. conuertyngh wip
grette lone wolde bytake to
you not onely þe gospel of
god. bot also oure lyues. for
þe be made to us most dere
worpe. ffor soþe bryuen þe be
myndful of oure trauele &
weyghesse. nytt & day. Wyr-
chyge þat we schulde not
grene enij of you. plesiden
in you þe euangelis of god.
þe ben witnesse & god. how
holly & in fith & try outen
pleynt to you þat byleny-
den we were. as þe were. how
eche of you as þe fadir hye
sonys þyng & confortyge
you. we han witnesse. þat þe
schulde go worpily to god. þat
clepide you in to mo kyngda
& glorie. ffor & we don þanc
kyngis to god. wip outen
cesyngel. ffor Whome þe
haden take of us þe word
of þe heeryge of god. þe toke
it not as þe word of men.
bot as it is verely þe word
of god. þat wirchit in you

pat han bylanyd / sopeh by
 pen ze be made soletberis of
 pe churchis of god pat ben i
 juder. in est ihu / for ze han
 suffrid pe same pringis of
 zour eue hyuagis. as a pey
 of ieris. pe Whiche stollen
 a pe lord ihu a pe pphetis
 a p hie no. a pey plese not
 to god. a to alle me pey be
 aduissaries. forbede us for
 to speke to hepe me pat pey
 be made saaf. pat pey ful
 fille her synes eide more. for
 sope pe wrap of god byfore
 came upon hem til in to pe
 eend / for sope brypen we desd
 late a wipdrallen fro you by
 monip. byholdye. as in pre
 seure. not in herte. more a
 boundauntly we han hied for
 to see zour face wip greet
 desire. for we wolde han cu
 me to you / sopeh i poult. a
 conys a oftedone wold hane
 cumen. bot catanas bernde
 us / sopeh what is oure
 hope a ioye. a corou a glo
 rie. wehpe ze ben not lifore
 oure lord ihu est in his cu
 myge. for sope ze ben oure
 glorie and ioye.

Lor pe Whiche pms we
 suffryge no lengrent
 plese to us for to dw
 elle at Athens alone. and
 we sente tymothe oure brop

a mynytre of god in pe euan
 gelie of est. to you to you to be
 confermyd a tauge for zour
 feip. pat no ma be moued
 in pese tribulacous / sopeh
 ze zour self witen pat i pms
 pms we ben puti for wby a
 wghenne we overen at you. we
 lifore sende to you us to suf
 fre tribulacous. as a it is
 don a ze witen / pfore a i poult
 not susteynyge a abidnyge
 more sente for to knowe zoe
 feip. lest pauente ge p temp
 ty schal tempte you. a oure
 trauele be maad pounnolb
 for sope ty mothe cumyge to
 us fro you. a tellye to us zoe
 feip a charite and for ze han
 enermore good myde of us. a
 sirye for to see us as we
 alid you. perfore brypen we
 ben confortide in you in al
 oure need a tribulacou. by
 zour feip / for now we hne
 if we stonden i pe lord / sope
 ly what drynge of pande
 sis moken we zelde to god
 for you in al ioye in Whiche
 we ioye for you. lifore oure
 lord wixt a day. more plen
 tounfully pynge pat we see
 zour face. a fulfille po p
 sis p Replen of zoe feip / for
 sope pe same god oure fadir
 and pe lord ihu est. dresse

5. 3.

oure beye to you/ forſoþe þe lord
multiþle you. & make þoe chari-
te for to abounde i to god. to þoe
off. & in to alle we as & we
in you to your hertis to be con-
fermyd wip oute pleynt in ho-
lynelle before god & oure fadir
in þe cūmyge of oure lord ihu
crist. Wyp alle his oegntis
amen.

Therfore bryſen þe myg
forþward. We pþen you
and biſche in þe lord
ihu. p as þe han reſteyned of
us þowt loþhoney þou for to
go & pleſe to god. & walk
þe p þe abounde more/ ſopely
þe wite what comādmētis
I haue zoned to you by þe lord
ihu. forſoþe þis is þe wille
of god. your makinge holy
& your halowynge. p þe
abſteyne þou fro fornygāciū
pat iſte of þou ſine beelde
his coſſel p is his lord þe
we haue is veſſel of þe ſoule
in halowynge & in honoure/
not i paſſion of deſire. as &
folke of bynde p Enolke not
god. & p no mā by violence
ouer so neþ diſteyne his þro
þir i canſe & need. for þe lord
is venger of alle þeſe þingis/
as we biſche ſenden to you
and han betneſſid & puel
by autente. ſopely god ſleþid

not us in to vnclemeſſe. bot
in to holynelle. and so þe p
diſpūſip þeſe þingis. diſpūſip
not mā. bot god p þane his
holy ſpirit in us. forſoþe
of þe charite of bryþhed. we
haue not need for to writte
to you. ſopely þe your ſelf
han ſermyd of god. p þe loue
to gydre. and forſoþe þe don
p þis i to alle bryſen in al
mādwye. forſoþe bryſen
we pþen you pat þe abounde
more & zeue þere & biſpnes
p þe be quyet & do þoe olme
need p þe wriche wip your
hondis. as we han comānd
to you. & p þe wandre honel-
tely to þe p þen Wyp oute
forþ. p of no mā þe deſire
emy þing. forſoþe bryſen we
wolen not þou for to conſol-
of me ſlepyge & diſpūſip p
þen not ſoreful. as & op pat
han not hope of axem. þere
ſopely if we bylene pat iſte
was ded & roo axem. so &
god ſþal liede Wyp þe
p ſlept & dreden by ihu
ſopely þis þis we ſayn to
þou. in word of þe lord for þe
teſt. de it us for we p þe
uen pat þen reſidue & laſt
in þe cūmyge of þe lord ſþi-
len not come byſore þe pat

crepten longe before. For he pe
lord in comaundyge and i voice
of pe archangel and in pe trump
of god. shal a doun of heuene
and pe deed me þ ben i crist
shulen rise again first aft
ward we þ hve þ ben left
shulen be ransched to gedw
Wyp he i clondis meetynge
to crist in pe eyre and so end
more we shul be Wyp pe
lord and so be ze confort to
godre in yese wordis

Forsope briden of tymes
a moneths Whene mo
genial resurremon shal
be ze mede not þ write to
you. also ze 300 olt diligently
writ for pe day of pe lord as
a prief i nyzt. so shal it tūne
Sopely Whene pey shulen
seye pees a skernesse pan
codelyn pynnyge shal aune
aboue to god as coud to alle
me beryge chylde. Ape shu
len not stapel forsope briden
ze ben not in dercessis of 30
nourice. pat yisse day as a
peef catche you. Sopely alle
ze be pe sones of lyt or of by
tene. a sones of pe day ze be
not of nyzt. ney of dercessis
þare slepe we not as a of
dun. bot wake we and be we
sobre. Forsope pey þ slepen

slepen in pe nyzt of ances
pey þ ben drunken. be drunken
in nyzt. Forsope we pat ben of
pe day. ben sobre clond or de
fend. by pe hanberion of fep
and of charite. a by pe helme
hoop of help. for god putade
not wotdraye. bot in pur
chalyng of helpe by oure lord
ihc crist. pat was deed for
us. pat Whener we waalen
lyng here. Wher we dyen
we tūne to gydre Wyp hym
for Whiche pynge. be ze comfor
tude to gydr and desieze ease
ofse. as a ze don. Forsope gre
pen we when you þ ze shule
knowe be þ trauels amonge
you. a ben by fore to you i pe
lord. a moneste a tache you.
pat ze han be more aboundan
ly in charite. For pe Wert of
god. hane ze pees Wyp hem.
Forsope we pten you reprie
ze a chastise conqyete mid
conforte ze me of lūel herte.
pat pey dyspierre not. restoy
ue ze as good leches seek me.
be ze patient to alle me. a
ze pat no ma zeelde yuele
for yuele. bot estmore one
ze pat þ is good to godyr a
in to alle me. estmore roye
ze. Wyp pūte cressyge ppeze.
in a we pūte a ze panck
sis to god. Forsope pūte

pe wille of god in crist ihu &
in alle zoun / nyl ze quenche or hye
de pe grace of god in zoun / nyl ze
dispyse appheaces / fforsope zune
ze alle yngis holde ze p^r yngis
is good / absterne zoun fro al y
nel opice or licensse / fforsope pe
same god of pees make zoun ho
ly by alle yngis / p^r zonne spirit
be kept hook & soule & bodye
Wyp oure pleynt / in pe tyme
se of onre lord ihu crist / god
is trewe pat clepide zoun to hys
pe wiche also chal do where
of grace in zoun / bryden p^r ze
for nos grete ze wel alle bre
den in holy cosse / i coume zoun
by pe lord pat mo pistle be
rad to alle holy bryperen / pe
grace of oure lord ihu crist
be Wyp zoun alle amen

here endyt pe firtte pistle to tessal
lonyans / pe ii. pistle to pe tes
salonyans

ffor zonne fery ener Weryp
and pe charite of esse of zoun
to gyder aboundy / Wyp oure
sulf stonen in zoun in pe churchis
of god for zoe patience and fery
in alle zoe psecucionis & tribula
cionis / pe wiche ze suffle in to
pe ensample of pe miste dome
of god / pat ze be had Woryp
pe kyngdam of god for whom
and ze suffren / if neples it
is iust at god for to qnyte zeel
dyge to be pat trobten zoun &
to zoun pat be trobten rest Wyp
wo in pe schellynge of oure
lord ihu est fro hene Wyp in
gelis of hys wte in pe flawme
of fyre / zemyge vengance to
be pat knowen not god &
pat obeye not to pe enagehe
of oure lord ihu est / pe wiche
schulen zene or perye endelaf
thye peynes in pishyng
fro pe face of pe lord & fro
pe glorie of hys son / Wchene
be schal come for to be glori
fied in hys ceyntis / and for
to be made Wondrful & alle
me pat bylemiden / for oure
Witnessyng is bylemide
on zoun in pat day / in wiche
yng also we pphen enermore
for zoun pat oure god wouche
saaf for to clepe zoun in hys
clepyng / and fulfille al pe

Paul & siluan
& tymothe
to pe church
of tessalony
cense in god
oure fadir & in pe lord ihu
grace to zoun & pees of god
oure fadir & of pe lord ihu
crist / we schuln do panch
gis endemore to god for zoun
bryden / so as it is Weryp /

Wille of his goodnesse. & ye
Wert of fey in oden/ pat ye
name of oure lord ihu crist
be clarified in you & ze in it
astir ye grace of oure god & of
ye lord ihu crist/

A

Horlope bristen we when
you by ye cōmyge of
oure lord ihu crist and
oure cōgregaaciō in to ye ca
me in/ pat ze be not moued
oone fro youre Witt neþ be
ze agast neþ by spirit. neþ
by word neþ by epistle as
sent by us. as ye day of ye
lord be nigh/ no mā distyne
you in eny man/ for bot dis
cenaaciō schal ai firste &
ye mā of oyne schal be the
wed. pe sone of p̄daciō pat
is aduſarie or auct/ and is
enhanſed upon al ping/ p̄
is cryd god or p̄ is Worſch
pide. so p̄ he cite in pe re
ple of god. schawynge hy
self as he be god/ weher ze
holde not in myde. pat zit
weher weas at you/ & cryde
p̄se p̄gis to you/ and wold
what weyholden hy ze wey
ten/ p̄ he be schellade i his
tyme. for wehy pe myſſe
or p̄myte of v̄ickidnesse
weychip noll. & zit schal/

oonly p̄ he pat holden noll
ye fey/ holde al it be ma
de of ye myſſe. p̄ is to pe
polver of auct be maad
opp in ye myſſe of he pat
be chosen to knowe it/ a pan
noll v̄ickid mā schal be
schellade. wehom ye lord ihu
schal olee wey pe opvit
of his moupe. & schal dy
truye hy wey pe illsmyng
of his cleer cōmyge. the
schal olee hy. weher cum
myng is astir pe weychip
of satanas. & al oden and
cōmyng. & grete v̄ondris
leymge or false. & in al dis
ceyt of v̄ickidnesse. to he
pat p̄sthen/ for p̄ wey res
ceyueden not pe charite of
tremp. pat pey schulde be
maad oas/ p̄ weher god schal
sende to he a v̄archyge of
erro. pat pey by leue to le
hyng. p̄ al be demyd or damp
nyd. pe wehiche bylenyden
not to tremp. bot consti
den to v̄ickidnesse/ for we
we oden fir to di panchy
gis cōmore to god for you
bristen lōed of god. p̄ god
ches so firste fruytho i to
helpe & he clepide you by
oure goſpel. in to getyge

of pe glorie of oure lord ihu
crist and so brysen stonde ze
to holde ze pe tradicions &
techyngis pat ze han lernyd
ynr hy lord ep by o^r epistle
ffor hope oure lord ihu crist
hy o^rl^f & god & oure fadir
pe whiche loued zon & zane
eidelastynge confort & good
hope in grace. sture zoure
berte & ofirme you in alle
good werre & word.

Brysen henn⁹ foward
preye ze for us pat
pe word of god re
ue & be clarified & clere to
vndurstonde to o^r folk as
a meatis⁹ zoul & pat we be
deliuid fro unconuenable
and yuel me. Sopehy fery
is not of alle me. ffor hope
pe lord is twelle p^r schal
ofirme us and schal keep
fro yuel. Sopehy brysen
we trusten of zon i pe lord.
for what else ymgis we
bidde ze don & ze schulen
do. ffor hope pe lord dresse
zoure hertis in charite of
god & patience of est. ffor
hope brysen we denounce
to zon in pe name of oure
lord ihu est. pat ze wy
dralle zon fro eche bropr
wandrynge unordynatly

or zhem & good ordir & not
after pe tradicion p^r pey
resteyned of us. Sopehy
ze zoe o^rl^f witen. hon it
by honer fte to one us.
for we were not unquy
ete or vnpefible amonge
zon ney fleshy p^r is not w^r
oute oure owne traunce.
we eten breod of eny ma.
bot i traunce & weynesse.
nyt & day wirchynge
pat we greue noon of
zon. not as we hadden
not polber. bot pat we
shulde zue oure o^rl^f four
me or ensample to zon. for
one us. for dely & delyne
we were an⁹ zoul. yis
nyg we denoun⁹den & we
nyden to zon. for if eny
man wole not wiche ne
yr ete he. Sopehy we han
herde oure amage zon
for to wandre unquy ete
or vnpefible. no ymg
wirchynge bot dryge curi
ously. ffor hope we denon
sen to ge pat ben oure
man me. & we byschen
i pe lord ihu est. p^r pei w^r
pallence or styffesse. for
chynge in est. q^rit oure
lord. pat if eny ma schal
not obeye to oure word

sent by epistola marke ze hy
 & comon not wey hy pat he
 be confoundid or schamyd nyl
 ze gesse hy as an enye enye
 my to hym. Got rephe zee
 hym in houe as a broper / ffe
 sope will god of pees zee
 to you euerslastyng pees
 al place / pe lord be wey
 you alle my salutaoun
 by pe hond of
 is signe & eche
 pat i verte p 9 /
 of oure lord i hu
 be wey you alle am
 hois endy pe n iustle to n pe
 tessalonycenses ad bigynnyng
 pe firste iustle to tymothee

Dul apostle
 of iust aris
 after pe com
 andement
 of god oure
 saueour &
 of iust aris
 oure hope to tymothee pe
 lored sone in pe fere
 and more & pees of god pe
 padir & iust of oure lord
 as i pbed pec p' pou schul
 dist dwelle at ephesse wey
 i verte to macedonye p'
 pou schuld dist deuote &
 warne to stane teachers
 pat pei schulden not tye

ope wey pan wey taryen
 nep pe wey to yue tent
 to pablis and genealogies
 vneendid. pe wey zeue
 questions. more pan edi
 fication of god pat is in
 pe fere / ffor sope pe ende
 of pe comandemet is cha
 rite of cleen herte & good
 osience. & of fere not fere
 ned / ffor wey p'is stime
 erpge be turnyd to gedir
 in to weye speche wey
 ffor to be teachers of pe fere
 not condit stondyge nepir
wey p'is ben spoken
 nep of wey p'is pey af
 fere / ffor sope wey wey
 ffor pe fere is good
 in a cose it lathfully wey
 tynge p'is p'is pat pe fere
 is not put to a iust ma
 got to an enyist & not so
 set to enprouise men
 and syners to curfide me
 & afould to cleers of
 fadris & cleers of modris
 to me cleers and fornyta
 tois to hem p' wey
wey malle wey wey
 to hem pat putten wey
 do to me or to sellers
 or stellers or wey drawers
 of me to lesyng monye
 ris and to fere wey

And if any oper pynnis contrarie to hollii techynge. pat is after pe euangelie of pe glorie of blessed god. pe Whiche gospel is bytalen to me. I do panchis to hye pat hap confutide me in churche oure lord. for he gesfide me fapful punty ge me in myfste or Guyle pe Whiche firste was a blasphemye or a dyspiser of god. and pynfuere & ful of wrongis. bot I haue gotten penultye of god. for I onknolynge did in bylence. Sopehy pe grace of oure lord to me on haboude. wip fap & lone pat is in churche. a twel word & worpy alle refceynge for churche camen to his world for to make of ful me saaf. of whom I am pe firste. bot pfore I haue gotten wip pat churche schuld nysse in me firste. al pance to pe enfourmyge of ge. p ben to bylence to hye in to chelastye hye. ffor sope to pe kyng of world do ondedly & indifible god alone. honour & glorie do worldis of worldis. amen. I comede or bitale pro pcept or bidde ge to pee you some tymothee after pphesies by ffor goynge in pee. p^r you

first or holli in hem a good knyght god. haunge fap & good confluence. pe Whiche sume caltysse alleys. p^ristiden abonte pe fap. not wip me in pe fap. of whom is heueneo and allsaunde. Whome I bytold to satanas. enffynge hy to tourmente he. pat p^rterme to not blasphemie.

Herfore I byseche pee to techte firste of alle pynnis for to be made by techynge. p^reris axingis. doynge of panchynge for alle me. ffor pynnis and alle p^rben sette in hecnesse or gret state. pat we lede quyet & pefible liff in al pite & chastite. ffor sope p^ro pynnis is gode & acceptid byfore god oure sancoure. pat wole alle me for to be made saaf. & for to cume to pe knolbyge of treu pe. Sopehy oo god & mediatore of god & me. and a ma churche pat zane hye silf redempcion for alle me. Whiche witnessis is confermyd in his tymes. in pe Whiche I am put a p^rechour & apostle. sopehy I sope treupe in churche. & I lye not in any pt. pe Whiche am a teacher of hepe me in fap & treupe. pfore I wole me for to ple in al place. lifyng up cleene

hondis Wyp oute Wray & dis
putynge or stryf also & Wyp
me inourned or conenable a
lyte Wyp shamefastnesse &
cobrenesse ourmys he out
not in Wrypen heeris ep in
gold ep margantis or pleo
ep phonse dope the reuen
ocasion of lech me bot pat
the by comney Wypme for her
firste gilt by heetyge pyte
by good ober his a woman
terne the in salence Wyp
al subuicoun or oberstaryng
for sope i suffer not to a wo
ma pat is constable for to te
che nepr for to hane lord
sthye in to pe ma or hus
bonde bot for to be i salence
for sope adam was firste four
med after ward one adam
was not firste desteyned
for sope pe woma was destey
nad in gent a deed in bre
kyng of pe lasse Copely
sche sthal be canys by ge
neracoun of comys or good
werke or if the sthal swelle
ppithy in ferp a loue a holy
nesse Wyp cobrenesse

A firste word i sthal
desire if em man
desire a bishopry
che he desire a good ober
and tranelous no signyte
ne desires Howe it bishop
a bishop for to be Wyp oute

repue & pe husbonde of oo Wyp
firste word pe chirche
in oonkes of loue cobre in e
kyng a drynk pe prudent
them pe olente of emysoun
myd Wyp dues chast hol
dyge hospitalite a traw teche
not zoue myche to Wime not
smyster bot polimond not ful
of stryf not conetous Wete
renhyng his house hanyge
comys coget Wyp al charite
for sope if em man can not
zoude his house of lital me
uee hou sthal he hane dil
gence or keepyge of pe chir
che of god Wet yne ben
maye a dyll he y sthal
be a bishop or pt sthal
be pued god in bylene not
neld quertid to ferp lest he
be borne up in to pyd a
fall in to pe done or syne
of pe dynyl for sope it bis
uep hy for to hane good W
nessyng of hem pat ben
Wyp pouten forp pat he
fall not to repue in to
pe snare of pe dynyl also
it by houep delenes for to
be chaast not donde tynd
not zoue to myche Wye
not folerbyng for W
myng hanyge pe pyntee
of ferp in cleen conscience

a forsope be pey gnyd first
 pat pey mynystre co. haue
 ge not greet gilt/ also it bryng
 nep Wyne for to be chaast.
 not bacbitynge. sobre fersful
 in alle myghe/ dekenys be pey
 husbondis of oo Wyf. perwh
 the dekenys gvine Wele her
 dnyg & her housio/ Copely
 pey pat nshulen mynystre
 Wele. nshulen gere a good agre
 to he olt & myche trust in pe
 fep. pat is in est ihu/ Sone
 tymothe I Write to pe rese
 vngis. hoopyge me for to ai
 soone to pee/ forsope yif I nshal
 tarye. pat y' Wyte hou it by
 honer pee for to hne in pe
 house of god. pat is pe chr
 che of quye god. a pylar &
 onnesse of treupe/ & aperth
 it is nsheld a grete sacra
 met of pyte/ pat pat is
 osheld in fleische talye
 is mshied in spirit. for he
adryned of pe holy gost it
apperide to angelis for pe
phsedden it. it is pshid to be
 ven me. it is byleuyd in pe
 world. it is taken up in glo
 rie//

I Forsope pe spunt sen
 apnyd/ for in pe las
 te tymes. gvine nsh
 len dnyg fro pe fep. pnyge
 tent to spiritis of erroure.
 and to techynge of denyles.

in ypocrisie opekyge lesyng.
 and haunge her consience bet
 a corrupt. for beedynge for to
 medde. for to abstene fro mee
 tis pe Wehche god made or
adryned to ma. for to take le
 dyng of panceyngis/ to
 fersful me and hem y' knoll
 en pe treupe/ for eche crea
 ture of god is good. and no
 yng is to be caste albepe. pe
 Wehche is taken Wep dyng
 of panceyngis/ forsope it is
 halawed by pe Word of god
 and by pher. fro pe wnden
nelle. pou puttyge for pe
 vngis to bryden. shalt be a
 good mynystre of ihu. est.
 pou nshuld Wep Wordis
 of fep & of good doctryne
 pat pou hast gete in ouyng
 forsope chine y' ynone
 nable fallys & dny. pi silt
 copely haute to pyte/ for
 Wehch bodily trauelyngis &
 abstinence. to lial yng is
 pshable/ forsope pyte is
 pshable to alle vngis. ha
 unge by best of hys y' noll
 is & to amnyge/ a tresser
 Word & Wepp al accep
 con. is no y' foye of py
te. Copely in no yig pte
We be gfreyned by pyte.
 We trimeylen & be anshd
 for We hope in quye god

pat is sancoure of alle me-
most of feyful me/coman-
de you pis pis a teche/ no
ma dispise. py zonge pe. Got
be p' ensample of feyful
me. in word in luyge in
charite in fey in chastite
pe whil I can take tent to
reedyge. to monestyns &
techynges/ wyl you not dis-
pise or hitil charge pe graco
of god pat is in pee. v' is
zoune to pee by pphete or in
scriptur. Wyl p'ntynge
to of pe hondis of prestas
myt in good werke pe
be p' p'ose p'is hills yese
be p' mydful. pat py p'
fityge be sheldid to alle
me/ take tent to py sylf
hou p' huyt & to detyne
hou p' ome to teche. & be
lype in hem pat v' p'ite
Sopely you dorynge p'is pi
as. thalt make py sylf
saaf. and hem pat hee
ren peoy

Blame you not an el-
dre ma vnamshly.
Got in seche hym as
a fadir. zonge me as brif-
en. olte wyme. as modris.
zonge wyme. as sistris in
al chastite/ honoure you
wydnes. p' be wy wy
dnes/ forsope zif emy wy
due hap some or wylne.

serue sthe for to goune hyr
meynce. & to gyder zeelde
Whil to fadir & modir/ pe
Whil the v' de du insty.
Whene the v' ousthe or enst
me he pat ben omyr us. in
pe same lalle p' the were
norischid/ Sopely no v'ys
is accept before god/ forsope
sthe p' is a w' due d'ech. &
d'solue or leste alone hoap
sthe in god. & w'ak hilly
in hilechysio & p'p'is wylt
& day sthe whil sthe p' is ly
wylt in d'elias. is d'ed. ten
ley and p'is comande p'
pat pey be wylt oute repue
forsope zif emy ma haue
not cure of his meynce &
most of his household me-
ne. he hap denyed pe fey.
and is w'ak pan an v'fery
ful hepen ma/ a w' due be
chossen i to pe reynse not
lasse pan of syxty yer. p'
was wylt of oo husbonde
hauyge w'itnes synge i gode
werke. zif sthe norischid
some pe lalle. if sthe res-
cyued p'is me to herboze
zif sthe haue w'aiten pe
feet of holi me/ zif sthe bu-
du mynstide Wylt oute
desire of p' synge. to men
suffryge tribulacoi zif

the nether al good Wer-
 thesper exultingre zoligre
Widues not dyge pese vi
gis florlope Whene pe ha
do lechone in est. vellinge
to hy chafte pey Wolen
 be Wedd. hanyge daupna
 aon i her defoulde gsteer
 for pey han made pe firste
 fap to est voyde/ also forlope
 & pey ydel lerne for to en-
 myrou houser not conly for
 sope ydel bot pey be ful
 of wordis & turonse lber
 his spekyge abhat pigis
 byhone not/ pfre i Wote
 fure for to be Wedd. p
pey pigis by fallen he not
for to byge fap & mye in
dreed of pe lord/ for to be his
Wines. Wote remyngre her mey
nee for to zene to noon ocast
on to pe aduise i ydelnesse.
 by cause of cursid pig/ noll
 forlope sume Widues ben
 luyd abac aftr Satanas fe
 llyge her lustas/ if eny
 fupful ma hap of his lyne
 the Widues and mynyste
 he to he p pe churche be not
 greuyd/ pat it ouffice to he
 pat ben the Widues & han
 noon ope helly pe pfris pat
 gon Wote byfore or twenty
 boye pfr gode. he pey had

Worpy Double Honour most
 pey pat tranale in Word
 techyge/ sopeh pe compe
 scap/ pou nshalt not bridel
 yemoupe to pe ope presty
 ze. & a Werke ma is Worpy
 his hure/ nyl pou resteyne
 accusyge agayn i a pfr/ no bot
 vndir tibo or pre Witnesse
pat is vndir Witnesse of pe
olde larde & pe nellys & pe
antore of hem bope/ me sy
nyge byfore alle me rephe
pou/ pat & ope hane dreed
i ppe or aduise pe byfore
 god and est ihu and his cho-
 sen angels. p p kepe pese
 pigis. and Wyp oute byfore
 dome doynge no pig. bolby
 ge i to an ope pt/ to no man
 soone pou nshalt putte ho-
 dis. bot byaly pue. he. nep
 pou nshalt comou Wyp ope
 me synes i ostant/ kepe pe
 olt chaf/ nyl pou zi dy
 le Water for p. a. te bele
 nesse. bot ope alit. Wre
 for py stomake & pnt ofte
 fallge infirmytees/ cu
 me synes ben apyn byfore
 goynge to dome. fersope
 of sume pey vndirfelle
 also & good dedis ben apy
 & pey p han hem of abyse.
 mowu not be hidy/

Who eise ben swauntis on
 hir zart & esse pey her loz
 Dis Worpy al honoure
 lest pe name of her lord god
 & his doctryne be blassemyd
 by her gruchynge. Forsope pey
 pat han fersful or este lordis.
 dyspise hem not. for pey ben
 brysen in god. bot more serue
 pey hem for pey ben fersful
 & loued. pe Whiche ben pends
 of benefite or good dyge pat
is noth & for to cume pe se vy
 zis tache pou & pese pms
 moneste pou. if emy man te
 chy ope dyse & acord y not
 to pe hoal or holth. wordis of
oure lord ihu est. & to p te
 chye p is astir pittie. he is
 prond no pms kynge bot
 langwisthyng aboute ques
 tions & fyttyng of wordis.
 of pe Whiche ben brougte
 forp dyes. fynes. blasfe
 mies. yuel suspicions. fyt
 zis of me corrupt in soule or
 resoun. and pat ben fued or de
 ptyde fro tremp. demyge thy
 myng for to be pytee. Forsope
 a grette euellastynge Wynge
is pytee. Wy suffiaunce.
 Forsope he brougte no pig
 in to his world. no dute for
 he molten not bere emy pig
 alweye. Forsope hanwee fro
 do & vey what pms he

shul be dopid. Wy pese suf
 fiaent pms. be he payede.
 For Whi pey pat wolen be
 made riche. Falle in to temp
 tacion. and in to snare of pe
 dyml. and in to mange myp
 urable desiris & noyouse.
 pe Whiche drenchen me into
 depe & pdaon. Soplely pe
 root of alle pms is couetyse
 se pe Whiche stund auent
 se. errede fro pe fers. & in
 graffide hem Wy manye
 sorowes. Forsope pou ma of
 god. Plee pese pms. Sople
 ly sue pou rythwysnesse. pte.
 fup. charite. paacence. mylde
 nesse. fteyue p chay distreacoun
of ded pat it pte to opere
 a good fuyf of fers. caache
 euellastynge lyf. to Whiche
 pou art clepd and hast. Enon
 lachide a good Enoulechye.
 bfore many Wettnessis. I.
 comande to pee bfore god. p
 quymy alle pms & of
 ihu pat zelde a Wytnessis
 vndir pylate of pouce. I. go
 & confession. p p. hope pe
 comandemet. Wy out we
 me wreghenoble. til in to
 pe cunye of se lord ihu
 crist. Whome pe blesse alone
 myty kyng of kyngs. & lord
 of lordis. shal regelle in

his conenable tyme/ pe which
alone hap vnderdressede and
wellip in hrt to whome no
ma may come Wip oute hy
Wh noon of me calle as he
is bot ney may see to wh
glorie and honoure and em
pire in to wip outen ceade
amen/ comatide you to ruche
me of pis world for to not
saue or vnderstande hylly.
or proude ney for to hoop
in cunctyute of riches/ no
bot in qrys god pat zener
to alle us pmys plenteuous
ly for to ose for to do wele
for to be made ruche in go
de wheris. hylly for to znye.
for to comp. for to trespice to
han olt a good foundemet.
in to tyme to comynge. p
vey caache vnderlasyngge hylly
you tymothee. keep py depost
or py bitaken to pee. esthar
pms anspid nouelte of croues.
e apynnyo of fals name of
tynge/ pe which. hymne
ourme bidenye. fllle don
aboute pe fey/ pe grace of
god wip pee amde/

here endy pe firste pistle
to tymothee and bygn
ney pe seconde pistle to
tymothee

Poul apostle of ihu
crist by pe will
of god. after pe
byhest of hys pat
is in ch. ihu. to
tymothee his most deere bope
sone. grage whye spees of
god oure fadir and ihu crist
oure lord/ I d pance pms to
my god to whome I serue fro
my ygentoures. in chene to
tuence/ for wip outen cressy
ze I hane mynde of pee i my
pyeris myt e day. desuryge
for to see pee. Reynge mynde
ful of vy teeris. pat I be
wip iore fulfild. i tadyngge
reordyge a myde of vt fey
pat is in pee/ not feynede.
pe which. e wellide firste
in ym aut loyde and in py
modu cunye/ Sopely I am
cortejn pat e in pee it is
for which cause I moneste
pat you reyse again pe grace
of god pat is in pee. by pe
ouputtynge of my hondis
Sopely god zaf not to us pe
spirit of fals drede. bot of
ihu e of loue e of sobrenes
and so nyl you shame pe
vertnessynge of oure lord ihu
crist ney me pe bounde of hy
bot trauaile wip me in pe
zospel aft pe ihu of god

pat desyres us & clepident
his holy clep'nt/ not after
oure werke. bot after his
purpos & grace p'is zonen
to us in c't Jhu. by fore word
ly tymes/ noll forsowe it is
ap' by pe l'it'ge of oure sa
ueoure Jhu c't. pe & h'che
sopely d'st'nyed dep. for sope
he l'it'nyd hys & am'ny
aon by pe gospel. i pe & h'
che i am sette a p'choure &
apostle & ma'istr of hepen
ma' for pe multitude pat
c'uep me i by l'eng for & h'
the cause also i suffre p'le
p'ngis. bot i am not q'f'nd
for sope i wote to & h'om i
haue by l'enyd. and i am cer
teyn for he is myzty for to
kepe my helpe. in to p' day/
haue you pe fourme of h'ole
wordis pe & h'che p' her d'p
of me in soup & loue i c't
Jhu. kepe p' a good dep'oost
p' is my off'ce. by pe holy
zoost pat dwellip in us/
sopely you wost p' alle pat
ben i asie ben turnyd fro
me. of & h'ome is p' h'el'ig
& ermogenes most o't'arie
pe lord z'ue mye to pe hon
se of onel'sore. for ofte he
refreisth'ed me & p'hamed
not my cheyne/ bot & h'ene

he came to rome. he sougto
b'isly & found me/ pe lord
z'ue to hy to fynde mercy
of god. i pat day of h'ys
a'myge/ & hon g'ret p'ngis
he mynys't'ed to me at ep
hebe. hast bet knoll

Herfore p' my cone
ce am'f'ctid i grace
pat is in c't Jhu.
& what p'ngis p' hast herd
of me by many witnes's
b'itake you p'le to f'upful
me. pe & h'che p'ch'li be
alle & for to t'ech' of men/
trauail you as a good l'nyz't
of c't Jhu/ no ma' holdyng
l'nyz'thode to god. myr'ap
p'p hy c'ist & p'p wordly
needis. pat he p'le to hy.
to & h'ome he hap p'nyde
hy c'ist for & h' he p' p'ny
nep as p'ny in batayle.
shal not be avouced. bot
if he shal fyte l'ib'ell'ly/
it by h'ouep an ex'pet'lier.
for to resteyne firste of pe
f'nyngis pat he traueilep/
andir'stonde you & h'at
p'ngis i sope/ sopely pe
lord shal z'ue to pe i alle
p'ngis andir'stondyng. be
you myd'ful pe lord crist
Jhu for to haue rise azen
fro ded me of pe seed of

52
A

B

C

dauid after my gospel. Whiche
che I traunce unto boondis.
as yuele. Whiche. Bot ye
word of god is not bounden/
pore I susteyne alle mngis
for ye chosen. p. p. gete
ye helpe p. is in ch. 1st. Whiche
heuenly gtorie. A trecke.
word is p. pat. 1. 1. 1. 1. for
why if we ben to god. Deed
to ye word. A we schulen
hve to gyder in blisse. if we
schula suffre as martires.
we schula regne to gyder. if
arise chief martire. if we
schulen denye. h. And he
shal denye us. if we hyle
ne not. he dwelth. ferst
he may not denye. h. self.
p. he mot punyssh. oure myg.
hylene. and us putte don.
opre. ferst. Forsope ye
is p. is. I monest. witnes
sing. hem before god. npl
pon f. yue in wordis. For
sope to no p. is. it is p. f. ita
ble. no bot to ye turnyng
opse. don of me. heeringe.
Forsope. b. is. are p. self.
f. to zene. p. a p. nable.
were man to god. onstha
med. r. y. t. h. e. y. n. g. e. p.
word of treupe. Forsope.
schine. pon ynshool. and
weyn. spech. Copely. p. y.

p. f. ita. myche to v. n. p. t. e. and
ye word of h. e. by. h. ita. a. h. ita.
arise. as a. can. t. e. r. of. Whome
p. h. ita. t. e. r. is. a. h. y. m. e. n. e. n. s. p. e.
Whiche. f. l. l. e. n. d. o. u. f. r. o. p. o. t. r. a. n.
p. e. s. u. r. n. g. e. r. i. s. h. g. e. a. z. e. m. n. o. d. i.
d. n. a. t. u. r. e. d. e. n. c. y. p. s. e. d. o. u. p. e.
f. e. r. p. o. f. s. u. m. e. b. o. t. p. e. s. a. d. f. o. u.
d. e. m. e. t. o. f. g. o. d. f. r. o. n. d. i. p. e. h. a. n. g. e.
p. o. h. i. t. l. m. a. r. k. p. e. l. a. d. h. a. p.
E. n. o. b. l. e. Whiche. b. e. n. h. o. s. a. t.
e. t. h. e. m. a. n. p. r. i. n. c. i. p. p. e. n. a. m. e.
o. f. p. e. l. o. r. d. p. r. e. s. e. n. t. f. r. o.
O. b. e. d. i. e. n. c. e. f. o. r. s. o. p. e. i. n. a.
g. r. e. t. e. h. o. u. s. e. b. e. n. o. t. o. u. e. l. y. g. o. l.
d. e. n. c. e. s. s. e. l. s. a. s. i. l. e. n. b. o. t. a.
t. r. e. e. n. a. b. r. i. t. i. l. a. s. c. o. p. e. l. y. a. n. d.
c. o. p. e. l. y. o. u. i. n. t. o. h. o. n. o. u. r. s.
o. u. f. o. r. s. o. p. e. i. n. t. o. d. i. s. p. u. t. e. p. e. r.
f. i. z. e. i. f. e. n. y. m. a. s. h. a. l. c. l. e. n. s. e.
h. y. s. i. l. f. f. r. o. p. e. s. e. p. h. e. m. t. o.
d. i. s. p. u. t. e. h. e. s. h. a. l. b. e. a. v. e. s. s. e. l.
h. a. l. l. e. d. i. n. t. o. h. o. n. o. u. r. a. p. p. i.
t. a. b. l. e. t. o. p. e. l. a. d. r. e. d. y. i. n. t. o. a. l.
g. o. o. d. W. e. r. e. f. o. r. s. o. p. e. f. l. e. p. o. n.
d. e. s. i. r. i. s. o. f. z. o. u. r. e. C. o. p. e. l. y. s. u. e.
p. o. n. r. i. g. h. t. e. s. n. e. s. s. e. f. e. r. c. h. a. r. i.
t. e. p. e. e. s. W. i. p. h. e. p. r. i. n. c. i. p. e. n.
p. e. l. o. r. d. o. f. c. l. e. e. n. h. e. r. t. e. f. i. r. s.
p. e. s. c. h. i. n. e. p. f. o. l. l. o. w. e. r. q. u. e. s.
t. i. o. n. e. s. a. n. d. W. i. p. o. u. r. e. d. i. s. t. i.
p. l. i. n. e. W. i. n. y. g. e. f. o. r. p. o. y. g. e. d. r. e.
c. h. i. d. y. g. i. s. f. o. r. s. o. p. e. i. t. b. y. h. o.
u. e. r. p. e. s. u. a. i. n. t. o. f. p. e. l. a. d. f. o.
t. o. n. o. t. c. h. y. d. e. b. o. t. f. o. r. t. o. b. e.

mylde to alle men. able for to te
che pacient. whiche pte repre
myge he pat aemfoundeden treu
pe pat Gytyme god zeue he
penance for to knowle pe treu
pe and pey rise aem fro ena
rie of pe deuyll of whom pey
ben holde carteris at his wille
Forsope Wite pou p's p's
pat ipe laste dayes p's
louse tymes schulen
fonde myz & me schulen be
longe hem olt. wrettonis.
hee of berrege. proud. blasphem
mes. not obedient to fadir
& modir in lesul p's. mylde
curid. Wip oute affection. Wip
oute pees. falso blamers. En
corynent & Dychast. ommyld.
Wip oute benignete. traitouris
froward. Golt. Wip proud por
tis. louers of lustis. more pa
of god. hamyge copely pe lie
ness of pitee. forsope deny
inge pe oth of it. and pese
me exchowe p's of pese sopeh
pey ben p's persen. housis &
led carteris. lital Wym's char
sid Wip omyr. for omyruse.
Wym's dysp'se he pe Wliche
carteris Wym's ben led Wip
dysp'se. Wym's enmore ler
myze & neide p'stly cuny
ge to pe luyge of treupe
forsope as Jamnes and
mambres aemfonde moyses

so & pese aemfonde treupe
pese me be geynt in soule re
pynd aboute pe fery. bot fery
pey schulen not ouer no p'seat
tyme p'stite. copely pe dylly
dam of he schal be luomen
to alle me. as & heru Wac
by moyses. pou ferype hast
fellebide my daryne & ody
nante. my p'se. fery. longe
abyspe. lone. paucete. p'sea
aous. passiois. What man
be made to me at antioche.
at yrome. at listris. What
man p'seuaous. I suffride.
and pe lord dehyde me of
alle. & alle me pat Wolen
loue p'tonsh. i est ihu. schu
len suffer p'seuaous. ffor
sope yuele me & dystynoc.
schule p'stite in to Worspe.
erryge he olt & sendyge
ofe in to erroure. bot dwelle
pou i pese p'ses p's. hast
lernyd. & ben bytaken to pee
Wityge of Wihome. p's. hast
lernyd. for of pe hoh goft.
and for pou hast knowen
hoh lattris. ffor pi zompe. pe
Wliche molu enfour me
pee to helpe. by fery p's
in est ihu. fforsope al god
by p'stite of Wihom god
is autoure. enspird of hy.
is p'stable to teche. to argell.

to repue Wy pe churche.
to lerne in ryghtwysnesse / pat pe
man of god be pset. lernyd to
al good werke.

Intreffe byfore god & ch
hū pat is to demyge pe
quye & deed. by pe cūny
ge of hy & pe byngda of
hy. pthe pe word. be von by
hye to couenable & duonena
ble. rephe. bysche. blame. in
al pauence & detryne / forsope
tyme. shal be vshene me shu
len not suffre goolden doctine.
bot at her desirio pey shuld
gedir to gedir maistris. ple
unge to her pshynge erie
and treuly pey shuld turne
aweye here heeryge fro tren
pe. bot to fublis pey shuld
be turnyd to gyder / forsope
Wale pou. in alle yngis &
neale pou to edefie bryden.
do pe vbert of euangelist. p
is to fulfille in dede treupe
spolen / fulfille in dnyce.
be von cobret forsope. I am
carnifed nob. & pe tyme
of my depe is nyz. I haue
fermyen a good shyp. I haue
cendide pe comse. I haue
lept pe seip in pe tof tyme
to cūme a coldne of ryghtw
nesse is keppe to me. pe wh
che pe lord mst dmesman

shal zelde to me. I pat day /
forsope not onely to me. bot
to he p lone. his cūnyngel
hye for to come to me soone.
forsope demas hap fnsade
me lonyge. no world & went
to tessalonyk. crestenc. in to
galathie. 10 sent tye. in to
sahidanchy. like aldre is. W
me. take marb & lade to hore.
Wry pey forsope he is ppta
ble to me in to dnyce. penult
after Jerom is cledid a boke.
& after haymound. a clove of
pe romayns. Whiche I left
at troade anentis carpe. von
cūnyge brynge it. Wry pe
& pe bokis. most forsope be
von myndeful to brenge p
chemyne. alsumdre pe tre
purer. shuld to me ma
nye yuele yngis. pe lord it
shal zelde to hym. after hye
vbertis. Whome & p epistle
ful grethly forsope he azem
stode my vbertis. In my fir
ste defense no mā was to
me. bot alle forsofen me.
be it not retid to he. for
sope pe lord stode nyz to me
and confortide me. pat pe
pshynge of his word be ful
fild by me. & pat alle fol
his heere. and I am debiled
fro monpe of pe thow. forso

pe lord deliuerde me fro al yuel
 Wert. & pshal make me saaf
 to his heuenly kyngdam. to
 Whome glorie in to worldis
 of worldis Amen. Grete wele
 prista & aquyla. And pe hou
 se of onesifore. forsope cras
 tus dwelte at corinthe. for
 sope I lesse trophim. seek
 at mylete. copely he p for
 to come before Wynter. eu
 bolus & prudente & hmo
 & claudia & alle brisen. gre
 ten pee wele. oure lord ihu
 crist. be wypp p spirit. pe
 grace of god. wypp you and
 here ender pe second pistle to
 ymowthe and bygynney pe
 nith to tyte.

Doulde pe seruant
 of god apostle of
 ihu crist. after pe
 feryp of pe chose
 of god & knolgyde of pe ten
 pe pe which is after pitee.
 in hope of everlastyge lyf.
 pat god bihgt pat hiep not
 before worldly tymes. for
 sope he scheldide in his ty
 mes his word & his sone
 crist in pthynge p his byta
 len to me. after pe comande
 met. of oure soneoure god.
 to tyte pe bylouyd sone affe
 pe comon feryp. grace and
 pees of god pe fadir. & of

crist ihu oure soneoure. for
 grace & cause of his p's
 lesse pee at trecte. pat you
 amede po p'is pat feylen.
 & ordeyne by othes p'son
 & I disposide to pee. in em
 maio wypp oute cryme &
 greet gylt. husbond of co wif
 feryppe wypp oute weine pe
wynte of baptisim harynge
 feryful comys not t accusa
 cion of lecherie. & not soget
 forsope it byhouep a bishop
 for to be wypp oute cryme. as
 adispensoure of god. not
 pronde. not werpyful. not
 zowd myche to wyne. not
 a smyter. not couentouse.
 of foule wynges. bot hol
 dyge hospitalite. benygne
 prudent. sobre inst. hooly.
 stynent fre conlesful p's
 biethyppe hy pat affe doc
 tryne of coryntus. is a well
 word. pat he be myty for
 to amoneste in hooly te
 chynge. and to replie hem.
 pat agem syn pe treupe.
 forsope pe ben manye vn
 oledient & weyne opekis
 & dysceynouris. most pey
 p ben of artiafion. who
 it byhouep for to be re p's
 nyspe which copturne

houſe. techinge. Whiche pꝛis
it byhouer not. for grace or loue
of ſoule. Whynge. ſtane of ge
per pphete. pat facit hie. ſci
de me of creete. derid i me.
he enmore lienis. pꝛue bectis.
pꝛiſte blood. ſolke of ſolke
a liſte. pꝛiſte bectis. pꝛiſte
welle. for pe. Whiche canſe bla
me. he. ſo. pat. pe. be. hool. in
ſep. not. pꝛiſte. tent. to. ſabbe
of. iſſis. & to. mandementis. of
me. tinge. he. aſſage. fro. men
pe. ſopely. alle. pꝛiſte. heu
clen. to. clen. me. in. her. bꝛe.
a. ſig. pꝛiſte. maon. ſo. ſope. to. vn
dene. me. & vnſep. ful. no. pꝛiſte
is. clen. for. her. vn. lioy. meſſe.
bot. & pe. ſoule. or. reſon. of. hem
& pꝛiſte. be. made. vudene. pꝛiſte
Enonleſſe. hem. by. vud. for. to
hane. knolke. god. for. ſope. by
xdis. pꝛiſte. demyen. hie. vhen
pꝛiſte. ben. abhominable. & vn. by
reſul. & repnable. to. al. good
vhen. **no**

A.

Thou forſope. ſpelle. po
pꝛiſte. pꝛiſte. hie. hol
in. techinge. pꝛiſte. me. ben
ſobre. chaſt. prudent. hool
in. ſep. in. lone. & pꝛiſte.
alſo. old. vꝛiſte. amoneſte. pꝛiſte
to. be. clꝛy. in. hie. habit. of
ſhame. faſtneſſe. not. to. be
habit. pꝛiſte. falſe. ſhame.

to. on. me. not. ſeruyge. myſe.
to. vꝛiſte. bot. pꝛiſte. wile. techy
ze. pat. pe. techy. pꝛiſte.
zonge. vꝛiſte. amoneſte. pꝛiſte
pꝛiſte. lone. her. huſbondis. in. d
nyte. of. ſep. pat. pꝛiſte. lone. her
ſonys. chaſt. ſhame. hem. be. pꝛiſte
prudent. chaſt. ſobre. hane
ſe. care. of. her. meynce. being
ne. ſoget. to. her. huſbondis.
pat. pe. vꝛd. of. god. be. not. blaſ
ſep. alſo. monette. pꝛiſte
me. pat. pꝛiſte. be. ſobre. & alle
pꝛiſte. ze. pꝛiſte. clif. enſample
of. good. vꝛiſte. in. techyge
i. hie. neſſe. of. hie. & ſad
neſſe. of. vꝛiſte. be. pꝛiſte. vꝛd
medionable. vnrephable.
pꝛiſte. pꝛiſte. on. pe. of. aid. or
adulſarie. be. aſhamed. ha
nyge. noon. pꝛiſte. vꝛiſte. to. ſep
to. zai. amoneſte. pꝛiſte. pꝛiſte
for. to. be. ſuget. to. her. lordis.
in. alle. pꝛiſte. pꝛiſte. not
qꝛemſeynge. not. deſfran
dꝛge. bot. in. alle. pꝛiſte. iſſ
vꝛiſte. good. ſep. pꝛiſte. pꝛiſte
ourne. in. alle. pꝛiſte. pe. dot
tyne. of. god. oure. ſameoure.
forſope. pe. grace. of. god. oꝛ
ſameoure. hape. appende. to
alle. me. techyge. no. pat
vꝛiſte. forſabynge. impure. &
vꝛiſte. deſires. hie. ſolke
ly. vꝛiſte. and. iſſely.

to oure neyghbores & prynces
to god in his world; abydyng
ye blessed hope & ye comyng
of ye glorie of grete god & of
saneouwe Ihu crist p^r zap hy
cylf for us; pat he schulde
agein he us fro al vyltydnes.
& make to hy cyle a cleen pe
pul acceptable.ouer of good
werkis speke p^r rese pryncis
& monest & repue. Wp al
comandment; no mā for pr
symple nesse; dispise pee.

A moueste pou he for
to be sogenis to p^rncas
& politeris; for to obe
the to ye seyrge or word of
hem; for to be redye to al go
d word; for to blasphemie no
mā; for to be not ful of chidyng
ge; bot temporairt or p^ract.
shelbyge al myldenes to alle
me; for sope & we word en
tyme ambys; vnbykeful; er
ryge. & Enyge to destris &
dylle hys; in malice and
dye dyge. hate ful or wordy
to be hate; to godly hatynge;
for sope & he ne pe benygant
te & humanite or large myge
of god oure saneouwe appe
ride; not of werkis of ryzt
wysnesse pat he dyden; bot
astur his myge he made us
saaf; by ye wanshyge or

captien of agemlyheetyng
and agemlyheetyng of ye good
goost. & home he schelde oute
in to us plentiously; by Ihu
crist oure saneouwe; pat he
inpride by his grete. he cyris
aff hoop of enlastyge by a true
word is p^rncas of rese pryncis.
hole pee to oferinge of me p^r
per p^r bilene to god; ture or
hete for to be biforn i good wer
kis; rese pryncis be good & p^rsta
ble to me; for sope cyphelle p^r
folapthe questiois & gnele
sies & strynges; & p^rncas of
pe make of ye lalbe; for sope
pe be cyphelle & cyne/
shyne p^r amia or ent; affoon
& ye secunde corremon; tynge
p^r the p^rncas siche amia mā; is sub
itid & of passyng; dappnyd by
his oure dome; for wordy
he errypt sope; & p^rncas
sende to pee archema or tyn
tyr; hye p^r for to come to me
to mycapolis; for sope i hane
purposid; for to dwelle i wy
ter p^r bishp; sende p^r biforn
zenam pe lalbe mā of lalbe
& apollo; p^r no p^rncas falk to ge
for sope & of me lerne pay
for to be biforn i good wer
kis to necessaire; of his p^rncas
not vyltydnes; alle me p^r
be w^rne; & grete pee wele; grete
p^r wele ge; p^r lene not feryp
ye grete of god wip you amen

here bigynner pe
pistle to tyte

Poul pe bounde of
cast ihu & ty more
bropur to filemon
bylound & oure hel
per & to appa most
dere sust & to archip oure ene
fuyt & to pe church p'io m'py
houe/ grace to you & pees of
god oure fadir & of pe lord
Ihu est I do p'andys to my
god enlmore malyge mynde
of pee i my p'ers. heryng
py charite & fap p' p' hast in
pe lord Ihu & to alle holy me
p' pe cunnynge of m' fap
be made app' i b'ndys of alle
good p'is i est Ihu forsope I
hade greet ioye & confort i py
charite/ for pe entrailes of
holy me restid by pee broph
for whiche p'ys I hanyng
myche est i est Ihu for to co
maide to pee p' pat p'tegner
no p'is or p'fiter for charite
I byscche more. syde p' art su
che as poul oold. noll forsope
I pe bond of ihu est I bysc
che pee for my sone onesyme
Whom I in bondis bigat. pe
whiche cunyme was to pee
unprofitable. forsope noll
p'fuable & to pee & to me.
Whom I sente azeim to pee

forsope resteyne pou hym
as my entrailes. Whom I
wold wip holde wip me p'
he schulde for pee. due to me
in bondis of pe gospel forso
pe wip oute/ consail I wold
not do. p' m' god schulde not
be as of nede. but wifful for
sope p'acture wfore he dep
tude fro pee at an hour/ pat
p' schuld resteyne hy m to
wip oute ende/ noll not as
a quant. a moost dere beoyr.
most to me/ forsope hou my
che more to pee & i fleusthe
I pe lord/ wfore if p' hast me
a felthe. resteyne hy as me
forsope if he hap my p'ng
amoyed pee. reite pou pro
p'ng to me/ I poul wrot wip
my hond/ I schal zelde pat
I seye not to pee. p' p' obist
to me py olt/ so broph I
schal ope pee i pe lord. ful
fille my entrailes i est I est
myge of p'm obedience wroot
to pee. Writye for p' schal
do & ou p' pat I seye/ alld for
sope & make redy to me an
oost or houe for to dwelle
inne/ for whiche I hope by joe
p'ys me for to be zoid to
zon/ epafas my ene caraf
or to godir p'foner greup pee
Wel i est Ihu/ & oant anstark.
Demas luis my helpe. pe ge of
oure lord ihu est w' Joe spirit/

her bygy myc peule pulch
to ye ebrellhos.

to ebrellhos.

10

A

Many fold & many
maneris. Citty
me god opeþe
to fadiris iþþe
ho at ye lustem
pele sayes spake to us in ye
sone wþo he oðer ned eyr of
alle þingis by wþo he made
ye woldis ye wþiche wþane
heio ye iþþyng of eþae &
figure of his substance. and
berþe alle þingis by word of
his oþi. madþe pþaoti of
oþnes. eueþ on ye rythalf
of manest. i þye þingis. so
myþe made bettir pan an
selis by hon myþe he hap an
eritid a more different or ex
cellent name by fore he forso
ye to wþiche of ye angelis
oyde god omy tþine. pou art
my sone. i þane sendride
pee to day. & estþone i nþal
be to hy in to a fadir. & he
nþal be to me in to a sone.
& wþane estþone he by
geþ yn ye first bigen. i ye
wondenesse of ye erpe. he
oerþ. & alle ye angelis of god
wopþipe weþ hym. & soþeþ
to angelis he oerþ ye wþiche
madþy his angelis spiritis.

& his mynistrys. fadme of
fier. forþe to ye sone. god
þy trone in to ye wold of
wold. & azerde of eqnyte pe
zerde of þy redmeþ. hast
þonyd rythwifness. & hatidest
wþichidness. þfore god þy
god anoyted pee wþy oyl of
gladness. by fore þy felawis.
& pou lard i ye bygyng. fō
dest ye erpe. & heuenes ben
wþeris of þin hondis. weþ
nþule þyþe. forþe pou
shalt þyþy wþeller. alle
nþule wþe oold as a cloþ.
& pou shalt change hem
as an ampte or erdme. a
bonte. & weþ nþulen be
changed. forþe pou art
ye same þy oþ. & þy we
ris nþulen not fayle.
forþe to wþiche of ye
angelis. sende god omy tþine.
cite on my rythalf til y
nþal pute þy enemes a
stool of þy feet. & he weþ
alle ben not dnyge spiritis.
seute i to mynistrys. forþe
pat taken þe eritage of
helpe.

Therfore more plen
teuouly it hoþo
ueþ us for to þeþe
po þingis. pat we han
herd. lest þamenture we

floru alþeyr forþoþe if þilke
 word þis ceþþe by anghel is
 maad sad & eche tþpassynge
or brekþat of þe lasse & onobe
 dienece to be iust retribuþion.
 þou shulde we astape if we shu
 le dispise so greet helpe. þe whi
 che weþane it hade take by syn
 nyge for to be told out by þe
 lord of he þ herden is confer
 med to us god to gedir wyt
 nessþe by synys. Wondres
 & greet unneþis & dyse oer
 tues & distribuþions of þe holy
 gost op his wille forþoþe not
 to anghel god sogettnd peron
 denesse of erpe to cunþe of
 whiche we speken. sopely eu
 ma þinneþis i on place sy
 nge. what þis is ma þ þou
 art myndeþul of hy. or ma
 nes sone for þou onstunde
 hy. þou hast maad hy kin.
 alþul lasse fro anghel. þou
 hast crowned hy wip glorie
 & honour. þou hast ordeyned
 hy opun werkis of þy hondas
 þou hast maad alle þiges so
 get vnder his feet forþoþe
 þy þis pat he sogettnd al
 le þiges to hy. he leste no
 þig onsogettnd to hy forþoþe
 now we even not in alle þy
 ges sogette to hy in forþoþe
 we even hy. pat alþul is

maad lasse þan anghel. iust
 for passion of deþ. crowneþe
 wip glorie & hono. þat he
 pouer grace of god shulde taf
 to deþe for alle me. forþoþe
 it bytame hy for whom alle
 þinges & by whom alle þin
 ges. þe whiche hade ledde
 to gedir many sones in to
 glorie. þe maker of þe helpe
 of hem for to ceude by passy
 ons. sopely he þat halldyþ
 & þey þat ben halewde. of
 oon alle for whiche canse
 he is not confoundd. for to
 clepe hem bryþen synge.
 i shal telle þy name to my
 bryþen in þe myddel of þe chir
 che. i shal herpe þee. & eft
 soone i shal be tþsynge in
 to hy. and eft soone to i & my
 children. þe whiche god zaf
 to me. þfore for children to
 myden to fleynge & blood. &
 he alþd toke pt of þe same
 þat biddy he shulde dyffe
 hy þat hade lordþshipe of
 deþ. þis to ceþe þe demyl.
 & shulde deþner he þat hy
 drede of deþe hy alle þy we
 ren bounden to duage forþoþe
 þe he taryte or tode to uale
 anghel. but he canþt þe seos
 of abraham. wherfore he onþt
 for to be licned to bryþeren

By alle prynces pat he schulde be
made unfulf & feryful bishop
to god pat he schulde be unfulf
to pe tressour & gylt of pe pe
pulis forsope in p^rys in wchiche
he oufride & was temptid: he
is myghty for to helpe & hem p^r
ben temptid/

Wherfore galy bryden pa
neris of heuely cleppynge
sholdeze pe apostle & bishop
of oure confessoun ihu. pe wch
che is trewe to hy p^r made hy.
as & moyses tal pe hous of
hy forsope his bishop is had
woepyn of more glorie before galy
ses. by hou myche pan pe hous
gay he more honour pat made
in for wchiche eche hous is made
of ou man forsope he p^r made
alle prynces of nougt is god/
& copely moyses was trewe i
al his hous as a seruant in
to wittnessynge of po prynces
pat weren to be seyde forsope
cryst as a come i his hous/pe
wchiche hous we be if we had
den trust & glorie of hope into
sad fery/ wherfore as pe holy
gost seip. to day if ze ha herd
his voyce. nyl ze harden yoe
hertis. as in werrapynge op
pe day of temptaoun i desert
wheze yoe fadiris temptide me
pnyeden & sayen my werrapynge

Wherfore fourty zenis/ Was
offendid & werrap to his gene
racion/ & i sayde clemore per
erren. in herte/ forsope pe
quell not my werrap to wchiche
i stoo in my werrapen if pe
schulen entre in to my reste/
bryden & ze leste pamenture
in ong of you be ong ynel her
te of vnbeleue for to depte fro
quyke god. but moneste yoe
sly by alle dayes. pe wchiche
to day is named. pat noon
of you be hardened by falshe
of synne/ copely we be made
pnyeris of est. if nepeles
we holden pe byngynge of
his substance/ sad in to pe
eende/ wchiche it is seyde to
day if ze han herd pe voyce
of hy mo nyl ze hardene yoe
hertis. as in pat werrapynge/
copely synne herynge werrap
den. bot not alle pe p^r wen
ten out of Egypte by moyses
to wchiche fiespe was he
werrapid fourty zenis. wchiche
not to he pat synned wchiche
careyns ben cast don i desert
to wchiche he stoo copely
for to not entre in to reste
of hy no bot to hem p^r we
ren vnbeleueful & we even
for pe myghte not dre to pe
reste of hy. for vnbeleue

Herfore dreed we briperen
 these pauents pe byhese
 of entrengge in to his reste leste
or forsake any of us be sessid
or demyd futo be alweye forsope
 it is tolde to us: as & to hem/
 & pe word herd pfitide not to
 hem: not meynd to seip/ of pe
 se pinges pat pey herden/ for
 sope we pat han bylenyd schu
 le entre in to reste: as he sey
 de/ as / swor in uny wrappe
 if pey schuld entre in to my
 reste/ & covely pe werbis ma
 de pfyte fro pe ordinatice of
 pe world: forsope he seyde
 mo i ou place of pe coniepe
 day/ & god restide in pe saue
 pe day: from alle his werbis/
 & in mo estesoone/ if pei schu
 len entre i to my reste/ pfore
 for it leuey or is ouer cumid
 fute to entre i to it. & pey to w
 hiche pe fiste it is tolde en
 triden not for her unbylene/
 estesoone he tynney eunday
 to day canyng in damp as
 lo muche of tyme as it is
 byfore seyde/ to day if ye han
 herd his woys: wyl ye harde
 we hertis: as in pilke wrap
 pise/ for why if ihe hade
 zeue reste to hem: he schul
 de neise speke of oyr after
 pat day/ pfore sabot haleny

ze is leste to pe pepul of
 god forsope he pat entred
 to his reste: & he restide of
 his werbis as & god of his/
 perfore haste we fute to en
 tre in to pat reste/ p no ma
 falle i to pe same ensample
 of unbylene/ forsope pe word
 of god is quike & spedy i wor
 chis: & more able for to pse
 pan al tibeine eard eberd.
 & entrengge of stretchyge til
 to depte of wile or lyf and
 spirit & of ioynturis & more
 wro & depter or demer of por
tis & intencionis of hertis/
 & no create is indissible ipe
 onte of god/ forsope alle pi
 ges ben ualid & opy to his
 yen to whom accord to us/
 pfore we hanye a greet bus
 chop: pat pside heuenes/ hu
 ye come of god holde pe con
 fession or knowlechynge of
 oure feip/ forsope we ha not
 a bishop pat may not suf
 fire to gedir or haue passion
 to oure ifirmytes: but tep
 tide by alle pinges for licnesse.
 Wip oute shue/ pfore go we
 Wip trist to pe tne of his
 grace: pat we gete wyl
 fynde ste in couenable
 helpe.

A

Herbyche bishopp take
of me: is ordeyned for
me in pefe pinge: pat ben to
god: pat he offie iustis & saai
fies for synes pe whiche may
to gedir corbe. Wher he p' d'ndio
Ben & eris for & he is enuyro
Wende Wher yufirmyte: & p'one
he offey as & for pe pepul: so
also & for hy self: offie for sy
nes: ney omy ma takep to hy
hond: no bot he p' is clepd of
god as aaron: so and et clary
fied not hy self: p' he were
bushopp: But he pat opat to
hy: pou art my come to day
I gendride pee: as & in ower
place. he semp: pou art a p'st
in to wher oute ende up pe
order of gylthysedech: pe whi
chet dapes of his fleische of
fringe p'enis & byschynge
to god p' myzt make hy saaf
fro depe: wher greet ay and
teris is herd for his reuenc
& sopely Whanne he was so
dis soner: he lerned oledience
of pefe pinge: pat he suffri
de: & he eendid is made cause
of outlastynge helpe to alle
obeythynge to hy: clepd of
god a bishopp: bishoppes pe order
of gylthysedech: of who to us
a greet weid & able for to be

affid: for to seze for ze be ma
de foble for to here: forsd pe
Whanne ze schuld be maist
for tyme: efsedone ze nedu
pat ze ben tange Whiche be
pe elementis or letters of pe
bygyngge of godis wordis
& ze ben made po to whom
is uede of mylke. & not sud
mete: forsdpe eche pat is p
cener of mylke: is wher oute
part of pe word of rythys
nelle: forsdpe he is a lital chyl
forsdpe of p'st me is sad
mete: of he p' for pe ilk cust
han wuns exasid or tuchid.
to dyluon: of good & myel:

Wherfore we leenye a
whyle pe word of hy
synynge of oft be born to pe
p'fession of hy: not efsedone
leggyng pe foundmet of pe
nauice fro deid werks: & of
fey to god: of wherthynge
or baptysm: of techynge &
of leynge on of hondis: &
of risynge ayein of deid me
& of euerlastynge dom: p'is
p'is we schulen do: if god schal
suffre: sopely it is ipossible
hem pat omys ben illmyn
ned: han tashid also heuenly
p'st & ben made p'teners
of pe holy gost: nepeles

tastiden pe good word of god.
 & stues of pe world to comyn
 ge & ben shiden fer alweye.
 eftesone for to be reueledide
 or made nelfe to penance.
 eftesones crucifynge to he
 self pe sone of god. & hangge
 to storne forsove pe erpe dry
 hynge reyne ofte comynge upo
 it. & brynnyngge forp conena
 ble erbe to hem of wehomo
 it is wylde takyn blessinge of
 god. forsope it brynnyngge for
 pe poenes & breis is repro
 uable. & nexte to carpe. Whos
 endynge shal be it to breynge
 forsope ze moost derelborpe.
 We tryste of you bettur pyes.
 & neer to halpe nepoles pouz
 We speke so sopeh god is not
 ommyt. pat he freyng zoure
 werke & loue pe wehiche ze
 han scheld. in his name.
 for ze han mynystride to
 segyns & mynystreu. forso
 pe we couenten eche of you
 for to schelde pe same bysi
 nesse to fulfyllinge of pe ho
 pe til to pe ende. pat ze be
 not made stow. bot also
 oueris of hem pe wehiche
 by fery & paaence schuler.
 inferne byheeste. for wehiche
 god bysetynge to Abraham
 for he hade no ma more by

whom he shulde share. We
 re by hy self segynge. no bot
 I blessinge shal blasse pee.
 & I mulaphynge shal multa
 plie pee. & he longe suf
 fringe. gate repmyssion. or
 lyheeste. azen. forsope me
 shoven by pe more of hem.
 & pe ende of alle her debate
 is an oop to confirmacion.
 in pe wehiche pat god by
 hynge for to schelde to pe he
 res of his byheest. pe vymo
 uableness. or sadness. of his
 consal. pume. byddynge an
 oop. pat by wehiche pynges
 commonable by wehiche it is
 impossible. god for to be. we
 han strengest solace. or con
 forte. pe wehiche fien to ge
 dit. for to holde pe hope. put
 to forpe. pe wehiche as an
 anker. we han sikur to pe
 soule. & sad & ingomge
 til to pe ymer pynges of
 hynge. weha pe forgoer
 for us entride yn the made
 lishop in to wehiche oute ende
 up. pe oder. of gelychpede.
So wehiche pat gelychpede.
 syng of salem. pe pte
 of pe hynest god. pe wehiche
 mette wehiche Abraham gon a
 zen fro cleyngge of byngis.

& blessed hy to Whom & Abrahā
 Ham deyd typos of alle ym
 ges/ first corpe of pe which is
 unprented byng of rithnes
 afurward forsope & byng of
 salem pat is to seye byng
 of pees wynt out fadir. Wynt
 oute modir wynt oute genedre
 nys/ hange byng nunge of
 sayes. nys ende of hyf. forsope
 he liued to pe son of god dwel
 lyf pft in to wynt oute ende/
 forsope byholde. ze hou greet
 is his man to Whom & Abrahā
 Ham patriarch. zaf typos of pe
 beste ymges/ & corpe men ta
 ynge pthode of pe psones of
 leys/ Ham mandement betw ta
 le typos of pe pepul wynt pe lare
 pat is to seye of her brisen.
 pouz & wynt oute of pe
 leendis of abrahā/ forsope
 Whos genadon is not nou
 brid in hem take typos of a
 bracham & he blessed his ab
 ham pe which had repyns
 stouls forsope wynt oute eng
 zemsyngge. pat is to lisse is
 blessed of pe betur & here so
 vely me dinge taken typos.
 forsope pe it is witnesse
 pat he lynes/ & pat it is so
 seys by abrahā & leys/ it
 take typos is tynd/ forsope &
 pat he was in his fadris
 leendis. Whane gelychsed
 mette wynt hy. pfore if een
 dyngge was by pthood of le
 ys. forsope vnder hy pe pe

pul take pe lare. What zut
 Was it nedful anoy pft for
 to rise wynt pe order of gelych
 sedch. & not to be seyd wynt
 pe ordir of aaron/ forsope pe
 pthode translande it is ned
 pat & tustacion of lare be
 made/ forsope he in Whome
 yese ymges ben seyd. is of
 anoy bynge. of pe which
 no mē was pft or redy to pe
 auter/ corpe it is opynliche
 knolke pat oure lord is born
 of iuda in which bynge moy
 ses spak no ymges of pthos/ &
 more zut it is knolken/ if wynt
 pe ordir of gelych sedch. ano
 ynt pft rise/ which is not
 made wynt pe lare of fleische
 ly mandement. but wynt pe
 oth of hyf insoluble. or pat
may not be don. corpe he
 witnesse hy. for you a pft into
 wynt oute ende wynt pe ordir
 of gelych sedch. forsope pe
 promys of pe mandement
 byfore goyngge is made for
 pe vnsadnesse & wynt of
 it/ forsope pe lare bronze
 no ymges to pft ymges/ forsope
 pe byngyngge yn of betur he
 pe by which we negen to
 god. & hon greet it is not
 wynt oute eskeryngge/ forsope. f
 ope ben y made pthos. wynt
 oute an oop. forsope his

þæt þæt an oop by þæt pat
 seyd to hym þe lord of þooce
 Eit þæt not relde þæt þæt pou
 art a þæt in to þæt oute ende
 op þe ordre of gylch sedech
 in so myche ihs is made by
 geter of þe better testamet
 & soþe opw mo ben maad
 þæt op þe lalle for pat þæt
 þæt þæt forþedyn forto
 dælle by depe forþe þæt
 man for þæt he dælle in to
 þæt oute ende hap eilelas
 tynge þæt þæt forþe &
 he may saue in to þæt oute en
 de conyge by þæt þæt to god
 almege hynge for to þæt forþe
 forþe to þæt þæt & ouge a
 man were þæt to us holy
 innocent wipollute or ful dæne
 deþnd fro synful men & ma
 de hyn pan heuenes þæt þæt
 hap not nede ech day as þæt
 first for þæt ofþene gylt forto
 offre oostis or sacrifices aftur
 þæt for þæt þæt þæt he
 ad þæt þæt conyge offryge
 þæt þæt forþe þæt þæt ordy
 ned in þæt þæt hynge cykenes
 or freche forþe þæt þæt of
 eberyng þæt þæt is aftur
 þæt þæt adenyed þæt þæt
 þæt in to þæt oute ende

Dæse a capite op
 po pices þæt he seyd
 þæt han ege a þæt

þæt out to gedir in þæt rithal
 of þæt sece of greetness in heue
 nes mynysse of seyntis & of
 þæt þæt tabernacle þæt god sece
 & not ma forþe ech þæt
 is ordyned for to offre zifst
 oostis forþe it is ned &
 þæt man for to haue in þæt
 þæt he þæt offre þæt if he
 were opw erpe he were no
 þæt þæt þæt þæt þæt
 offre zifst op þæt þæt þæt
 the euen to þæt sampler and
 chawke of heuenly pices
 as ino anskerde to goyses
 þæt he þæt ende þæt
 tabernacle & he seip ma
 von alle pices op þæt þæt
 þæt þæt is þæt þæt to þæt
 in þæt montenold forþe he
 hap geten a better mynysse
 by þæt myche & he is a medya
 toire of a better testamet þæt
 þæt is halellide or ofer
 med þæt better by þæt for
 if þæt firste hade be vordid
 fro blame soþe a place of
 þæt seconde schulde not ben
 conyt forþe regnyng he
 he seip lo dayes comen seip
 þæt lord & þæt þæt eende a
 newe testament opw þæt
 hono of yrael & opw þæt hono
 of juda not op þæt testamet
 þæt þæt made to her fadris
 in þæt day in þæt þæt þæt

her hond. pat I schulde lede ho
oute of pelond of Egipte for
pey schuldiden not pfitely in
my testamēt. pe which I schal
dispose to pe hous of yrael.
and afir so dayes sey pelond.
in gemyte my lardes in to pe
soules of hem. & in to pe her
tis of hem. I schal alone wri
te hem. & I schal be to hem
in to god. & pe schulen be
to me in to a pepul. & eche
man schal not teche his neye
bore. & eche man his broþer. sey
tinge. knowe pou pe lord for alle
me schulen wyte or knowe.
me fro pe lesse tyl to pe more
of hem. for I schal be helpful
or unful to pe. & I schal not by
pende on pe synnes of hem.
for sope in seynge nelke. pe
former werid oold. for sope p
pat is of many dayes & way
in oold. is nyz pe depe.

Synely & pe former hade
synful synnes of worship
an holy ping. which pat is
duryng for a tyme. for sope
pe tabernacle was maad fir
ste in which werid candil
stiles & bord & puttyng forp
of loony. pat is seyde holy.
for sope afir pe weyl or syn
dyng. pe seconde taberna
cle pat is seyde. sta nyz. p
is holy of holy pmyes. han

ze a golden censer. & pe arte of
testament. kened aboute teche
orde. wy gold in pe which a
pote of gold hangge manna.
& pe zere of aaron p floussh
de and pe tablis of pe testamēt
opon which pmyes weren
cherubyns of adre schadew
se pe ppyatone of which
pmyes it is not now for to seye
by alle for sope yese made pns
togedir. sovely in pe formere
tabernacle. this entriden yn
endmore eendynge pe office of
sacramentis. for sope in pe se
conde tabernacle onys in pe
zeer pe bishop alone not wy
oute blood. pe which he offryp
for his ignorunce & pe peples
pe holy goost. signefynge pns
pns. not zit pe weye of syn
tis for to be open. zit pe for
mer tabernacle hangge staat.
pe which pable is of pns
pnt tyme. besides which
ziftes & oostis or sacrificis
ben offryd. pe which molten
not make aman synge p
fyt by consienax. onch in
metis & drynkis & dynerse
waichyngis & ryttlesshessio
of fleische. put til to pe y
me of correctio. for sope
crisf keynge a bishop of so
dis to comynge by a lenger
& pfter tabernacle not ma
& by hond. pat is to seye

not of his maynew. neyr by
blood of goot. but is or calues.
but by his othe blood entride
conys in to holy pynge. enen
lastinge redempcion founden/
forsope if ye blood of goot but
his & bookis. & ye ansh of com
malt spreut. haleluy yucte
ne men to ye clensynge of
flensche. Hou myche more ye
blood of est. ye vshiche by ye
holy gost offride hy vullben
myd to god. shal clense youre
conscience from ded vberbis.
for to clene to god hyynge/
& pfore he is a mediator
of ye new testament. p dep
falsinge by vberge in to re
dempcion of po spassynge
pat liden vnder ye formere
testament. sey pat deu clepnd
tak repynssion of euylastyn
ge crytage. sopeh vberge is
a testament. it is nede pat
ye depe of ye testament ma
ker come butt vberge forsope ye
testament is confermed in
ded me. ellis it is not wor
py. pe vshile he luyep pat
made ye testamēt. vberfore
sopeh neyr pe firste testa
ment is halowed vber onte
blood. forsope ethe testamēt
of ye labe rad of joysses to
alle ye pepul. he takynge
ye blood of calues & of but
tis. of goot wip watir and
reed wolfe & ysope. spreynd

& pisse. booke & al ye pepul sey
inge/ p is ye blood of ye tes
tament. p god comendide to
you. also he spreynd by blood
ye tabernacle & alle ye vesse
lys of mynysterie or surce
in lichey maner. & almost alle
pynge ben clenside in blood up
ye labe. & wip outen shedyn
ge of blood. repynssion of
synes is not made. pfore it
is nede ye sampleis forsope
of heuenly pynge. vber bettir
oostis pan pest. forsope is
entride not in to holy pynge
maad by hondis. ye sampleis
of vber pynge. but in to pe
like heuene. pat he appere noll
to cheer or face of god for no
neyr pat he offie hy self ofte.
as ye bishop entride in to
holy pynge. by alle zeerns
in aliene blood. ellis it by
haste hy ofte for to suffre
fro ye bysynge of pe wold
noll forsope conys in ye een
dinges of vberdis. to distruc
cion of syne. by his oost or
sacrifice. he apperid. & as it
is ordeyned to men conys
for to dys.

Larsope asur p is domo
id & est was offride
conys. for to a vberde
ye sytines of many men/
ye seconde tyme he shal ap
pete vber outen syne to

men abidinge hym in to pe best
of hem by fey/ forsope pe same
hauinge shadowe of goodis to
compe/ not pe ilke ymage of
ynges by alle zeeris by mille
same oostis. Whiche pey offere
wip oute ceevinge neile may
make me compe/ my ppyt/
ellis pey shulden han ceevid
for to be offride. pfore p^r pe
worsthipes clenysd. omys ha
den no consyence of synne
firmer more/ but in he mynde
of synnes is made by alle
zeeris/ forsope it is impossible
synnes for to be do alleye by
blood of holis. & buche of
gret/ pfore he entoynges in
to pe world. scap/ pou woldest
not an oost or sacrifice & offry
ge forsope pou hast schapen
a body to me. & brent sacri
fices for synne. pleside not
to pec/ pan I seyde/ lo I come/
in pe heed or byzpyngge of
pe hole it is wryten of me/
pat I do py wille/ he synn
ge adone or bfore for p^r woldest
not oostis & offrynges. & brent
sacrifices & for synne ne po
pmyges ben plesant to pec/
pe whiche ben offryd op pe
lawe. pan I seyde/ lo I come
p^r I do pe wille of god. he cop
alleye pe firste. pat he make

pe secounde in whiche wille
welen haleldid. by pe offry
ge of pe body of est ihu omys/
& sopech est p^r is redy est
day mynystryngge. & ofte
mes offryngge pe same oostis/
pe whiche molbu neile do
alleye. synnes/ forsope pro
man offryngge an oost for syn
nes. for eilemore. entip in pe
rythalf of god pe sadir fro
pennes for abidinge. til his
enmyes ben punte a stool of
his feet. sopech by oon offry
ge he eendid for eilemore ha
loved men. forsope & pe
holy soft witueship to us for
sope afurward he seyde/ for
sope me is pe testament
pe whiche I schal witnesse
to hem. after po dayes pe lord
scap/ in zeyngge my sallic
in pe heris of hem. & in
pe coulis of hem/ I schal a
loue wryte hem/ & nolle q.
schal no more penk on pe
synnes & on pe wickednesse
of hem/ forsope whiche is
remysion of pec/ nolle noon
offryngge for synne/ & so by
den hauinge est in to pe
entoyngge of synnis. in pe
blood of est pe whiche ha
loved or hagan to us an alle
weye & hynge. by a oost

or fenerynge pat is to cove
 his fleasche/ & pe greet pte
 of pe hous of god. so we to
 wyf drey herte in to pe ple
 te of fow. we spreind pe her
 to fow yuel consience. and
 warsthen pe body wyf clene
 watir. holde pe confessioun
 of onre hope on bowyngge or
pat may not be folden for
 sope he is treake pat dishite
 azen/ & biholde we in to ge
 dir in to pe sturinge of cha
 rite & of good werkes. not
 forsakyngge onre zederinge to
 gedir. as it is of custome to
 sumen. bute confortinge &
 by so myche ze schulen see
 pe day neyngge forsope to
 us cymyngge willefully
 after pe Enolbyngge of treupe
 taken. wold an oost of syn
 nes not leste/ for why on
 abdyngge of dme is drede
 ful & pe cymyngge of fowr.
 pe whiche wastyngge adil
 staries/ ony man makynge
 worde or bryfyngge pe falke
 of moyses. dyep wyf outd
 ony mercy by theyne or
 pre witnecssis/ hou myche
 more gessen ze hy for to dis
 serue worse turmentis. pe

whiche schal defoule pe sone
 of god. & schal lede or holde pe
 blood of pe testament pollute
 in whiche he is haledede
 & schal to wronge or dyspute
 to pe spirit of grace. & copesh
 the witen hym pat ceyde/
 to me comynge. & I schal
 zelde/ & este/ for pe lord schal
 deme his pepul/ it is forful
 for to falle in to hondis of go d
 hyngge// forsope haue ze my f
 & on pe former dayes. in pe
 whiche ze litzned susteyne
 den greet streff or fyrst of pas
 sionis/ and copesh in pat of
 ze made a spectacle by stenshi
 pis & tribulacioun. in pat
 oyr forsope ze den made fe
 laltis of men hyngge col
 for why & to bounden men
 ze hadden compassioun. and
 ze resseynden wyf ioye. pe
 raneyne of zomre goodis.
 Enolbyngge zom for to haue a
 bettir. & dwellyngge substanc
 ce/ and so myl ze lese zoure
 trist pe whiche hap greet
 reikardinge/ forsope pacence
 is nedeful to zom. pat ze do
 ynge pe wille of god. bryn
 ge azen pe bysheff. zit so
 vely a litel houene litel he

pat is to comynge schal come
 & he schal not tarme. forsope my
 iust man hyuep of fery/ pat if
 he schal wip drewe he selfe he
 schal not plesse to my soule/
 forsope we ben not pe sones
 of wipdraynunge alwey in to p
 diauyn. Out of fery in to pe ge
 tynge of soules/ xi

Forsope fery is pe onb
 stamite of pmyges to
 be hoped & argument
 or certepate of pmyges appery
 ge/ Sopely in pto fery/ han cold
 men getum Witnessynge/ by
 fery we vnderstonde pe wo
 rdis for to be schapen & made
 by godis word. pat visiblle
 pmyges weren made of comu
 siblle pmyges. by fery abel of
 ferte myche more oost or sa
crifice pan cayme to god/ by
 pe which he gat Witnes
 synge ferto ben wist god be
 ryngge Witnessynge to his zif
 tes & by pat fery he deed
 spekep ziti by fery Enobis
 translatid. pat he schulde not
 see depe & he was not foun
 dan. for pe lord translatid
 hym/ forsope byfore trans
 lation he hade Witnessige
 for to haue pleside god/ for
 sope it is possible ony man

to plesse god wip outen fery/
 forsope it byhoney a man to
 wynge to god for to byleue
 for he is. & he is rewarden
 to men ischynge hym by
 fery. Doe an ansibere take
 of pesse pmyges pat zit word
 not sepen dredynge. it shapid
 an arb or ship in to pe helpe
 of his hono by which he
 samyned pe world. & is insti
 fied & ordeyned eyr of rite
 Wisnesse. pe which is by fery
 by fery. he pat is cleped abia
 ham. obeyed for to go oute
 in to a place. which he was
 to takynge in to heritage.
 & he wente oute not wity
 ge. which he schulde go/ by
 fery he stelte in pe lond of
 azenbyheest. as in an ahen
 in hitl housis drelly.
 wip ysaac & iacob euene
 heres of pe same azenby
 heest/ sopely he abood a ty
 te hainynge foundementis.
 whos crafty man & maker
 is god/ by fery. & vilke sara
 bareyn. toke hitu in to con
 seymynge of seed. & he bisy
 des & wip outen pe tyme
 of age for nthe bylennyd hy
 trewe p had azen byhyte/

for pe which pynge of oon
and hy nyz deed men be borne
as sterris of heuene in mul-
titude & as grauel or ground
pat is at pe se syde vnom-
brable/ by fery alle yese be
deed pe azemblyheestis not
taken but yey biholdynge
hem aftur & geytynge wel
and knokblechynge/ for yey
ben pilgrymes & herbonde
men vpon pe erpe/ sovely
yey pat seyen yese pynge
signefien hem fye to seeke
a untwe/ & forsope if yey hadde
hadde mynde of pe ilke of pe which
che yey kenten oute/ sovely
yey haden tyme of turnynge
azem/ noly forsope yey desire
a better pat is to seeke heuene/ly
yfore god is not confounde
or shamed/ forso he clepde
pe god of hem/ forsope he ma-
de redye to hem a cyte/ by fery
abraham offide ysaac which
he was tempted/ & he offide
pe oon ligen/ pe which
had taken repromysioins
or azemblyheestis to whome
it was geuyn/ for in ysaac
seed shal he clepde to yey
demyngge for his deed men
god is myghty for to reyse hy

wher of toke he hym & in to
pable/ by fery of pynge to w-
myngge ysaac blessing iacob and
esaiu/ by fery iacob dyngge/ by
alle of pe sonys of ioseph bles-
sede & honoured pe kynges
of his zerde/ by fery ioseph dy-
ngge hadde mynde of pe passy-
ge fery of pe sonys of ysaac
& comanded of his baunys/
by fery yoyles boni was hyd
pre moneris of his fadir &
modir/ for pat yey sayen pe
yonge child faire/ & yey deed
ten not pe mandement of
pe kyng/ by fery yoyles mate
greet dempede hym for to be
pe sone of faroes dring ches-
se more fye to be timentide
yey pe pepul of god yame
fye to haue tyme of tempale
syme/ demynge pe reuof of
trist/ more richessis yame pe
tresoure of espyans/ forsope
he byhelde in to pe rethardys
ges by fery he forsole egypte
not shamyngge or dredynge
pe hardnesse of pe kyng/ for
sope he as ceyngge enstoy-
nete pe myghte/ by fery he
halowide pafte & in shedy-
ge of blood/ lest he yey
tymete pe fye pynge of

espycians schulde touche hem/
 by fey pei passiden pe rede see
 as by dyse lond. pe Whiche py
 des pe espycians alaynge we
 ren duonrids by fey pe Wallis
 of Jerto felden dñ by aipasse
 ze of ceuene dayes by fey
 raab hore pithide not wey
 conbileful me. the takinge or
 resseyuynge pe aspiers wey
 pees. And what zit schaly
 cepe. sopeh tyme schal faile
 me tellinge of iedon barac.
 campson ieste dauid & samuel
 & opez pphets. pe Whiche by
 fey ouercame relikes wron
 ten ryzt Wisnesse gatre repro
 myssions pey stoppiden pe
 moupes of hono. pey quenche
 du pe fersonesse of fier pey
 dryuen alwey pe egge of aler
 pey fonderen of sekens pey
 weren made stronge & batel/
 pey turneden pe castles or
castles of alhem. wyme res
 cyueden her dede of azeu. rish
 ze forsope oper ben holden
 forp or dede not takinge re
 dempcion. pat pei schulde
 prade better azeu. rishge/
 forsope oper Assmeden stor
 mynges & letynges more on
 & boondis & pphes pey were

stoned pey weren hit pei we
 rin temptid pey weren deed
 in chynge of alwerd pey
 wenten aboute in brok schy
 nes. & in schynies of greet ne
 dy angwistid. timentid. to
 Whiche pe world was not wor
 py pey errynge in weylder
 nessis in moniteynes and
 demes. & canes of erpe and
 alle pese pnyd by vntuessy
 ze of fey. toben not repro
 myssion. god pheyngre on
 better ymg for us. pat pey
 schulden not be fulfild.
 wynten us.

Herfore & we hanp
 ze so greet a trou
 de of witnessis put
 to wynt alwey al charge &
 synne stondinge aboute is
 by patience. rene to pe strif
 of fyt. pposide to us. bihol
 dinge in to pe maker of fey
 and cendere ihu. pe Whiche
 ioye pposide to hym suffer
 de pe crosse. confusio. dis
 pside. & cutey on pe ryte
 half of pe sete of god. for
 sope bypende ze on hym
 pat susteyned of such
 azeu. rishge of synfulme
 azemes hym self. pat ze
 ben not made wery falyge

in your Witte forsope ze azen
 to den not yet til to blood. fute
 ze azenes syme. & ze han for
 zete pe conforte pat spekep to
 you as to sones. serunge my
 sone wyl pon dyspise pe dysi
 phne of pe lord. neyr be pon
 made wey pe wshile y art
 chastid of hym forsope pe
 lord chastis hym pat he do
 ney forsope he stounges euery
 sone pat he resseyuey laste ze
 stille in dysiplyne. god offrey
 hym to you as to sones. sove
 by what sone is it wshome pe
 fadir schal not reppone or
 chastise. pat if ze ben oute
 of dysiplyne of wshiche alle
 ben made pceneris. pfore
 ze ben auoutrereis and not
 sones. asturward sovely we
 hadden fadir of oure flesche
 derueris. & we wry rendence
 drete he. wshere not myche
 more we schulen oberste to
 pe fadir of spirites. & we
 schulen lye. & per sovely
 in tyme of fewe dayes up
 here wille lerneden us. for
 sope pis fadir to pat pms
 pat is pfitable in resseyu
 se pe halebyng of hym
 forsope ethe dysiplyne in

mo pssent tyme is seyen trul
 for to be not of iope but of swete
 asturward forsope it schal zel
 & fruyt of rytynesse moost
 peisible to men excusid or han
tid by it for wshiche pynges
 reise ze up clon hondis. and
 lince conbouden & make ryt
 ful goynges. or steepe to ze
 feet. pat no man haltynge
 erre. brite more be heeld. one
 ze pees wry alle men i holy
 nesse. wry oute wshiche no ma
 schal see god faple to pe gre
 of god. by holdynge pat no
 man faple to pe grace of god.
 pat no rote of bithesse up
 warde burionynge lene. &
 byt many men ben defouled.
 pat no man be leasour or
 conholly or cur sid as esan. pe
 wshiche for oo mete selde ho
 fwrte pynges. sovely wite
 ze for & asturward he coney
 tynge for to an eryte blas
 finge. was repponyd forso
 pe he foond not place of
 penamce. pouz he sougte
 it wry teeris. forsope ze
 han not come to pe treta
 ble fier or able for to touche
 & able to come & greet wrynd
 or wshilebynd & myst &

tempeste & son of triumphe. &
 voice of wordis. pe which pey
 pat herden excuseden hem. if
 pe word shulde be made to he
 for sope pey bareu not pat p^t
 was seyde. & if addeest to uochid
 pe hyl. it schal be stomyd. &
 so dredeful it was pat p^t was
 seyde. wythes seide. I am afraid
 & ful of tremblyng. But ze
 han come up to syon hyl. &
 pe ate of god hyngge heuyl
 ierusalem. & pe multitude of
 manye poulande angelis. &
 to pe church of pe firste men.
 pe which ben writen in he
 uenes. & god domefman of alle
 in pe spirit of myst p^tite me.
 & to ihu mediator of pe newe
 testament. & pe spryngp^tre
 of blood. betur. spekyng pe
 Abel. se ze pat ze forsake not
 pe spekyng. for sope if pey
 forsakyng hym pat spat
 on pe erpe. astygeden not.
 myche more we pat euen
 allepe fro hym spekyng
 to us fro heuenes. whos.

for sope patme moned pe erpe. noll
 for sope he asenblyhet p^t sey
 mge. & it onys. & I schal mone
 not onely erpe. bute also he
 uene. for sope he pat setp^tit

onys. he declare pe t^tst
 aon of monable p^tnges.
 as of made p^tnges. pat po
 p^tnges dwellen pat ben vn
 monable.

And so we resseyne
 pe emdome couno
 uable han grate
 by which serue we plesmge
 to god wip drede & reuence.
 and for sope omre god is fier
 wastyng. pe charite of emper
 hede dwelle in zon. & mylze for
 zete hospitalite. for sope by his
 same plesiden to angelis. res
 ceyned to herboze. penkeze on
 bounden men. as ze to gudere
 bounden. & of trauncyng me.
 as & ze elf dwellyng in pe
 body. onofable weddyng in
 alle p^tnges. & conbenned.
 for sope god schal seme form
 catonnis. & amontrers. be
 maus. wip onte conentse.
 pained wip p^tsent p^tnges.
 sope he seide. I schal not
 leue pe. ney for sake so p^t
 we trisaly. sope pe lord is
 an help to me. I schal not
 drede. what aman schal do
 to me. haue ze mynde of
 zonne souereyn. pat han
 spoken to you pe word of god.

error

f

of whome ze bysholdynge pe
 soynge oute of bynynghe she
 pe forþ i ihu crist iustiday
 he am to worldis // myl ze
 be led alweye wip dynerse
 techynges & pte me or stran
 ze forsope it is best for to sta
 ble pe herte wip gracie not
 wip metis. pe whiche pte
 telen not to me standinge
 in hem we han an aue of pe
 whiche pei pat cerne to ta
 bernacle of pe body ha not
 polver for to ate forsope of
 whiche beestis pe blood is
 borne yn for synne to holi
 pmyes by pe bishop. pe
 bodyes of hem be brent
 wip oute castels for whi
 che pmy & ihu pat he sh
 ulde halwe pe peple by his
 blood suffride wip oute
 pe zate. yfore go we oute
 to hym wip out castels
 berynge his reprof or
henship sopele we han
 not here a cite dwelliche
 bute we ouen a cite to
 conynges yfore by hym
 offre we an oost of hery
 mge clemore to god. pat
 is to ceye pe print of
 synis knowlechynge to

his name // forsope myl ze for
 zete of wel doynge & zemyng
 & of conynges forsope by
 sicke oostis god is diffused
 & obere ze to zoure pnystis or
platis & ouerliche to hem
 pey ptele waken us to zel
 dynghe resoun for zoure soules
 pat pey do pis pmy wrope
 & not soe wynges forsope pis
 pmy spedp not to zoni pte
 ze for us sopele we tristen
 for we han good consience
 in alle pmyes wyllynges for
 to hve wel more oile forsope
 i byseche zoni for to do. pat
 i ve caner be restord to zoni
 sopele god of pees pat ladde
 oute fro deed men pe greet
 shepsherde of shepe in pe
 blood of eillastynge testamēt
 oure lord ihu crist. nshape
 or make able zoni in al good
 pmy. pat ze do pe wille of
 hym. he doynge in zour p
 pmy pat schal plese before
 hym by ihu crist to who
 is glorie in to worldis of
 worldis amen // forsope
 brysen y pte zoni. pat ze
 suffre a word of solace or
conforte forsope by ful
 felwe pmyes i hame write

to you! knowe ze oure biopir ty
mothe lēste. Wip wihome if
he schal come more hastly. 7
schal to you! zrete wel alle
zoure souereyns. 7 alle holy
men! pe brypen of ytake gre
ten you wel pe grace of god
Wip you alle amen.

Here endep pe epistlis of
poule 7 bishoppes pe ap
ostlis vdis

A



Or sope pou
theophil first
y made a ser
mon oz word
of alle pīges
pat ihe bīgan

for to do 7 teche. al in to pe day
in whiche he comaūdyng
to pe apostlis. by pe holi soft
whome he ches was taken
ap/ to whiche 7 he zane hy
self a lyue oz quyk astir his
passion in many argumē
tis oz preynges by fourty
dayes aperyng to hem. 7
opelinge of pe reuēme of god.
and hem etyng to gidere
comaūdyde to hem. pat pey
schulden not departe fro ie
rusalem. Gite pei schulden

abiden pe bishette of pe fadir.
pe whiche ze herden he seip
by my moute. for sope! Jon
baptisde in watur. Gite ze schu
len be baptisde in pe hooly
soft not astir pese mony day
es. // perfore pei pat camen
to godir asbeden hy sende/
lōd if in no tyne schalt
you restoren pe kyngdom
of irael. for sope he sende to
hem! It is not zoure to knowe
pe tymes oz momētis. pe whi
che pe fadir. hap putte in
his polver. Gite ze schulen
take pe overti of pe hooly
soft comyng fro aboue
in to you. 7 ze schulen bewit
ness to me in ierusalem
and in al Judee 7 samarye
and vnto pe uttermeste of
erpe. // And whenne he had
seyde pese pīges. hem so
yng he was hyste up 7 a
cloude resteynde hym fro
pe zen of hem! 7 whene
pey bishulden hy goyng
in to heuene. lo tīdo men
stoden my bīdis hem in
white clothes. pe whiche
7 senden men of galilee. whi
stonden ze byholdyng in
to heuene. so schal he come

as ze salven hym soynge into
 heuene/ þenne þey turneden
 aȝein to ierusalem. fro þe hul
 pat is cleped of bethete. þe
 whiche is biſchop of ierusalem
 haȝynge þe iourney of a sabbot
 And whenne þey haden entri
 d in to coupyng place. þey
 wenten up in to þe hysen þe
 gres where þei dwelten. þetre
 & ion james & andrew. philip
 & thomas. Bartholomew
 & mattheu james of alþhey
 and symonit zelotes. and
 judas of james. Alle þise
 weren dwellynges or laȝynges
 to god in preier. wip hym
 men & marie þe modur of
 ihu. & wip his bryſen. In
 þo daies þetre riſynge up
 in þe myddil of bryſeren
 caide. forsoþe þe was a chapa
 nne of men to gedre alynest
 an hundred & twenty men.
 bryſen it bihouep þe ſcrip
 ture to be fulfilled. Whiche
 þe holy goost biſore ſeyde
 by þe monye of damp of
 judas pat was leder of
 hem pat token ihu. þe
 whiche was nouȝt in
 wo. and gat þe gozt of his
 mynyſtre. & forsoþe þis

dwelte a ſeld of þe hyre of his
 kynges. & he honged to barſte
 þe myddil. & alle his entray
 les ben ſhed a brod. and it is
 made knowen to alle men dwel
 linge in ierlū. so pat ike ſelde
 was cleped acheldemac in þe
 langage of hem. pat is þe ſelde
 of blood. forsoþe it is iſcriben
 in þe boke of psalmes. þe habi
 tacioun of hym be made deſert.
 and be þnot pat dwelle mit.
 & anoy take þe biſhoppryde of
 hym. þfore it bihouep of þeſe
 me pat ben geterid to gedre
 wip us in al tyme in whiche
 þe lord ihu entride in & wente
 ourte amonge us. bigynnyng
 fro þe bapteme of ion. onto
 þe day in whiche he was ta
 ken up fro us. oon of þeſe
 for to be made a witnesse of
 his reſurrexioun. Wyp us/
 and þey ordyneden abo/so
 ſeph pat is y cleped barſabas
 pat is y named iuſtus & mattheu
 and þey þynge seiden. þon
 lord pat haſte knowen þe her
 tis of men þeſe whome
 þou haſte choſen of þise abo.
 oon for to taken þe place of
 þis mynyſtre & apoſtelhed
 of þe whiche judas tſpafed.

pat he schulde go in to his place
 & pey zauen lotus to hem & pe
 lotte fel on matthe and he was
 noubride to godur wip ellenene
 apostles. *z. f. 11.*

And wherme pe pente
 cost dayes pat is future
 weren fulfilla alle pe
 displic weren to gyde in pe sa
 me place & sodeynly p was ma
 de a soua fro henene as of a
 greet spirit comynge to &
 it fulfilla al pe hous where
 pey weren cutynge & tinges
 dyner self ptid as fyr appe
 riden to hem & it sate upo
 sche of hem & alle ben ful
 filled wip pe holy goost
 & pei ligune for to speke
 wip dyse langages as pe
 holy goft zaf to hem for to
 speke. *ffor sope p weren*
in ierusalem dwellynge is
 wes religionse men of vese
 nacioun pat is vnder heile
 sopeh pis voice made pe
 multitude come to gydere
 & in soule *or vnder stonpye*
was conformed or stonped
 for erhe man herde hem
 spekyng in his langage
 for sope alle me were asto
 nyde in here witt and

wondren sayng to godur
 wher not alle pest p spe
 ken ben galilees. & howe
 han we herde vese ma his
 langage in whiche we be
 borne parthy & medy &
 olampye & pey pat dwelle
 at mesopotanye iudea
 capodocie ponde & asie fri
 sie & pamphilie egpte &
 pe pties of syrie pat is
 abouten syrien & arhu
 zes romaynes & ieldis &
 pshites men of crete & of
 arabie we han herde hem
 spekyng in oure langa
 ges pe grete ymges of god
 for sope alle weren stonp
 ed in witt & wondren
 sayng what wole pis
 ymge be for sope of no
 nyden sayng for pei be
 ful of mist. *ffor sope pe*
tre stonpyng wip ellenene
reife his voice & opak
to hem / open ieldis & alle
pat dwellen at ierusalem
be pis ymge knowen to zoun
and wip eeris psequer
my wordis / sopeh not as
ze demen or zessen pule
ben drunken wherme it
is pe prude houre of pe

Day or Undurne. hute pis pis
 it is pat was orde by pe ap-
 phete jehel & it shal beu
 in pe laste dayes pe lord seip
 I shal helde oute of my spi-
 rit on al fleische & 3oe sones
 & zoure doughtis. schule aphe-
 re & zoure zonge men schi-
 len se on sounes. & zoure eld-
 res schi len dreme swenenes
 & lo sopely on my me fernau-
 tes. & on my hond maydenes.
 In po dayes y shal shede
 oute of my spirit & per schi-
 len apheare. & I shal zene
 greet wondris in heuene a-
 boue. & signes in erpe byne
 pe. blood & fyr & wapou-
 re of smoke. pe sone shal
 be turned in to derfnessis.
 and pe mone in to bloode.
 bfore pat pe grete & open
 day of pe lord schal come.
 And wche man who enere
 schal mellepe pe name of
 pe lord shal be saf. 3ee
 men of yrael herep pe se
 wordis. Jhu of nazareth
 a man pned of god & zou by
 stues or myracles. and.
 Wondres & tobenes. pe wchi-
 the god duide by hym in pe
 myddil of zou as ze witen.

hym pe counsaill dermyned &
 by pe pfluence of god bytalen
 by pe bondes of wicked men.
 ze turmentynge stoben. wcho
 god reisede pe soules of helle
 unbouiden. ny pat it was in
 possible hym for to be holde
 of it. // Sopely damp seip in to
 hym. I puruerede pe lord by
 fore me enlunge. for he is on
 my rythalf pat y be not mo-
 ued. for pis pms myn herie
 ropede & my tunge gladide. mo-
 re ouer & my fleische shal
 reste in hope. for pon shalt
 not forsake my soule in helle.
 ney pon shalt zene pyn holy
 for to se corruption. pon hast
 made knolven to me pe wayes
 of hif. pon shalt fulfille me
 in mynre wy py face. // gen
 bryden be it lesful boldly for
 to seie to zou of pe patriarche
 saund. for he is deed & buryed.
 and his sepulture it at n. til
 in to mo day. yfore wcheuene
 he was a apphete & wiste for
 wy an oop god hade sworne
 to hym. of pe fruyte of his
 lende for to sitten on hye
 seie. he puruerynge spae
 of pe resurrection of crist.
 for nery he is laste in helle.

not

nest his flesche seep corrupta
 oim. // God reised his Ihu to
 whome we alle ben witnessis/
 perfore he enharmes by pe
 ryte hond of god & by pe bihest
 of pe holy gost taken of pe fadir
 he shewde oure mis pat ze seen
 & heren/ forsope daup ascendid
 in to heuene forsope he seip/
 pe lord seide to my lord sitte on
 my rythhalf til y shal pinte
 vñ enmyes. pe stool of py
 feet yf ore mozte certeynly wi
 te al pe hous of irael for god
 reised hym lord & crist. mis
 ihu whome ze crucifieden/
 yese ymges herd. pei were
 compunt in herte/ & pei saide
 to petre & to ope apostles/
 open bryfen what shulde we
 do. petre forsope seip to he
 penaute he seip do ze & weche
 of zou be cristened. ipe name
 of ihu crist. in to remysshon
 of zoure synnes. & ze shulde
 taken pe ziftes of pe hooly
 goost/ forsope repromysshon
 is to zou & to zoure sones.
 and to alle pat ben fer. who
 eile pe lord oure god hap do
 pid to/ sopele wy of woude
 ful manye he witnesside to
 hem & monofide he seynge

we ze saued fro mis wycked
 generacoon for pei pat ressey
 uoden his wordes weren hap
 tised/ & in pat day ben pinte
 to. aboute pei poustand sonho
 Forsope pei weren lastige
 in techynge of pe apostlis
 & in communye of brecynge
 of bred & in pyeris forsope
 drede was made to soche sonle
 and many eignes & woundes
 weren don by pe apostles in
 ierlan & greet drede was i alle/
 Also alle men pat by leryden
 weren to gedre & alle ymges
 haden in comon/ pey solden
 possessouns & substaunces
 & departiden alle ymges to
 alle men acit was nede to
 weche/ forsope day by day pey
 lastyge to gedre in pe temple
 & brecynge breed abouten
 houses. token mete vñ gylt
 dynges & cymplenesse of her
 te. herynge to gedre god &
 harynge grate to al pe pe
 pul/ forsope pe lord enacheide
 hem pat weren made cas
 weche day in to pe same
 ymge.

H Forsope petre and
 jon streden in to
 pe temple. at pe

temple at pe nyne houre of
preynge/ & aman pat was
lame fro pe wounde of his mo-
dur was boren. Whome per put
tū vche day at zate of pe te-
ple pat is seide feir. pat he
schulde aske almes of men
entrynge in to pe temple/
pis Whenne he saw petre
& Jon bishpyngge for to entre
in to pe temple. fiede pat he
schulde taden almes/ forsope
petre Wip Jon bisholdynge
hym seide/ siluer & gold is
not to me. forsope pat pat
I haue I geue to pee/ In pe
name of ihu crist of nazareth.
rise pou & go/ & his rythond
taken he leste hym up/ & pe
plantes of solys of hy ben
saddid to gedre. & he lepyngge
rode & wandude/ & he entide
Wip hem in to pe temple.
Wandryngge & lepyngge & he
ryngge god/ & alpe pepul
seer hym Wallynge & heri-
pyngge god/ forsope per bewe
hym. for it was he pat satt
at almes at pe faure zate
of pe temple/ & per weren
fulfillede Wip wandryng
& extasi. pat is lesynge of
myde & rebon & letynge of t. an.

in pat pyns pat bifel to hy/
Sopely Whenne vey oeyen pe-
tre & Jon & al pe pepul ran
to hem at pe porche pat was
clepide of salamon. Wondryn
ge greetly/ forsope petre &
mge answerde to pe pepul/
oeyen of yrael What Wondre ze
in pis pyns or What lishol-
de ze us as by oure othe or
polber We maden pis for to
walk/ god of Abraham & god
of ysaac & god of iacob. god of
oure fadris hap glorified his
sone ihu Whome sopely ze
bitraciden & demyden bifore
pe face of pilate hy demyge
for to be dysmytad/ ze forsope
demyden pe holy & iust & ze
asteden a man sleer for to be
zouen to zou. forsope ze slawe
pe maker of hyf. Whom god
reised from deed/ Of Whom
We ben witnessis. and in pe
fery of his name he hap to-
fermed pis Whome ze seen
& han knowen/ pe name of
hym. & pe fery pat is by hy
zane pis ful helpe. in pe syne
of alle zon/ & now brysen
I wrote pat by conlityng
ze diden. as & zoure princes/
God forsope pat bifore tolde

by pe moupe of alle pphetis
his crist for to suffice fulfilled
soi vfore be ze repentante &
be ze comitide pat zoure spues
be don allewe // Whenne pe tyme
of kelynge & restraynyng stoc
pe site of pe lord schal come
and he schal oende hym pat
is noli schide to zou ihu crist //
Whome sepe it bihouey he
uene for to restoyne til m to
pe tymes of restitution of alle
ynges Whiche pe lord spak
by pe many of his holy p
phetis fro pe world for so pe
yonges seide for pe lord god
god schal raise to zou a pphete
of zoure brydour as meze schi
len here hym upon alle py
ges what eni he schal speke
to zou / forsope it schal be eny
coule pat schal not here pe
alle pphete schal be distrayn
ed of pe pepul / & alle pphetis
fro samuel & afturwarde p
spaken tolden vele dayes /
ze forsope ben pe sones of
pphetis. & of pe testament
pat god ordeyned to oure fa
dres sayunge to abraham In
py seed alle pe meynnes of
er pe schulen be blessed / god
reisyng his sone firste to
zou sente by blessing zou

pat vche man comite hym fro
his wickednesse ~
Forsope hem spekyng
to pe pepul prestis
and magistratus of pe
temple came upon & sadue
is coulyng pat pei schulde
teche pe pepul & tolden m to
ihu agerisyng fro deede
& pey leden hondis m to hem
and puttiden hem m to kapp
se til m to pe moerbe / Copely
it was noli enen / forsope mo
nye of hem pat shaden herte
pe word bylenyden / and pe
nombere of hem is made spue
pon stand // Forsope m pe
moerbe it is don pat pe prin
cis of hem & alder men &
tribis schulden be gedreid
m Jerlm. & annas prince
of pphes & cayphas & Jon &
Alsamudre & hon moupe eni
weren of pe kynde of pphes
and pey ordeynynge hem
pe myddil axiten In what
stue han ze to vis yng
vene petre fulfilled by
pe holy gost seide to hem /
ze princes of pe pepul &
elder men here ze if we to
say be demed m pe good w
de of a sele man m pe lish
the vis is made suf. beir
known to zou alle & to al

pe pepul of yrael for in pena
me of oure lord ihu crist of
nazareth. Whome ze wnafield
Whome god reised from ded
men In pis. pis man stondey
hool bifore zou/ pis is pe son
pe whiche was repreuede
of zou biildynge pe whiche
is made in to pe heued of pe
corner. & helpe is not in ony
opyn/ffor sope nesh of name
is vnder heuene zow to me
in pe whiche it bihouep us
feto be made saaf/ for sope
pey seeynge pe stidefastnes
of petre & Jon founden pat
pey weren men wip outen
lettis & ydiotes. wondre
& kneiben. for pei were wip
ihu & seynge pe man ston
dunge wip hem pat was
heeld. pey myzten no pis
aen sepe/ for sope pey com
amiden hem for to go soep
wip outen pe counseil. and
pey spaken to gedir seynge
what schulen we don to pe
se men. for sope pe figue
is made knollen by hym.
to alle men. Wollunge at
jerlm/ it is opyn & we mo
wn not dnyce/ Note pat it
be na more pypstshed in to

pe pepul manase we to hem
pat pey speke na more in pis
name to ony of men/ And pey
clepunge hem denouiden pat
on no maner pey schulde spe
ke ny teche in pe name of ihu
2 fforsope petre & Jon answere
rynge seiden to hem/ 3if it be
ryztful in pe eyte of god. for
to here zou raper peie god.
deme ze/ for sope we moiden
not. pe pmyges pat we han
seien & herd. not speke/ &
pey manassynge lysten her
not fyndynge hou pei schul
den pmysthe hem for pe pe
pul/ for alle men clarihebe
pat pmyge pat was don in
pat pmyge pat byfelle/ forso
pe pe man was more pane
of forty zenis in whome
pis figue of helpe was ma
de/ for sope pey last comen
to heru & tolden to hem. hou
manpe pmyges pe pmyces
& elder men seiden to her
pe whiche whenne pei her
den wip oon herte reise
doys to pe lord & seiden/
2 Lord pou pat madist heru
& erpe see & alle pmyges
pat ben in hem pe whiche
by pe holy gost by pe moup

of oure fadir dauid py child sei
dest. Wsh hepen men wraþeden
& peples pouzten weyn wises
þinges of pe erpe floten wry.
& princes comen to gedre in to
oon. azemes pe lord & azemes
his crist. for pey come to gader
verely in pis cite. azemes py
holy child ihu wshome pou
amoyntedest heronide & pouite
pilate Wsh hepen men & peples
of yrael. for to pe pinges pat
pyu hond & py counsaal deme
den for to be don. And nolle lord
biholde in to pe pretynses of
hem. & zene to py churche
Wsh al trist for to speke py
word. in pat pms pat pou
holde for pyu hond. helþes
& origines & wondres for to be
made by pe name of py holy
sone ihu. And wshere pe ha
den preied. pe place was me
nyd in pe wshiche pey were
sederide. & alle ben fulfilled
Wsh pe holy gost. & spake pe
word of god wsh trist. for
þope of pe multitude of me
biþerþe per was oon herte
and oo soule nery ony man
ceide ony pms of po pinges
pat he wolde for to be hys
owne. bote alle pinges were

comon to hem. And Wsh swet
vertu pe apostlis zolden Wsh
nessynge of pe azemurynge
of ihu crist oure lord. & greet
swace was in hem alle. for
þope nery ony nedþ man
was amonge hem. for hou
many eide weren possessoures
of feldis or houses. pey sil
lynge bouzten to. pe pris of
po pinges pat pey solden. &
puttiden bifore pe feet of a
postlis. for þope pei deþide to
wche as it was nede to uche.
for þope Joseph pat is named
barnabas of pe apostlis pat
is myþide pe sone of confort.
a delene of pe kynde of cypre
wshenne he hade a feld. þe
it. & bronzte to pe prys &
puttide bifore pe feet of ap
ostlis.

The Dr þope a man ana
mye by name. Wsh
saphira his wyf.
solde a feld & defraudide of
pe pris his wyf. gulty. and
he byryngynge en part put
tude it bifore pe feet of pe
apostlis. for þope petre seide.
anamy wsh hay sathanas
temptide pyu herte. þee for
to. þee to pe holy gost. & for

to defraude of pe pris of pe
felde. wher it dwellyng dwelt
not to pee. & it sold was in
vy posses. Why hast thou
putte vns ymng in vy herte.
yon hast not lhad to me hote
to god/ forsope ananye he
rynge pese wordis. fel don.
& dyede/ & greet drede was
made in to alle pat herde/
forsope zonge me risynge
meneden hy alweye. and
berynge oute burieden/
forsope þ was made as pe
spate of pre houres. And
pe wyf of hy not knowys
pat ymng pat was don.
entride in/ forsope petre
answerde to hire/ woma
cepe to me if ze solden pe
felde fro so myche. & nhe
seide zee so myche/ forsope
petre seide to hire/ what
sopehy come to gedir to
zon. for to tempte pe spi
rit of pe lord. loo pe feet
of hem pat hau buriede
ym husbond at pe doze.
& pey schulen here pee
oute/ anon nhe fel don
at his feet & dyede/ for
sope pe zonge me entryge
foinden hir deed. & pey

gaven hir oute & buryeden
to hire husbonde/ & gret de
de is made in al pe chyrche
& in to alle pat herden pese
ymnges. & forsope hy pe hou
des of aposthis signes and
mony woundes were made
in pe pepul & alle weren
to gedir in pe porche of sa
lamm/ forsope no man of
oper dwiste joyne hy self
wip hem/ bute pe pepule
maguefieden hem/ forsope
pe unklitude of men & wy
men by lerynge in pe lord
was more encreside. so pat
in to strens pey brounzen
oute seke men & putte
in to litel beddis & couches.
pat petre comynge namelz
pe schadowe of hym. schul
de schadowe coche of hem.
& pey weren deliuered
fro al sekenesse/ forsope
pe unklitude my to Jerlm
ruine bryngynge to seke me
& traueled of unclene spi
ritus. pe whiche were helde
alle// forsope pe prynce
of pthis risynge & alle pat
weren wip hym. pat is
pe heresie of saducis ben
fulfildde wip enyge and

seyden hondis in to pe apostho
and putiden hem in comon
sipynges/ forsope pe amgel
of pe heid by nyht openyge
pe zate of pe prisoun & ledy
se hem oute seide/ So ze
æze stondynge spekyng in pe
temple to pe pepul alle pe
wordis of yis hys/ pe whiche
weheme pey haden herde en
triden erly in to pe temple
& taryng/ forsope pe prin
ce of phtis comyge & pei
weren wip hym. clapyden
to godur pe counseil of alle
pe elder men of pe sonce
of yrael. & senten to pe p
soun pat pei schulden be
brougte forp/ Godely wehene
pe mynystres comen & pe
prisoun openyd founde he
not pei turnyd agem told
saynge/ forsope we fonde
pe prisoun schit wip al di
ligence. & pe heper stondy
ge at pe zates/ forsope we
openyngge founden no ma
nyne. Godely as pe ma
iestatis of pe temple &
pe princes of phtis herde
yese wordis pei douriden
of hem what schulde be
don/ forsope en man comy

ge to tolde to hem. for lo
po men weheme ze han
pute in to pssoun ben i
pe temple stondynge &
techyng pe pepul yene
pe gagestrate wente wip
pe mynystres. & brougten
hem to wip oute strengpe
forsope pei dreden pe pepul
lest pei schulden be sto
mpd to depe/ And wehene
pei haden brougte hem to
pei ordyneden in pe coun
cil/ and pe prince of phtis
axide hem saynge/ In w
mamyngge we coman
diden zon. pat ze schulde
not teche in yis name/
& lo ze han fulfyllde ieru
salem wip zoure techyng
and ze wolen bringen in
on us pe blood of yis ma/
forsope petre answeryge
& pe apostho seiden/ It
bysouep for to obere to god
more yeme to me.// God
of oure faders reised ihu
weheme ze slowen hongy
ge in a tree/ god enhau
side wip his rythonde
yis prince & sayoure
for to zoure penance to
yrael. & remysseoun of

synnes / & we ben witnessis
 of þese wordes. & þe holy
 gost Whome god sendeþ to
 alle oberhynges to hym /
 Whanne þey herden þese
 ymges þey were cnyde
 & pouyten for to slen hy /
 & forsope eu man ryfþ
 se in þe conseil a phari
 se gamaliel by name a
 doctour of þe lawe a wor
 shipful man to al þe pe
 pul. comaundide men for
 to be made wyoute forþ
 to a shorte tyme & he seide
 to hem / ze men of yrael ta
 kyng tent to your self ou þe
 se men What ze ben to to
 ynde / forsope bifore þese
 dayes Theodas was seyn
 se hy self for to be for
 man / to Whome a nombre
 of men consentide. aboute
 foure hundred / þe Whiche
 is slayn & alle Who eise
 hylenyden to hym ben dis
 pplyd. & brougte to nouz
 te / After þis Judas gali
 lee was in þe dayes of
 ppossession & turnyde a
 wepe þe pepul after hy
 And alle þou mange eise
 considen to hym ben sta

terke & he perystide / And
 now soþely y seie to zow
 departe ze from þese men
 & suffre ze hem / for if it be
 of men. þis conseil or
 werk. it schal be vnydo
 forsope if it is of god
 ze moun not vnto hem /
 bute suffre ze hem lest
 þe panentis & ze ben forde
 to repynne to god // for
 sope þey consentiden to hym /
 & þey clepyng to syder þe
 apostles. denounshiden to he
 boten. pat þey schulde no mo
 ze speken in þe name of ihu
 & lasten hem / And soþely
 þey wenten wynges fro þe
 cite of þe conseil for þey
 ben had wepy for to suffre
 dispysyng for þe name of
 ihu forsope etche day þey
 residen not in þe temple
 & aboute houses techyng
 and euangelizyng ihu crist /
Forsope in þis tyme
 þe nombre of dis
 ples was wryngge. grete
 chynge of grekis is made
 azeines hebrewes for pat
 þe wrynges of hem were
 dispysed in eu dayes my
 nystrynges / forsope þe

theselue clepyng to gedw. pe
 multitude of disciples saken/
 It is not euen þus us forto
 forsake pe word of god & fle
 to mynystre to hors. where
 lrypen biholde ze me of zon
 of good witneslynges. stene
 ful of pe holy gost & wisdom.
 Whome we schuld ordeyne
 on þis werld forsope we
 schulen be by to preier.
 & mynystr of pe word. &
 pe word pleside to al pe mul-
 titude. & þey chesiden Ste-
 uene a man ful of feip &
 pe holy gost. & philip and
 pchor & richamoz and
 thimon & pnam and
 mychol a gest. Antiochene.
 2 þey ordeyneden þus by
 fore pe crizte of apostles.
 & þey preyngge putte pe
 hondes to hem. and pe word
 of pe lord waxide. & pe
 nombre of disciples ierlū
 was multiplied myche. al
 so myche awpange of þis
 obiereden to pe feip. Ste-
 uene ful of grace & streng-
 pe made wondus & grette
 tokenes in pe pepul. for so
 pe some risen of pe syna-
 soge. þat was clepide of

liberynes & cryuense & of
 men of alisaundre & of hem
 þat weren of alie & alie
 dysprynges. þey stene
 and þey myzten not wep-
 stonde to pe wylsam &
 spirit þat spak penne. va
 þey pruely senten men
 þat schulden seie hem to
 han herd hym seyngge
 wordes of blaspemye
 in to godes & god. And so
 þey moneden to gedw. pe
 pepul & elder men & scribis.
 & þey remyngge to gedw.
 ranythiden hym & brong-
 ten to in to pe counsail. &
 þey ordeyneden falshe wit-
 nessis seyngge. þis man
 cesey not for to speke wor-
 des. agenes pe holy place
 & latte. forsope we herde
 hym seyngge. for þis is
 of nazareth. schal dystur-
 þis place. & schal change
 tradicounes. pe whiche
 moyses bitoke to us. and
 alle men þat eaten in
 pe counsail. bihold þe
 hym calen pe face of
 hym as pe face of an
 aingel. forsope pe pnce
 of prestis seide to stene.

36
faderis & pe ben tussitude in to
sychem/ & ben putte in pe so
pulture pat abraham bougte
by prys of siluer of pe sonce
of emor pe sone of sychem/
fforlope whenne pe tyme of
bischop came myz pe wchuche
god hadde knowleschide to abra
ham pe pepul woze & was
multiplied in egypte al anop
kyng roos in egypte pe wchuche
knew not Joseph/ vis byge
lyng oure pepul timentide
oure faderis pat pe schulde
putten oute hire iuse childre
leste pey weren gnykened/ In
pe same tyme moyses was
bogen/ & he was acceptid of
god/ & he was iuristhede
pe moneris in pe hous of
his fadir/ fforlope hy putte
oute pe donzter of pharao.
tak hy m up/ & nozsthide
hy in to a sone to hy/ And
moyses was lered in al pe
wisdam of egyptians/ & he
was myzt in his wordis
& in werkis/ fforlope whe
ne pe tyme of twenty zeer
was fulfilled to hym/ it sty
zed up in to his herte pat
he schulde visiten his bry
veren pe sonce of yrael/

And whenne he sallyz amon
suffrynge wrong/ he deu
side hym & dide veniande
to hym pat suffride wrong
pe egyptian schyn/ fforlope
he sesside bruperen for to
condemne/ for god by pe
hond of hy schulde zeue
to hem helpe/ wote pey
vnderstoden not/ fforlope
in pe day synge he app
ride to hem chidinge/ & he
reconselede he in pees
saynge/ men ze ben bry
den/ wcherto nupe ze ethe
oper/ fforlope he pat dide
wrong to his negebore
putte hym alwey cony
se/ who odaynede pee
prince & domesman on
us/ wchepou wolt olee
me/ as ysturday p' kille
dist pe egyptian/ fforlope
in vis word moyses flez/
& was made a ciling in
pe lond of madian/ where
he gendide tibo sonce/ &
fourty zeer fulfilled an an
gel apperde to hym in
fuyr of flamine of a bus
she in desert of pe mount
of syna/ fforlope moyses
seyng wondade pe sizzt

& hym comynge to. pat
 he schulde biholde. pe soue
 of pe lord is made to hym
 saynge. I am god of youre
 fadris. god of Abraham.
 god of ysaac. god of iacob.
 moyses gaad tremblinge
 durste not biholde. fersope
 god orde to hym. conbynde
 pe stho of yf feet. for pe
 place in welthe von ston
 dist is holy erpe. I sepe
 sayz pe affluuon of my
 pepul pat is in egypt. &
 I herde pe mourmyng of
 hem. & I came don for to
 deliuer hem. & uolt come y
 and I schal sende pee in to
 egypt. pis moyses welthe
 per demeden saynge. welthe
 ordeyned. pe prince & dimes
 man on vs. god sente pis
 prince & ageynher wep
 pe hond of pe aimgel pat
 apperde to hym in pe bush.
 pis ledde hem oute dnyge
 wondres & signes in pe
 lond of egypt. & in pe rede
 see. & in desert fortyze
 ris. pis is moyses. p. p.
 de to pe stones of yrael.
 god schal reyse to zon a
 apstere of youre briper.

as me ze schulen here he
 pis is pat was in pe chir
 che in welthe nisse wep pe
 aimgel pat spae to hy in
 pe mount of cyna. & wep
 oure fadris. pe welthe to be
 wordis of luf. for to zene to
 us. to welthe oure fadris
 wolde not obere but put
 taden hy alweye in hne. her
 tes in to egypt saynge to
 aaron. make pou to us god
 dis. pat schulen go by fore
 us. fersope to pis moyses
 pat ladde us oute of pe lond
 of egypt. we witen not
 what is don to hym. & pey
 maden a calf in vo dayes.
 & offriden an hooft to pe
 symylare. & pey gladiu
 in pe werkes of hne hon
 des. fersope god turnede
 & bytold hem for to serue
 to pe kyngthod of henene
 as it is witen in pe boke
 of apstere. welthe ze offrid
 to me slayn carifies
 fortyze ris in desert. ze
 sons of yrael. & ze han
 taken pe tabernacle of
 mold. & pe sterre of 300
 god remfitt. figures pat
 ze han made for to wor schipe

hem/ & I schal translate you in
to Babylone/ pe tabernacle
of witnessinge was wrytten oure
faders in desert as god dispo-
sede to hem spekyng to god
so pat he schulde make it
up pe former pat he sayd/
pe which & oure faders
takynge wrytten. Bronzeten
in to possession of hepen
men. pe which god putte
de alweye fro pe face of o^o
faders. til in pe dayes of
sauid pat fonde grace a-
uentis god. & axed pat he
schulde fynde a taberna-
cle to god of iacob/ Salamo
forsope bilde an hous to
hy bote pe hye dwelley not
in made ymges by hond.
as he sey by pe pphete/
heuen is a seete to me/ so er-
ve sope pe stol of my feet/
What hous schulen ze brynde
to me sey pe lord. or which
is pe place of my restynge.
Wher myn hond made not
alle pe ymges. Wrytten hard
not & vncertaine hertes
& eeres ze wryttonen euer
more pe holy gost/ as & zoure
faders. so & ze/ whome of pe
pphetis han not zo^e faders.

pursued. & han slayn he
pat bifore tolden of pe comy-
se of pe inst. Whos traitors
& mansteers ze weren
uolw. pe which tofen pe
lawe in ordinaunce of au-
gelo & han not kept. for
lope pey herynge yuse
ymges. Were dursely tur-
mentid in hure hertes. &
gnaftiden in to hym/ for
rope whome. Swen was
fulfildde of so holy gost
he biholdynge in to heuen
callz pe glorie of god. &
ihc stoundynge on pe ryt
half of pe chur of god/ and
he sey/ Lo y see heuenes
openyd. & pe sone of man
stoundynge on pe rythalf
of pe chur of god/ forsope
pey crynge wrytten gret noys
helden to god p eeres. &
maden to god a saute or
fermes in to hym/ And
pey castynge hym oute
of pe cite stoned/ and
pe witnessis diden of her
clopes bides pe feet of
a zonge man. pat was
clepde saul/ And pey
stoneden stenene. wryt-
tynge & seynge/ Lord

cat

ihu resteyne my spirit/ for
 sove pe thees putte he crye
 ede wip greet vois seyn-
 ge/ lord sette not to hem
 his synne/ for pei witen
 not what pey don/ and
 whether he hadde sende mo
 pyng he clepte in pe lord
 forsope saul was confu-
 syng to his depth/

Forsope greet p^{re}sen-
 tacioun was made in pat
 day in pe church of
 was in ierlm/ & alle men
 weren stateride by pe ciues
 of Jude & samarie outaken
 apostles/ forsope men drede
 ful biweden steuen & made
 greet moutynge on hym/
 forsope saul distructed greth
 pe church entynge by hou-
 ses dralynge men & wyne
 broke in to lippynge/ per
 fore pei pat were stateride
 palshiden for euangelysse
 pe word of god/ forsope
 philip comynge down in to
 a citee of samarie p^{re}side
 to hem crist/ forsope pe ci-
 tinges zane tent to p^{re}se
 p^{re}ses pat weren leyde of
 philip to gedre herynge &
 seynge pe signes pat he

And/ forsope manye of he
 pat hadden vncleue spirites
 crynge wip greet vois we-
 ten oute/ forsope manye se-
 ke in palestie & croked ben he
 lide/ p^{re}fore gret ioye is made
 in pat citee/ forsope pere
 was aman symon by na-
 me pe whiche forsope was
 in pat citee a wiche distey-
 nyng pe folke of samarie
 seynge hy self to be sum
 gret man/ to whome alle
 herkeneden from pe leste
 til to pe moste seynge/ pis
 is pe w^{or}th of god/ pe whiche
 is clepid greet/ forsope alle
 by helden hym for his p^{re}g-
 pat myche tyme he hade
 made hem mad wip his
 w^{or}thynge/ Godely whiche
 pey hadden bylenyd to philip
 euangelizinge of pe kyngda-
 of god/ in pe name of ihu
 crist me & wy men weren
 baptised/ peie symonit
 & he bylenyd/ And whene
 he was baptised/ he clepyd
 to philip/ he seynge also sig-
 nes & moste o^unes for to
 be made dredynge wondre/
 forsope whene pe apostles
 pat weren at ierlm haden

herd for sumarie resteyuede
 pe word of god. pei senten
 to hem petre & ion/ pe whi
 che wherme pei came priede
 for hem. pat pei schulden
 resteyue pe holy gost/ for
 sope not yet he came in to
 omg of hem/ bote pei were
 baptged oneh in pe name
 of pe lord ihu/ penne pey
 putiden hondis on hem/
 & pey resteyueden pe holy
 goost. ffor sope wherme
 Symont hade seyen. for
 pe holy gost was zouen
 by puttynge to of pe hond
 of apostlis. he offride to
 hy monee seyng/ zeue
 ze to me & pis polber. pat
 to wherme ende I schal putte
 on hondes. he resteyued
 pe holy gost/ for sope petre
 sende to hym/ py monee
 he whip pee in to pdiaon/
 for pou selledst pe zifte of
 god for to be had by monee
 pt is not to pee ney fort/
 in pis word/ for py herte
 is not ryztful byfore god/
 and so do pou penance
 for pis py wickidnesse/
 & prey god. zif pauente
 pis pouzte of pm herte

be forzenen to pee/ for sope
 in galle of butnesse. & bound
 of wickidnesse y see pee
 for to be/ for sope Symon
 and werynge seide pleze
 for me to pe lord. pat no
 pring of pulse. pat ze han
 sende come on me/ And
 pei witnesstye & speky
 ze pe word of pe lord ze
 den azem to ierlm. & ena
 selgeden to mony citrees
 of samaritams. ffor sope
 an engel of pe lord spak
 to philip seyng/ Ryse
 pou & go azemes pe soup
 to pe wey pat goy wil
 fro ierlm in to Gazam.
 pis is desert weye. & he
 risyng/ wente forp/ & lo
 a man of ethiopie a myrty
 zeldyng of pe quene cau
 dace of ethiopie/ pe whi
 che was opou alle hire
 richellis came forp to wa
 nshipe in ierlm/ And he
 turnede azem sittynge on
 his chare & redyng ysaie
 pe pphete/ for sope pe sm
 rit sende to philip/ Come
 to & royne pee to pis chare/
 for sope philip renmyge to
 herd hy redyge ysaie pe

phete. & he seide/ Gesses
 you. Wher you vnderston
 dist. What pinges you re
 dist. pe. Whiche seip/ And
 hou may I. if eu ma shal
 not shewe to me & he pned
 philip pat he shulde stye
 op & sette wyf hy forso
 pe place of scripture pat
 he redde was pis/ as a
 shepe to sleynge he was
 lad/ & as a lomb bifore ama
 sherynge hym is donbe
 wy outen voice/ so he ope
 ned not his moupe/ in
 mekenesse/ his dome is ta
 ken up/ Who shal tellen
 oute pe genarion of hy
 for his lif schal be taken
 awaye fro pe erpe/ forso
 pe pe zeldynge an swer
 ynge to philip seide/ I
 bifetche pee of what pro
 phete seip he pis ping
 of hy or of omy op. for
 sope philip openyge his
 monpe & bisynynge at
 pis scripture enangel
 ized to hym ihu/ & while
 pey wenten. by pe wey
 pei comen to eu watir/
 & pe zeldynge seip/ lo
 Watir. Who forbedey me

for to be baptyzed. forsope phi
 lip seide/ if you bileuete
 of al yme herte. it is ful/
 & he answerynge seip/ I
 bileue pe sone of god for to
 be ihu/ & he comaundde pe
 chare for to stonde/ & pei we
 ten down bope in to re watir
 philip & pe zeldynge/ & he
 baptised hym/ forsope while
 he stode op of pe watir. pe
 spirit of re lous ranyshide
 philip/ & pe zeldynge se
 hym na more/ forsope he we
 te iornynge by his wey/ for
 sope philip is foundeu in
 azarho. & he passynge forp
 enyngelizede to alle citres.
 til he came to cesarie. //

Saul hit a brep of ma
 nasses. & betynge in
 to dysciples of re lord
 came nyz to re pnce of sy
 tis. & ayde of hy epistlis
 in to damaske to synago
 ges/ pat if he fond omy
 men or wyemen of ppa
 lly he shulde leden abou
 te bounden to ierlm/ And
 Whenne he made iornynge
 it bifel pat he come nyz
 to damaske & sodeynly hy
 te fro heuene shon aboute

baptisid/ And Wherme he
 hade taken meto he was
 confortide/ forsope he was
 wip pe disciples pat were
 at damasc by en dayes/
 & anon he entrynge into
 pe synagoges pchide pe
 lord ihu/ for pis is pe sone
 of god/ forsope alle men
 pat herden hy wondred
 & souden/ Wher pis is not
 pat in pgnede in ierlm
 hem pat misleiden pis
 name/ & hidur to pis pis
 he came pat he schulde
 led hem bounden to pe
 prynces of ptes/ forsope
 saul myche more were
 stronge & confondide pe
 ielke pat welliden at
 damasc affermyngge for
 pis is crist/ forsope we
 ne many dayes weren
 fulfild ielkes maden
 a comfel pat pei schul
 den see hym/ forsope
 pe apries of hem ben
 made knollen to saul/
 forsope pei kepte & pe
 zates day & myzt pat
 pei schulden see hym
 forsope his disciples ta
 lunge hym in myzt by

pe Wal lasten hy sende
 don in a lep forsope we
 he came in to ierlm he temp
 ted & assaiede for to jorne
 hy to pe disciples & alledred
 den hym not bylunge pat
 he was a disciple/ forsope
 barnabas ledde hy taken to
 pe apostles/ & tolde to he
 hon pat in pe lye he hade
 sene pe lord/ & for he spak
 to hym/ & hon in damasc
 he dude trisaly in pe name
 of ihu/ & he was wip he
 entrynge & goynge oute to
 ierusalem doynge trisaly
 pe name of pe lord/ & he
 spak to hepen men and
 aspunde wip greekes/ for
 sope pei souzten for to se
 hym/ pe wiche pyng
 wherme benen hade kno
 wen pei ladden hy myzt
 to cesarie & lasten to thar
 his/ sope pe churche by
 al iudee & galilee & sama
 rie had pes/ & was edified
 walpyngge in drede of pe
 lord/ & was fulfild wip
 pe conforte of pe holy gost/
 forsope it is made pat
 petre while pat he pass
 de alle came to pe hooly

men pat dwellden at lode/
 forsope he found þe cū mā.
 eneas by name. fro engte ze
 res. liggynge in bed. þe wch
 che was seck in paleseye/
 & petre seip to hy/eneas.
 þe lord ihu crist hole pec/
 Eys pou & dresse to pecc/
 anone he ros & alle men
 pat dwellden at lode &
 sarone senen hym. þe wch
 che ben comited to þe lord/
 forsope in ioye. was sū
 disaplesse by name tabna.
 þe wchuche mīprend is
 seid dorcās. þis was ful
 of gode werkes & almes
 dedis pat thew duide. for
 sope it is maad in vo day
 es pat the made seck ded/
 þe wchuche wchene þey
 haden waschen þei put
 tiden hire in a conpyge
 place. forsope wchene
 loda was mīz fro ioye.
 disaplis herynge. for pe
 tre was in it. sente albo
 men to hy prenyng. &
 pou tane not to come
 to us. Sopely petre ry/
 finge up came wchp
 hem. & wchene he came
 þei ladden hy in to pe

conpyng place. And alle
 þe wchelles soden abou
 ten hy wchpyng & schell
 ynge cotes & clothes. þe wch
 che dorcās made to hem/
 forsope alle mē cast out
 wch oute for petre put
 tynge þe lencas to ppede/
 & he turned to þe body
 sende. Tabita rise pou
 in þe name of oure lord
 ihu crist. And the ope
 mid þe zen. & petre seid
 the sate up ageme. for
 sope he zenyge to hire
 þe hond raised hire. And
 wchene he had clepede
 holy men & widues he
 assigned hire quyl. for
 sope it is made knowe
 by al ioye & þey byle
 upden in þe lord. forsope
 it is made pat manye
 dayes he dwelld in
 ioye at Symon cū.
 Curionre.

Forsope cū man
 was in asane.
 by name Dorneh
 centurio. of þe adpante
 of Enghes. pat is seide
 of ytalie. a religious
 man & dreyng þe

lord. Say al his mynne
 dyngge manye almes to
 pe popul. & prynge pe
 lord enynore/ pis deap in
 a vision openly as in pe
 nyngge houre or none. an
 angel of god entrynge
 i to hy. & conynge to hy/
 Iacobine. & he by holdynge
 hym taken wyf dede seide
 Who art thou lord. forsope he
 sende to hym/ py pheris &
 pin almes dedes han stede
 op in to myde in pe cyrte
 of pe lord/ & now sende me
 in to joppe. & clepe aman
 Symout wat is namede
 petre/ mo is her baride at
 a man Symout Curior.
 Whos hous is bysides pe
 see/ mo shal seie to pee
 What it by honer pe ferto
 d/ And Wherme pe aim
 zel vat opak to hy hade
 son ally. he clepde also
 his holy men. & a knyzt
 dedynge pe lord. of hem
 pat oberstiden to hym/
 to Whome Wherme he had
 tolde alle pmyges. he sen
 te hem in to joppe. for
 sope on pe day conynge
 he makyge journey and

newynge to pe atre. petre
 styed up in to pe hye pyges
 of pe hons pat he shulde
 prece aboute pe cyrte houre
 And Whene he byngred. he
 wolde taste or ete forsope
 hera makynge redy an
 excelle of soule. or ransel
chynge of spirit sel on
 hym/ & he say here ope
 myde & a vessel conynge
 down as a grete rhere w/
 foure cordes for to be sent
 down fro henene i to erpe.
 in pe Whiche Weran alle
 foure foted bestes & crep
 ze pmyges of erpe. & vola
 tiles of henene & a voye
 is made to hym/ Eysle pe
 tre cle & ete/ forsope petre
 seip/ lord fer be it frome
 for y neide eet al conyn
 pmyg & vncleue/ & este pe
 secounde tyme pe vois to
 hy/ pat pmyg vat god hap
 cleused. pou schalt not
 see vncleue/ forsope pis
 pmyg is du by pries/ &
 anone pe vessel is restey
 ned in to henene. And pe
 While petre Wyf ynnue
 hy self dountide What pe
 vision was pat he seey

loo pe men pat Werē sente
 fro Dornelie geſynge pe hous
 of Symon. ſoden ny; at pe
 zate/ & Wherū pey haden
 clepde/ pey axiden yf Cy
 mon pat Was named petre
 hade pe herboze/ fforſope pe
 tre penſynge on pe mhou
 a ſpurit ceide to hy/ loo
 pe men ſechen pee/ & ſo ry
 ſe pou & ſo don & ſo Wyp
 hem. no ymg douting for
 I ſente hem/ He ſope pe
 tre comyge don ceide/ I am
 Whome ze oſehen/ What is
 pe cauſe for Whiche ze han
 comē. pe Whiche ſeiden/
 Corneliū centurio a iuſt mā
 & dredynge god/ & hanynge
 Witneſſynge of pe folke of
 ielkes. to be anſwere of an
 holy anngel. for to clepe pee
 in to his hous. & forto here
 Wordes of pee/ pfore he
 ledynge hem Wip yme
 reſteynede in herboze/ for
 ſope in pe day cnyngge he
 riſynge Wente forp Wip
 hem/ & Come of bypen
 fro Ioppe ſolekede hym/
 pat pey be Witneſſes to
 petre. fforſope anoy day
 he entride in to ceſarie/

forſope Dornelie a bood he
 his coſynes & neceſſarye
 frendes clepid to gedur/
 And it is don Wherū pe
 tre hade entride. Dornelie
 come metynge hym & fal
 luyng dū at his feet. he
 Weſthipped hym/ Petre ſo
 poly reuled hy cnyngge/
 Eys & I my clyt am amā
 as & pou/ and he ſpekyge
 Wip hym entride in and
 fond many pat comen to
 gedur/ & he ceide to hem/
 ze Witen hou abſhonna
 ble it is to aman jelſ for
 to be joyned or to come to
 an alien/ Note god ſkel
 id to me no man to ſeie a
 man comon or onclene/
 for Whiche I clepde came
 pfore I axe you for What
 cauſe han ze clepde me.
 & corneliū ſey. fro pe four
 pe day paſſid til to his
 houre. I faſtynge Was
 preyngge in pe ſlympe
 houre in my houſe. And
 lo a man ſode before me
 in a White cloy. & ſey/
 Corneliū py preyere is
 herde & yme almes dedes
 ben in mynde i pe ſyte

of god/ perfore sende in to jop
 pe & clepe symon pat is
 named petre. his is her bar
 ed in pe hous of symonunt. Tu
 rioure. bifides pe see/ his we
 he schal come. schal speke to
 pee/ pfore anone & sente to pe.
 & you duded wel in comynge
 to us/ (xv) pfore we alle ben
 pzent in vy cyzt for to here
 pe wordes what eile ben to
 maundide to pee of pe lord/
 fforsope petre apemyng
 his mony sende/ In treupe
 I hane founden/ for god is not
 accepto of psones lote in
 oche folke he pat drede god
 & worchep ryztfulnesse is
 accepto to hym/ God sente
 a word to pe sones of isrl n
 helyngge pees by ihu crist
 his is god of alle men/ ze

h we pe word pat is ma
 de by alle Jude/ fforsope
 bigymyng at galilee afte
 re baptem pat Jon pthid
 ihu of nazareth. hou god
 anoynted hy wip pe holy
 soft & ome pe weiche
 purz passide in wel doynge
 & helyngge alle me oppside
 of pe demyl for god was
 wip hy/ And we ben wit

nessis of alle ynges pe wsh
 che he duide in pe citie of ierl
 es & ierlm. wshome pei ston
 en hongynge in a tre/ god rei
 soide mo i pe rydde day. &
 zaf hy for to be made kno
 not to oche pepul bow to
 witnessis bifore ordeynede
 to us pat eeten & drunke
 wip hy afte p he ros azen
 fro ded me. And he coman
 side to us for to pthe to pe
 pepul & for to witnesse.
 for he pat is ordeynede of
 god dmes man of quyl &
 ded/ to vis alle pphets
 bere witnessse. alle me p
 bylene i to hy for to restoy
 ue remysshon of oymnes
 by his name. zet petre
 epelyngge pnt wordes. pe
 holy goost fel on alle pat
 herden pe word/ & pe fup
 ful or often me of curia
 sioun wondriden p came
 wip petre. for & i to na
 tiones pe holy goost is sches
 oute/ fforsope pey herden
 he epelyngge wip tinges
 or langages & magnesty
 nge god/ pene petre an
 swered/ wsher omny man
 may forbede wat p pese

be not baptised/ pat han vel
ceyned/ pe holi gost as a we-
e he comannde he for to bap-
tized in pe name of pe lord
ihū crist/ pe ne pey pleden
hy pat he schulde dwelle
wip hem fūme dayes. **L^{xx}**

For sope pe apostoles
herden pat weren
Judee/ for a hepen
me resteyned pe word of
god/ & pey gherfeden god/
for sope wenne petre came
to Jerlm/ pey y weren of
curiafion di spūde azen/
hy seynge/ wsh entredest
pon to me haunge spūae
a hast eten wip hem/ pe
tre sopeh bigynge expo-
mede to hem pe orde sey-
nge/ I was in pe cite of
joppe pynge/ & I callz in
excesse of my soule a dy-
fion/ sit vessel comynge
dū as a gret shete/ wip
four cordes/ for to be sent
dū fro hene/ & it came
vnto me/ in to wshuche
y holdynge byhuld/ &
callz four fortid pmes
of erpe/ & bestis/ & crep-
se pmes/ & volatiles of
pe eyr/ for sope I herde a

a vois seynge to me/ petre
ryse cle & eet/ for sope I se-
de nāy lord/ comy pynge/ &
condene entride neuer ito
my moun/ pe vois sopeh
answered pe seconde tyme
fro hene/ po pms/ pat god
hap denfied/ pon shalt not
fue vndene/ for sope vps
is done by pmes/ & alle pe
pms/ be resteyned azen ito
hene/ And lo pre me anone
fode miz/ i pe hous/ i wsh-
che/ I was/ sente fro cesarie
to me/ for sope a spirit send
to me/ pat y schulde go w-
he no pms doutynge/ for
sope a peke syxe bysen
come wip me/ & we entri-
den ito pe hous stondynge
a seynge to hy/ sende m
to joppe/ & clepe Symon
pat is namede pe
tre/ pe wshuche
shal speke to pee/ we
des i wshuche y shalt be
saaf/ & al pū hono ffor
sope wenne y hade by-
gune for to speke/ pe ho-
ly gost fel on hem/ as a
m to us ipe bigynge/
for sope y bypynge on
pe word of pe lord/ as se

oude/ Copely Iou baptisede
 in Watir forsove ze schulden
 be baptised in pe holy goost/
 pfor nif godzaf to he pe same
 grace as e to us. pat bylene
 den i to pe lord ihu est/ Wso
 Was y pat myzte for bede
 pe lord. pat he schulde not
 zeue pe holy goost to me bile
 myze i pe name of ihu est/
 y pusse pinges herd. pei hul
 de pees. & schen fieden god.
 Terynge/ pfor e to hepen me
 god hapzeue penance to hif
 And copely pey pat Weren
 scateride of pe tribulacion.
 pat Was maad vndir stene.
 Walste forp til to ffempes &
 appe. & antioche to no man
 spekyge pe Word. no bete to
 welles alone/ fforsope sidne
 of pe me Were me of cypre
 & cyrreny pe Wshuche Wbe
 ne pey entriden in to antio
 che. opaken to grekis nshaly
 ze pe lord ihu/ And pe bond
 of pe lord Was Wyp. beuy
 & myche noulee of me hyle
 myze is comitade to pe lord.
 fforsope pe Word came to
 pe eres of pe churche/ pat
 Was at Jerlm on pese py
 zes. & pey sente barnabas

on to antioche/ pe Wshuche
 Wshene he hade comd & scie
 pe grace of pe lord ioyede/
 & he monestade alle men
 in purpos of herte. forto
 dwelle in pe lord. for he Was
 a good man. & ful of pe holy
 goost & fery/ & myche carpa
 nye is y putte to pe lord/ for
 sove he Wente fary to har
 fis pat he schulde reche
 saul. Whome Wshene he
 hade founden. he ladd to
 antioche. & al pe zeer pey
 byuede pe in pe churche &
 tanzte myche compayne
 so y fforste eften disciplos
 Were named at antioche/
 fforsope i pese dayes pph
 tis came ouer fro yerlm
 to antioche. & oon of he
 risynge agabus by name
 signefiede by pe spirit
 agret hym in to comy
 ge. in al pe rondenesse of
 erpes. Wshuche is made
 vndir clauding/ fforso
 pe pe disciples pposiden.
 alle as orthe hadde forto
 sende mynsterie to bryp
 en Wbellyge in Judee. pe
 Wshuche pmg & pey dide
 sendyge to pe elder me

by pe hondes of barnabas
& paul. *Le. vii.*

A

Forsowe ipe same
time heroude pe
kyng sente hondes.

for to turme sū me of pe
chirche/ forsope he esolde
by swerd james pe bopez
of jon forsope he seyng
for it pleide to pe ielles.
puttide to for to caache pe
tre/ forsope pe dayes of perf
loones were. who esene
he hade canyte he sente
to pson. & brakyge to son
re quatinones of knyghtes.
pe wehe hade foure men
ondur hy for to kepe hy
wyllyge aft^r passe for to
byge hy for to pe pepul
and copely petre was
kept i pson/ forsope pi
er was made of pe chir
che wynter celyng of
god for hy. In p^rnyte
petre was slepyge by
tllene tllso knyghtes wynt
tllso cheynes. & kepe
bifore pe dore kepte pe
prison/ & loo an angel
of pe lord stod nyg. & lgt
nthon azeyn i pe habita
cle. & pe fide of petre

swyten he reisede seyng/
Eise wyllyge & anone pe
cheynes fallen dū of his
hondes/ forsope pe angel
seide to hy he yon gurde
bifore. & d on ym ho ses
& he dide so/ & he seidero
hy/ wo aboute to pe wy
chap. & sue me/ & he seyng
oute suede hy/ & he wyllyge
not for it was so p^r was
made by pe angel/ forsope
he gesside hy self for to se
a vislon/ forsope pe p^r
nyng. pe fllste & pe secon
d keppe came to pe p^r
zate pat ledy to pe citee/
pe wyllyge wylfully is
openyd to hem/ & pe p^r
nyng oute come for to
oo strete. & anone pe an
gel passide alby fro hy/ and
petre turmyge azein
to hy self seide/ Robb y
wote wylly. for pe lord sen
te his angel. & deluiede
me fro pe hond of heroude
& of al abydyge of pe pepul
of ielles. & he biholdyge
come to pe hous of mare
godur of jon p^ris named
marcus. where many be
re gedere to god & pnyng

forsope hy knocke at pe
 dore of pe zate. A Venche
 rode by name come forp to
 see/ And as nhe knocke pe
 voice of petre/ for ioye nhe
 openyde. pe zate bot remy
 ge In tolde petre for to ston
 de bfore pe zate/ & pei soj
 den to hire/ pon maddist or
art Wood. Copely nhe affe
 myde for to haue hy co/ffm
 sope pei seiden/ it is his
 angel/ forsope petre lasti
 d knocke/ Copely Whene
 pei hadde openyde. pei seie
 hy & Wondred/ Copely
 he beckynge to hem wip
 hond. for to be stille tolde he
 hon pe lord had led hym
 oute of prysoun & he seide/
 telle ze to James & to bry
 ssa yese pringes. & he gon
 oute Wente i to anop' plu
 ce/ Copely pe day maade.
 pe Was not litel tynblys
 amonge pe bryztes. What
 Was don of petre// Sope
 ly Whene heronde hade
 souzte hy azen. & not fon
 den. mqn hoon or sechya
 made of pe lepo. he coman
 dide. he fe to be brouzte/
 & he comyge don. fro Jude

in to cesarie. Dwelld pe
 forsope he Was Wrope to me
 of tpre & of cydon/ & pei of
 oon acord come to hy/ & blas
 tus pat Was on pe couche
 of pe kyng costely stured.
 pei aske pees. for py pat
 hire cutrees Weren muris
 chide or susterned by hym/
 forsope aday adernede.
 heronde clopid Wip kynges
 cloyngs sette for dimesman.
 & opac to he forsope pe pe
 pul crie pe voices of god.
 not of ma/ Copely anone
 an angel of pe lord smot hy.
 for he hade not don honour
 to god/ & Waside of Wornes
 died/ Copely pe Wrood of pe
 lord Wande & Was mul
 tyliede/ forsope barnabas
 & saul turtied azen from
 Jerusalem pe mynyste
 fulfyllide. Jon taken to p
 Was named marcus.

Forsope p Weren
 in pe churche pat
 Was at Antioche.
 phetes & doctes i Whiche
 barnabas & Symon pat
 is clepid blas & Lucy aro
 uence & mandeu pat Was
 pe soulyge fere of heronde

tetrark. pat is pnce of pe four
pe pt & paul/ forsope hem
 mynstryge. pe holy goost
 sende to he/ wepte ze to me
 paul & barnabas i to pe werk-
 to whiche i haue taken he/
 pene pey fastyge & plynge.
 & puttyge bondes to hem
 lesten he/ And sopeley pey
 sente of pe holy goost wente
 forp to seleucia. & fro pen
 pey wenten by boot to Ci-
 pre/ And whenne pey came
 to Salamine pei schiden
 pe word of god i synagoges
 of ielles/ forsope pei hade
 & Jon i mynstrye or suppe.
 And whenne pey haden
 walkide by al pe yle onto
 paphu. pey founden a ma
 whiche. a false pphete auel.
 to whome pe name was
 barien. pat was wip pe p-
 consil sergis poul prudet
 man/ mo barnabas & poul
 clepide to. desyrede for to he-
 re pe word of god/ Sopeley
 elymas whiche whystode
 hem. so sopeley is wylfulde
 his name sekyge forto tne
 alweye pe pconsil fro hyle
 ue/ forsope paul whiche
 & poul fulfilled xpy pe

holy goost. byholdynge m to
 hy sende/ & pou ful of al
 zyle. & al falsnesse. pou
 none of pe denel pou ene
 mye of al ryztwhisnesse p-
 lenest not forto subuerter.
 or distringe pe ryztful wey-
 es of pe lord/ And now loo
 pe hond of pe lord on pee.
 & pou shalt be blynd. & not
 seye sime/ vnto a tyme/
 And anone a myst fel don
 on hy & drcnesse/ & he go-
 ynge aboute souyte hym
 pat schulde zene pe hond
 to hym/ pene pe pconsil
 whenne he hade sende pe
 ad benede wondrynge
 on pe techynge of pe lord/
 And whenne fro paphumi
 poule had go by boot &
 pey pat kereen whyp hy/
 pey comen to pgen of
 pamphilie/ forsope Jon
 departynge fro hem tur-
 nede agem to Jerlm/ Sope
 le pey goynge to pgen
 camen to Antiochie of p-
 sidie/ & pey son i to pe sy-
 nagoze pe day of sabous
 saten// Sopeley aftur
 dyng of pe lawe & aphe-
 tis. pe prynces of pe

Synagoge sente to be sey-
 inge/ men brysen. n^o my
 Word of exhortaoun or w^oth-
 ze to ye pepul is in zour
 coye ze/ forsoye poule riss
 ze. & W^oth goud byddyng
 silence sen/ men of irael
 & ze pat dredde god heren/
 god of ye pepul of isrl ches
 zoure fadres & enbauuside
 ye pepul. Whene pey Were
 callynge in ye lond of egypte.
 & in an hyz arme he ledde
 he oute of it & by ye tyme
 of fourty zeeis. he sustey-
 nede p^o mardo in desert/ &
 he distringge senue folkes
 in ye lond of canaan. by
 cort departide to he ye lond
 of heu as aftir foure hu-
 dredde & fyfty zeeis/ & aftir
 yese pinges he zaue dimes
 me onto cammel pe p^o he-
 te/ & fro yem^o pey askide
 a kynge & he zaue he shul
 pe done of tye aman of ye
 honage of bennamy. by
 fourty zeeis/ & hym don
 alleye. he reisde to hem
 daup dyng. to Whome
 he beryge Witnessye
 Geide/ I haue fownden di-
 uid ye sone of jesso. a

man astir my herte. pe Whi-
 che shal do alle my Willes/
 of Whos seed cop byhest
 god ledde oute to yrael
 a sauoure ihu. Jon pre-
 chynge byfore pe face of
 his comyng pe baptem of
 penance to al ye folke of
 yrael/ Forsoye Whenne Jon
 fulfillede his wurse. he sey-
 de/ Whome ze deme me for
 to ben I am not/ bote lo p^o
 comen astir me. of Whos
 y am not Worpy. for to vn-
 bynde ye n^oth of his feet/
 men brysen. sones of pe
 bynde of Abraham. & pat
 in zou dredde god to zou pe
 Word of helpe is sent. So
 yese pey pat dwelld at
 Jerusalem & princes of it
 onenokbyng mo ihu. &
 ye voices of pphetis. pat
 by eith saloth ben redde
 dmyge fulfilledde/ & pey
 fyndyng in hym no
 cause of dep. askide of
 pilate pat pey nshulde
 clen hy/ & Whene pey
 haden endide alle pges
 pat Weran Writte of hy/
 pey puttyge hy down
 of ye tree. putide hy

in a graue/ forsope god reised
 hy from deed mē in pe prid
 day. pe Whiche is y seien
 by mony daies. to he pat
 to godur steepe up from
 galile in to Jer lū. pe Whi
 che ben to noli his wimes
 ses to pe pepul/ & the the
 We to you. pe ille pat is ma
 de bihest azem to oure fa
 dres. for god hay fulfilled
 pis to zoure sones. azem
 risynge Ihu. as & in pe
 pownde salme it is writen/
 you art my sone to day
 y sendide pee/ forsope
 pat he azemreisede hy
 from deed mē/ noli namo
 re to turnge in to corrup
 cioun. pus he serp/ for I
 shal zene to you pe gooly
 tresser pinges of dauid/
 And herfore in anowr
 stude he serp/ you schalt
 not zene pyn holy to see
 corrupcioun// forsope da
 my in his genacioun the
 ne he hade mynystride
 to pe Wille of god. slept
 or died & is put to hye
 fadris. & salbz corrupta
 on/ Sopenly he Whome
 god reisede from deed

men salbz not corrupta on/
 perfore men bryden be it
 Enokken to you. for by hy
 remysion of synnes is
 tolde to you fro alle synes.
 of pe Whiche ze myzten
 not be iustifiede i pe salwe
 of moysses/ In pis corhemā
 pat bilenev is iustifiede/
 pfore se ze. pat it come not
 to you. pat is abouen seyd
 in pphets/ See ze dispensers
 & bondre ze/ & lie ze state
 rede alhoode. for I Worche a
 Werk in zoure dayes. allek
 pat ze schule not bilenev.
 if ony man schal telle
 oute. forsope hem goy
 se oute pey piden pat
 anow synge Saboth pey
 schilden speken to hem
 vuse Wordis/ And the
 pe synagoge Was laftr
 mony of iellis & of am
 lynes. for schipynge sue
 den Poul & barnabas/
 pe Whiche spekynges of
 tely commensiden hem p
 pey schulde dwelle in pe
 grace of god// Sopenly
 pe Saboth synge almost
 al pe atee come to godur
 for to here pe Word of god/

Sopely in ye Sabbath suryge
 a kneest al ye cite come to gedur
 facto here ye Word of god for
 sore Ielkes cryse pe company
 es of pepul ben fulfilled wt
 enyre & agem/iden puse
 pyges pat weren seide of
 poule. blasphemye/ pe ne
 poule & barnabas studefast
 ly sanden to you it byhoft
 furste for to speke pe Word
 of god. bore for ze putte it
 alleye & han demed us in
 wepy of euilastyne lyf
 loo we turne to gedur to be
 pen me/ fforsope so ye lord
 maunde os/ I hane putte
 pe i to lyt to hepen men.
 pat pou be in to helpe on
 to ye cotter mest of ye erpe/
 Sopely hepen me hery
 ge/ royeden & gloufyeden
 pe Word of pe lord & hyle
 neden. hou manye enie we
 ren ordeynede to euilasty
 ge lyf/ fforsope pe Word
 of pe lord was fer solken
 by al pe cite/ Sopely ze
 wes sturden religion se wy
 me & honeste & pe furste
 me of pe cite & sturden
 psecucion in to poule &
 barnabas & casted oute

hem of here citrees/ & pey
 pe poundw of feet nshaken
 alleye i to he/ come to ycome/
 and pe dyspulis weren ful
 filled wip roye & pe holy
 goost.

Forsope it is don at
 yconge pat to ge
 dyr pey entriden
 to a synagoge of ielkes.
 & spaken wip a plenteuous
 multitude of ielkes & gre
 tis hylene/ fforsope pe
 ielkes pat were onblyful
 rehide psecucion & to wrape
 sturden pe sonles of hepe
 me agemes kypen/ pe lord
 fforsope zaf soone pees/ p
 fore pey dwellden myche
 tyne. dyngge tristaly i pe
 lord heryg witnessyng
 to pe Word of his grate ze
 nyge signes & wondres
 for to be made by pe hondes
 of he/ fforsope pe multitu
 de of pe cite is deptyde
 & sopely some were wip
 ielkes some sopely wip
 pe apostles/ fforsope wip
 a saute of hepen me &
 ielkes was made wip
 hire pnces. for to pmyss
 wip dyspynge/ & to

stoue hem: þei vnderstandyge
 flegde to gedre to þe citres of sy-
 caonie & listris & verben/
 goyng aboute al þe auntere
 in iherousalem: & þei werea pere-
 pchynges þe gospel: & al þe
 multitude is meyned to ge-
 dre in þe techynges of heron.
 le sopely & barnabas dwel-
 ten at listris: & eu man
 at listris seef in þe feet.
 þatt croked fro his modur
 wombe: þe whiche neuer
 hadde gon: no herde poule
 spekynges: þe whiche by
 holdynges hy & oseynges
 for he hadde say: þat he st-
 hulde be made saaf styde.
 Wip greet woys: Gys p-
 ryte on þy feet: & he lepi-
 de & walkede: // þerfore þe
 companyes wherme þey ha-
 den sejen þat þe poule di-
 de revede hire woys: i iherou-
 tise seyinges: Godes made
 like to men comē don to us:
 & þey clepiden barnabas
 iouē: poule copely natynges
 for he was leder of þe word.
 And þe þat of iuliter þat
 was bifore þe cite bringe
 se tibo boles & croknes by
 fore þe zaites Wip peples

Wolde make sacrifice: þe whi-
 che ymge whiche þe apostles
 barnabas & poule herden/
 her comē bit to gedre: þey
 skipiden oute i to þe company-
 es trynges & seyinges: men
 what don ze no ymge: & we
 ben dedly me like to zon: schel-
 ynges to zon for to be wryde
 fro þese oeyn piges: to quye
 god: þat made hene & erpe
 & þe see & alle piges þat
 ben i hem: þe whiche in
 genacion passid laste alle
 folkes for to entre in to hire
 olde weyes: & copely not
 Wip oute Writnessyngs be
 wel dynges leste hy oif fro
 hene zenynges reynes & ty-
 mes berynges frunt fulst-
 lhyng Wip mete & gladnes
 zowre hertes: & he seyge
 þese piges wmepe & wa-
 giden þe companyes þe þey
 offriden not to hem: // þe
 sope come ielles came on
 fro antiochie & ycompe: &
 þe companyes iustly st-
 rede: þey stonnges poule.
 Dorken oute of þe cite
 seyinges hym for to be
 dede: Copely þe disciples
 enuyrounynges hy: he

rissinge Wente in to pe citee
 & pe suynge day. he Wente
 forþ Wyp barnabas in to
 verben. And Whene pey
 haden euangelizede to pilk
 citee & taughte manye. pey
 turneden aȝen to hystrie &
 ycame & antiochie. confermyng
 so pe sonles of disciples &
 monesthyge. pat pey schulde
 dwelle in fery & serynge/
 for by many tribulaciouns
 it by honer us for to entrei
 to pe kyngdam of heuene
 And Whene pey hadde ordeyned
 this to he by alle citees. and
 haden prede Wyp fastinges.
 pey bytolden he to pe lord to
 Whome pey bylenyden. And
 pey passyge phidie come to
 pamphilie. And pey opekyde
 pe word of pe lord in pzen
 come don in to ytalie. And
 fro permy pey Wenten by
 boote to antiochie fro Wher
 pey Weren taken to pe ȝw
 of god. in to pe werl pat
 pey fulfylliden. Sopeh
 Whene pey came & geu
 reden pe churche. pey tolde
 hon many ȝwes god dide
 Wp he for he hade openyd
 to hepen men pe dore of

fery. ffor sope pey dwellde
 a tyme not lital Wyp pe
 disciples.

And some comy
 se don fro judee
 taughten bryden.
 for bothe if ze be aradide
 afe pe lawe of moyses.
 ze molten not be made
 saaf. yf ore ceciaon ordi
 ceciaon mad not lete to
 poule & barnabas & eu
 oper of he schulden gon
 up to pe apostles & ystus
 i jerlm on mo questio.
 yf ore pey had fery of pe
 churche passiden by ffe
 myte & samarie tellynge
 pe synge of hepen me.
 & pey maden gret ioye
 to alle leperen. Sopeh
 Whene pey came to jerlm.
 pey weren resteyned of
 pe churche & of pe apost
 he & elder men. tellynge
 hon many ȝwes god di
 de Wyp he ffor sope so
 me of pe hereshe of pha
 rises. pat bylenyden
 ryssen serynge. for it by
 honer he for to be arad
 adide & for to comande.
 for to kepe pe lawe of

moyses & pe apostles and
elder men come to godur
for to heen of his word for
sope whene gret sorow
to godur was maad. petre
risynge seide to hem men
baptenze witten. for of olde
dayes in you. god ches by my
moupe hepen me for to be
re pe word of pe gospel &
for to byleue. & god p' enen
heres dar witnessynge ze
in to be pe holy gost as
& to us. & no ymg he dy
wisse byt bene us & hem.
by feip clensynge pe her
tis of hem. f'olk p'fore
what tempt ze god for
to putte a job on pe nol
or necke of dysp'les pe w
liche uer. We ny onre fa
dus myte berer. bot by pe
grace of onre lord ihu crist.
We bylene for to be saued
as & pey. for sope al pe
multitude held pees. &
herde barnabas & paul
tellynge. hon many fig
nes & wondres god dide
by hem in hepen men.
And aft' pat pey hulde
pees. James answeride
senynge men bapten here

ze me. Symon tolde hon
f'irste god visited for to ta
ke of hepen me a pepul
to his name. & to hy pe
wordes of p'phetis acorde
as it is witten. Aft' mo
I shal turne azem & byl
de pe tabernacle of dauid
pat felde don & y shal
bylde azem pe cast don
signes of it & y shal reise
it pat op' me azem seke pe
lord. & alle folkes on whi
che my name is miclepide.
pe lord dyng his pyng
seip. Also pe word to pe
lord is werk is knollen.
for whiche pyng p' dmo
hem pat of hepen men
ben comitide to god for
to be not conq'end & disk
id. Note for to wite to
he. pat pey ab'stene hem
fro defoulynges of symy
lacris. & fornycauon and
stranghede pyngs & blood.
Moyles seipely of olde ty
mes hap in alle arees he
pat p'chen be i synagoges.
Where by eche sabot he is
red. peume it plese to a
postis & elder me. Wep
al pe church for to chese

me of he & sende to Antioche
 Wip poule & barnabas judas
 & was named Barsabas &
 Sylas pe firste me i bryse
 Brityshe by pe hondes of he
 apostles & elder bayen to he
 pat ben at antioche & sy
 ne & sylas bresen of hepe
 me & gretysse on helpe for we
 herde pat some of us go
 yge oute tronblid zou wip
 wordis turnyge op so du
 zome soules to whiche
 me we comande not
 it pleside to no gederid in
 to oon for to chese me &
 sende to zou wip oure most
 drevworpe barnabas and
 poule men pat bitoken
 hire soules or lynes for
 pe name of oure lord ihu
 crist yfore we sente judas
 & sylas pe whiche and
 pey schule telle pe same
 pices to zou by wordes/
 forsope it is seyen to pe
 holy gost & us for to put
 to zou no pms more of
 charge pene pefe nedeful
 pices pat ze absteyne zou
 fro pe offrede pices of sy
 milactres & blood stran
 sles & fornicacion pro
 whiche ze lepyge zou

ze schule do wel ffare zee
 wel yfore pey dismyttid
 came down to antiochie
 and pe mulatude gederid
 pey bitaken pe epistle pe
 whiche whene pey hade
 red pey wyeden wip gret
 ioye on ve couferte for
 sope judas & sylas &
 pey whene pey weren
 apbetis wip ful myche
 word couferte brypen
 & confermeden. Sorely
 in litil tyme made pe
 pey weren dismyttid &
 last wip pees of brypen
 to he pat haden sente he
 forsope it is seyen to sy
 las for to dwelle pere/
 judas sorely wente al
 one to Jerlm forsope pou
 le & barnabas dwelte
 at antioche techynge
 & enagelyngre pe word
 of pe lord. Wip ope mony/
 forsope aftir some day
 es. Poule sende to barna
 bas. We turnyge azeyn
 visite we oure brypen
 by alle citres i whiche
 we han pchide pe word
 of pe lord. hou pey han
 he barnabas forsope
 wolde take wip hy &

Jon pat Was named marc
 Poule forsope fiede hym
 pat he pat departide fro
 hem fro panphilie and
 wente not wip he m to
 Werl schulde not be res
 cyued/ forsope distenhou
 is made/ so pat pey dep
 tuden at byne. & barnabas
 sopely marc taken to by
 boot come to cypr/ forso
 pe poule cyllas chosen/
 wente forp take to pe gre
 of god fro byrpen/ forsope
 he wente by cyne & cil
 ce to fer myge pe church
 coman dyngre to kepe pe
 pteptis of pe apostles
 & elder me/ Sopely he ca
 me to cypr & hystra/

A

 And lo faine dist
 ple Was pere
 by name Timo
 the pe son of a woman
 Verdne ferful pe fadir
 hepen/ & byrpen p^r were
 in hystre & ycome zelde
 good vertnessyngre to hy
 Poule Wolde hy for to
 go forp wip hem self
 & he takyngre to caran
 ad hy for icles p^r be
 ven i p^r ille places/ sope
 by alle wiste pat ho

fadir Was hepen/ forsope wse
 pey passiden by atreo/ pey by
 toben to hem for to kepe pe te
 chynge pat were demede
 of apostles & elder me pat
 were at ierusalem/ And
 sopely pe churches were
 confermed in fere. & habon
 aden in nouber eche day/ for
 sope pei passyngre fere.
 in pe cite of galathie were
 forbede of pe holy gost for to
 speke pe word of god/ Alse/
 Sopely wse pey comen
 i to myse/ pey temptiden
 for to go i to byrthynie and
 pe spirit of ihu suffrede
 uot hem/ Sopely wse pe
 pey haden passide by myse
 pey come don to troade &
 a vision by nyht Was sch
 ewide to poule/ Cu man of
 macedonye Was stondyng
 & shyngre by & senyngre p^r
 soyge i to macedonye hel
 pe us/ Sopely as he sayd
 pe vision/ anone we son
 te for to go i to macedonye
 made chyn pat god had
 clepide us for to enange
 lize to hem/ Sopely we go
 yngre by boat wip streng
 com^r came to samatra
 chra. & pe day synyngre.

to neapoles. & fro veny to
 sylippes. þro þe firste part
 of macedonye þe cite of cold
 nyce. Sopely we were in þis
 cite euē dayes. spekyng to ge
 du. Sopely i þe dayes of ca
 botus we wente oute þe zate
 in sides þe flood. Where þy
 er was seyn for to lie. &
 we sittinge spaken to wynde
 pat comē to gedu. And su
 woman lyda by name pur
 purese of þe cite of tirati
 reus. Wosthyrge god herde
 whos herte þe lord openyde
 for to zeue tent to puse p
 ges. pat were seide of poule.
 forsope whene he was bap
 tised & hure house þe priede
 seynge. zif ze han demede
 me for to lie. Keypful to þe lord.
 entre ze in to my hous. &
 dwelle. & the constreynede
 us. forsope it is don us go
 ynge to pier. in wenche ha
 ynge a spirit of dynynaa
 om for to mete us þe llyh
 che zaf sweet wyngge to hi
 re lordis in dynynge. &
is tellige lhyde thers by
pe daniel's craft mo lhyge
 poule & us tuede us seyn
 ge. puse me ben dyanis

of þe god pat tellen to
 you þe llyge of helpe. fiesþ
 þe þis pyng þe dunde in
 mony dayes. Sopely pou
 le welbyngge & comrade sa
 de to þe spirit. I comaū
 de to þee i þe name of ihu
 crist for to go oute of hure.
 And he wente oute i þe sa
 me houre. Sopely þe lly
 des of hure seynge for þe
 hope of hure wyngge we
 te alweye catchyng poule
 & sylas laded in to þe che
 pyngge or dome place to þe
 princes. & þe offryngge.
 2. þe llyme distourben ou
 re cite. Whene þe ben
 feltes. & shoben a custo
 me. þe behuche is not le
 ful to us. for to restourne
 ues. open we ben ro
 maynes. And þe pepul
 ran ayemes hem & ma
 istratis. & þe cotes of
 hem kute þe comandi
 den he for to be beten
 wip zerdus. And whene
 he hade zeue to he mo
 ny woundes. þe senten
 he to prydun comaū
 dyngge to þe lly. pat he
 aligently shulde lepe

hem/ pe wylfulle Whenne
 he hadde take suche a pcept
 sente he to pe yuner pry
 sou & freyne pe feet
 of he in a tre/ copely at
 mynnyngt poule & cyllas
 wylfulpyngge hereden
 god & pey pat weren in
 bypge herden he/ thes
 pe podynyl a gret erpe
 monyge is made/ so pat
 pe fondementis of pe pa
 lou weren moued/ And a
 none alle pe dres ben
 openyde/ & pe boundes of
 alle ben ambonden/ Sope
 ly pe kaper of pe prysun
 made/ waken & seynge pe
 zates of pe pson openyde
 pe wylfulle dres/ oute
 wolde clegh/ olt wery
 se pe bounden men for to
 haue fled/ forsope poule
 criede byp gret woite
 seynge/ Wo pou no pte
 of yuele to my olt fald
 pe alle we ben here/ And
 byt ayde he entride yu
 & tremblyngge he fel don
 to poule & cyllas at pe
 feet/ & he byngyge he
 wyl oute forp/ dem/ for
 des what byhoney me

for to do pat he made saf
 And pey seiden/ Oylene p
 i to pe lord ihu & pon schalt
 be saf & pyn hous/ & pey
 spaken to hy pe word of
 pe lord wyl alle pat were
 in his hous/ And he taky
 ge hem i wylle hour of nygt
 wylfulside hire wylles/
 And he is baptyside & al
 his hous anone/ And whe
 he had led he to his hous
 he sette to he a bord & he
 gladly wyl al his hous
 bylenyge to god/ & the
 day was made pe maief
 tratis sente lioures/ pat
 ben mynnystris of mynny
 chynge/ seynge/ And byt
 te ze & deliuer po me/ for
 sope pe kex of pson tolde
 yule wordis to poule/ for
 pe maieftratis han sent
 pat ze be deliueride/ flow
 fore ze goyge oute goop
 in pees/ forsope poule sei
 d to he/ pey senten in to
 pson as beten openly/ on
 dampned me/ Comaynes
 & nols prynely pey ca ste
 us oute/ not so/ for come
 pey/ & pey fild ca ste out
 as/ Copely pe mynnystris

of peyne wolden pese Wordis
to pe magistratiō & pe died
den herd pat pey weren ro
mayns. & pey comenge by
pecheden hem. & pey ledyge
forp preiede pat pe schulde
son oute of pe cite. Sopely
pey goye oute of pe pson
entreden i to ladie & pe by
pen sie pey wiforde he
& Menten forp. L. xvi

Sopely Whene pe pas
siden by amfipolis
& appolome. pey come to
tessalome. Where Was a
synagoge of ielwis. Sophe
ly by custō poule entride
i to he. & by pre calous
he declared to he of scrip
tures openyge & sthellige
for it bihofte est for to suf
fre & rise azen fro deed.
& for pis is ihe est w home
y tollē to jou. And some
of he bilynde. & he ioynd
to poule & silas & of he
pen me Whoschipmge a
greet imilitude. & noble
Wymē not selbe. Sopely
selbes haniye emye & in
bye of pe comy in yuel
me. & a cupange maade
pey monede pe cytee. & pey
stondyngē my to Jaldnes

hous soughe he forto byge
forp unto pe pepul. And
Whene pey fonde he not
pey drollen Jaldn & some
abreyden to pe pmas of pl
tis amnge for pesent ben
v meue pe world. & hidir
pey came. Wher Jaldn resty
neid. & pese alle don aymes
pe comandemens of cesar.
Geryge anoy ihu for to be
kyng. forsope pey meuede
pe pepul & pmas of pe
cite Geryge puse ymges.
And satisfaccō taken of
Jaldn & of ope. pey laste he
forsope anon by myt bryd
disurtytude poule & silas
to heron. pe Whiche Wbe
pey came. entride in to pe sy
nagoge of ielwis. Sophe pe
p Were pe noblere of he.
pat ben at tessalome. whi
che resteynede pe Word in
al desure. vche day schyge
scriptures. zif pese yiges
so haden he. And sopely
mony of he bilynden.
& of hepe Wymē honeste
& me not selbe. forsope
Whene Jaldn i tessalome
hade knolle for & at heron
an pe Word of god is pre
chide of poule. pey came.

& pridn meninge & disturby
 ze pe multitude/ & anone
 hapen dysmynde poule pan-
 pat he schulde go til to pe
 re/ forsope sylas & timo-
 the dwelten þe/ Gopely pey
 pat hadde forþ poule led
 de hy to Athenes/ & man
 dmet taken of hy to sy-
 las & timothe pat ful-
 hymngly pey schulde come
 to hy/ pey wente forþ/ for
 sope wþene poule abood
 he at Athenes his spirit
 was meynd in hy/ & sege
 pe ate zenē to ydolatre/
 þfore he disputede in pe
 synagoge wip ielkis &
 me worschipyge in pe che-
 pyngre or dome place by alle
 dayes to hem pat herden/
 fforsope stane epycurrys
 & stoyleys & filosofres
 disputede wip hy/ & some
 raide/ what wole þis fol-
 er of wordes sey/ Gopely
 of oriden/ he is seye forto
 be a teller of newe denacles/
 for he tolde to he jhu &
 memryngre/ & pey hadde
 hy take to Anapage p^ris
comy stole seynge/ gollie
 we write. What is þis nelle
 doctrine pat is cōde of pey

Sorely þou bringest yn su-
 nelle piges to oure eers/
 þfore we wold write what
 pese piges wold be/ Gope-
 ly alle me of Athenes &
 arlynges herbozed men
 zane tent to none of þis
 no gode ey forto seye or
 for to here any þis of nelle

forsope poule stōdy-
 ze i pe mydd of anapage
 or comy stole. sey/ gen of
 Athenes. by alle þingres
 y se zōn as weyn wōrshi-
 peris/ Gopely y passyge
 & seynge zōme synny-
 cres fond & an anter in
 wliche was writte to a
 vnknownd god/ þfore w-
 hiche þis ze vnknownd
 wōrshipe. þis þing i
 scholke to zōn/ God pat
 made pe wōrld & alle
 þingres p^r ben i it/ þis
 wþene he is lord of he-
 ne & erpe dwelley not
 in temples made by hond-
 nef is wōrshipped by
 manes hondes. Ganyge
 nede of any þis wþene
 he zeneþ hyf to alle me
 & in þreþing & alle þingres
 & made of oon al þe by-
 de of mō. for to enhabite

on al pe face on erpe/ ded my
nyge tymes ordeyned & tmes
of habitacoon of hem forto
teche god. yf pauenture
vey felen hym es fynde
pouy he be not fer fro iche
of you/ copley i hy we hnd
& ben meynd & ben as &
some of zome poetes sin
den/ copley we ben & pe
fynde of hy/ pfore open
we ben pe fynde of god
we schuld not deme godly
pis for to be lyke to gold
& siluer or ston to graung
of crafte & pouyt of man/
& copley god dispisyng
pe tymes of mo conlim
nyge/ now schelley to me
p alle eny where do pena
mce for p he ordeynede
a day i whiche he is to
dempne pe world i equite/
i a ma i whiche he ordey
nede fery zemyge to alle
rnyng hy fro deed me/
Copley whene pey ha
den herd pe azemnyng
of deed me copley siame
stornede. some fersope si
den/ we schynen here pe
est of mo pis/ so poule
wente oute of pe myddil
of he/ fersope stramen

clenyge to hy bylemeyden/
in whiche & dyonse ano
pagite or gret man of co
my stole. & a woman by
name damaris & of me
wy hem/

After pese ynyges he
zon oute of athenys
came to corinthe. & fyndy
ze aman jels by name.
Aquila of poute by epde
pat late came fro ytalie/
& pusille his wyf. for p
claudy comandide alle je
wes for to depte fro Rome
came to hem/ & for he was
of pe same crafter he dwel
de at he & wrought copley
vey xberen of senefurone
craft/ p is to make hlyn
ges to traueylunge men
& he disputide in pe syna
goge by cuche sabot/ krlw
ixc purmyge pe name of
oure lord ihu crist. & he
softely consolate to je
wes & greko/ copleche
esherme tyllas & tymothe
came fro macedonye/ pon
te zas bysynes to pe lword
witnessyng to pe ielkes
ihid for to be crist/ forso
pe hem azem synyng &
blasphemynge. he schakye

of his clowys sende to hem/
 youre blod in yowre hed. y denue
 fro hem; for schal go to de
 pe me; And he passynge pe
 nes entride in to pe house
 of ouer iust man; by name ty
 to beschyphye god & hoo
 hous was ioynde to pe sy
 nagoge; Criste copely pnce
 of pe synagoge bylind to
 pe lord Wy al his hous/
 & manye of pe corinthies
 geynge bylindeden & were
 ckened; fforsope pe lord sey
 & by myt to poule by a
 onfowd; For you drede
 but speke & be not styll
 for myche yms y am w
 pee; & no man schal be put
 to pee y he noye pee. for
 myche pepul is to me in
 pro cytee; forsope he sette
 pe a zeer & sye yone mo
 techyge at he pe word
 of pe lord; Copely galli
 on pconsul of achare; Je
 wes ryssen wy oon dwt
 or Walle i to poule & ledde
 hy to pe dome Seynge/
 for azemes pe lakke pro
 consuley men for to wur
 schipe god; Copely poule
 bygyngge to opene pe
 mony; & alloun fude

to selles; forsope yf y were
 my wretched yms or worste
 spars ze me selles ryth; I
 schulde susteyne you; forso
 pe yf questiois den of pe
 word; & names of youre
 fawe ze self; & y wold not
 be domesman of pese wor
 dis; & he drof hem fro pe
 dome place; forsope alle
 talyge softenes pnce
 of pe synagoge smyten
 hy byfore pe dome place.
 & no yms of pese was to
 charge to gallion; poule
 fforsope & henne yf he
 hadde susteyned monye
 dayes; & eyngge ffare wel
 to bysen; by goot come
 to syrie & wy hy pris
 alle & aquyla pe & huche
 hade ckynde to he pe ffrede
 in tencris; Copely pey ha
 de anolke; & he came to
 ephefy; & pe he laste he/
 copely he geynge in to pe
 synagoge dysputide wy
 selles; Copely he ppyge
 pat he schulde dwelle
 more tyme; he consentide
 not; Botu he makynge
 ffare wel & syngge it
 by fforney me ffor to make
 pe solempne day comys

to at Jerlm / & eft 7 nhal
 the ayem to zon god willy
 so wente forp fro epheſy
 & he comyge don te Ceſarie
 mede up & grette ve chur
 che & came don to antiochie
 & p ſu what of tyme made
 he wente forp wallkyng by
 ordie ymry ve amtre of ga
 lathie & fruge confermy
 ge alle diſtuplis // Sorely en
 jow apollo by name ama of
 aliaſarde of bynde a ma elo
 quent came to epheſe myzzy
 in ſeptures / pro ma was tau
 te ve they of ve lord & ſerue
 in ſpirit opat & tauzre dili
 gently po ymges pat were
 of ihu knolwyge only ve bap
 tisme of Jon / Sorely pro ma
 began ſeto do truſtly in pe
 ſynagoge & home & gene
 Friſtalle & aquila herdon
 pey wold hy to & mae dili
 gently expounded to hym
 pe weye of pe lord / Sore
 ly & gene he ſhalde / god
 & acaye bapen monette
 wrote to diſtuplis p pey
 nſhulde reſtore hym /
 & huche & gene he came
 zaf myche to hem p hyle
 myden / forſo he gretly
 onſcane jowes nhalwyge

apryly by ſeptures Ihu ſu
 to be criſt // 10^m xix
Hereſope it is don / whe
 apollo was at corn
 che / pat ve heer partis gon
 poule came to eſeſi & ſond
 olime of diſtuples & he ſode
 to hem / zif he han reſteyned
 ve holy goſt bylenyng & p
 pey oiden to hy / Wote ne
 ym & he han herd nſ po ho
 ly goſt is / Sorely he ovy
 perfore in what ymge be
 ze baptiſed / ve & huche ſe
 de in baptem of Jon / forſo
 ve poule oidy / Jon bap
 tised in baptem of penance
 ve pepul ſeruyge p pey
 ſchulde bylene in to hym /
 pat was to comyge aſe
 hy / pat is in to Jhu / peſe
 ymges herd / pey ben bap
 tiſed in pe name of pe
 lord ihu and & hame
 poule ſade pntu to he
 pe bondes / pe holy goſt
 come on hem / & pey ſpa
 ken & ay langagis & p
 cieden / forſo pe alle were
 almoſt & helue in / & po
 ly he zon in to pe ſyna
 goge diſputyng & goſt
 ly menyge of pe kyndam
 of god / ſorely & hame

sume were endured & byle
 nyden not crisyng pe wey
 of pe lord/ byfore pe multitu
 de. he southe alleys fro hem
 depuden disciples evche day
 disputyng in stole of cūty
 raint or strong man yisw
 don by tlyey zenis. so pat
 alle p^r dyllecten i aspe her
 den pe word of pe lord/
 jehes & hepen mo and oth
 es whiche eide pe lord dide
 by pe honde of poule. sup^r
 on seke me. sudaries or sler
 tye clopes. or myt clopes
 or zurdels p^r were bore fro
 his body & seknesses dep
 tuden fro he & wald pū
 tes wende out. forsope
 & some of pe ielms exor
 tes. or conyngs conyngs
 aboute temptuden for to
 clepe pe name of pe lord
 ihu cr. it on hem p^r hadde
 yuele spiritus seynge/
 I comite you by ihu whos
 poule prechp. forsope pe
 were cūme cūme comes
 of a Jew stene prime of
 p^ras. pat dide his yys/
 Gopely pe yuel spirit on
 everyge seide to hem/
 I have knowe ihu. & y
 woot poule. forsope whiche

benze. & pe mā in whiche
 was pe vūste denel lip
 pyge i to he & harynge
 pe lordshipe of hope was
 strong azemes hem/ pat
 pey wald & woundide fled
 den alleys fro pat hono/
 forsope his ying was mū
 de knolwen to alle jehes
 & hepen me p^r dyllecte
 at ephesie & dide fel dū
 on he alle. & pei magny
 fiede pe name of oure
 lord ihu. & manye of he
 bylenyge came knoldechy
 se & tellynge hire dedis/
 Gopely manye of he pat
 sūeden curiouse yinges
 brougte to godw boles
 & breuede hem by fire alle
 men/ and pe pyas of
 he acoutid. pey pōnden
 money of fifty pōnstā
 pens/ so strongly pe word
 of god wayde & was con
 termide/ Gopely yest yiges
 fulfild. poule spōside
 in spirit. yacedome pas
 syde & acaye for to go to
 jertm seynge/ for afe
 pat. shal be p^r it byho
 nep me for to se rome/
 forsope he sendyng
 i to macedome tlyey of

me mynstry to hy thimo
the & crafte dwellede at a
tyme in ashe pfore y was
made i pat day a trublyg
not leste i pe wey of pe lord
forsope en man demetre by
name argentarie makinge
peliere housis to dyan pat
is false godesse zaf to crafte
me not hit bynyngge who
he clepyngge to sedm. & he
pat wereen such man mak
me seide/ gen ze witen for
of his crafte is to zon wy
nyngge & ze seen & heeren
for not onely of ephesy bot
almost of al ashe his ponle
consulynge tney alwey my
che compaigne serynge for
pey ben not goddes p ben
made by hondes forsope
not onely his part shal
be in perel to us for to come
in to repref. bote pe temple
of greet dyan shal be acou
tude to uoygt bote & pe ma
seste of hure shal be dis
trnyed. Whome al ashe
worshippe & pe world
pese pnes herd. pei be
fulfilled wip yve & arede
serynge/ Greet dyan of esse
sianes. & pe ate is fulfil
ed wip confusion/ & pey
maden a saint wip oon in

witt or wille. in to pe teatre
or cony bisholdyge place.
Gaius rampside & arista
rbe me of macedonye felo
wes of ponle/ Sopely pon
le wyllynge for to entre
in to pe pepul dysiples
suffride not forsope so
me & of pe pnas of ashe
pat wereen his frendis
seute to hy ppyngge/ pat
he shulde not zeue hym
silk i to pe teatre/ Sopely
of me criede of pmyg/
Sopely pe church was co
fused. and many wisten
not of what cause pe ca
me pidur/ Sopely of pe
clapange pey wipdrobben/
for man alisamndie jelles
pultynge hy or fer thom
sy forsope alisamndie si
lence asked wip pe hond
wolde zelde resou to pe pe
pul/ Whome as pey knolde
for to be a reth. o count of
alle me was made cony
se as by ttebyne honris/
greet dyan of ephesianes
and whene pe tribu ha
de cefide pe claypanges.
he orde/ gen of ephesy
who sopely is of men
p knolwey not pe citee
efesianes for to be worshi

per of grete dyan & of pe
sone iuditer/ þfore whene
it may not be azem þende
to þese þinges/ it biþowep
þou for to be ceshd & for to
do no þing folly/ Sopely
ze han broughte þese men
nep saclegenis nep blas
femyge þoure goddis/ pat
3if dymetrie & pe werke
me pat ben þey þym ha
cause agernes omý mál cony
ges to gedur of domes be
don & pconsules or iustices
ben. acuse þey hem/ to
gedur/ 3if ze seche ourte
of omý oper þing/ it may
be assented i þe laireful
churche/ for þey & we be
in þel for to be reprimed
of þese dayes redouour
siþe no mál is galy of
þehome we more zelde
reson of þis remyng to
gedur/ and whene he had
seyd þis þing. he laste
or deliuered þe churche/

Horþe
ape þe noyse cesh
de displis clepide þouke
monestme he seyde/ þa
re wel/ and he wete forþ
for to go i to macedonie/
Sopely þehene he hade

Walkede by þe þtis & hade
monestade hem by myche
word he came to grece wh
re whene he hade be þe
monestis. aspries in yuel
of þe ielwes weren made
to hy to schyppys in to sy
rie/ and he hade counsele
of turnyng azem in to ya
cedonie/ Sopely Sospatre
purry Beroense folowide
hyim/ of tessalonienles
forsoþe aristark & secunde
& 3ay Derbens & thimo
the/ Sopely thians titius
& trofym. vuse þehome
þey þeune byfore sustay
neden or abiden us at troa
de i fyne dayes. þherelle
dwelten seven dayes/ So
pely oo day of calot whe
ne we canne for to brek
bred. þouke disputade w
hem. he to goyng in þe
mozle/ and he drolly a
longe þe word til to myd
myt/ Sopely plentenouse
laumpes weren in þe son
pyng place where we
weren gederide to gedur/
Sopely on 3ong man en
tius by name caryge
on þe þeyndolle. whene
he was dreynt þey a

zeuous clep. fel don fro ve
 priode stage. And he take up
 is offride ded to whom we
 poule came don he lay on hy
 & bickpyngge seide. felye
 be trulide. forsope ve soule
 of hy is m hy & he goyge
 & buekye bred & castyng
 & spak ynoliz til m to pe
 lizt & so he wente forp so
 pely pey fromte to pe chld
 luyge. & pey ben confornd
 not lueste. Gopely we steys
 op m to a schipp. schippide
 m to asson fro penes we to
 resteynyngge. Soule. Gopely
 so he hadde disposide. to make
 ge journey by londe. forsope
 Whenne he foud. us m assou.
 hy take to we came to gunti
 lene and fro penm. schipp
 ge i pe day. synge we came
 aymes chyn. and anoy day
 we garioden at samu. & m
 pe day synge we camen to
 onlete. Gopely poule iposide
 for to schippe on ephesi. lute
 ony dekellyng were made
 to hy m alve. forsope he
 hnod 3if it were possible
 to hy pat he schulde ma
 ke pe day of pentecost at
 Jerlm. fro onlete. Gopely
 he sundyngge to elch. cle
 pue pe more pur. fur pe

of pe church. Whiche we
 pey come to hy & weren
 to zedur. he seide to hem.
 ze litten fro pe firste day
 m Whiche y come m to aspe
 hou wip you by uche tyme
 y was seruyngge to pe lord.
 Wip al meknes & myldenes
 & teres & temptaouns pat
 feldm to me of aspynges
 of felkes. hou y wip drowe
 not of pfitable ymges to
 you. y tolde not to yolk
 opynly & by houses. Witaes
 synge to felkis & to hepe
 men m to god penance
 & Gop m to oure lord ihu
 crist. And now so y bonde
 m spirit go m to Jerlm
 What ymges m it ben to
 comye to me onknolys.
 no bot pat pe holy goost
 by alle ciues witnesse
 to me seruyngge. for bandes
 & tribulaciouns at Jerlm
 dwellen to me. Wote y
 schame no ymgs of puse
 nep y make my soule. Lat
is of pousen penne my
self pe while y and my
towns & pe mynysterie of
pe Word pe Whiche y res
ceynede of pe lord ihu for
to witnesse pe gospel of pe
grace of god. And now lo

y woot for ze schulde no more
see my face alle ze by vgho
y passide pthynge pe bingda
of god. vgherfore y witnes
to zou mo day for y am deue
of pe blood of alle me for
sope y fley not alwey p y
taut or tolde not to zou al
pe counsel of god take tent
to zou. & to al pe folk wsh
che pe holy goost sette zou
synthopis for to reule pe
churche of god. vghuche he
huy purchaside vghp his
blood. y woot for after
my deptynge rauynthys
vgholues schulen entre in
to zou. not sparynge pe
flok and of zou olt men
spokynge weyward pigis.
schulde rise pat pey lede
disuplis aft' he for wshche
vng wake ze. holdynge in
mynde pat hy prezeer myz
te & day y celide not wpp
teres monestynge iche of
zou. & noks y bitake zou to
god. & to pe word of his
grace pat is myz forto
edefie & zene heritage
i alle mane holy forsope
y conuerted seluer & gold
or cloy of no man. as ze
silt witen. wote to po

vynge pat were nede to
me & to pese pat he wpp
me pese bondes mynyf
triden. alle vule vnges
y schande to zou. for so it
hy honer me tuelynge for
to restyne pe self. & forto
hane mynde of pe word of
pe lord ihu. for he seide. It
is more blesside for to zene
more pone for to restyne.
And vghene he hade cryde
pese vnges. his knes put
he shede vghp alle the. so
pey greet wepyngge of alle
me was maad. & pey fal
dng on pe nek of poule
kustiden. hy. on vngge
moste i pe word p he seide.
for pey weren no more
to crynge his face. & pey
lasse hy to pe schip. **S**
Dyely vghenne it
was don p the schul
den schipper. dracken anwey
fro hem farent amro vbe
came to Chou. & pe day
crynge to God. & fro
pene to patram. froppe
nes in to pra. And wghene
vbe fouden a schip passy
ze omer in to ffenye. we
fryge ap schyppiden. cope
hy wghene vbe apperiden

to Cypr. We leuige it at pe
 list half. Nshippden in to shire
 & come to tyre/ Sopely pe pe
 ship was to puttyngge onte
 pe charer/ sopely & staphis for
 den we dwelliden pere sene
 dayes/ pe whiche ende by
 spirit to poule p^r he schul
 & not styre to Jerlm/ And pe
 dares fulfilled. We goynge
 forp wente alle men whip
 whiche & fire childre ledyng
 forp us til whip oure pe ate
 & pe knees put in pe oee
 bynke we shede And wge
 we haden made fare wel
 to gedur/ We wente op ito
 pe ship/ Sopely pey tur
 myden azein i to hire olt
 ne ryces/ Sopely pe ship
 sayleng fulfilled fro tyre
 we descendide to tolamar
 da & pe brysen gret wel
 we dwellide on day at he/
 ferdope anoy day we gon
 forp came to cesarie/ & we
 entryng i to pe hono of
 philyp emigelst p^r was
 son of pe senene. dwellide
 at hy/ Sopely to hym mo
 were foure dayes ou
 zynes pphenyng/ And
 whene we dwellide per
 by si dayes. On man

phete Agabus by name
 came ouer fro Judee/ p^rso
 whenne he came to us. took
 pe gurdil of poule & bydd
 to gedur to hy pe feet & hon
 des cride/ pe holy gost serp
 pese ymges/ mo pe relas
 schulen bynde in Jerlm pe ma
 whos is no gurdil & pe schu
 len bitake i to heven inermes
 gondes. Whiche ymg whene
 we herden. We sheden & pey
 pat weeren of pat place pat
 he schulde not styre to Jerlm
 pe ne poule answeride and
 cride. What don ze wepyng
 & turnetyng myn herte
 Sopely y am redy. not onely
 for to be bounde. bote & to dye
 in Jerlm for pe name of pe
 lord ihu. And whene we
 myzte not consyle hym
 we were stille saynge pe
 wille of pe lord be don//
 Sopely aftur pese dayes.
 we made redy freden to
 Jerlm/ Sopely sume of dis
 aples came whip us fro ce
 sarie ledyng wher he on
 ma Jason of Cypr an old
 disciple at whome we schul
 den be herbozed/ & whene
 we came to Jerlm. bryden
 restreynede us schully/

Sopely in pe day cmyng
 poule entride v̄p̄ us to
 James. & alle pe elder me
 ben gadend/ v̄hom v̄hene
 he hade grett/ he tolde hy
 alle p̄ces. v̄hat p̄mges
 god hadde don i hepe me
 by pe mynystre of hym/
 & pey v̄hene pey herde
 magnified god & sende
 to hȳ pon bryp̄ rest hon
 mony p̄onstandis ben in
 ielles. pat han bysmyde
 to god & alle ben sueris
 of pe lakke/ sopely pe ha
 den of pee. for poui rest
 deptyng fro joyse. of pe
 ille ielles pat ben by hepe
 me seynge. pat pey alen
 not for to curiade hire
 sones. ney alen for to en
 tre up by custom. v̄fore w̄t
 is. Sopely it bihorep̄ amul
 titude cmyge to gedin/
 fforsope pey n̄hule heren
 for to haue come on v̄stare
 do poui mo p̄ng. pat v̄e
 seien to pee. per ben to
 no foure me. haunge
 anow on he/ v̄ese tak̄n to
 halowe pee v̄p̄ he & coste
 in he p̄ pey n̄hane hire
 gedes. & alle men v̄ite.
 p̄t pe p̄mges p̄t pe herde

of pee ben false. bote pon
 Walkest & py olt̄ l̄pyge
 pe lakke/ Of v̄ese sopely
 pat bileynde of hepe me
 tre w̄rite demyge/ pat pey
 abstejne he fro v̄is offrid
 to yddles & blod & strangle
 p̄ng & fūnycacon/ pene
 pe me taken to. poule in
 pe day cmyge p̄urified w̄
 he entride i to pe temple.
 n̄halyng pe fulfylling
 of dayes of p̄n̄fynge
 til offryng v̄as offride
 for ar̄che of hem/ Sopely
 v̄hene sende dayes we
 ren endid. pe ielles pat
 v̄eren of asie. v̄heme
 pey salben hy in pe tem
 ple sturide al pe pepul
 & leyden hondes on hym
 crynge/ oien of isrl̄ hel
 peze us/ mo is pe man
 pat azemes pepul & lakke
 & v̄is plate w̄hynḡe ehy
 v̄here alle me. more ouer
 & hap lad in hepe me to
 pe temple. & hap defounde
 mo holy place/ fforsope
 pey sayen trofym̄ of eph̄e
 hy in pe citee v̄p̄ hym.
 v̄ho pey zeside. for pon
 le hadde brougte in to pe
 temple/ And al pe citee

is menyng. & A renyngge to
 sedir of pepul is maad/
 & pey catchyngs poule dro
 wen hy oute of pe temple.
 & anone pe zates ben clo
 fid/ Sopleh hem celynge
 forto stee hy/ it is tolde to
 pe tribune. of pe aipange
 of Enyztas. for al ierlm is com
 founde. pe Whiche anone
 Enyztas taken to & centurions.
 ran to he/ Whiche Whane
 pey hade seie pe tribune
 & Enyztas aside forto fmy
 re poule/ vene pe etime co
 myge to angt hy. & coman
 side forto be bounde. Wp
 Wey cheynes & asked Wsho
 it Was & what he hade
 don. Sopleh op' ariede op
 ymg vpe aipange/ And Wsho
 he myzte not knowe eteyn
 yis for pe noyse. he coman
 side hy for to be led in to
 pe castels/ And Whenne
 poule come to pe grees. it
 byfel pat he Was bozen
 of Enyztas. for strengpe
 of pe pepul/ forsope unl
 titude of pepul suede hy.
 crynge take hym alleys.
 And Whene poule bigan
 for to be lad in to pe caste
 lis he serp to pe tribune

if it is lesul to me forto
 speke omi yis to pee/ Wsh
 che seide/ pou greet hast y
 knolve Wsh. pou art not
 pe expaan. pe Whiche hy
 fore puse daries menedest
 anoyse & laddist oute to
 desert fourre pounsand of
 me. gansleers/ And poule
 seide to hy/ Sopleh I am
 amā Jels of tarse of aliae
 amā atesyn of a ate not
 onknolben/ forsope I ppe
 pee. luffre me for to speke
 to pe pepul & Whenne
 he suffride poule stonde
 se in pe grees bekeryde
 Wp pe bond to pe pepul.
 And a greet silence made
 he spak to he in chelw
 tuge. serynge.

M En brisen & fadris.
 Here ze what resou
 y zelde nolt to zou. forsope
 Whene hane berde for
 ebrew tuge. he spal to
 he. pey zaur more silens
 And he seide/ I amā iell
 boze at Tharse of aliae
 unristhde. forsope in po
 ate shides pe feet of za
 malyel. lerud op pe tren
 pe of fadris laibe folleber
 of pe laibe. as & alle ze

ben to day/ pe Whiche y pur
suede pro Wey al to pe dep
hyndyng to gedure & dralbyge
i to holdes me & Weyme as
pe pryncce of pthas zeldewat
nessenge to me. & to alle pe
more in burpe of Whiche &
y talyng pistles to brypen me
te to Damaste. pat i schulte
bryge fro venyng bounden in to
Jerlm pat wey schulde be wey
ned/ forsope it is don me go
yng & neyng to Damaste.
In pe mydday codaynly fro
henene a opynse lizt nshon
aboute me/ & y fallynge in
to pe erpe. herde a woys fro
henene seyrnge to me/ can
le samle What purstest p
me it is harde to pee ferto
Eple azeynes pe pruce/
forsope y answerde. Who
art thou lord. & he seide to
me/ i am ihu of Nazareth.
Whouie thou purstest & wey
pat Ware Wey me sake sope
ly pe lizt. forsope wey herde
not pe voice of hy pat spak
Wey me/ & y seide/ lord wist
shal y do. Godely pe lord sey
de to me/ thou ryllyng go to
Damaste. & ye it shal be
seide to pee of alle mynges
Whiche it shoney pee for

to do/ And Weheme y sayz not
for pe clerte of pat lizt.
y had to bondes of felowes
came to Damaste. // fford
pe in man ananye wey pe
lawe hanngye Witnessynge
of alle. Jelles Dwelthynge in
Damaste compe to me &
froundynge myz seyde/ canle
brop byholde. & y in pe same
houre shuld in to hym/ and
he seide/ God of oure fadris
odeynede pee p' thou schuldest
knowe pe Wille of hy. and
schuldest see iust rigt & be
re pe voice of his moun for
thou schalt be his Witnesse
to alle me. of po mynges p'
thou hast see & herd/ and nolt
What dwolliston/ Eysle wey
& be baptised & wange a
Wey p' cynges indeped pe
name of hy. forsope it is
don to me tynnyng azem in
to Jerlm & plynge in pete
ple me ferto be made in ra
mythynge of coule. & to se
hy cynges to me/ hye thou
& go oute faste of Jerlm
for wey schulde not restreine
wey Witnessynge of me/ & y
seide/ lord wey witen for y
Was closyng to gider in to
pasou. & betyng in cyna

swais. he pat bilernde in to
 pee & wene pe blood of stur
 ry witnesse was stede ystode
 myz & consentide & depte pech
 pes of me sleuge hy And he
 seide to me / Go pou for i shal
 sende pee far to nationes for
 sope pey herde hy al to me
 Word & pei reside hure von
 ce seynge / Tak fro pe erpe
 fuche a man / man / fustope
 it is not lesul hy for to hne
 Sopely he crynge in vois
 & castynge alky hure clothes
 & prolyng dust i to pe er
 pe tribune comandide hym
 for to be lad i to castel. & for
 to be betu Wypp stomges.
 & hy for to be turmentide
 if he shulde wete for what
 cause pey cryden so to hy
 And wene pey hadde strey
 ned hy Wypp bondes. Donle
 seide to a Centurion for
 dyngge myz to hy / if it is
 lesul to you. for to stourge
 a ma Romayne & midamp
 nes. Wshuche pmyg hevd.
 Centurion. Wente to pe tri
 bune & tolde to hym seynge
 What art pou to dyngge / for so
 pe pis man is a cristu Ro
 mayne / fustope pe tribune
 comynge to seide to hy / Sey

pou to me. if pou art a Ro
 mayne. & he seide zhe / pe
 tribune answeride / y wry
 myche come gat pis cy
 my lre / and poule sey / y
 copely & am boren / pfore
 anone pey pat wene to
 turmentide hy deptiden a
 Wey fro hym / & pe tribu
 ne dedde afte pat he wiste
 hem for he was a cristyn
 of Rome. & for he hadde bon
 den hy / fustope in pe day
 crynge he wshyng feto
 wete more diligently of
 what cause he were acm
 pte of ielles vnbonde hy
 & comandide pfas feto
 come to gedur & al pe con
 sul & he bryngynge for
 poule ordeyned hy amon
 ge hem. /

P Onle for sope bihol
 dyngge in to pe con
 sul sey / men bryden /
 by al gode consience hane
 lynes bi fac god til in to
 pis day / Sopely ana
 nye pryncce of pfas
 comandide to me ston
 dyngge myz for to smyte his
 mony / wene poule seide
 to hy / Wal made wshyte
 god shal smyte pee / and

y furdre demest me op pe
 labe & azeim pe labe coman
 sist me for to be curyde And
 pey p' fode myz ceden/ Cur
 sist pou pe hye p'lt of god/
 Gopely poule lade brisen
 y wiste not for he is prince
 of p'tis/ fforsope it is writte/
 pou schalt not arise pe p'nce
 of py pepul/ fforsope poule
 writte for o p'ne was of sa
 duccio & pe top of fariseis/
 he triede in pe counsil/ oen ba
 ren y am pharisee pe sone of
 farisees of pe hope & azeim
 rishng of deed me y am de
 uied/ And whene he hadde
 seide p'is p'ms distencion
 is made bytwene fariseis
 & saducis & pe multitude
 is seide for to be no ryllyng
 azeim of deed me nesh am
 zel nesh spirit/ fforsope far
 seis knoulatheyn hope/ sope
 ly a greet crye is made/
 & some of fariseis
 rishng up fongte p'ny
 se/ we ffe den no p'ys
 of puel in p'is ma wist
 yf a spirit spak to hym
 or an angel/ & wherme
 gret distencion was ma
 de/ pe tribune d'edynge

leste poule schulde be to
 dralben of he comandide
 kinytis for to go don & to
 ranysthe hy of pe myddil
 of he & for to leden hym
 in to castelis/ Gopely in pe
 myzt fuyngge/ pe leded stondy
 se myz to hy seip/ & pe pon
 stidefaste/ Gopely as y hast
 witnessid of me i Jerlm/ so
 it bishoney pee for to witness
 & at come/ fforsope pe day
 maad/ Some of pe Jewes
 sederide he & maad anall
 fuyngge/ hem nesh to cryge
 nesh to drynkynge til pey
 slokke poule/ fforsope pe
 were mo pen fourty me
 y made p'is conuencion
 & Werynge to gedir pe
 whiche wente to pe p'ny
 as of p'tis & elder me &
 seiden/ Wry deuocion we
 han anouked us to no p'ig
 tasyngge til we sle poule/
 now yf we make ze knolwe
 to pe tribune Wry pe con
 seil/ pat he lede hy forp
 to zon/ as ze to knolwyng
 en p'ms more certeynly
 of hy/ Gopely we be redy
 for to sle hy bfore pat
 he come myz/ whiche p'ig
 whene pe sone of poules

suster hadde herd pe aspres
 or treson he came & entride
 in to pe castels & tolde poule/
 Soperly he deyringe to hym
 son of pe Centurionis seip/
 lede his zonge man to pe
 bime for he hap en ymng fa
 to schelbe to hy & he forsope
 takynge hy to ledde to pe
 tribune & seip Bondepon
 le phede me for to lede to pee
 his zonge ma hanysse sum
 yis for to speke to pee Soper
 ly pe tribune takynge his
 hond wente wy hy asides
 half & asked hy what yis
 is it y pon hast to schelbe
 to me forsope he seide/ It
 byfaller to pe ielvis for to
 pher pe pat to morle day
 pon brynge for poule in to
 pe conseil as pey ben to se
 chynge en ymng eteynere/
 Soperly bylene pon not to
 he forsope more pen four
 ty men of hem aspre hy
 pe whiche han anolbede
 he for to not ete my drybe
 til pey olen hy And noll
 pey ben redy abidynge pe
 lifest y fore pe tribune
 lest pe zonge ma coman
 dyng pat he schulde spe
 ke to no ma for he hadde

made pese ymnges knolben to
 hy And tibe centurionis de
 pride to gedur he seide to he
 make ze redy tibo hundride
 knyghtes pat pey go al to de
 sare & horse me seventy &
 opere me tibo hundrud fro
 pe prude houre of nyzt &
 make ze redy humetis or hor
 les pat pey putynge poule
 upon schulde lede hy saaf
 to ffelhy phident Soperly he
 dredde lest pe parentare jels
 es schulde ramysche hy & fle
 & he afterward schulde suf
 fire Challenge as he were
 to takynge money Writys
 to hy an epistle conteynyng
 pese ymnges/ Claudius. As
 as to pe beste felhy phident
 helpe/ his man taken of jels
 es & bysynys for to be slayn
 of he y abone comynge wy
 tynpamy & syncrede Enolben
 for he is a romayne/ And y
 writys for to write pe cause
 pe whiche pey puttede aze
 nes hy lede hy in to pe
 conseil of he whome y fond
 for to be accusid of questions
 of pe sake of he forsope
 hanysse no aryme worpe
 pe dep or bondeo & wgene
 it was told to me of aspres

or trefours pat pey made redy
 y sente hy to pee. denouysyng
 & to accusatouris. pat pei seie
 at pee ffare wel. Copely kny-
 tis op pyns comaundid to he
 takyng to Poule lorde hym
 by myght in to antipatriden/
 & pe day comyng. pe horse me
 last pat pey schulde go wy
 hy pey cnyden agem to pe
 castelis. pe wylche wylche
 pey came to cesarie. & toben
 pe mylde to pe president pey
 sent biforn hy & poule. for
 sope wylche he hade red &
 asked of what gyfte he was
 & knowyng for he was of fl
 liae. y schal here pee he
 seyn wylche py accusers to
 mey. And he comaundide
 hy for to be kept in pe sto-
 ne or moot halles of heron
 De. 7. 15. 22. 11.

Herofore aft^r fyne day
 es Ananye prynce
 of phar came don wy
 me elder me & terculle su-
 orato^r or fawre speker or ad-
 vocat wylche went to pe
 president agemys Poule/
 & Poule schyd^r terculle
 began to accuse seynge/
 wylche i myche pees we
 don by pee & many pyges

Gen amedide. by my pynde
 a wylche eke. more & eyn wylche
 re pon best. felye we han
 resteyned wy alle wyse of
 panthys. for sope leste y ta-
 rie pe lengur y ppe pee m
 outh. here no for py melle
 nes. we han fonde pis ma-
 berynge omy & farynge
 seducioⁿ & dissuasioⁿ to
 alle felles i al pe world &
 duto^r of seducioⁿ of pe seate
 of flaxaren. pe wylche al
 to ensuepe for to defoule
 pe temple. wylche & taken
 to be wolden deme afir-
 sure lawe. Copely as was pe
 tribune aboue comyng wy
 greet strengpe delwyeride
 by fwo onre bondes/ coman-
 dyng his accusers for to
 come to pee. of wylche
 p^r demyng mayst knowe
 of alle pese pynges of wyl-
 che we accusen hy. forso-
 pe & felles castide to seyn-
 ge yuse pyges for to ha-
 ue hy so. forsope poule
 answeyde. grantyng
 pe p^rident to hy for to
 ome. of many zenis y kno-
 tryng pee for to be tomes
 man to pis folk. schal to
 y noll for me wy good

in lant or refon. Copely p
 maist knowe for to me be
 not more ven tibe due day
 es. Cipe y ftyed op for to
 worfchipe in Jer lant. And
 ney i pe temple pei founte
 me disputys wry ony ma
 or makynge concours or re
myng to gedir of pe cipa
nye of pepul. ney in sy
 nagogis. ney in gytte. ney
 pey molke pue to pee of
 pe Whiche pgs pei now
 attusen me. Copely i kno
 wleche to pee pis pyng
 pat op pe seate whiche
 pei seie heresie. so y ser
 ue to god pe fadir. by le
 myng to alle pias. y he
 write i pe lawe & pphie
 tis samys hope i to god.
 pe whiche & pey hem
 all abide pe aymysyng
 to comys of iust me &
 whiche. In pis pis & i
 fadie wry oure hurtyng
 for to haue consuente to
 god & to me cymore.
 fforsope after mo zeres
 y came to wyng alines
 dedes in to my folke. and
 offrynges & wolles. in
 whiche pei founden me
 purified in pe temple.

not lyp as paye ney wry uoyse.
 & pei canhte me cryste & fuy
 ze. take albey oure enemye.
 Copely come felles of ashe who
 it bihofte for to be now pnt
 or redy at pee. & accuse nif pey
 hadde ony pgs aymynge me. or
 puke he cilt sey nif pey fou
 den i me ony pgs of whiche
 nesse. Cipe y stonde in pe con
 feil. no bote onely of pis oo
 wyce. by whiche y coud stou
 dyng amoge he. for of pe a
 zemysyng of deed me y am
 demed pis day of jou. Cope
 ly felix deferred he moste
 etepnly he whiche of pe wyng
 seruyng. Whenne li has pe
 tribune schal come. y schal
 here jou. And he comandide
 to a centurion for to kepe ly.
 & for to haue rest. ney for
 to bede ony man to mynysre
 of his olde pnynges to hy.
 Copely after some dages.
 felix comys wry Drusille
 his wyf pat was a Jewesse.
 clepide poule & herde of hy
 pe seip. p is in to crist. In
 Copely hy disputys of frut
 wisnesse & chastyte. & of
 dome to comys. felix ma
 de tremblyng answeride.
 pat pteynep now go Copely

in tyme conenable y schal de
pe pee to/Also a hoppyng of
money schulde be zene to hy
of poule/ for whiche pyng
a ofte he clepyng hym to
spak wip hy Copely t^obo
zene fulfilled/ felix tobe a
successour festus of pompe
fforlope felix Willyng for
to zene grace to Jelles lest
poule bounden/

Therfore whene festus
came in to repyne
after pe priddy day he ascendid
to Jerlm fro cesarie and pe
prinas of p^his a pe firste
of Jelles wente to hy azem
poule a p^hiede hy as kyng
grace azemes hy pat he sh
ulde comande hy for to be
lad to Jerlm settyng aspies
for to sleen hy in pe wey/
Copely festus and werede
poule for to be kepte in ce
sarie hy Copely to goyng
for more ripely or hastely
pfore he sen vei pat i zou
be myzty comyng down to
sedir/ if ony cryme is i pe
ma accused hy/ Copely he
dwellyng amoge he no mo
re ven eite or ten dayes
came don to cesarie/ And
pe top day he satte for domes

ma. a comande poule for
to be led to/ whiche whene
was lad. Jelles stod abou
te hy. pe whiche came
don fro Jerusalem. p^hnt
se azem? mony a greuous
se causes. Whiche pey myz
te not p^hie/ Copely poule
zeldyng resou. for ney i to
pe lisse of Jelles. uen i
to pe temple ney i to Cesar
y hymede ony p^his/ fforlope
festus Willyng for to zene
grace to pe Jelles and be
ryng to poule sende wold
pon ascende to Jerlm. a pe
be demed of p^his p^hnges
at me/ Copely poule seide
At pe dome place of Cesar
y stonde wher it bysoner
me forto be demed/ I have
not noyed to pe Jelles as
you hast better knowen/
Copely if y have noyed
or don ony p^his. Schurpider
y forsake not for to dye/
Copely if no p^his of p^his
is pat pey accuse me no
ma may zene me to hem/
Cesar i appele/ pene fest
p^hel p^his wip pe conseil
answered. Cesar pou hast
appeld to Cesar y schal
do/ And whene sit daies

Weran passide. Agrippa hy
 & Vermyce came don to de
 same for to grete wel festy
 And Whene pey dwelliche
 ye mony daies. festus sch
 ekked to pe kyng of poule
 seynge. for ma is laste
 bonde of felix. of Whiche
 Whene y was at Jerlm.
 pures of pstris. & elder me
 of ielles came to me as hy
 se dampnaaon. ayeines
 hy to who y answeride/
 it is not custome to romay
 nes for to dampne any ma
 bifore pat he pat is accused
 haue his accusers p'sent/
 & take place of defendyng
 for to Wasche alle bynnes
or gret trespases pat ben
 putte ayeins hy. yfore we
 pey come to gedur h'dur.
 Wip oute any delay in pe
 day onynge. y cutynge
 for domesma comandede
 pe ma for to be lad to/ of
 who Whene accusers sto
 de. pey couden no cause
 of Whiche p'ges y hade
 suspencion of yuel cope
 ly. pey hade ayeines hy
 same questions of hire
 weyn worstshippe or re
 ligion. And of eu thu deed

Whome poule affermed hy
 for to lyue. Copely y don't
 se of suche man question.
 seide if he wolde go to Je
 rlm. & y for to be demete
 of yuel p'ges. forsope pou
 le appelyng y he schulde
 be kepte to pe knolvyngge
 of pe empour. y comandede
 hy for to be kept tily shal
 sende hy to cesar. Copely
 Agrippa sende to se. & us.
 & y my self wolde here pe
 ma. To morowe he seip y
 shalt heren hy. Copely on
 pe top day. Whene agrip
 pa & Vermyce come wip
 myche ambiaon or pride
of state. & entriden in to pe
 Auditorie Wip tribunes &
 puapal me of pe cite. fes
 tus biddye poule is led
 to/ & festus sende. kyng
 agrippa & alle me p' be
 Wip us. ze seen pis of pe
 Whiche al pe multitude
 of ielles preiede me at
 Jerlm ayege & cryge hy
 for to not bihoun to h'ue
 more. forsope y foond hy
 for to haue do no p'g wor
 py of de. Copely hy appe
 lyng me pyng to pe em
 poure. y deme for to sende

of Whiche man y haue not
 What pyns of cteyn y schal
 write to pe lord/ for Whiche
 pyns y haunte hy to you and
 mooste to pee o frys agypa
 pat axing made/ forsope
 it is seid to me wip outen
 resow furto sende a bonde
 man/ & not to signe the
 cause of hy/ xxxij.

Agrippa covech seip to
 poule it is suffrede
 to pee for to speke for pi hit
 poule poule pe hond holde
 for/ bigan for to zelde re
 son. Of alle pyns whi
 che y am accused you frys
 agypa y zesse me blesside
 at pee whene y am to de
 fendyng me pis day: mooste
 pee wityng alle pynges.
 p^rben at Jewes customes
 & questions/ for Whiche
 pyns y biseche. Here me pa
 ciently/ & Covech alle Jew
 es byfore wityng me fro
 pe big pyns. Han knolke
 my hyt fro you pe pat fro
 pe big pyns was in my
 fallt i ierlm. yf pei wold
 bere witnesse. for op pee
 pe mooste cteyne fear of
 oure religion y huede a
 pharisee/ & nolw i pe hope

of repmyssion of god. I ston
 de soget in dome/ in Whiche
 oure twelue synages ser
 mys myt a day hope for
 to by come/ of Whiche ho
 pe you frys y am accusat
 of Jewes/ what on by leue
 ful pyn is demed at you.
 yf god reisey ded men
 And covech y zesse de me
 agem/ pe name of Ihu na
 zarene. for to do olke mony
 covrie pyns. Whiche pyns
 & y dunder ierlm/ & y end
 sed mony of ceyntis in
 prysones. polver taken of
 pe pynas of p^rstis/ And whi
 pey were slayn/ y zaf pe
 sentence & by alle synago
 zes ofte y punysshynge
 he cstreynede forto blas
 pheme/ & more y wayyng
 Wood agemes he purfued
 to Allen citres/ i Whiche
 pe while y wente to Ca
 masse. Wip polver & suf
 fryng of p^rstis. In pe myd
 day i pe wey. y saly pon
 frys fro heuene byt
 haue schyned aboute me
 ouer pe schynyng of pe so
 ne/ And hem pat wente
 to gedir wip me/ And whi
 we alle hade falle don

in to pe erper y herde a vois
 seyng to me in ekels tū
 ge/ saule saule what p^r
 suet pou me/ It is harde
 to pee for to byle azeynes
 pe pūck/ forsope y sende/
 who art pou lord/ Gopely
 pe lord sende/ y am ihs who
 pou pūshnest. Abote ryse
 op & stond on yy feet/ So
 pely to me pūg y appende
 to pee pat y ordeyne pee
 my mystre & witnesse of
 po pūges pat pou haste
 pūg. & of po i whiche y
 schal appere to pee deliue
 ryng pe fro peple &
 folkes i to whiche nolby
 sende pee. for to opene pe
 ren of hē. pat pey be co
 mūde fro dertheness to līt
 & fro poller of sathanas
 to god. p^r pey take renys
 shon of synes & oort or
part amōge seyntis by
 fūp p^r is in me/ wherfor
 pou lūng agrippa y was
 not conbūful to hēnē
 by conston/ bote to hē pat
 hē at damaske fūste
 & Jerlm/ & by al pe cūtre
 of judce & to hēpē men
 y schewide pat pei schil
 den dō penante and be

comūde to god doygē wurpe
 werkis of penante/ of mo
 canse jelles temptade me
 taken to. Whene y was in
 pe temple Whyllyge forto fle
 me/ Gopely y holpen by pe
 helpe of god in to me day sto
 de Witnesing to lasse and
 more no pūg wry oute sey
 nge pen whiche pūg pe
 pphetis & moyses spaken
 for to be to comyng/ nif crist
 passible & able to suffre nif
 pe fūste of azenryngē
 of ded me is to schewyng
 līt. to pe pepul & hepen
 me/ by apelyngē pe se pū
 ges & zeldyng reson festis
 Wry greet ois sende pou
 le pou maddest or waryst
Wode gōng fūtre & tēn
 pee to woodnesse & poude
 fūp y madde not y beste
 festis. bote y speke oute
 pe wordes of tremp & so
 burnes/ Gopely & pe lūg
 to who y speke Andefast
 ly woot of pūse pūges/
 Gopely y deme no pūg of
 pūse for to y dare or da
tholwe fūsope nery in a
 corner is out of pūse pū
 ges don/ Whylen estou hē
 agrippa to pphetes y woot

for pou shenyst / Sopely agpa
 Seide to poule / In huytel pis
 pou consalest me for to be ma
 de a ften ma / And pouley
 desire aneas god. & in huytel
 & in greet not onely pce bow
 & alle pce p^r here to day.
 for to be made such. What
 man & y am outake pise
 bondes / And ye hng ros up
 & ye pshat & azernyce & pei
 pat sate nyz to be / ye vshid
 Whene pei wente alweye
 spaken to zedir. Senge
 for pis ma hay not domy
 pis Wozpy dep or bondes
 fforsope agpa seide to fef
 tus / pis ma myhte be dys
 myttid or deluyd nif he
 had not a ppekd Cesar.

Sopely as it is dmed
 hy for to nshipe to
 ytake & pcy bitoken poule
 Wip oper kept to a Centu
 riou. by Julins of pe cupa
 nyce of Enygnis of pe emp
 onre / Sopely the styngei
 to pe nship of Adrymetos.
 & bysynz for to seile ha
 re cop aboute pe placis of
 asie. lufstynge stille wip
 us dristark of qacedonye
 tessalonycense. fforsope ye
 day surye we come to syty

Sopely Julins trectys maly
or antelsh poule. Suffreid
 for to go to frendis & to do
 pe cure of nede of hy. And
 Whene the hade take up
 fro penes. the andirsey
 lode to Cyre. for p^r Wydeo
 Were contrarie & pe see of
 Silae & pamplic. the sey
 hng come to listris pat is
 hac & p^r Centurioni p^rdy
 a nship of Alisandre seahg
 i to ytalie. putade us ouer
 i to it / And Whene mony
 dayes the seilde slowly.
 & Onepe come agemz gny
 du ye Wynd forledyng us.
 the seilden to Crete bi
 des Salomana & ompeco
 the bisidie sealyng comen
 to en place p^r is clepide
 of good haue. to Whome
 ye ate tessala keas nyz.
 fforsope myche tyme pul
 side & Whene nolle seahg
 was not siber for p^r fustys
 passide. poule confortide
 he senge to he / men y see
 for wip wrong & harme not
 onely of charge & nship. bot
 alfd of oure soules or hues.
 bysynep sealyng for to be co
 rely centurioni hlempe mo
 ze to pe gonho & to pe lord

of pe schip pen to yese pmi
 zes pat weren orde of
 poule/ And Whene pe haue
 Was not able for to dwelle
 Wynt^r ful many ordeyned
 counsaile for to sale yennys.
 If on ony maner pen myz
 to come to ffenice. for to Wy
 the i pe haue of crete by
 holdys to affrys & to choz/
 Sopely pe soupe bldwyge.
 pey sellys he for to holde
 ypoos. Whos pey hadde take
 op fro asson salde to crete/
 Sopely not afe myche pe
 Wynd tyfomye p^r is clepid
 nary est a wynd of tempest
 sente by heimes it a wha
 ne pe schip was rarynked
 & myzte not enforse in to
 pe Wynd pe schip zoun to
 bldwyges we were boren/
 Sopely we ronyng in to
 ou yle. pat is clepid can
 da vnneppe myzte gete a
 lytel boot/ pe whiche ta
 ken up Wyh helpes pey
 ofide sudys to gedre pe
 schip dredys leste pe sch
 ulde falle i to pe sondy
 places. pe vessel andir
 sent/ so pey were boren/
 Sopely us wolven wypp
 swet tempest i pe day.
 myge pey made castys

out/ And pe yuude day w^t
 hire hondes pey castde in
 strumets of pe schip/ so
 vely ney sune ney sterres
 apperyge by mo daies. &
 tempest not lytel schewi
 ze wyz. now al pe hope of
 oure helpe was an alwey/
 And Whene myche fastys
 hade be. yene poule non
 dyng i pe mydil of hem
 orde/ & me it blyste me
 herd for to not take alwey
 fro Crete. & make wyne
 pis wrong & castys out
 And now y counsaile jon for
 to be of good fmynte a
 herte/ Sopely pe schal be
 los of no soule of zoun out
 take of pe schip/ For sope
 an angel of god Whos y
 am & to whoe sue stois
 myz to me pis myzt sey
 mge/ poule drede p^r not.
 It blyhney pee for to sto
 de myz to cesar/ And lgod
 hay zoun to pee alle p^r
 be i pe schip wyh pee/ for
 whiche pis ze men bep
 of good mynt a herte
 For sope y blyene to my
 god. for so it schal be as
 it is said to me/ Sopely
 it blyhney as for to come
 i to sit yle bot afe ward

þ in þe fourtenpe day þe myt
 came aboue to us sayng i þe
 ston. See. aboute mydnygth
 þe schipme supposide sū re
 now a cūtre for to appere
 to he. þe whiche sendyng
 dou a yldmet fouden aben
 in passis of depnesse. And aft
 a litel þei deyrade þens fou
 de fiftene passis. Sopely þei
 dredyng. lestt the schulde falle
 ito ncharpe places. fro þe last
 pt of þe schip sendyng for
 re ankens. Desiride day for
 to be made. Sopely þe schip
 me sekþge for to fle of þe
 schip. Whene þei hadde sent
 a litel boot ito þe see on
 der coloure as þei schulde
 bigyne for þe forme pt of
 þe schip for to freache forþ
 þe ankens. þouke seide to
 senturion. & þyngtis. so
 bote þus schulde dwelle
 i þe schip. þe mōt not be
 made. sū þene þe þyngtis
 fūnde alkei þe cordes of
 þe litel boot. And sufferi
 de it for to falle fro. And
 Whene lizt began for to
 be made. þouke pīd alle
 me for to take mete. Sey
 ge. þe fourtenpe day. þe
 abyde dwelle fastyng.
 no þis takyng. for whiche

þyng. þe þe you for to take me
 te for your helpe. for of no
 of you þe her of þe hed nhal
 þushe. And Whene he hade
 seid þese wyng. he takyng
 lizt dūde þonþynges to god
 i þe cyte of alle me. And
 Whene he hade brok. he
 began for to ete. fūsope
 alle made more pacient
 a herty. & þei toke mete.
 Sopely we were alle þe
 soules i þe schip. also him
 dūde. cyte. & cyte. And þei
 fulfilled. þei mete. dūhar
 siden þe schip castig. whe
 te ito þe see. Sopely whene
 day was made. þei knewe
 not land. Sopely þei lizel
 de. ou. hanene. þayng. a
 watar banke. ito. Whiche
 þei þoynt. n. þei myte
 for to caste þe schip. And
 Whene þei hadde take. up
 þe ankens. þei bitoken
 he to þe see. to gedir. sū
 þyng. þe. ioyntures. a. go.
 unables. & a litel. þei list
 up. up. þonþyng. of. þei. wōd.
 þei went. to þe banke.
 And. whe. we. felde. ito. a
 place. of. sūel. gon. al. abon.
 te. wip. þe. see. þei. hūthā.
 þe. schip. And. þe. formere
 pt. fūshid. dwelle. a. me.

nable/ Covelv pe laste part
was brot of pe strengpe
of pe see/ Covelv counsil of
pe knyghts was for to slee
me & pe kpyng lestte on ye
schulde astape whēno he
had swymmed onte/ forsope
Centurion willyng for to
kepe poule forbed for to be
don/ & he comādwde he pat
myght swyme for to sende
he furste i to pe see & stape
& so onte to pe lond And so
me oke pey baren i bordes.
Stime on vo pyges y were
of pe ship/ and it is made
y alle pe soules or hymne
me. rapiden to pe lond.

And whēno we haden
stapde. pene we knew
en y pe yle was clepide
menlene/ Covelv barbares
or here me. iane to us not
hytel humanityte or curte
se. forsope a fuyr bynde
lid pey refetide or refrech
de us alle. for pe reyn y
come my & colde/ Covelv
whēno poule had ged
ride sw multitude of kut
tyges of vynges & i put
on pe fyer. an eddre whē
the come foyr fro pe hete
assailed ho hond/ y fye

as barbares saue pe best he
syge i ho hond pey seiden
to gedn/ Covelv no man is
a manqueller whiche whē
stapd fro pe see. godis ve
rance suffrey hy not to le
ue/ And he covelv nhalys
of pe best i to pe fuyr suf
fide no vis of yuel/ And pey
gesside hy to be turnyd i to
swellyng. & sodenly to fallis
& for to dye/ forsope he long
abidys. & oeyng no vis of
yuel. for to be don i hy/ pey
tmyng to gedn. sude hy for
to be god/ forsope i vo places
werd maid or feldes of pe
pryce of pe yle pynplins by
name. pe whiche resseymys
us pe daies. benignely/ Co
velv it bifel pe fadn of pn
plins for to sigge tuelde
wip ferles & dissentie or flur
to whō poule entride And
whē he had fiede. & putt
pe hondeo to hy/ he stude
hy/ whiche pyg don. alle y
dye yle had okenesses
come to & were amide or he
lid whiche also honored
us i many weosthipes. & to
us nshypps i putide what
pyges were necessarie/ for
sope aft pe moneye we

sthynden to a schip of al-
 landre y hade wyrted i reyle
 to whiche was anoble pris
 of castles and wher we come
 to swaanstan we dwellide pe
 pre daies fro yenes we sthy-
 ppe aboute bycume to reg-
 u/ And after oo day pe son-
 blowys i pe secunde day
 we come to putreoles wher
 bryse founde we be pled for
 to dwelle y anedro he seie
 daies/ And so we comen to
 come/ And fro pei9 whene
 wher bryse hade had pei ru-
 ne to us. til to sthyppinge
 of appy9 & to a place pat
 is clepid pe taines wher
 whene poule hade seyen
 he dyngge poukyges to god.
 toke trust/ Sopeh whene
 we come to come. it is suf-
 fride to poule for to dwelle
 to hy self. wry a lmyt be-
 pyngge hy // fforsope afte
 pe pridde day he clepide
 to gedur pe firste of pe ielles
 & whene pey came he seide
 to he/ oen brysen y doynge
 no ying agines pe pepula-
 cists of fadres y boinden at
 Jerlm am by taken i to pe
 bondes of romaynes/ whiche
 whene pey hade axide of
 me wolden dismytte me for

pat no cause of dey was in
 me/ bote jelles agens seynge
 y am constreynd for to apelle
 Desar not as hannis any pris
 for to aause my folk yfne for
 vis cause y priede for to see
 you & speke to/ forsope for
 pe hope of itrael y am gurd
 aboute wry vis cheyne/ &
 pey seiden to hy/ ney/ we
 han resteyned lettres of pee
 fro Judee ney ony of brysen
 comys to stheinde or spak
 ony yuel of pee/ Sopeh we
 pten for to here of pee what
 pyges pou felist/ for why
 of vis sette it is Enollen
 to us for why cally where
 it is agens seide it/ Sopeh
 whene pey hade ordeyned
 a day to hy/ mo comen to
 hy i to pe oost & her bawe
 to whiche he expounded
 witnesse yge of pe kyngda
 of god. & conselide hem of
 whi of pe lawe of moyse
 & appens fro pe moelwe til
 to ewentide/ & sume byle
 myde to pese pyges y were
 seid of poule. sume byle
 nyden not/ whene pey we-
 re not consentynge to gedur.
 pey deytiden seynge poule
 oword/ for pe holy gost spak
 wel by yfne pe appete to

oure fadus seynge/ So þ
to vis pepul & seie to he
Wip are ze schule here. &
ze schule not vnderstonde/
& ze seeyge schule see. &
ze schule not biholde/ pe
berte of vis pepul is enfa
tid/ & Wip eres ze herder
greuousely/ & pey pssiden
to sedw hwe yen. lest pa
uenture pei see Wip yen &
Wip eris here & by berte vn
derstondest. & be comstide
& y hele he/ pfore be it kno
we to you/ for to hepe me
vis helpe of hele is sent
of god & pey schule here/
And Whene he hade seide
pese piges Ielwes wenten
oute fro hy hantze myche
questiow & selysse amoge
he self/ Copely he dwelte
al tibo zeer i his huyred pla
ce. & he resteyned alle p
entride to hy pthynge pe
kyndam of god & techinge
What piges ben of pe lord
Ihu crist Wip al trust w
oute forbedysse Amen.

Here endy pe dedis of a
postle & bigynnep pe
pistle of James pe apos
tle.

James the apostle

James pe seruaut of god &
of oure lord ihu crist. to pe
twelue Apyles p be i na
terys abroad. helpe/ my ba
pen gesse or de me ze alroij.
Whene ze schule passe i to
synke temptaciouns or tri

bulaciouns Wipge pat pe p
myge of zourte fery wurcker
pauence/ Copely pauence ha
ue pfit Wek pat ze be pfit
& hool i no pis falynges/ for
sope yf ony of you nedir wis
da aske he of god. pe Whiche
zenep to alle me largely &
vnpbreider not. & it schal be
zourte to hy/ Copely axe he i
fery no pis dourtynges/ forso
pe he p dourtep is like to a
walke of pe see. pe Whiche
of Wynd is moynd & bozen
aboutte/ pfore gesse not pilk
ma p he schal take ony pis
of pe lord/ A man double of
miltut is unstable in alle
his weyes/ forsope a meke
broy gloue in his enhaufy
se/ Copely a riche ma i his
mebenesse for as pe flour
of hey or gras he schal passe/
Copely pe same is sprynke
vop Wip breynge or hete
& dryed pe hey & pe flour
of it fel dū & pe farennes
of his cheer pithide. so &

a riche man welshew in his
 weyes/ blessed is pe mā p'
 suffer temptaoun/ for whē
 he shal be tryd he shal
 restreue pe crowne of lyf
 pe which god assemblithe
 to me lounge hy/ No mā
 whēne he is temptid seye
 for he is temptid of god/ So
 pely god is tempter of myel
pryncis. forsope he tempter
 no mā/ So pely wche mā is
 temptid of his coneyng
 shalben fro resow & suarid
 or disseynd pe coneyng
 whē it hap coneynd him
 sey for syne/ So pely syne
 whēne it is fulfillid. sen
 drey dep/ And so my mastre
 dereworpe cryen sal ze
 erre. wche beste pmyng
 nū a al pfit zift. is fro
 aboue conyng wū of pe
 fadir of lites. anetis who
 is not outhammyng ney iha
 demyng of whilenesse or tyme
 forsope wiffully he sende
 us wip pe word of tremp
 p' we be so bighmyng of pe
 creature of hy/ Write ze my
 cryen mast lounge/ We wche
 man swifte for to here for
 sope slow for to speke & slo
 w to wrape/ So pely wrape
 of mā wichep not pernt

wifnes of god/ for whiche
 pis ze castys away al vnde
 nesse & plente of malice &
 myldenesse restreue pe
 word of god p' may saue
 your soules. forsope be
 ze dars of pe word. & not
 hereris onely disteynyng
 your self/ for if any mā
 is herer of pe word & not
 doer. pis shal be conyng
 to amā bisholdyng pecher
 of his surpe & a myroure
 so pely he shal be hy self
 & wente. & and he forat
 what man mā he was for
 sope he p' shal pfitely by
 holde t' pe lawe of pfit
 freit. & shal shelle it
 not mate a forgetful he
 rez bete doer of work pis
 shal be blessed in hy
 dede/ forsope if any mā
 zelle hy self for to be re
 ligious not refreymyng
 his tinge. bete disteynyng
 his herte. pe religion of
 hy is weyn/ pis is a clene
 religion & unwymed ane
 tis god & pe fadir for to
 visite fadirles or modir
 les childe. & widnes in
 hie tribulacion. and for
 to kepe hy self vnde faulde
 fro pe world.

Herbyen. salze in accep
 tion of psones haue
 pe fery of oure lord ihu est
 of glorie forsope nif p' nshal
 entre i to 30e conent. a man
 haunge a golden ryng i whi
 te or faw clow. forsope a pore
 ma nshal entre i a foule ba
 bite or clow & ze biholde into
 hy. p' is cloped wip ful clere
 clow. & nif ze nshule ceie to
 hy. p' sitte here wel sopely
 to pe pore ma ze seie stonde
 p' se or sitte ondir pe stool
 of my feet. wher ze dwen
 not anetis 30e silf & ben
 made domesme of wickid
 poyntes. here ze my moste
 derliowp brise. wher god ches
 not pore me i p'is world.
 riche i fery. & eies of pe
 synia p' god bihizte azem
 to me longge hy forsope
 ze ha dispised pe poure ma
 wher riche me oppisid not
 30n by polver. & pei drawe
 30n to domes. wher pei blis
 seme not pe gode name pat
 is clepid on 30n. ner peles
 nif ze p'fourme pe byngis
 lawe. op scriptures pou
 nshal loue pi nengebore ac
 ry silf ze don wel. sopely
 nif ze take psones ze wnr

chen syne. ze repreuyd of pe
 lawe as espasours. // forsope
 wsho eue nshal kepen al pe
 lawe. sopely offende i don
 he is made gilty of alle. for
 he pat seide p' shalt not
 do lecherie. seie & p' nshal
 not cle. pat nif p' shalt not
 do lecherie bote p' cleist. p'
 art mate a espasour of pe
 lawe. pus speke ze. & pus
 do ze as bysynge ferto be
 demed by lawe of p'fite fte
 sam. // Sopely dome wip ou
 ten mty to hy pat do not
 nity. forsope nity aboue reij
 sey dome. // my briden what
 nshal it p'fite. nif my ma
 seie hy ferto haue feipe.
 werkes forsope he haue
 not. wher fery nshal molbe
 saue hy. forsope nif broy
 or suster ben nakide & han
 ned of eche dines liffode.
 forsope omj of 30n seie to
 he go ze i pees. be ze made
 hoot & be ze fulfild. //
 Sopely nif ze nshule not ze
 ue to he what p'ges ben
 necessarie of body whi nshal
 it p'fite to 30n. So & fery.
 nif it haue not werkes is
 deed i it silf. // Wote si ma
 nshal seie. pou hast fery.

& y haue werkis. shalke pou
 to me þy feyþ wip oute wer-
 kis. & y shal shalke to þe
 my feyþ of werkis. pou byle-
 nest. for oo god is. þ' do st uel.
 & denelo bilene & to gedue
 weble. forsoþe wolt þ' wite
 pou weyn mā. for feyþ wip
 oute werkis is ydel. Abra-
 ha oure fadir wher he was
 not iustified of werkis offe-
 ryng ysaac his sone on þe
 auter. þ'fore pou seest. for
 feyþ wrought wip his werkis.
 & his feyþ is fulfilled of wer-
 kis. And þe scripture is fulfil-
 lid senyng. Abrahā bilenyng
 to god & is y retid to hy to
 rythwisnesse. & he is clepid
 þe friend of god. ze seen for
 a mā is iustified of werkis.
 & not of feyþ onely. Alþ
 forsoþe & raab hore. wher
 ihe was not iustified of
 werkis. ihe resteynyng þe
 messingeris. & by anof wey
 doþge out & sendyge out.
 forsoþe as þe body wyþ on
 te spirit is ded. so & feyþ
 wip oute werkis is ded.

III **M**y brysen cyle ze be
 made mony maistres.
 wityge for ze taken þe mo-
 re dome. Gopely alle we
 offende in mony þingis.

if any man offendyng not
 word. no is a þfit mā. for
 soþe he may wyþ a bridel
 leden aboute al þe body. for
 soþe if we putte to horsis
 bridelis & to monyng. for to
 consente to us. And we bere
 aboute al þe body of hem.
 And so schippes whene þey
 be greet. & ben dryue of
 stronge wyndes. sopely þey
 ben bozen aboute of a litel
 soumle where þe burre of a
 mā dreslyng shal wole. So
 & þe tunge sopely is a litel
 meche. & raisyng greet þingis.
 loo þou myche fuyr kynde
 leþ þou greet woode. & oure
 tunge is fuyr þe comynite
 of wickednesse. þe tunge
 is ordeyned in oure meche.
 þe which defouleþ al þe
 body. & it enflammed & set-
 te a fuyre of helle enflam-
 myng þe whele of oure bry-
 þe. Gopely al þe kynde of
 bestes & foules & spennis
 & of oþe ben outdome. &
 be made tame of mannes
 kynde. forsoþe none of me
 men may daimte & chastyse
 þe þe tunge. Gopely it is an
 conqwyet yuel þyng & ful
 of dedly venyng. In it we blesse

god ye fadir. & in it the au-
 sen me pat ben made to pe
 likeness of god. Of pe sam-
 moun comen for blessinge
 & cursynge. yf bryden it by
 honer not yel pices for to
 be made so. Wher a Welke of
 pe same hole brynges for
 swete water & salt. yf bry-
 den wher a fige tre may
 make grapes or a vyne fy-
 sus. so nery salt watere
 may make swete water.
 Who is wyse & dysphyned
 amoge you. shewe he of go-
 de lynyge his werke & gyl-
 denesse of wysda pat yf
 ze han bitter zele or envye
 & strynges be in zoure
 hertis. For ze gloue & be-
 lyez aymes pe trempes
 forsope his wysdam is not
 fro above comyng. Don bot
 erpely bestly fendly for wher
 re is envye & stryf. pe on
 stedefastnes & shrewdede
 werke forsope wysdam. It is
 fro above fyrste copely it
 is chafte afeward pesible.
 mylde. Gnadible pat is for
to trete. consentyge to good
 pices. ful of may & good
 fruytes. denyge. Wip oute
 peynyng. Sorely pe fruytis

of rythlesnesse ben solde & pes
 to me make pees.

Wher of batanles & ches-
 & chidys. amoge you.
 wher not of zoure concitises.
 pat fynde in zoe mebus. ze co-
 uerte & ze han not. ze clen-
 & han any. & ze molke not
 sete. ze chide & make batel
 & ze han not for whiche p-
 ze han not axed. ze asken &
 ze resteyne not. for p-ze aske
 yuel as zoure concitises. ze
 shewe anoutreis wite not
 ze. for pe frend shipe of his
 world is enemy to god. p-ze
 who ale shal wille for to be
 frend of his world is order
 nede pe enemy of god. wher
 wene ze pat weynly pe sh-
 ture seip. pe spirit of wel-
 lip. zou conuerted to envye
 forsope he zenepe more grace
 for whiche p-ze he seip. god
 wipstondey proude me. for
 sope to mek me he zenepe
 grace. p-ze be ze soget to
 god. forsope wipstondeze
 pe deny. & he shal fle for
 zou. nene ze to god & he shal
 nene to zou. ze synes. & an
 sep pe gondes. & ze denble
 of inwit p-ze pe hertis.
 be ze wrechide & weile ze

30ure ^{my} be turnyd vnto
 wepyng. & wy m to soule of
 herte. be ze mekid i pe shtre
 of pe lord. and he shal enhan
 se 3ou. / gy brysen. sal ze bac
 lare. vche ope. he p bache
 his broy or p demey his bro
 p. bache. pe lawe or demey
 pe lawe. forsope nif p demest
 pe lawe. pon art not doer of
 pe lawe. bot domesma. / Opo
 hoon is opeker of pe lawe
 & mge p^t may lese ordehner.
 forsope who art p^t demest
 py nengore. lo nolls ze pat
 seien to day or to moe we.
 shulen go i to yllk ytree.
 pe sope. we shule maken
 by myge. pe wshiche wite
 not what is to 3ou in pe
 moe. forsope what is 3oe
 lof a wypon. or smok. to a
 hiel semyge. & afterward
 shal be wastid. pfore pat
 ze seie. nif pe lord shal wole
 & nif we shule hne. we
 shule do pis pms or pat
 pms. now forsope ze glate.
 3oe prides. ehy fuche 10yys
 is wchid. pfore to a man
 cumyng for to do good & not
 dyng. Tyme is to hy. **L**
 O nolls ze eithe me we
 pe ze 3oulyng i 3oure
 brechidness. p shulen

come to 3ou 3oure richeshe
 ben made rote. & 3oure clo
 pes ben ete of monytre. 3oe
 sold & 3oe shier. hap rusted
 & rust. of he shal be to 3ou
 i to witnessyng. & shal ete
 3oe flechis as fuyr. ze ha
 tresourid to 3ou wrape i pe
 laste dayes. lo pe hnyre of
 3oe werk me. pat repede
 3oe cures. pat is fraudite
 of 3ou. crie. & pe are of he
 entred i to pe ceris of pe
 lord of oostis. ze han eeten
 on pe erpe. & in 3oure leche
 ries ze han wiristide 3oe
 hertis. / In pe day of oster
 ze ladde to & clowe pe inst
 ma. & he azenfode not
 3ou. / pfore bryse be ze pa
 cient til to pe comyng of pe
 lord. loo an erpe thier aby
 dy pouse fruyt of pe
 erpe pacently suffryng
 til he resteyne tyme. &
 lateful. & be ze pacer & to
 ferme ze 3oure hertis. fape
 comyng of pe lord shal neye
 brysen. sal ze be couful
 oche i to ope. p ze be not
 med. loo pe Justice stody
 my bfore pe zate. wryp
 tak ze ensample of yuele
 goyng oute & of long aby
 dyng of wanel & pacent.

pe apbetis & spake to you i pe na
 me of pe lord / soke blesse he p
 suffrid / ze herde pe suffring
 of iob. & ze sawe pe ende of
 pe lord for pe lord is moful
 & doys mly. **¶** By fore alle
 ryges my dere bryden my lye
 swere nesp by heue nesp by
 erpe nesp by of what erde
 oop / forsope be zornre word
 zhe. zhe. nay nay pat ze falk
 le not ondr dome / sopeh n
 omj of zoll is so wreful. p
 he wip ene milt & seie he
 psalme / Any of you is seek
 lode he i phtas of pe church
 & pte pey on hy anoyntys
 wip oyle i pe name of pe
 lord & pe pter of fery shal
 sune pe seek & pe lord shal
 discharge & nif he be i sy
 nes pey shule be forzenn
 to hy / pfare knouliche ze one
 to anoy zoe synes & pleze
 for cothe ope p ze be sanyd
 ffesore pe cotymial pter
 of a iust ma is myche wozy
 helie was ama lik to us pas
 able & i pter he pte p it
 shulde not reyne on pe er
 pe & it reyned not pe zenis.
 & ope monepis & estesone
 be pte & heie zaf reyne
 & pe erpe zaf his frupt /

Bryden forsope zif omj of you
 shal erre fro tremp & omj
 shal comite hy. he omiey forto
 wite for he p shal make a sy
 ner forto be turnyd fro pe er
 ro of his wey / shal sune pe
 soule of hy fro dep & bene
 rep pe multitude of synes /
Here endy pe pistal of James
& harnep pe pistal of petrey

Petre apostel of ihu
 est to pe chose gertis
 or alynges of dysphon of pon
 pe of galathie of capadosie
 of ahe & of asyryme op pe
 ptnence or bifoze knoldige of
 god pe fadir i to pe haleldyge
 of spirit i to obediare & spee
 synge of blood of ihu crist
 & to pees to you be multy
 pliede / wlasside be god & pe
 fadir of omre lord ihu crist.
 pe wshiche op his gret mgy
 mengendade us i to quyl
 hope. by pe azemrisys of ihu
 est. fro deed i to heritage in
 corruptible & ondefouled
 & conuervable. kept i heuenes
 i you p i pe otn of god be kept
 by pe fery i to helpe madere
 sy for to be stherid i pe laste
 tyme i wshiche ze shule uue
 nif it bishone noll a hyl fa
 to be soz i dysse repant.

p. pet.
 7. co.

pat pe purghe of ȝoe fery be
 myche pauceure pen gold p
 is gnyd by fnyr be fonde
 i to hermyte & glone & hono
 i to pe reuelacion of ihu crist
 who thene ze han not fene
 ze loue i to who nals also ze
 not cepte by lene fforlope
 ze bilemyte sthule haue wy
 wy oute fery i gladnesse
 vnenarrable & gloufede
 by ȝoe aȝe pe ende of ȝoe
 fery pe helpe of ȝoe soules
 of ekeche helpe pphets som
 te oute & enserchede. p pph
 ciede of pe ȝte to comyge i
 to ȝou. seche ȝe ekeche o
 what man tyme pe qunt
 of ȝe signefied i ho biforetel
 ȝe pe passiois p be i crist
 & later gloues to who it is
 shewide for not to he olt
 copely to ȝou pey mynystr
 de po pȝis pat nals be told
 to ȝou by he p enageliden
 to ȝou pe holy gost cent fro
 haue i to who angelis desire
 for to byholde for ekeche
 pis ze gard pe lendes of ȝoe
 soule sake pfit hope in to
 pilke ȝte p is offryde to ȝou
 i to pe reuelacion of ihu
 crist as sones of obedience
 not to gedre lited to pe
 former desires of ȝoe igno

zance. bote wy hy p clepte
 ȝon holy & pat ze olt be
 holy i al hy nysse for this ma
 ten ze sthule be holy fery
 am holy And ȝif ze tclepe
 hy fadyr pe ekeche wou
 te acceptiois of psones de
 myr wy pe werke of oche
 ma. hne ze i drede i tyme
 of ȝoe pilgimage wnyge
 p not by corruptible gold o
 elier ze be bougt aȝem of
 ȝoe weyn lynyge of fader
 tradicion. bote by pe pauce
 blood. as pe lomb vnde fou
 lod & vnspottide crist ihu
 bifore knole copely bifore
 pe makyge of pe world for
 ȝou shewid i pe laste tymes
 for ȝou p by hy be feryful
 i god p reysed hy fro deed
 me & ȝaf to hy cielaſtate
 glouie p ȝoe fery & hope we
 re i god ze makyge chaſte
 ȝoe soules i obedienc of che
 rite i lme of brophede of
 eple herte loue ze to ge
 dre bifly. bode aȝem not of
 corruptible feed bote vnde
 ruptible. by pe word of quyle
 god. & dwellyge into wy
 oute ende for vche flesch
 hey & al pe glone of it.
 as a floure of hey pe hey

d'nyge op a ho flour fel
 don/ forsope pe word of pe
 lord dwellip i to wir oute
 ende/ Gopely pis is pe word
 pat is euangelized to zon/
Eherfore puttyge alwey
 al malice a al hyle
 a synnytiuous a enmyce
 a al detraction as nolt ge
 deide zonge childre. resonable
 wir oute hyle ouerte ze
 myt. p' it ze wage i to helpe
 yf nerpeles ze taffiden for
 pe lord is swete to who see
 goyng my a quyl sto. repued
 sopeh of me. forsope chosen
 of god a honoured a p' we
 slyt as quyl stones bey alone
 gnyldis spiritual houses.
 holy p' thod. forto offire spiri
 tual ooftris. or offryng accep
 table to god. by ihu est. for
 vshiche viz pe scripture hol
 dey/ loo y nthal putte i yon
 a ston heste corner stone.
 chosen plaouse/ a he p' nthal
 bylene i to hy nthal not be
 confoude/ p' fore hono' to
 you bylenyge. forsope to me
 not bylenyge. pe ston who
 vez buldysse repuede. pis is
 made i to pe hed of pe corner.
 a pe ston of offencion a ston
 of nlandre. to he p' afforde

by word. ney by leue i vshiche
 a pey ben putt// forsope
 ze ben a bynde chosen. byngly
 p' thod. holy folke. pepul of p'
 chalyngge y ze telle pe othies of
 hy p' clepide you fro derkenel
 ho i to ho wondurful hzt/
 pe vshiche stymme not pe pepul
 of god. pe vshiche not hanyng
 uity/ anoste dere y biseche you
 as alynges a pilgmes forto
 abstene you fro flesshly de
 sires. p' fyte agemes pe soule
 hanyng oure consaoun good
 amoge hepe me p' vpat viz
 p' pey bache a yuel tree
 of zon as of mysdoers pey
 hsholdyng zeon of good wa
 ke. glouefie god in pe dety
 of onstacion/ Be ze soget
 to coche creature of ma for
 god. en to pe byng as p' al
 let or more wozpe i state ep
 to duke as sent of hy to pe
 venance of mysdois or myl
doers forsope to pe p' hys
 of good dedis or good men/
 for so is pe wille of god pat
 ze doying wel make pe con
 fymyngesse of compridet
 me forto be donbe/ as fre
 me a not as hanyng fro
 pe lenyng of malice. bote
 as pe seruantis of god/

honoure ze alle me lone ze ha
 pphede dreed ze god/ make ze eys
 honorable/ Seruantis be ze
 soget in al drede to lordes.
 not only to good & trewe bote
 to trauantis/ forsope pis is
 grace. yf for consuetude of god
 ony ma suffren oules suf
 frys comustly/ Soperly what
 grace is it yf ze synnge
 & sufferend sufferer. pis is
 grace anetis god/ forsope in
 pis pis ze ben clepid for est
 suffrid for us. lauyng. le
 myge to you ensample pat ze
 folke pe steppis of hy/ pe whi
 che dide not synne. ney gile
 is fonde i his moup/ whiche
 Whene he was cursed anshid
 not/ whene he suffrid he
 manasside not/ Soperly he by
 toke hy to a ma demyge hy
 comustly. Whiche he hy self
 suffrid or bar oure synnes
 i his body on a tre p we ded
 to synne hne to ruzimines
 by whos wounde ze be heled
 forsope ze were as they er
 ryng/ bote ze ben wistide not
 to pe shepberde & bishop
 of 30c soules. L. m.

And a wyne be soget
 to hire hse bondes/
 pat yf ony bilene not to

pe word. by pe consuetudon of
 wyne. be pey womi wy on
 to word by gold pye in drede
 zoure holy consuetudon/ Of pe
 whiche be not wy outen
 fery. curious ourmyge of
 heer or doys aboute of gold
 or ourmyge of clopyng of west
 metis. bote pilk pat is pe
 hnd ma of harte i vncorrupt
 bilite of quete & myld spi
 rit. pe whiche is riche in pe
 fyt of god/ Soperly so a holy
 wyne hoppyge in god not i
 ournemet of clopyng ourne
 de he self soget to here oth
 ne hse bondes. as sara obey
 ede to Abraham clepyd hy
 lord/ of Whome ze be dnytre
 wel doynge & not dredynge
 ony pturbacion// Als me
 to gedir Abellyng op stene
 zennys honoure to pe womis
 vessel or body. As to pe moe
 delk as & to euene eyes
 of grace of hys p zoure p
 eris be not letide/ forsope
 in fery alle of oon vndur
 stodyng or wille i phere
 be ze pacet. londes of fra
 tinte maful mylde meke
 not yeldynge yuel for yuel
 ney eys for anfig. bote
 azeimward blessinge for i

his ying ze ben clepid p^r ze
 welde blessinge by heritage
 fforþe he pat wole lone
 hys & see good daies cōfress
 ne his tinge fro yuele & his
 tipes p^r pey spoken no gy
 le/ Soperly holre we fro yuel
 & w good. seke he pees & ph
 tely sue it/ for ye no of pelord
 on iust me/ & pe enis of hyu
 i to ye piers of hem/ fforþe
 pe chere of pelord on me do
 ynge yuele yinges And who
 is it p^r shal noye to zoll
 yf ze schule be gooðe fueris
 wute & n^t ze suffre ony p^r
 for rēdisnes ze be bleside
 Soperly drede ze not pe drede
 of he pat ze be not distour
 blede/ fforþe halewe ze pe
 lord est. 7 zone hertis eide
 more redy to satisfaccion
 to wehe mā axide zou of p^r
 feip & hope p^r is in zou. bot
 wip mylidenesse & drede ha
 myze good consience p^r
 p^r p^r p^r pey bacnde of z
 pey be confounde pe which
 chālenge falsch zoe gooðe
 collaccion in est. Soperly it
 is bettur yf pe wille of
 zed wold ze wel doye for
 to suffre. ven yuel doying
 for & est ones drede for oe

synes. he iust for winnst p^r
 he schulde offire to god usma
 de weð soperly i flesche for
 sope made quyt i spirit in
 which p^r is to he p^r were
 closid to god i p^rid. he comy
 set i spirit p^rid. pe which
 were on tyme onbilensful
 which pey abide pe patience
 of god i pe daies of noe. which
 pe arke was made i which
 a folwe pat is to seyn eite
 sonles be made saaf by wat
 pe which p^r is & baptem of
 hich forme makep us saaf
 not p^ruttyge alwey of flesh
 of fulpes. bote pe asyng
 of good consience in to god/
 by pe azemrisyng of oure
 lord ihu est pat is i pe rzt
 half of god. he swoltyng
 deep. pat we schulde be ma
 de enes of eilelastyng hys
 he gon i to heuene. angelis
 & polberis & dūes made
 soget is to hy le. m.

Herfore crist suffryz
 in flesch. & be ze ar
 med by pe same penitēce
 for he p^r suffrede i flesche
 cesip fro synes. pat he h
 ue not noll to pe d. fies
 of me. bote to pe d. ue
 god p^r is more of tyme in

fleisch. Sopely pe tyme passide
 is ynolde to pe wille of heven
 me to be endide. pe which
 walkide i lecherie i desir
 i myche day byge of Wyn. ofte
 etyng. dy byges & onlesful
 worsthipes of ydolis. i which
 now pey ben aferd. i which
 pis pey wondre zouto gedir
 not renygge i to pe same con
 fusyon of lecherie blasphem
 unge. pe which schule yue
 reson to hy p^ris redy forto
 deme pe quike & pe dede. So
 pely & for pis pis to dar mo
 it is enagelized. vat pey be
 demed sopely op me i fleisch.
 Sopely vat pey lyue op god
 i spirit. for so pe ende of
 alle pyges shal nenge. And
 so be ze prudent & wake ze
 i p^ris. bifore alle pyges
 for so pe hanngre charite iche
 to ope i zoi. Gylt. al gatis las
 tise. for charite keyle pe un
 tande of cyues. holdyge hos
 pitalite to gedir wy outen
 zruachyge. vche man as he
 releyne grace mynystryng
 it i to vche ope as gode dys
 penteris of pe monyfolde
 grace of god. zif ony man
 speker. speke he as pe word
 of god. zif ony man mynistryng of god

as of vchi which god mynys
 trey. p^r god be honoured in
 alle pyges by ihu est onre
 lord. to whome is stone &
 lordshipe i to worldes of wyl
 des tyme. yoste dore fyle
 ze so i pils. mage i ferno p^r
 is made to zoi to temptaon.
 as ony of nebe pis falle to
 zoi. bote ze counge to pe pas
 sion of est hanep ioye. vat
 & ze sladyng wy oute for
 hane ioye i pe reuelacion of
 his stone. zif ze be dyspised
 i pe name of est. ze schule be
 blesside. for p^r p^ris of pe d^r
 & glorie of god & pe spirit
 vat is his resten i zoi. se
 sope no ma of zold suffre as
 a massier or pef or tursere
 or desirer of ope moneys pis.
 for sope zif as a csten man
 shame he not. Sopely sh
 nse. be god i pis name. for
 tyme is p^r dom bygyne of
 godis hono. Sopely zif first
 of us. what ende of hem
 p^r bylene not to pe gospel.
 And sopely zif a mst ma
 vnepe shal be saued. vche
 re schule pe temptaonse ma
 & hyner appere. And so &
 pey p^r suffren op pe wille
 of god. zif ony man mynistryng of god

in good dedis to pe feipful ma
ter of uouit // *1st 8.*

Therfore y ene elder lise
che ye eldre men pat ben
izon & y witnesse of eſus pas
ſion. Whiche & conynere of pe
ſtore p^ris to be ſhelld i tyme
to comyge. Rede ze pe flod of
god p^ris zion p^rueryge not con
ſtreynyng bote Willefully op
god/ not for gte of foule Wy
myge bote Wilfultly ney as ha
myge lord ſhipe i pe clergie
bote made forme or enſample
of pe flod & of m^rit. & wſhe
pe pnce of chepherdis ſhal
appere. ze ſhulde reſteyne
pe v^reluable corone of glo
rie. Also ze zonge me bep ſe
zet to elder me/ forſope alle
ſhelbe ze to gedre mekenesse
for pe lord Wip ſtondey prou
de me/ forſope he zenep gte
to mek me/ p^rore be ze me
kide condur pe myztz honde
of god. pat he reiſe zion i pe
day of conſtacion/ ze caſt gte
i to hy al zonne biſyneſſe
for to hy is cure of zion/ ze
ze ſbre & wale ze. for zonne
aduſſarie pe denel. as a royn
hon zop aboute ſechyge
wſho he ſhal denoure/ to
wſhonne them ſtonde ze ſtre

in ſep. wrytze pe ſame paſſi
on ſeto be to pe iſte. zoe brop
hede p^ris i pe World. Forſore
god of al gte p^r clepide m to
his eidelastyng & ſtore zion
on ſtryge a luytel. he ſhal
p^rforme ſhal conferme & ſhal
make gad/ to hym gtorpe &
lord ſhipe m to worldis of
Worldis amē. // By ſiluan
feipful brop to zion as y de
me y wroot ſhortly. biſe ch
ze & witneſſis p^ris for to be
pe dre gte of god i wſhe
ze ſtonde/ pe church pat is
zederide i babiloyne gretey
zon Wel & garkus my ſone/
Grete ze wel to zedre m hab
cos grace to zion alle p^r be
m ariſt Amen. // *Here endy
pe firſte piſtel of petre &
bigynnyng pe ſeconde. 1st I*

Symon petre ſer
uant & apoſtle of iſhu
Ch^r to he pat han
taken wip us pe ene myche
ſep i r^ritbiſneſſe of oure
god & ſamzonne iſhu ariſt
grace to zion & pees be ful
filld i pe knowyge of o^r
lord iſhu Ch^r hon alle p^rigz
of his godliche v^rm p^r ben
to h^r & pite be zene to us
by pe knowyge of hym p^r

ende

elynde us fro his olde glorie
 & wtu by wch he gaf to us
 moſte a p'hoiſe biſteſtes. y^t
 by peſe viſes ze ſhulden be
 made felawes of godes kinde
 fleſſe pe corrupcion of y^t
 couetiſe y^t is y^e woold for
 ſore pe andr ber yge al aue
 myniſtre i zoſe ſerp overtu.
 ſopely i oſne ſcience. i thew
 ſopely abſtinence i abſtinence
 forſore paaſe. i paaſe ſore
 by pite. In pite ſopely lone
 of biſphed. forſore in lone
 of biſphede. Charite forſo
 pe zif peſe be wip you & ou
 come. yey ſhul not ordey
 ne you coude wip wip outen
 fruyt i pe knowys of oure
 laſt ihu eſt forſore to wch
 peſe be not redy. he is blyſ
 & by hond tempryng. reſtey
 nyge freueneſſes of ze pur
 zys of his olde eſpaſſio.
 Wherefore briſen more biſte
 ze y^t by good werkes ze ma
 ke zoſe clepyge eteyne. ſope
 by ze doysge puſe viſes. i
 hulle not ſyne ony tyme.
 forſore muſ pe entrynge i
 to ende laſtyge kyngdome
 of oure laſt ihu eſt a ſuny
 onre ſhal be myniſtride
 to you plenteuouſly for wch

che piſ y ſhal bygyne for
 to monette you ende more
 of peſe p'mges. And ſopely
 y wole you vntyngeſ con
 fermed i pſent tremp. ſep
 pe y deme miſt. hou longe i
 am i piſ talkiade for to rep
 ſe you i monette. y eteyne
 ſe pe purtyge of my taber
 nacle is oſt up y oure
 laſt ihu eſt. hap ſignefied
 to me. forſore i ſhal ze
 werk a ofte for to haue you
 aſt my dep y^t ze do pe my
 d of he. ſopely we not
 ſynge onliſe tales ſa ma
 d knowe to you pe oſne
 pſtence of oure laſt ihu
 eſt. bore made by holden
 of his gretneſſe. ſopely he
 takys of god pe fader. he
 no & glorie. ſuche maner
 wote oſiden ſou to hy ſo
 pe grette glorie. piſ is my
 ſone ſoned i wch i haue
 pleſid to me. here ze hy.
 And we herde qns wote
 brouzt to fro heuene wch
 we were wip hy in pe hyl
 ſil. And we han a ſadder
 word of pe apſete to wch
 che ze zemyge tent done
 wel. as to a lantern ze
 nyge hzt i a derk place.

til pe day bisyne fortozene
 hzt. & pe day sterre spryge
 a zoure hertis firste undur
 stondynge vis vis. pat iche
 pphete of ispte. is not ma
 de by your replacoiu for
 sove pphete is not broughte
 to. by manes wille. bote pe
 holy me of god is purid wip
 pe holy gost spake. L. 11.

Forsope y were a false
 pphete of pe pepul as
 in you shule be maistris lie
 res. y shule bryge i seais
 of pdaon & pey denye ill
 lord y bougte hz above ludyng
 to be self gasti pdaon & mony
 shule she here lecheres by
 whiche ye wey of treme shal
 be blasphemid & pey shule
 marchandise of you in to co
 uertise by feyned wordes.
 to whis dom now sityme cehy
 not. & pe pdaon of he nap
 per not. forsope if god spa
 red not to augehis. bote by
 to be he to be turmetide na
 we wip bondes of helle i to
 helle for to be septe i to dom.
 & sparid not to pe firste
 world. bote septe goe pe
 entype before goer of vnt
 wisnesse hynge i pe dyl
 me or gret flog to pe wals

of vnpitouse me. & he dry
 ynge i to poudre pe citres of
 me of sodom & of me of gomoi
 danyd by tynge apsdon.
 puttyge ensample of he pat
 were to doys ynel & delid
 ed in st lath opssid fro pe wrog
 & esid me. & lecherouse coupa
 ciou. Gopely i ent & heryge
 he was iust dwellyge aneth
 he y fro day i to day tmeti
 de w wicked werke a iust
 soule pe lard knew for to de
 huer pitouse me of tceptan
 on. Gopely for to bepe wicked
 me i to pe day of dome. for
 to be turmetide. for so more
 he y walke afe fleint i to
 uentys of conclenesse & dis
 pise lord shyppe. boold de
 & not for to bryge i settes
 plesyge to be blasphemye
 where augehis. Whene pey
 be more i strengpe & othe
 bere not agetyng he pe exe
 crable or esid dom. pe se fore.
 by as conresonable beftis by
 deli i to capaiou or talke
 i to dep blasphemye i iuse
 pyges y pey knowe not
 shule pische i hie corrup
 aon resteynge pe hure
 of vnrzt wisnesse. sessige
 pe voluptees of dry delices

of defoulyng & of weine wyng de
 lites flowyng & hure festis do
 yf lecherie wyng you hanynge
 yeu ful of anoynt & conceyng
 trespas dysseyng onstidfast
 soules. hanynge pe herte ex
 ased i conceit. pe conces of
 ansynge forsakyng ryt wey
 errede. synge pe wey of balt
 of chorde pe weiche louede pe
 hynre of wickednes. Sopely
 he hade corrupcion of his wo
 denes. a double bestond zok
 opely wyng conis of ma. for
 bed pe wyllyngdam of pe aphe
 te. puse be wellis witten
 wat & clondes daym w' whi
 llyng wyndis to whid pe pille
 myst of derthness is reserved
 Sopely pey opelyng i pride
 of cranyte dysseyne in desires
 of fleshe of lecherie he pat
 alatel stape. pe weiche sy
 nyng i erio. belyng liberte
 to he wehene pey be seruauit
 of corrupcion. Sopely of whom
 ony ma is ondoine. of hy &
 he is seruauit. forsope yf ma
 forsakyng pe defoulynges of
 pe world & enolpyng of onre
 lard & sanyoure ihu est este
 sone & wlapnd i puse be on
 come. pe last pyges be ma
 de wase to he pe pe former.

Sopely it was bet to he for to
 not knowe pe wey of ryght
 nesse. pen for to the aym af
 pe enolpyng. fro p' holy maide
 ment p' was by take to he
 Sopely pille pms of orey p
 ille. bifel to he an hond tur
 ned aym to his vomyte &
 castig vp & a solw waschere
 pe waldyng & folow of dey
 or fen.

To y write to you p'is se
 conde pille i weiche
 fure zoure clere soule & mo
 nestig to gedur. p' ze be my
 deful of pe wordis p' y before
 seide of holy aphe. & of pe
 mandementis of holy apostlo
 of pe laud sanyo. first wryt
 p'is p'is p' m pe laste dines.
 illusoures & stoures. shule
 come i disert goyng af' hure
 olone conertyges. seips whae
 is blyest & connyge of hy for
 sope syde fadres slepten.
 so alle pyges laste fro pe by
 synng of creature. Sopely it
 sarey he wyllyng p'is pyng
 p' heuenes were bifore & pe
 erpe of watir & by watir
 bepyng. by godis word. by whi
 che pyges pat alle shold cle
 fide pene p'istid. forsope pe
 heuenes p' nob be & pe erpe

by pe same word put azen ben
 kept to fyre i to pe day of dnm
 & pdaon of owtipitounse men/
 fforsope ze moste dere o pris
 sare zoun not / or be not conuolde
 for o day andis god as a pou
 send zenis: & a pouland zenis
 as oo day / pe laed tarien not
 his bihest as some zesse bote
 he dop paiently for zoun not wil
 linge any for to pisthe bot alle
 facto tnen azen to penance/
 fforsope pe day of pe laed shal
 come as a prief i whiche hene
 nes wip gret hire shule passe/
 Sopely elemētis shule be af
 solued by here fforsope pe erpe
 & alle werkes p' den i it shi
 le be bent / p'ore whene pe
 ringes shule be dissolued.
 whē man me it by honer zoun
 for to be i holy lūynges & pitee
 abidyge & hynge i to pe co
 mynge of pe day of oure laed
 ihu est by whome heuenes
 brengge shule be dissolued.
 & elemētis by brengge of fier
 shule faile / Sopely we abid
 ay his bihest / nelle heuenes
 & nelle erpe i whiche pris
 ze moste dere abidyge pese
 niges. hise fir to be fonde
 to hy i pees conspoud. and
 unfoulide & demex pe longe

abidyge of oure laed. zoe helpe
 as & oure moste derelbope
 poule wrot to zoun ay wysd
 xene to hy as & i alle epistho
 opelyse i he of pese niges
 i whiche be some garde p'
 xes i vnderstondyge pe wsh
 che onwylse & onstable me
 deprand. as & ope p'ptures
 to hire ołene pdaon / p'fore
 brysen before wityge kepep
 zoe nlt / lest ze onlad ordise
 ned by erro' of onwylse men
 falle alker fro zoe ołene
 sadnesse / fforsope waxe ze
 i grace & knowlyge of oē
 laed ihu est & lanyo / to hym
 stome & nolt & i to pe day of
 enelastyngnesse / Amen

Here endy pe secounde pistal
 of petre. & here bigynney pe
 firste pistal of Jon apostle. **I**

Whiche pms was fro
 pe bigynnyng whiche we
 herde. whiche we salbe wip
 oure ne. whiche we bihulde.
 & oure hondes wende to ge
 dir of pe word of hyf & pe
 hyf is shewid & we callen
 & we witenesse & wllid to
 zoun enelastyge hyf pat was
 andis pe fadim & apperide
 to no / p'fore p' pris p' we
 salbe & herde we tellen to

30it þā ze hane felassshipen
 us & oē felassshipen be wirp
 fadir & his sone ihu est & þis
 þing we writte to you þā ze hane
 ioye & ȝoē ioye be ful & þis is
 þe tellyng þā we herden of hy
 & telle to you for god is lȝt
 & ony derfnesshe be not i hy
 nif we schuld seie for we han
 felassshipen wirp hy & we wa
 dre i derfnesshe. We lien & we
 do not trempen. Soþerly nif we
 walken lȝt as & he is i lȝt
 we han felassshipen to god
 & þe blood of ihu his sone
 cleaseth us fro al synne. nif we
 schuld seie for we han not
 synne. We clyf disseynen us.
 & trempen is not i us. nif we
 knowleche oure synnes. he is
 feyful & iust. þat he forȝe
 ne to us oure synnes & cleaseth
 us fro al wickednes. nif we
 schuld seie for we han not
 synnes we make hy a lyeri
 & his word is not in us.
 A **M**iltel sones y write
 to you þese þingz þā ze sy
 ne nȝt. hote nif ony mā schal
 syne we ha aduokete anetis
 þe fadir ihu est iust & he is
 helyȝge for oē synnes. soþerly
 not only for oē. hote also for
 al þe world. & i þis þing

we write for we han knowen
 hy. nif we kepe his comande
 mentis. he þā seip hy fæ to
 hane knowe god. & kepe not
 his comandementis is a lyer
 & trempen is not i hy. Soþerly
 we kepe his word. Jhu in
 hy is þæt he garte. In þis
 þing we write for we be i hym.
 nif we schuld be þæt i hy be
 þat seip hy fæ to diuelli. &
 & he oþer fæ to walken as he
 walkede. goste dene y write
 to you not a newe mandement.
 hote þe olde mandement þat
 ze haðe fro þe biggynge. þe
 olde mandement is þe word þā
 ze herde. & fæstene y writte to
 you a newe mandement. þā is
 trewe & in hy & in you for der
 fnesshe passide & oþer lȝt not
 schynen. he þat seip hy fæ to
 be lȝt & hateþ his broþer. is der
 fnesshe til to nȝt. he þā loueþ his broþer.
 dwelleþ i lȝt & schynen is not
 to hy. soþerly he þā hatyþ his broþer
 þā is derfnesshe & derfnesshe
 standen & hote not. & hȝdur
 he ȝop for derfnesshe. þā is sȝm
 & de his eyen. lȝtel sonen y
 writte to you for ȝoē synnes. þen
 forȝe to you for his name.
 Hadris y write to you for ze
 han knowen hy. þā is fæstene

zonge me & write to zou for
 ze ha[n]t o[n]come pe wicked &
 write to zou i[n] futes for ze ha[n]
 knolle pe fadir & write to zou
 zonge me or mydyl age for ze be
 fudge & pe word of god dwelleth
 i zou & ze o[n]come pe wicked
 fal ze lone pe world nerp po
 vices & be i pe world i[n]f omg
 ma loney pe world pe charite
 of pe fadir is not i h[er] for whi
 al pis p[er] is i pe world is coue
 tise of flesche & couetise of
 ye & pride of h[er] whiche is
 not of pe fadir: bote it is of
 pe world & pe world shal pas
 se & pe couetise of it: sope
 ly he p[er] dop pe wille of god
 dwelleth i to h[er] oute ende
 my h[er]el sones pe laste son
 re is & as ze han herde for
 an[ist] comen nolt monye
 antestis be made wher of
 we write for it is pe laste
 sonne: pey were fap fro
 us bote pey were not of
 us for whi zif pey haden
 be of us sope ly pey haden
 dwelleth wip us: bote p[er] pey
 be knolle for pei be not of
 us: but we han conuocion
 of pe holy gost & han knolle
 alle vices & wrote to zou
 as to me conknollynge

weipe bote as to knollynge it
 And for vche lesyng is not
 treupe: who is a h[er] no bote
 pis & demyep for is he not
 ch[er] pis is an[ist] p[er] demyep
 pe fadir & pe sone: sope ly
 vche p[er] demyep pe sone: nerp
 hay pe fadir: forsope he p[er]
 knolle chey pe sone: hay &
 pe fadir: pat pis p[er] ze herde
 fro pe biggynge dwelleth zou
 for zif it shal dwelle zou
 pe whiche ze herde at pe
 biggynge & ze shule dwelle
 i pe sone & i pe fadir: &
 pis is pe azemblyest: p[er] he
 bishp[er] to us adela syng
 h[er] & y wrote vese p[er]mes
 to zou of he p[er] disteynen
 zou & pe anoyntige pe whi
 che ze resteyuede of hym
 dwelleth i zou: And ze ha not
 nede pat omg ma techen zou
 bote as his anoyntige techen
 zou of alle vices & it is treue
 & it is not lesyng: & as
 he tangte zou vche & ze i
 h[er] And nolt ze litel f[er] no
 dwelleth i h[er] p[er] whiche he
 shal appere we hane trust
 & be not confounde of h[er]
 i his conp[er]ge zif ze write
 for he is iust: write ze for
 & vche p[er] dop righte fies

is born of hy 10. 11.

Se ze what man charite
pe fadir gaf to us. p^r we
be named pe sones of god & be
for mo p^r pe world knowe
not us. for it knowe not hy
goste dere. now we be pe so
nes of god & it apperide
not what we schuld be. we
wite for what he schal ap
pere we schuld be liche to
hy for we schuld see hym
as he is. And we ma pat
hay mo hope i hy make hy
all holy as & he is holy. we
ma p^r doop syne. dop & we
kides. & syne is wicked
nes. And ze wite for he appe
ride pat he schulde do alwey
synes. & syne is not i hy
we ma pat dwellen i hy
syne not. & we p^r syne
seep not hy ney knowe
hy. lytill sones no man
suffre ze. he p^r dop rite
wisnes is inst. as & he is
inst. he p^r dop syne is of pe
denel for pe denel syne
at pe bysynge. In pis p^r
pe sone of god apperide pat
he wold pe werke of pe
denel. we ma p^r is borne
of god dop not syne. for pe
seed of god dwellen in hy.

& he may not syne for he is
born of god. In pis p^r pe
sones of god ben knowen. &
pe sones of pe fend. we
man pat is not inst is not
of god. & he pat lonep not
his brop for mo is pe teller
p^r ze herde at pe bysynge
pat ze loue we ope. not as
cayn p^r was of pe yuel &
olow. his brop. & for what
p^r olow. he hy for his
werkis were yuel. sope
his bropes inst. Writen
n^r ze wondre if pe wold
hate ze. we wite for we be
tillatide fro dop to hy for
we loue brisen. he p^r lonep
not dwellen in doop. we
ma pat havep his brop.
is a maqueller. And ze wite
for we ma fere hy not.
endlastinge of dwellinge
in hy. In pis p^r we han
knowe pe charite of god for
he putide his soule pat is
for us. And we olwe for
to putte soules for brisen.
he p^r schal have pe outp^r
ce of mo world & schal se
brop for to have nece. & schal
clase his entranles fro hym.
hou dwellen pe charite of
god i hy. g^r litle sones.

10. 12.

ende

loue we not in word ne p^r tinge.
bote i wele & treupe in p^ro
ping we knowe for we ben of
treupe. And i ho we moueste
oure hertes for iif o^r herte
shal rep^rue us god is more
pen o^r herte & knowe alle
p^riges. Goste dere iif oure
herte shal not repreue us.
we han trust to god. And w^he
eile we shule aske. We shule
resteyue of hym for we kepe
his comandementis. & we
don po p^riges. pat be plesant
bfore hy. And is commande
met of hy. pat we beleuen
i pe name of his sone ihu
crist. & loue eche o^r as he iaf
best to us. & he iif kepe his
comandementis dwellip i hy
& he in hy. And pis ping we
wite for he dwellip in us
of pe spirit whome he iaf
to us. C. III.

Moste dere. swylze beleue
to vche spirit. bote
p^rene i spiritis iif pei ben
of god. for mome falshe p^rhe
tis wente oute i to pe world.
In pis pis pe spirit of god
is knowe. vche spirit pat
knowlechey ihu crist. for to ha
ue come i fleshe is of god.
& vche spirit p^r assoluey
or fordoy ihu is not of god.

& pis is antest of knowynge
herde for he come. And iif
nole he is i pe world. ze his
tel sones be of god. & ze han
oucome hy. for he pat is
son is more pen he p^r in pe
world. pey be of pe world.
p^rfore pey speken of pe wo
ld. & pe world herep hem.
we ben of god. he pat knowe
god herep us. he pat is not
of god herep not us. In pis
pis we knowe pe spirit of
treupe & pe spirit of errou.
goste dere loue we to gedir
for charite is of god. And vche
ma p^r loue his bro^r. is bo
re of god. & knowe god. he
pat loue not hap not chari
te ney knowe god. for god is
charite. In pis pis pe cha
rite of god apperide to us. for
god sente his oon biget
sone i to pe world. pat he shone w^he
hy hy. in pis ping is charite.
not as we hadde loued god.
bote for he firste louede us
& sente his sone helpyge
for oure synes. ze moste de
re iif god louede us. & we
owte forto loue vche o^r.
No man saly enen god. iif
we loue to gedir. god dwel
lip in us. & pe charite of
hy is p^rfyte in us. In pis

pyng we knollen for we dwell
 i hy & he in us for of his spi
 rit he gaf to us And we sette
 & witnessen for pe fadir sente
 his sone sanyoure of pe world
 who eile nshal knowleche for
 ihe is pe sone of god god dwel
 lep i hy & he in god & we han
 knowe & bileue to pe charite
 pat god hap i us god is cha
 rite & he p^r dwellip i charite
 dwelllep i god & god in hy
 In pis myng is pe p^rite charite
 of god wyng us pat we haue eft
 i pe day of dome for as he is &
 we be i pis world / word is not
 i charite bote p^rite charite se
 dep our drede for drede hap pey
 ne forsope he pat dreedep is
 not p^rite i charite p^rone loue
 we god for he former louede
 us. if any ma nshal see
 for y loue god & nshal hate
 his brop^r he is a lyer / Sope
 he pat louep not his brop^r
 Whiche he seep. hon may he
 loue god Whome he seep not
 And we hau pis p^rcept of god
 pat he pat louep god loue
 his brop^r. *Le. 13. 34.*

Whe ma pat bileuep p^r
 ihe is eft is boie of god
 And we ma p^r louep hy p^r
 sendep. louep hy pat is born
 of hy In pis pyng we knolle sone
 pis is pe witnessinge

for we loue pe childe of god.
 Whene we loue god & his
 comandementis / Sope pis
 is charite of god. p^r we kepe
 his comandementis & his
 mandementis ben not greden
 se for al pyng pat is born
 of god outcomep pe world
 And pis is pe sone pat
 outcomep pe world. & seep
 forsope who is it p^r oile
 mey pe world no but he p^r
 Gyleuep for ihe is pe sone of
 god / pis is ihe eft p^r come by
 watr & blood / not in wat
 onely. bote i wat & blood &
 pe spirit is he pat witness
 sip for eft is treupe for pe
 ben pat zeue witnessyng
 i heile pe fadir. pe word &
pe sone & pe holy gost & pe
 pre ben oon / And pe ben
 p^r zeue witnessyngz i erpe
 pe spirit watr & blood
 & pese pre be oon / if we
 resteyne pe witnessyngz
 of me pe witnessyngz of
 god is more for pis is pe
 witnessyngz of god pat is
 more for he witnesside of
 his sone he p^r bileuep into
 pe sone maky hy a lyer for
 he bileuep not i to witness
 hyge p^r god witnesside of his

for god ȝaf to us euilastynge
lyf and pis lyf is in his so-
ne he p^r hap pe sone hap &
lyf he p^r hap not pe sone of
god hap not lyf // I write to
you pels ringes pat ȝe write
for ȝe han euilastynge lyf pe
whiche bilene in pe name
of godis sone and pis is pe
trust p^r we han to god for
what eile ȝig we schulen
asse op his wille he schal
heren us & we write for he
heren us what eile ring
we schule aske we write
for we han pe assizes whiche
we aske of hy he pat woot
his broþ for to syne & syne
not to pe dep. ask he & lyf
schal be ȝeue to hy synge
not to dep. pis is a synne to
ȝeue not for it y ȝeue pat
any mā þis othe wickednes
is syne & þis is syne to
dep we write for othe mā
p^r is boen of god. synen
not. bote pe genacion of
god lipep hy & pe wickis
touchen hy not we write
for we ben of god & al pe
world is put i wicked and
we write for pe sone of god
came & cloped fleth for cause
of us & suffred & roos aȝen

fro ded me & toke us to & ȝaf
to us wit p^r we knowe ȝig
god & be i pe drey sone of hy
pis is drey god & euilastynge
lyf lital sones kepe ȝe ȝon fro
synnlares or conentise and
**Here endep pe firste mistel
of Jon & bigynep pe secounde.** **I**

I he elder man to pe pe
chosen lady & to hire
childre pe whiche ȝ done in
treupe and not y aloone.
bote & alle me p^r knowe ten
pe for pe treupe p^r dwellep i
ȝon & wip ȝon schal be in to
wip our ende grace be wip
ȝon in ȝe & pees of god pe fadir
and of ihu crist pe sone of pe
fadir i treupe & charite y
ioyede ful myche for y fond
of my sones ȝonge i treupe
as we requyede mandemet
of pe fadir and now y þe
pe lady not as writynge
anewwe mandemet to pee bot
p^r p^r we haue at pe bigynys
pat we loue othe ope and pis
is charite p^r we walke op his
mandemetis / Sopely piore
comandemet p^r as ȝe haue
at pe bigynys i hy walke
ȝe for mony assynens we
te out in to pe world whiche
knowleche not ihu crist for to

hane come in fleisch/ pis is
disseyner & antest/ sezezon
silf. leste ze lesen pe pyges
pat ze han wrought. bote pat
ze resteyne ful mede. Wip
ze pat oche man p^t god a
wey & dweller not i pe teching
of est. Hay not god/ he p^t dwel
ler i pe techyge hay & pe so
ne & pe fadur. / zif ony ma
comer to zon & briger to not
pis techyge nyl ze resteyne
hy i to hous. ney ze schule sue
to hy hail. Copeh he p^t oenp to
hy hail commey Wip his y
uel werkes. Looy bifore seide
to zon. pat ze be not confon
dite i pe day of ourre lord ihu
crust. / y schyge mo pyges
to write to zon. Wolde not
hy p^t cheymn & enke. Copeh
y hope me to comyge to zon.
& y speke moup to moup. y
zonne ioye be ful/ pe dwyng
of pi suster sone Chosne
greden pec wel/ pe grace
of god Wip pec amē.

*Here endy pe secunde pistel
of Jon & his yuel pe prydre*

In he elter man to agan
us mooste dere. Whome
y loue i treupe/ goste dere
of alle pyges. y make p^tere
pec forto entre & fare wel
fully. as y soule dwyng fully.

y ioyed ful greth. brisen. co
myns & witnessyng beis
to y treupe. as von Walke
in treupe. y haue not more
grace of mys pyges. penne
p^t y here my sones. for to wal
ke i treupe. / goste dere von
sof fary fully. What eue y wa
chest in to brisen. & pis pyng
in to pilgmes. pe wylche zelde
Witnessyng to y charite i pe
snt of pec church. Whom von
Wel dynged ledet forp wryp
to god. Copeh for his name
pey wente forp no pyg talyge
of hepen me. y fore we ollen
to resteyne suche maner me
pat we be eue wechere of
treupe. / schulde haue writte
pauete to pe church. bote
pis diotrepes pat loney for
to bere p^tmaae i he restey
ney not us. for pis pyng
zif y schal come y schal mo
nefte his werkes. Whiche
he dop garryge or chidynge
i to us Wip yuel wordes
And as pise pyges ouffise
not to hy. ney he resteyney
brisen. & forbedey hem of
pe church. / goste dere nyl
ze sue yuel pyg. bote pat
pat is good pyg. he p^t dop
Wel is of god. he pat dop
yuel slep hy not. witness

synge is zolde to demetrye
of alle me & of trempett self
bote & we bere witnessynge
& y^e hast knowe for o^r witness
th^{is} is trewe y^e had mony p^{er}
ses for to write to pee bote y^e
wold not write to pee by enl
& pene / forsope y^e hope anon
for to see pee & we shuld speke
mouy to mony p^{er}es to pee
frendes grete ye wel Grete
you wel frende by name y^e
Here endy pe prid pistil of Jon
& by synne pe pistil of Judas

Judas servant of ihu ch^{rist}
bro^{ther} forsope of James to
pek loued y^e ben in god ye
fadir. & of ihu ch^{rist} kept & cle
ped. n^{ow} to you & pees & cha
rite be fulfilled / y^e othe dere
y^e may y^e al by synesse of wri
tyng to you of your comy helpe
hadde uede for to write to you y^e
inge for to stryue upon ye fer
ones bitaken of seyntes / sovelly
Owne p^{er}ely entred y^e tyme
were byfne write in to p^{er} dom
unprouise me outurmyng y^e e
of god i to lecherie & denyng
ye alone lordshipper & oure
lord ihu crist / forsope y^e wold
to gedir moneste you wrytynge
ony^e alle p^{er}es / for ihu sayng
his pepul of ye lond of egipt
ye secunde tyme loste he y^e by
lened not / sovelly anghel y^e

kept not his p^{er}acles. Gote
for loka his hous. he reservede
i to dome of greet god i enen
lastyng bondes vnder drecnes
And soom & gomoz & wryt col
tid atees on hichy man dyng
fornycasoun & goyde alwy af
tir o^r flesch. he made enstat
ple susteynyng peyne of enl
lastyng fury. Also & peles vat
sefoule sovelly ye flesch for so
ye blaffeme maeste / w^{hen}e
ynchael archangel disturbyng
wry. ye deuyl. frof of gonyso
body. he was not hardy for to
rene to me of blaffemyng bote
fate ye lord comaunde to pee
forsope p^{er}ely blaffeme. what
eile p^{er}es ye sovelly conknowe
en / forsope what eile p^{er}es ye
han knowe. Syndaly as tonbe
bestes in yest. pey he corrupt
wo to he y^e wente ye wey
of Oaym. & by erro of baltha.
formede be nched out. & p^{er}ist
de i ye azen synge of chore / ye
he be i hure metis fulpes. fel
teynge to gedir. wry oute drede
fedyng he eekie clowde w^{hen}e
watur y^e be born aboute of ye
wydes. herueste trees wry ou
te frumt. elbies ted hante up
by ye rote wallies. y^e ye wiler
see. froyng oute hure co. fustons
erryng. sterres. to whiche ye
tepest of drecness is kept i to
wry oute ende / forsope enot
ye seniepe fro dia / p^{er}shed
of yest ovyngge. lo ye lord co
mey in his holy poustandes.

of red me & pnce of byres of erpe
 ye whiche loured us & washed us
 fro all synes i his blood & made
 us kyngdom & pntis to god & to his
 fadir to his stone & spire in to
 wordes of worldis amē lo he
 comey wip cloude & eche ye
 nhal se hit & pei p' puzelen or
 felle hit & al pe kyngedis of
 erpe schule wele hem cist
 on hit & he amē / I am alphas
 o pe bypnyge & endyge seip
 pe lord god p' w' & p' was & pat
 is to comye almyty / I loonze
 hos & prener i tchilacou &
 kyngdom & pance i tchilacou
 i an yle p' as clep'd patthmas
 for pe word of god & witnessse
 of ihu / I was i spirit i pe sonday
 & I herde aft' me a gret vois
 as of a troupe seipge / p' vis p'
 you seest write i boke & sende
 to seue churcheis p' be i ahe
 to efesus to Smyrna & pga
 mus & natra & sardis & fil
 delia & laodaa & i tene p'
 I schulde se pe vois p' spak
 wip me & p' ned say seue
 candilstikes of gold & ipe my
 del of seue golde candilstikes
 aligh to pe sone of ma clpid
 w' a long p'thy cloy & before
 and at pe tens wip a golden
 swel / sovely pe heed of his
 heeis were white as white
 wolles & as snow & pe yef
 hi as flame of fier & his
 feet lich to drosse of golde

as i a brenyng chymney / &
 pe vois of hy as pe vois of
 many watris / & he had i his
 rythond seue sterris & a
 swerd sharpe on bope sides
 wete oute of his mony / & his
 face as pe sone rhymp i his
 dnu & whane I hade see hy
 y fel don at his feet as ded
 & he puttde his ryt half
 on me seipge / my p' drede /
 am pe firste & pe laste & I
 am a hye & I was ded & lo I
 am hye i to wordes of wo
 ldes & I haue keyes of dep &
 holle / p'ore write p' whiche
 pizes you hast y seipge and
 whiche be & whiche bishonep
 for to be don aft' yese pizes
 pe mystake of seue sterris wh
 che y' fast i my ryt half &
 seue golde candilstikes / pe se
 ne sterris be angelis of seue
 churcheis & seue candilstikes
 be seue churcheis

And to pe angel of pe churche
 of efesus write you / yese in
 zes seip ge p' holden seue sterris
 & his ryt half / pe whiche walkep
 i pe myddil of seue golde candil
 stikes I woot py werkis & enail
 & in pance & for p' maist not
 susteyne tuel me & p' hast teptid
 or assared be p' one he self for to
 be apostle & ben not & you
 hast fonde be heris & p' hast
 pance & p'
 hast susteyned for my name &
 failedest not / but I haue ge
 nes pee seue pizes / pat you

hast laste re furto charite & dole
 p' m' deful fro whences p' hast
 falle & do penance & do re fur
 ste werthens not. p' come so
 one to pec. & I nshal mone p'
 candlestike of his place no bot.
 p' nshal do penance bute pou
 haste mo good p' for p' haste
 dist pe de die of nicholantes
 re whiche & I hate he p' har
 ens here. wht pe opurit st
 hal owe to churchis to pe on
 comyge y nshal zene forto ete
 of pe tre of lyf p' is i padys
 of my god. And to pe angel
 of pe church of Smyrna.
 Write pou yese p'ges seip re
 firste & pe laste. p' was ded
 & lyuey. I wrote y tribulaa
 on & y pouert but pou art
 rich & y art blasfemed of ge
 p' cepe he p' st furto be ielous
 & be not but be pe synagoge
 of satanas. drede p' no p'ng
 of yese whiche p' art to suffing
 so pe duclis to sendyge su of
 ion iro p' sou. pat re be t'p'nd
 & ze nshul haue tribulaaon
 i ten dnces. be pou feyful
 al to pe dep. & y nshal zene
 to pec a cowlne of lyf. he pat
 hap ens here. what pe spi
 rit nshal sepe to churchis he
 pat nshal outdome. nshal not
 be hite of pe seconde dep. &
 to pe angel of pe church of
 psam. write y' yese p'ges
 seip he p' hap pe ewerd nshal
 pe on eche side. I wrote where
 p' dwellist where sete of sata
 nas is. & p' holdist my name

& denyst not my seip & in po my
 es. Antifas my feyful wtnes
 p' was slayn at ion where sa
 tanas dweller but I haue mo
 nes pec a felbe p'nges for pou
 hast me pe techyng holdige
 pe techyng of balaam pe whi
 che tange balac forto sende it
 landre bifore pe sones of israhel
 pat is to oere for to ete of sara
 fices of ydolis. & fier do form
 caon. so & pou hast me holdi
 ge pe techyng of nicholantes
 altho do p' penance if not y nshal
 come soone to pec. & I nshal fige
 wip he wip ewerd of my mony
 he p' hap ens here. what pe
 spirit nshal sue to churchis to
 pe oncomyge y nshal zene to hy
 angel mete hnd. & I nshal zene to
 hy a white stone & y pe stone a
 newe name write. pe whiche
 no ma woot no bote he p' taly
 And to pe angel of pe church
 of tiatura. write y' yese p'ges
 seip pe sone of god. pat hap
 yen as flamine of fier. & his
 feet lile to drosse of gold. I haue
 knolke y' yerkes & seip & chari
 te & mynyste or lunge & y p'ao
 ent & y' laste werkes mo pen
 pe former. but I haue azemes
 pec a felbe p'ges for p' suffist
 pe woma Isahel. pe whiche seip
 hire forto be a gyhetesse forto
 techy & disseyne my seruantes
 forto do lecherie. & forto ete of
 p'g offrid to ydolis. & I zaf to
 hy tyme p' nthe nshul do pe
 nance. & nge wold not to pe

name of hire fornication: lo I
 sende hir to a bed: & pei shal be in
 moste tribulacion: no lorde pei
 don penance of her werkes: & I
 shal sle here sonnes & depriand
 alle churchis shulde write for
 I am selde reynes & hermes: &
 I shal zene to the ma of zow
 op his werkes: forfore I sepe to
 zow & op y^e be at nature: whoene
 han not pis techinge: & y^e knowe
 not pe synesse of satanas hou
 pei euen I shal not sente on
 you any charge nepeles holde
 y^e shal han: til I come: & to hy^e
 shal outcome: & y^e shal lye til
 to pe ende my werkes: I shal
 zene to hy polver on folkes: & he
 shal zome he in an yre zende
 & pei shulde be broght to god: &
 as vessels of a pott: as & I res
 ceived of my fadir: & I shal
 zene to hy a morbe sterre: he
 pat hap eris here: what pe
 spirit shal sepe to churchis:

And to pe am
 zel of pe church of sar
 des: write you: pese pices seip
 he pat hap pe sene spiritus
 of god: & sene sterres: I wot y^e
 werkes: for y^e hast name y^e pou
 lquest: & you art deed: be pou
 waikynge & cōferme op ynges
 y^e were to dyge: forfore I fide
 not in werkes ful bifore my god
 pfore y^e haue i myde: you pou
 velleynedest & herdest: & lye
 & do penance pfore if y^e shalt
 not waik: I shal come to pee

as a nyght peef: & y^e shal not
 wite: & what how I shal come
 to pee: but y^e hast a fewe na
 mes i sardis: pe whiche defou
 led not her clothes: & pei shal
 se walk: & wy me i white y^e
 zes for pei ben worpy: he y^e
 shal outcome: shal be clopid
 yus wy white pices: & I shal
 not do away his name of pe book
 of lyf: & I shal knoweche hye
 name bifore my fadir: & bifore his
 angelis: he y^e hap eris here: what
 pe spirit shal sepe to churchis:
 And to pe angel of pe church
 of filidelfie: write you: pese pices
 seip pe holy & treke pat pe lye
 of damp: pe whiche openep & no
 ma closer: he closer & no ma ope
 ner: I wot y^e werkes: & lo I haf
 bifore pee a dre openep: pe whi
 che no man may close: for y^e hast
 alial: & I haf y^e lye in
 word: & denyedest not my name:
 lo I shal zene to pee of pe syna
 zore of satanas: pe whiche seie
 he shal be i red: & ben not: lo
 he: lo I shal make he pat pei
 come & worstipe bifore in feet:
 & pei shulde write for I souede
 pee: for y^e kepest pe word of my
 paaence: & I shal sepe pee fro
 pe houre of temptacion: pat
 is to comye: i to al pe world:
 for to tempte me diuell mger
 arpe: lo I come sone: holdest
 y^e pou hast y^e no ma take pi a d
 ne: & hy y^e shal outcome: I shal
 make a piler in pe temple of my
 god: & he shal no more go
 out: & I shal write on hy pe
 name of my god: & pe name

of pe atee of my god of nerbe
werlin if comen tou fro heuene
of my god & my nerbe name
he p' hap crys here. What pe
spirit shal seie to churchis
And to pe angel of pe church
of loadie write youi pese pi
ses seip dawe pe whiche is pe
begynne of godes creature
I wot py werkis for ney' pou
art colde ney' pou art hoot
wolde pou were cold or hoot
but p' art leue & ney' colde
ney' hoot. I shal begyne for
to caste pee oute of my mony
for pou seist pat I am riche
A ful of goodis & I haue need
of no ma. & p' woot not for
pou art a wreache & wreache
ful & pore & blynde & nakid
I am sel pee for to lie of me
solds fired & p'uede pat pou
be made rithe & be clodid wip
whure clodis pat pe confusi
on of py nakidnes appere not
A ancynte ym ye wip a col
frie p' is a mediane for en
zederde to gedir of dynde her
hise p' pou seye what y lone
regne & chaschise yfore sue
a lone & to penauite lo I sto
de at pe dwe & knokk yfom
ma shal here my woys &
opene zate. I shal entre to
go and soupe wip hye he
wip me I shal zene to hye
p' shal outcome for to stue
wip me i my trone as & I
outcome & sit wip my sadir
in his trone he pat hap

eris here. What pe spirit shal
say to churchis
A fur pese yges I say & lo
a dwe opened in heuene
and pe firste voice p' herde
as of a tripe speche wip me
semgele sue up gidur & I shal
shewe to pee whiche yges it
bysouey for to be done sone af
tir pese yges anon I was i
spirit & lo a sete was put in
heue & on pe sete oon sater
& he pat sat was like to pe
sute of ston Iaspis & to sardyn
& pe reynbowe was ipe aynas
of pe sete like to pe sate of sma
ragdyn & i aynas of pe sete
foure & twenty smale setis
& aboue pe trones foure &
twenty elder sittege گرد abou
te wip white clodis & in pe
geedis of he golde crownes
& lentyges & woies & pudri
ses came oute of pe trones
& seue lamyis breynge bi fore
pe trone pe whiche be seue
Spiritis of god & ipe sate
of pe sete as a sete of glas
like to etal & ipe mydel of
pe sete foure bestis ful of
ye bifoze & blynde & pe fir
st beste like to a lion & pe
Reonde beste like to a calf
& pe pruide best hanpge a
face as of a ma & pe fowre
beste like to an egly fleyng
& pe fowre bestis haden eys
of he eyre mynges & i aynas
& wip yne per den ful of ye

¶ pe hate not reste day & myt
senye. holy. holy. holy pe lord
god almyghty. & was & vatis
to comye. & whene pe fou
re bestis zane glorie & hono
& blessinge to pe sittinge on
pe trone to pe synge i to wo
dis of wordes. pe foure and
thient elder me fallen don
bifore pe sittinge in trone. &
worshippe pe synge i to wo
dis of wordes. & pe sentis
ber crouches bifore pe trone.
senye. you lord of god arte
worpy for to take glorie and
hono. & oia. for v. madist
of nozt alle prynces. & for my
wille pe were. & be made
of nozte.

And I say i pe rythhalf of
pe sittinge on pe trone.
abok write my pnc & my
oute & ceelid my senye see
lis. & I say a stronge angel.
pseige my greet vois. who
is worpy for to opene pe bok.
& for to onbynde pe signetis
of it. & no ma myt i heu
nep in erpe nep vndir erpe.
opene pe bok ne sholde it.
& I wepte myse. for no ma
worpy is fonde for to opene
pe bok ney for to see it.
& oon of pe elder cede to
me. wepe you not lo a hon
of pe synage of juda. pe ro
te of damp. hay outome for
opene pe bok & for to onby
de pe seu signetis of it.

I say & lo i pe mydel of pe trone
& i pe mydel of foure bestis &
i pe mydel of re eldis a lombe
stondinge as slayn hanys.
seu hornes & seu yd pe whi
che ben seu spiritis of god
kente i to eche lond. & he came
& toke of pe rythhalf of pe sit
tinge in trone pe bok. & whane
he hadde openyde pe bok fou
re bestis & foure & thient elder
felde don bifore pe lombe. ha
nyge eche of he harpes & gol
den onolis. ful of synyngis whi
che be pe pleris of seyntis &
pe songe anelle song senye.
lad you art worpy for to take
pe bok. & for to opene pe sig
netis of it. for you were slay
& azen bouytest us to god i
p blode. of al synage & tounes
& pepul & nacoon. & madest
us to oure god kyngdome &
pntis & we shuld regne up
erpe. & I say & herde pe voice
of mony angelis i pe cupate
of trone & of bestis & eldis.
& pe noubre of he was a pou
sand of poustantes. senye my
greet vois. pe lombe pat is
slayn is worpy for to take o
tue & dynmyte & wysdome
& strenge. & hono. & glorie
& blessinge & eche creature
pat is in heuene. & p ouer
pe & vndir erpe. & pe see &
whiche prynces ben in it. & her
de alle seynge to pe sittinge

in crowne & to re lombe, blessinge
& hono & glorie & power in to
worldes of worldis. & foure bes-
tis seide amen/ and re foure
& tventi semyouris or elter me
fellen don i to her facis. &
worshipide re huyse in to

Worldis of Worldis. c. 91.

And i say pat ye lombe ha-
de openyd oon of re ege
bestis seynge as a vois of pu-
dr come & see/ & i say & lo
a white hors. & he pat satte
on hy hade a bowe/ & a crowne
is zoue to hy. & he wete oute
on lounge pat he schulde ouer
come/ & whane he hade openyd
re secunde seel. i herde re se-
conde best seynge/ come p' &
see/ & anop' reed hors weite
oute/ & it is zoue to hym p'
sat on hy. vat he schulde ra-
de pees fro re erpe. & vat pey
ele to gedre hem eilf/ and a
gret sword is zoue to hy/

And whane he hade openyd
re priddy seel. i herde re pryd
best seynge/ come pou & se/
& lo a blak hors. & he p' satte
on hy hade a balance in his
honde/ & i herde as a vois
re mydel of foure bestis seyn-
ge a bilibre of whete vat is a
wente of they poud. for o
peny. & re bilibris of barly
for a peny/ & herte pou not
wryn & oile. And whane he

hade openyd re ferpe seel. i herde
a vois of re foure beste seynge/
come p' & see/ & lo a pale hors.
& pe name dep. to hy pat satte
on hy. & helle sued hy/ & polver
is zoue to hy on foure ptes of
re erpe forto ele wy ewerde.
& hunger. & dep. & bestis of erpe/
And whane he hade openyd
re fynepe seel. i say tondir
an auter re soules of me slayn
for re word of god. & for wrynes
singe p' pey haden. & pei crieth
Wy greet vois seynge/ hou
longe pou lord holy & trewe de-
meit not & pengest oure blood
of rese p' dwellest i erpe/ & wha
stoles for eche soule a stole ben
zoue to hem/ & it is seide to be
pat pei schulde reste zit a lill
tyme til re eue seruauntis of
hem be fulfyllid. & pe bapen
of he p' ben to be slayn as &
pey. And i say whane he hade
openyd re sixte seel. & lo gret
erpemoungre is made/ & pe son
ne is made blak as sak of hei-
re. & al re moue is made as
blade/ & sterris of heuene fel
le don on erpe as a fige tree
sendy his wiripe figus wye
it is moued of a gret wynd.
& heie wente alwy as a boke
wlapid yn. & alle monitey-
nes & yles be moued fro her
places/ & byges of erpe and
pncis & tribunys. & riche &
stronge & eche seruaunt and
fre ma hadde be in demes

& stonye of hilles. & pei seyen
to hilles & stonye falleze on
us & hyde ze us fro pe face of
pe sittege on trone. & fro wrape
of pe lombe for pe gret day of
her wrape comen. & who shal
may stonde.

Aftur pe se piges I say son
re angelis stondeinge
on foure corneris of pe erpe
holdige foure wyndis of pe erpe
pat pei blewe not on pe erpe
neþ on pe see neþ in to ony
tree. & I say anoy angel shi
ge fro pe rissye of pe sonne.
hanze a signe of quyke god/
& he cried wip a gret vois to pe
foure angelis. to Whiche it is
goune for to noye pe erpe & see
seipge. myl þou noye pe erpe
& see neþ trees. til we signe
pe seruantis of oē god in pe
feshedis of hem. & I herde pe
noumbe of he signed or markid
an hund & foure & fourty
þousand signed of eury kyng
of pe sonce of wael. of pe kyng
ge of iuda. & elielie þousand
signed of pe kyngge of ruben.
xii. þousand signed of pe kyng
ge of gad. xii. þousand signed
of pe kyngge of aser. xii. þou
sand signed of pe kyngge of
nephtalim. xii. þousand sig
ned of pe kyngge of simeon.
xii. þousand signed of pe kyng
ge of leuy. xii. þousand sig
neted of pe kyngge of ysachar.
xii. þousand signed of pe kyng
ge of zabulon. xii. þousand

signed of pe kyngge of ioseph.
xii. þousand signed of pe kyng
ge of beniamyn. xii. þousand
signed. Aftur pe se piges I say
a gret cupanye. Whome no
man myhte nombe of alle fol
kes & kynges. & peples. &
tynge. stondeinge bifore pe
trone. ipe syte of pe lombe
beupd wip white stolis. &
pallines ipe houndes of he. &
pey criede wip gret vois sei
yng. helpe to oure god pat
sittet on trone & to pe lombe.
& alle angelis stode i cupace
of pe trone. & of demyours
& foure bestis. & pei fallen
ipe syte of trone i to her fa
ces. & worshipid god say
ge amē. blessinge & clernes
& wysdome & wyse of paco
fyes. & hono. & odis stren
pe to oē god i to worldis of w
rldes. amē. & oon of pe sempes
answerid & seide to me. who
be se pat he kynd wip whi
stolis. & whanes came pei
I seide to hy. my lord þou
woost. & he said to me. pese
be pey. y. came fro gret tribu
lacion. & wastidde her sto
lis i blode of pe lombe. & ma
de white. þfore pei be bifore
pe trone of god. & dien to
hy day & nyzt i his temple.
& he p. sittet i trone. diel
let on he pey shulde no more
hyndur ny purste. neþ sone
shal falle on he. neþ ony here.

for þe soules out is pat is in þe
myddel of mone. þat god wille
þe a þat ledde þe to þe
wells of watris of lif. and
that wille alle. eche teer fro
þe of þe. *any.*

And in þene he hade opened
þe seuðe feel. fulence
is made i þene as half an ho
þy say seuðe angelis stonde i
þe cite of god. a seuðe trüps
be zeue to þe. a anof angel in
me a stood bifore þe auter ha
nyge a golde censur. a mane
encensio be zownd to þe. a þe
stfulde zeue of þe þeris of
alle exynis opo þe golden
auter. pat is bifore þe trone.
a þe smoke of encensio of þe p
eris of halowis stied up. of þe
angelis bond bifore god. a þe
angel toke þe censur. a stilled
it of þe fier of þe auter. a stie
it to erpe. a yndis a voices a
lentiges be made. a gret erp
nygge. And þe seuðe angel
þe hade seuðe trüps. made
þe reðy pat þe sthulde singe
in trüpe. a hail is made. a
fier meynd to gedre i blood.
a it is sente i to erpe. a þe þo
pt of erpe is brent. a þe þud
pt of treoris brent. a alle gre
ne trees þey a gras is leant.
a þe seconde angel songe in
trüpe. a as a gret hil brent
nyge wip fier. is sent in to
þe see. a þe þud pt of þe see is
made blod. a þe þud pt of crea
te is ded. pat hade soules a

þuge i þe see. a þe þud pt of
þe i þyppes puthide. and þe
þud angel song i trüpe. a
gret stie brent as a lial
bond fel fro þene. a fel into
þe þud pt of flodes. a in to
wells of watris. a þe name
of þe stie is seide iermod.
a þe þud pt of watris is ma
de i to iermod. a mony me
be ded of þe watris. for þe
be made bitter. And þe four
þe angel song i trüpe. a þe
þud pt of seie is cymteu.
a þe þud pt of mone. a þe þud
pt of steris. a þe þe þud
pt of þe was derked. a þe þud
pt of day nþon not. a alþ of
nytt. a þy say a herde þe vois
of an eggle. a þe nyge by myddel
þene. seyye wip gret vois.
Wo wo wo. to þe dwellinge
me i erpe of þe voices of
þe angelis pat were to singe
þe i trüpe. *10. 11.*

And þe fifre angel song
i trüpe. and þy say a stie
forro haue falle drit fro þe
ue i to erpe. a þe feye of þe
putte of depnes is zownd tort.
a it openeþ þe putt of depnes.
a smoke of þe putt stied up.
as þe smoke of a gret forneis.
a þe sone is derked. a erp of
þe smoke of þe putt. a of þe
smoke of þe putt locustis
þeente oute i to þe erpe. a
polker is zownd to þe. as þe
þud pt of erpe han polker.
a it is comaunde to þe
pat þe sthulden not harte

grete flosse & unrates & po
 foure angelis be ymbonden
 & whiche were red & to oure
 & day & monye & yer. pat
 pe schuld cle pe vid part
 of me & pe nombre of pe oost
 of horsme twenti yonstante
 sipes te yonstante & herde
 pe nombre of he & p 3 say ho
 he i yonstante & pe i mte on
 he hadde fry gaburions and
 iacinctys & bruston & pe heedis
 of horshe wert as heedis of
 houns & pe mony of he fier
 comep forp & smok & bruston
 of pes pre plages. pe pride
 pt of me is clay of pe fuyr
 & of pe smok & of pe bruston
 i came oute of pe mony of
 he copely pe power of horshe
 is i pe mony of he & i pe
 tailes of he like to pe serpe
 tis hantze heedis & i hem
 pei noy & pat of me pat
 be not clay i pes plages ne
 pate penante of pe werke of
 her hondis pat pei wor schyn
 & not denche & symylans
 sold. sike & brusten & ston
 & trene pe whiche ney mony
 seen ney here ney stande
 & diu not penante of here
 malspeges ney of here yene
 myges ney of her firmamun
 ney of here pestes

And I say anop' stronge
 angel compe doū fro
 heuene feild on clowd ydowd
 A pe face of hy was as ſone

pe regn bowe i his heed & pe foot
as a piler of fier & he hade
i his hond a stal bok openyd
& he putte his ryght foot on pe
see forsope pe lifte on pe erpe
& he ded whp gret vois as a
thou whane he roip & whane
he hade ceder seue pndris spa
ke her voices & whi oue p
ndris hade spoken her voices
I was to writte & herde a
vois fro heue semyge/ signe p
what pges pe seue pndris
spake & nyl p write he &
pe angel who I say stondige
aboue pe see & aboue pe erpe
lifte up his hond to heuene
& stoude by pe lynyge i to mo
aldris of worldis pat made
of nozt heue & po pges whi
he be in it & pe erpe & po p
ges p ben in it & pe see & po
pges p be in it for yme nshal
no more be/ but i pe daies of
pe vois of pe seuepe angel
whane he nshal bgyne forto
sernge i tynpe pe myfle of
god nshal be endd as he ena
gelized hi his seruantis aphe
tor & herde a vois fro heue
of seone apelyge wypp me &
sernge/ so p & take pe booke
openyd of pe hond of pe an
gel stondige aboue pe see &
on pe lond & I wente to pe
angel sernge to hi pat he n
shuld zeme to me pe bok & he
seide to me/ take pe bok & de
noure it & it nshal make in
wombe ferto be luter luter

apocalips
i in mony it shal be clere as
sony/ & i take pe bok of pe auge
lis hond & deuoure it & it
was i my mony as swar as
sony/ & whane I hade deuou
re it my wombe was biter
& he seide to me/ it bihouep
pee of seone forto pphere to
hepe me & to peples & langu
gis & to mony pphers
And a mesure like to a
yard is zoue to me & it
is seide to me rise pou and
mete pe temple of god & pe au
ter & me worshippinge in it
forsope caste oute pe porche
pat is wypp oute for pe temple
& mete it not for it is zoue to
hepe me & pei shuld & foule
pe holy atee by fowte mone
pys & tweine & i nshal zeme
to my alley witnessis & pey
shuld pphere a poustand da
es two hund & sixty pei sh
uld wypp sackis/ pes be twey
ne olynes & twey candlestak
zenyge lzt stondige i pe syde
of pe lord of erpe & if ony ma
nshal wike forto noye hem
fier nshal go oute of pe mony
of he & nshal deuoure here ene
myes & if ony nshal wilke for
to hurte he pus it bihouep hi
for to be stayn/ pes he pphere
of schynge heue pat it rey
ne not i pe daies of her pph
ae & pei han polwer on wa
tris of tynge he in to blood
& ferto synge pe erpe whp

al plase & hou ofte ende pe schule
 wille & whane pei schule ende
 here witnessige. pe beest p^r fienp
 w^r of pe depresse schal make ba
 tel agens ge & schal oisome he
 & schal sle he & pe bodies of
 he schule ligge i pe streets of pe
 grote ate p^r is clepid zofth p^rid
 & egypte where pe lord of he
 was crucified & pei schule se of
 synagis & of peples & tynis &
 hepe me pe bodies of he by pe
 saies & an half & pe bodies
 of he schule not be suffride
 for to be put in buriels & men
 inhabyge pe erpe schule hane
 10 on he & pei schule make murpe
 & pei schule sende nites to ge
 du. for pe se tibeys pphetis tur
 meide he p^r dwelle on erpe
 & after me saies & an half. pe
 spirit of lif of god entide into
 he & pei stode on her feet. and
 gret drede fel on he p^r saie he
 & pei herde a gret vois fro he
 ne. seynge to he. styenp hidiu
 & pei stiede i to heu in a cloude
 & pe enemyes of he saw hem
 & i p^r houn a gret erpe moung
 is made. & pe tempe pt of pe
 ate felde. & pe he slayn i pe
 erpe moung pe names of me
 seie poulande & p^r on he sen
 pe i to drede & jame glorie to god
 of heu. pe seonde wo mete
 & lo pe prid wo schal come sto
 ne & pe seidepe angel. songe
 i troupe & gret voices he ma
 de i heu seynge. pe rewme
 of pis world is made of lordis
 & this his sone & pei schule
 regne i to worldis of wordis

and & pe foure & tiben seynge
 pat sat in her seio i pe cyrt of
 pe lord. felde in to her faces &
 worthipde god seynge. Wo
 du. panchinges to pee lord god
 almyzty. Whiche art & whiche
 waste & whiche art to conyge
 whiche hast take py gret oti
 & hast regned & folde he wop
 & py. Wraps came & tyme of
 deed me feto be demed. & fe
 to zelde hire to yi. for names
 & pphetis & halldis & drede
 se py name to make a lital
 & of distynge he p^r conyge
 me erpe.

And pe temple of god in
 heuene opened & pe 12
 arke of his testamēt is seie
 i his temple & luyges he me
 de & voices & erpe moung
 & gret hail & a gret signe
 aperide i heuene a woman
 beide a clopyd wyf come & mone
 vndir hir feet & in pe heed
 of hir a crowne of tibeke se
 ris. & she haryge i wombe
 & she cryde berige child. for
 timentide p^r she bere child
 & anoy signe is seie in heu
 & lo a gret rede dragon hary
 ze seie heedis & ten homes
 & in pe heedis of hy seie
 diademes. & pe tail of hy
 dwelle pe prid pt of pe seie
 of heu & sente he in to er
 pe and pe dragon stode by
 fye pe woma p^r was to he
 rmyge child. pat whane she
 gad berie child he schule
 denoune her sone and p^r she

childe a sone male. & was to
 renlyge alle folkes in an yren
 zende. & his sone is raynshide
 to god. & to his tues. & pe woma
 flei to wilderness. & here she bar
 a place redy of god. pat she
 fede hir pere a thousand day
 es two hundred & sixty. And
 a gret batel is made in heu
 & myzel & his angelis fought
 wip pe dragon. & pe dragon
 fought & his angelis. & pe fa
 & not myzt more nemp
 place of he is fonden more
 in heu. & pilke dragon is
 caste dovn pe gret oold serpent
 & is clepnd pe demyl & satanas
 & dysteyned al pe world is
 caste oute to pe erpe. & his
 angelis he sente wip hym
 & he herde a gret vois in he
 u. & he seide. now is made gel
 pe & due & kyngdom of ou
 re god. & pe power of his est
 for pe acuse of oð bryfenis
 caste dovn. whiche accusid he
 bifore pe synne of oð god. day
 & myzt. & pey outtame he
 for pe blood of pe lomb.
 & for pe word of his wyrt
 nessinge. and pey lokeden
 not her synnis til to deap
 pfor. & lade ze benenes.
 & ze pat dwelle in hem
 & so to pe erpe & see for
 pe fend came dovn to jou ha
 the gret wraye. Writunge
 for he has lital tyme. & aft
 pat pe dragon say. for he
 was caste dovn in to erpe.

he pursuede pe woma. & childe
 a male child. & they bringes
 of a gret esle be jou to pe wo
 ma. pat she shulde fle into
 desert in to hir place. where she
 is fedde by tyme & tymes. & pe
 half of tyme fro pe face of pe
 serpent. & pe serpent sente
 of his moup aft pe woma.
 wate as flood. & he shulde ma
 & hir for to drasse of pe flood.
 & pe erpe helpe pe woma.
 & pe erpe openyd his moup.
 & soop op. pe flode pat pe dra
 gon sente oute of his moup.
 & pe dragon is shap in to pe
 woma. & he sente for to make
 batel wip op of hir seed. & he
 pen pe mandementis of god. &
 han pe witnessinge of this. &
 & he stood on pe quel of pe see.
And I say a beste stronge
 up of pe le. hampinge. &
 sevene heedis & ten hornes.
 & on his hornes ten dyademes.
 and on his heedis pe name of
 blassemye. & pe best whome
 I say was like to a panther.
 & his feet as pe feet of
 a bere. & his moup as pe mo
 up of a lion. & pe dragon gaf
 to pilke his due & gret polb
 er. & I say oon of his heedis
 as clayn in to dep. & pe won
 de of his dep is unid. & al
 erpe wondride aft pe beste.
 & pey worshippe pe dragon.
 pat gaf polber to pe beest. & pe
 worshippe pe beest. & sayge
 who like to pe beest. & who

nshal molke fyte wyth & a
 mounp speche gret pises &
 blassemyes is zoun to it and
 polver is zoun to it. for to do
 in this & fourty monyng
 it opened his mounp & blas-
 semyes to god. for to blasseme
 his name & his tabnacle &
 he þ dwelle in heuene. & it
 is zoun to hi for to make laul
 heri seyntis & for to oillome
 he & polver is zoun to hym.
 & to al lynage & folke & alle
 me wroughte it. & dwel-
 le in erpe. whos names be
 not writen in pe boke of lif
 of pe lomb. þis slayn fro pe
 bysynge of pe world. if ony
 ma hap eris of heringe. he
 re he. he wat nshal led pe
 in to canstite. nshal go in to
 canstite. he þ nshal cle in
 swerd. it shounep hy for to
 be slayn in swerd. þis is pe pa-
 aence & fery of seyntis. And
 I say anof beest stynge up fro
 pe erpe & hade also homer ly-
 ke pe lomb. & he spak as pe
 dragon & dide al pe polver
 of pe fery beest. & his fyr.
 & it made pe erpe & me drel-
 linge in it. for to wroughte
 pe fyrste beest. whos plage
 of dey is curide. & it dide gret
 signes. þ alþo it made fier
 for to come doun fro heuene
 to erpe. in pe fyte of alle
 me. & disseyner me dwel-
 linge in erpe. for signes. pe

whiche ben zoun to it. for to do
 in pe fyte of pe beste seyntis
 to me dwellige i erpe. & þ
 mak an ymage of pe beest. &
 hap pe plage of swerd & lyued
 & it is zoun to hy. wat he sh
 hulde zene spirit to pe yma-
 ge of pe beest & pe ymage
 of beest speke. & he nshal ma-
 ke whiche alle shule not ho-
 noure pe ymage of pe beest
 be slayn. & he nshal make
 alle finale & gret ryche & po-
 re fre me & seruatis. for to
 haue a caretoer i pe ryt hond.
 or i her forhedis. & no man
 may bye or fülle no bot pe
 wat ha pe caretoer or lettre
or name or pe nonbre of his
 name here is wisdom. he
 wat hap andurstondynge
 arofte pe nonbre of pe beest.
 sopeþ pe nonbre of man is
 & his nonbre is syx hun-
 dred forty & syx. **Amo**

And I say & to a lomb
 stood up on pe mout
 of syon. & wip hym an hu-
 dred foure & fourty thousand
 samyge his name. & pe na-
 me of his fadir writen in
 here forhedis. & herde a
 vois fro heuene as pe vois
 of mony watris. & as pe
 vois of gret midn. & pe
 vois whiche I herde. as of
 harperis harpynges in her
 harpes & pey songe a newe
 songe bifore pe feet of god.
 & bifore foure beestis &

seynouris & no mā myzt seye
 pe song no bot pei an hundrad
 & foure & forty thousand & be
 bouzt of pe erpe/ pefe it be p
 be not droukide wip wyme
 sopeh pei be ougtpnes/ pefe
 hie pe lombe eschidw eue he
 shal so/ pes ho bouzt of alle
 pe fmytices & first fmytices
 to god & to pe lombe & in pe
 monp of he lesyng is not foun
 den/ Copely pey ben wip on
 ten weene bifore pe throne
 of god/ And i say anoy an
 gel fleyng by myddel heuene
 hanng euelastegge gospel/ p
 he shulde euangelize to me
 sittige on erpe & on al folke
 & language & language & pupul
 seynge wip gret conydrere
 ze pe lord/ & zene ze to hym
 hono/ for pe hour of his dome
 comet/ & worshippe ze hym
 pat made heuene & erpe pe
 de & alle pises pat ben in
 he & pe wellis of watris/
 And anoy angel suede sey
 inge/ pe ilk gret cite babilon
 ne felde pe whiche zat drey
 d to alle folkes of pe wyn
 of braye of her fornyca
 cion/ & pe pridd angel sued
 he seynge wip gret vois/
 if ony man worshippe pe
 beste/ & ymage of it & wke
 caret i his falsheed or his
 hond/ & no shal drynke
 pe wyn of godes wrappe
 pat is meynd wip cleer

wyn in cuppe of his braye
 & shal be timentide wip fier
 & bristoun i pe cyt of gooly
 angelis/ & bifore pe cyt of
 pe lombe & pe smole of her
 tarmetis shal the op into
 woldis of woldis/ ney ven
 han reste day & nyzt/ pe wch
 che wasthynde pe best & his
 ymage/ & if ony mā toke pe
 carete of his name/ pis is
 pe placent of seyntis & wch
 che seyn pe mandementis
 of hy & pe fer of is/ & i
 herde a vois fro heuene seynge
 to me/ write pou blesspide pe
 seed me pat deat pe lord/
 fro heuene/ for wold pe spirit
 com pat pey reste of here tra
 nelis/ for sove pe werke of
 he eue hem/ & i say & loo a
 white cloude/ & aboue pedu
 de a sittige/ like to pe cone of
 mā/ hanng in his heed agol
 den crowne/ & in his hond a
 sharpe sikel/ & anoy angel
 wente oute of pe temple cry
 inge wip gret vois to pe sitt
 ge on pe cloude sende py sy
 kel & reape for pe ripe corne
 of erpe dried/ & he pat sat
 on pe cloude/ sente his sikel
 in to erpe & reape in to erpe/
 & anoy angel wente oute of
 pe temple pat is in heuene/
 hanng & he a sharpe sikel/
 & anoy angel wente oute of
 pe temple/ pat hade polket
 on fier/ & he criede wip gret

pe fourpe angel pshed oute
his vrole to pe tone. & it is
houn to hy for to turne to men
wip heete & fier & me swalede
wip gret hete & blaffemeden
pe name of god hangge polver
on pese plagis ney pei diden
penaunce. pat pei shulde zene
stoue to hy. And pe fynepe
angel pshed oute his vrole on
pe seed of pe beest & his eye
don is made derke & pei etyn
to godur her tonges for soure
& pey blaffemede god of he
ne for forwis & her wounde
& pei diden not penaunce of
her werke. And pe sixte
angel pshed oute his vrole
i to pilke gret flood of water
& driede pe watar of it. pat
wey were redied to bynges
fro pe tone rishinge. And I say
fro vndene spiritus i to ma
ner of frogges. for to go oute
of pe mony of pe dragon. & of
pe mony of pe beest. & of pe
mony of pe false pphete. for
pely pe be spiritus of dene
his makysse signes. & pei gon
forp to bynges of al erpe for
to gader he m to a batel to pe
gret day of almyti god. so
come as a myt of bleffide
he pat walep & lepep hye
cloupe. pat he wande not na
ked & pei see his falsheced.
& gaderid he m to aplawp
is clepid in chere harmage
don. And pe fenep angel
pshed oute his vrole i to pe
air. & a gret vois wente
oute of heue fro pe trone.

seynge & it is don & leuys be
made & vois & pndus & gret
erpe monyges is made. whiche
maner neile was seen me we
re on erpe. suche erpe monyge
so greet & pe greet air is be
ken in to pe pnes. & pe ares
of hepen me felle don & gret
cabuldyne came to mynde
before god for to zene to it pe
cuppe of wyn of yndiguanon
of his wraye. & eche ple flep
away. & hilles ben not for
day & gret hail as a talent
came don fro heuene i me.
& me blaffemyd god for pe
plage of hail. for it is made
wonderly greet.
And oon of pe fourpe angel
his name
seue vrole. &
wip me seyn
von i thalle
to pee pe damp
cion of pe greet
pat sitte on mony
tris wip pe whiche was of
erpe dide forp maon. & pey
pat dwelle on erpe ben ful
drunken of pe wyn of hir leche
rie. & he toke away me in to
desert i spirit & I say a wo
ma cithage on a red beest. ful
of names of blaffemyge ha
myge. seue heed is & ten hor
nes & pe woma was emy
rouinede wip purpur & croce
or red & ingoldid wip gold &
phons stoon & perlis hang
ge a golder cuppe in her hand
ful of abhominacions. and

& bndemesse of her fornicacion.
 and i pe forheed of hir aname
 written mysterie / babiloyne pe
 gret modir of fornicacions &
 abhominacions of erpe. / I say
 alwoman drunken of pe blood of
 seyntis. & of blood of martiris
 of ihu. & wile i say hir i wou
 drin wip gret wondrmge. & pe
 angel seide to me. wip wondrest
 pou i shal sey to pee. pe sacra
 ment of pe woma. & of pe beest
 pat berey hir. pat hap pe se
 ne heedis & ten hornes. pe beest
 whiche p' saist was & is not.
 and she is to stynge up fro
 depnes. & she shal go in to
 p'ishinge. & me dwellinge in
 erpe shule wondre. whos na
 mes ben not writte in pe bok
 of lyf. fro makynge of pe world.
 seynge pe beste pat was &
 is not. & me is writt pat hap
 wisdom. pe seue heedis ben
 seue hylis. on whiche pe wo
 man sittet. & kynges seuen
 ben. fyue han felde don. con
 is & anoy to comen not yet. &
 whane he shal come. it by
 honer hym. feto dwelle a st
 hort tyme. & pe beest p' was
 is not & theis pe enter. &
 is of seuen. & shal go in to
 p'ishinge. & pe ten hornes.
 whiche pou hast seuen. be ten
 kynges. pat yet han not take
 kyngdome. but pei shule ta
 ke power as kynges. oon hour.
 astar pe beest. pes han oo wil
 ful. & shule bitake her.

& polter to pe beest. pese shule
 fete wip pe souke. & pe souke
 shal outcome. he. for he is lord
 of lordis. & kyng of kyngis.
 & pei p' ben wip hy clepid &
 chosen & ferful. & seyd to
 me. pe watris p' p' hast p' se
 where pe hore sittet. ben pe
 plis folkes & tynis. & pe ten
 hornes. pat pou hast seuen. &
 pe beest. pese shulen hate
 pe fornicarie & hore. & shu
 len make hir desolate. & na
 ke & shule ete pe flesch of
 hir. & shule brene hir to ge
 dr wip fyre. sovelly god jaf
 to pe heris of hem. p' pei to
 p' p' is pleisur to hy. pat
 pei zene her kyngdome to pe
 beest. til pe wordes of god
 be undid. & pe woma whom
 p' hast seuen. is pe gret ate
 pat hap kyngdom on erpes
 of erpe.

And astar pese kynges
 i say anoy angel co
 minge don fro heuene. han
 ze greet polter. & pe erpe
 is lityned of his glorie. & ap
 mge wip strong vois. sefge
 gret babiloyne felde don. &
 is made pe habitacion of de
 uelis. & pe spise of vche
 conclene spirit. & pe kyp
 ze of vche conclene soule. &
 hateful. for alle folkes dil
 ten of pe wrape of pe for
 nicacion of hir. & kynges
 of erpe. & marchantis of

erpe. Siden forpauon wip hir
 pe be made rich of pe alme of
 delices of hir. & I herde anof wos
 of heuene seynge my pepul go
 ze oute of it. & he not pcedes
 of pestpas of it. and ze schule
 not resseue of pe plagis of it
 for pe synes of it came til to
 heuene. & pe lord hade mynde
 of pe wickednessis of it. zelde
 ze to it. as & the zelde to you.
 & double ze double pynge op
 here. Wer his in pe drynke.
 the medde to you menge ze
 double to hir. hof unthe the
 schafede hir oif & was in
 delices. so unthe turment
 zeue to hir. & wepyngze for
 in hir herte the seip. I sette
 a queen. I am not a widde
 & I schal not see wepyngze
 & moynge. & shue in oo.
 say hir plagis schule come
 dep moynge & hynge. the
 schal be brent in fier. for god
 god is stronge pat schal deme
 hir. & pe kyngis of erpe schu
 len wepe & wele hem on hir.
 pe schule siden forpauon
 wip hir & hyneden in delices.
 schale per schulen see pe
 smole of breynge of it. ston
 dyngze for fir drede of tmen
 tis of it. seynge. Wo. Wo. Wo.
 pulk gret are babiloyne. & pe
 ilk stronge citee. for in oon
 hour. y. dome comep. & gar
 chun of erpe. schule wepe
 on it & moze. for no man

schal hye more pe marchandys
 se of hem. pe garchandis
 of gold & siluer & phonse ston.
 & garsarrie or yse & bys &
 purpur & silk & coay or red.
 & eche trechyme. & alle oessels
 of yner. & alle oessels of pa
 ons stoon. & of bras & of yrn
 & garbel & anel & amone.
pat is a gylte canerynge
tre. & of owardmentis & oyme
mentis & ensente & of wip
& oile & floure & whete & of
unmentis & wert beestis & and
sheep & hors & cartis & of
seruantis & amfosa of soules
& hynes of me. & of ym aplis
despis of y. h. wante alrey
fro pee. & alle fante pynge
& ful clere pishiden fro pee
& marchandis of pest men
schule no more fynde popi
zes. pei pat ben made riche
of it. schulen stonde for for
drede of turmentis of it. we
pynge & moynge & say
ge. Wo. Wo. pe ilk gret citee
pat was chold wip bys &
purpur & colk or red & was
goldid wip gold & phons
stoon & garsarrie. for in
oon our so manye richessis
ben destitute. & eche goumoure
& alle pat schype in to place
& garyneris & pat worche
in pe dee. stoden for & are
den seynge. what liche to
pis gret citee. & pei semer
pouder on her heedis. and

greden wepinge & moynunge
 & seynge. Wo wo. ye ilk greet
 ate in weiche alle y^e han nhip
 pis in ye oer ben made riche
 of phis of it. for in von hour
 is drolate / heuene & holi apost
 ho & pphetis. stude ze on it. for
 god hay demed zoure dome of
 it. & soon stonger angel toke up
 a stoon. as a gret mylne stoon.
 & sente it to ye oer. seynge in
 pis hurre. ye ilk greet ate ba
 buldyne schal be sente. & noli
 oile schal not be founden. & ye
 vois of harperis. & of me of
 on silk. & synge we wy pipe
 & trupe. schal no more be herd
 in it. & eche craftis ma & eche
 craft schal not be founden in
 it. & ye vois of mylne stoon
 schal no more ben herd in pee.
 & ye hite of fawthe schal no
 more sthyne to pee. & ye vois
 of ye hus bonde & of wif schal
 not yt more be herd in pee.
 for y^e oarchaundis were phas
 of erpe. for in y^e wenyng
 edis alle folkis erriden. & ye
 blood of pphetis & syntis is
 founden in it. & alle me pat
 ben. **A**lyn in erpe. **ix.**
A fur yese ymges. I her
 se as a greet vois of
 mony trupe in heuene sey
 ze alleliya. herynge & glo
 rie & due is to oure god. for
 trawe & iust ben ye dmes of
 hy. weiche demys of ye greet
 hoie. pat corruyden ye erpe

in hur lecherie. & demyde
 vengade ye blood of his dnan
 tis of ye bondis of hir. & este
 pey couden alleliya. & ye smo
 ke of it stede up in to worldis
 of worldis. & ye foure & alle
 ty seynge & foure beestis felle
 down & westhyden god sit
 thinge on trone. seynge am
 alleliya. & a vois wente oute
 of ye trone seynge to oure
 god. seye ze alle ye seruantes
 to hym herynge. & ze pat
 dreden god. smale & greet.
 & I herde a vois as of a greet
 troupe. & as ye vois of greet
 yundris seynge alleliya
 for oure god almyghty hay
 regned. amoye we & glade
 we wy outen forp. & zene
 we stode to hym for ye weds
 dynges of ye lomb came. & ye
 wif of hy made redy her
 self. & it is zoue to hir. pat
 she leide hir wyf weite by
 syn nhynginge. for soe by
 syn ben in stynges of syn
 tis. & he seide to me. write
 pon blessid ben y^e pat be
 cledid to ye cop of weddiges
 of ye lomb. and he seide to
 me. pes wordis of god ben
 welke. & y felle don byfore
 his feet. pat y schuld we
 sthipe hym. & he seide to
 me. se pat pon do not. I am
 ym euen seruaut & of y^e
 beyn den haunge witness

of his. Wherfore vngodly
 sope ye witnessinge of ihu
 is purt pphete. And I say
 heuene opened. & lo a whete
 hors. & he pat sat on hym
 was clepid ferful & sope
 fast & wip ryt wysnesse he
 doney & fytter. Forsope ye
 men of hy as flawme of fier
 And in his heed many dyade
 mes hangge a name writen
 whiche no ma knowe no bot
 he. & he was clopid in a clop
 spreyn wip blood. & pe
 name of hy was clepid pe
 word or son of god & pe oof
 tis & cumpaynes pat ben in
 heuene. Heede hy in whete
 hors. clopid wip byssen whi
 te & clene & a swerd sharpe
 on eche side came forp of his
 mony. pat in it he cunye
 folkis. & he shal reule he
 m to an yren zerde. & he we
 dy & defouly pe pssour of
 wryn of weodnesse of wraye
 of almyty god. & he hap wri
 ten in his clop & he me. Byng
 of kynges & lord of lordis.
 And I say oon angel stonde
 ze in pe foume. & he criede
 wip greet vois seynge to
 alle briddis pat flownen in
 pe myddel of heuene come ze
 & be ze gaderid to pe greet
 oep of god. pat ze are pe fle
 ttes of kynges & fleshes
 of tribunes. & fleshtes of

stronge. & fleshtis of horsis &
 of pe entige on hem & pe flesht
 of falle fre me & dunnis & of
 smale & of greet. & I say ye
 beest & kyngis of erpe & pe
 oofis of hem gaderid to ma
 ke batel wip hy pat sat in
 pe hors & wip his oof & pe
 beest is camt & wip hir pe
 laste pphete pat made sig
 nes bifoze hir in whiche he
 assignes hem pat token pe
 carete of ye beeste & pat wor
 shipide it. pes tweyne shal
 be ben sente in to pe pool of
 fier breynge in bristloone
 & pe oyr ben slayn. & thewrd
 of pe entige on ye hors p
 comey fep of pe mony of hy
 & alle briddis ben fulfild
 wip pe fleshtis of be. xx

And I say an angel com
 gedun fro heuene ha
 uynge pe keye of depnesse &
 a greet cheyne in his hond.
 & he caute ye dragon pe olde
 serpent pat is pe deuyll &
 satanas. & he boond hym by
 a poustand zeris. And he sente
 hy in to depnesse & clopid &
 signed & sechid on hym pat
 he disseyued no more folkis
 til a poustand zeris ben fulfild.
 after pes ymages it byho
 nep hym forto be vnbond
 a lital tyme. & I say pectis

& pey siten on hem & dome
 is zounen to hem & pe sonho
 of me lighedis for witnesshede
 of ishu & for pe word of god
 & hem pat wersthipide not
 pe beest ney ymage of it ne
 y token caretis of it i fales
 dis or i her hondis. & pey h
 niden & regueden vey crist
 a poustand zeris / ye of of ded
 men lyueden not til a pousta
 zeris ben eendid / pis is pe fir
 ste azenir singe / blessed & ho
 ly he pat hap part i pe first
 azenir singe in pese pe ge
 counde dep hap not powere
 but pei shule ben phtis of
 god & of est & pei shulere
 ne luy hym a poustand zee
 ris & whane a poustand ze
 ris shulen ben eendid / sita
 tins shal ben vnbounden
 of his prison. & he shal go
 oute & shal disseyne folkes
 pat ben on foure corneris
 of erpe eoz & magoz & he
 shal gadir he to gedir i to
 batel. whos nonbre is as
 pe gnel of pe see. & pey sh
 den op on pe brodnesse of pe
 erpe. & emyrronned pe m
 telis of seyntis & pe lony
 cite. afier came don of eoz
 fro heuene & denouide he
 & pe denel pat disseynede
 he is sente in to pe pool of

fier & bristoun. Wher & pe
 beest & false pphetis shulen
 ben tumentide day & mzt
 in to wordis of worldis ame
 & I say a greet vhit the
 & pe sittinge on it fro whos
 oute erpe flez & heuene &
 plate is not founden of he
 and I say deed men greet
 finale stondinge in pe sit
 of trone & bohis be opene
 and amoz booh is openede
 pat is pe boke of lyf and
 ded men ben dmed of pese
 ymges pat weren vriten
 in pe boke op pe werkis
 of hem. & pe sezaif his de
 de me pat weren in it / and
 dep & helle zand her deed me
 pat weren in hem and it
 is dmed of alle op pe lker
 his of hem / and helle & dep
 ben sente in to pool of fier.
 pis is pe seynide deep. And
 ha pat is not founde wri
 ten in pe boke of lyf is sen
 te in to pe pool of fier.

And I say nelle heu
 nelle erpe / for pe
 pe firste heuene & firste
 erpe beate alle / & pe see
 is not nolt. I Ioon say
 pe holy cite ierlm nelle a
 mynge don fro heuene of

god maad ^{me} as a wyf
 ourned to his husbonde &
 herde a greet woio of per
 ne sayge so pe taberna
 cle of god. whi men & her
 hal dwelle wth hem. & pe
 shulen ben his pepul. &
 he god wth hem shal be
 her god. & god shal wyse
 alwey eche treer fro pe ren
 of seruis. & dy shal no
 more be ney mournyng
 ney cryng. ney conke sh
 hal ben ouer pe wthiche
 friste purgis weint alwey
 & he seide pat sat in pe
 trone. so I maad alle piges
 nere. & he seide to me. wth
 te pou frise wthadis be
 moost ferful & trewe. &
 he seide to me it is don.
 I am alfa & oo bigynge
 & ende. I shal zeue flesch
 to pe prystinge of pe wel
 be of myk watur. he pat
 shal oncome. shal wel
 & pise piges. & I shal be
 god to hy. & he shal be so
 ne to me. forsope pe prou
 de me & onbileneful and
 onside & maquellern.
 & femytationis. & to me
 doynge oemyn. & wthish
 peris of idolis. and to alle

lesys mongeris. pe part
 of hem shal be in pe pool
 of fier breyngge wth fier
 & brustoon. pat is pe secon
 & deop. & oon came of pe se
 nene auzehis harynge. mado
 ful of pe senene pe laste pla
 sis. & he spak wth me say
 se. come pou I shal shewe
 to pee pe sponse wyf of pe
 lomb. & he tok me op in sp
 rit in to a greet hil & hy. &
 he shewde to me pe holy ate
 ierlin comynge don fro hend
 of god. harynge pe cleere of
 god & pe lyte of it like to a
 pious stoon. as to pe stoon
 ispis as chaly. & it had a
 wal greet & hy harynge
 twelue zatis. & in pe zatis
 of it twelue names wthiten
 yn. pat ben pe names of
 twelue synagis of pe sonis
 of yrael. fro pe cest pre zatus.
 & fro pe uoy pre zatus. & fro
 pe soup pre zatus. & fro pe west
 pre zatus. & pe wal of pe ci
 te harynge twelue foundem
 tis. & in hem pe names of
 twelue apostles. & of pe lomb.
 & he pat spak wth me had
 a golden mesure of a reed.
 pat he shulde mete pe ate
 & pe zatis of it & pe walls

pe cite is putte in swate & pe
 leupe of it is so myche. how
 myche & pe brede & he mat
 pe cite of pe reed. by furlon
 gis. avelue poulandis & pe
 herite & leupe & brede of it
 ben euene & he mat pe wal
 lis of it of an hundred foure
 & forty cubites. by mesure
 of man. pat. is of an aungel
 & pe bilydunge or maynge
 of pe wal was of stoon. iaspis
 sopehy pe cite w. cill was of
 clene gold. like to clene glas.
 & pe foundementis of wal of
 pe cite. ourned. & by al pre
 ciouse stoon. pe firste fonde
 ment. iaspis. pe secound. iaspis.
 pe thridde. calcedonyes. fourep.
 smaragdus. fyvepe. sardonius.
 sixte. sardonius. seuepe. trisulc.
 eighte. berillus. nynepe. topa
 sius. pe tempe. & dpassy. ele
 uepe. iactatus. avelpe. ame
 listus & avelue. zatis. ben
 avelue. margaritis. by. eche.
 & eche. zatis. weru. of eche.
 margaritis. & pe streitis
 of pe cite. clene. gold. as. glas.
 ful. sthy. nyng. & I say. no
 temple. in it. forsope. pe. lord
 almyty. is. temple. of it. &
 pe. lomb. and. pe. cite. hap. no
 reed. of. soune. ne. mone. &
 pei. sthy. ne. in. it. for. &

pe. cleerte. of. god. shal. lytue.
 it. and. pe. lomb. is. pe. lan
 terne. of it. & folkes. shule
 walke. in. lytue. of it. & pe
 bynges. of. erpe. shule. by
 ze. to. her. glorie. & honou
 in. to. it. & pe. zatis. of it.
 shulen. not. be. clofid. by. day.
 sopehy. nyxt. shal. not. be.
 pe. & pei. shulen. bringe.
 to. pe. glorie. & hono. of. fol
 kis. in. to. it. ne. p. om. p. mg.
 se. fould. shal. entre. in. to.
 it. & d. ynge. abhonnana.
 oun. & lesyng. no. but. pe.
 pat. ben. written. in. pe. boke.
 of. hy. & of. pe. lomb.

And he shewide to
 me a flood of wy
 ter watir. sthy. nyng.
 as. etal. to. myge. for. of. pe.
 soete. of. god. & of. pe. lomb.
 in. pe. mydel. of. pe. strete.
 of it. & on. eche. syde. of. pe.
 flood. pe. tree. of. hy. by.
 zynge. to. avelue. fruytes.
 by. eche. moneris. zeldmge.
 his. fruyt. & pe. leues. of.
 pe. tree. to. helpe. of. folkes.
 & eche. curfid. yng. shal. no.
 more. be. but. pe. soete. of.
 god. & of. pe. lomb. shule.
 ben. in. it. and. pe. serua
 tis. of. hy. shulen. serue.
 to. hym. & pei. shule. see.

his face & his name in here
 forhedio/ and nyzt shal no
 more be & yet shulen not
 haue neede to lyte of laudue
 ney to list of soune. for pe lord
 god shal lytne hem & yet
 shulen regne in to worldis
 of worldis & he seide to me/
 pese wordis ben most seyr
 ful & trewe & pe lord god
 of spiritus apheetis sente
 his aungel for to shewbe to
 his diuinitis. What ynges
 in byshoney for to be don so
 ne/ & loo/ I come swiftechy
 blessed he pat keppe pe wor
 dis of apheete of his boke/
 & I soon pat herde & say pe
 se ynges. And affwarde
 pat I haue herde & seyen.
 I felse don pat I shulde
 worst hipe before pe feet of
 pe aungel pat shewbe to
 me pese ynges & he seide
 to me. se pat pou do not
 forsope I am in enid perna
 unt & of my byshen apheetis
 & of he in pat kepe pe wordis
 of apheete of his boke/ wast
 hipe non god & he seide to
 me/ signe pou or feel not
 pe wordis of his boke of
 apheete/ forsope pe tyme is
 nyzt/ he pat neyep/ noye
 zit/ & he pat is in films

waxe he soule zit/ & he pat is
 mist bezt in tuffe/ & pe balye
 be halewid zit/ lo I come so
 ne/ & my mede/ & my me for
 to zelde to eche man wip his
 werkis/ I am alfa & oo/ pe
 furke & pe laste. biggynge
 & eende/ blessed pe p/ & wa the
 her stookis in pe blood of pe
 lombes. pat pe polker of hem
 be in pe bok of lyf & by pe
 zatis entre in to pe aice/ for
 sope wip outen for p/ homi
 dis or orenym dore/ & p/ o
 neris/ & on chaf men &
 manquelleris & scriynges
 to ydolis. and eche pat loney
 and doy lesinger/ I he sente
 myn aungel for to witnes
 to zon pese ynges in chr
 chis/ I am pe rote & fynde
 of damp/ a rhyngge &
 moerbe sterre/ & pe hound bon
 de & sponse & wiff & seyn
 come pou & he pat heren/ seyn
 come pou/ & he pat pirstep
 come & he pat wole take
 fely pe watur of lyf/ forsope
 I witnesse to eche man he
 ryngge pe wordis of apheete
 of his boke/ if ony ma shal
 putte to pes/ god shal putte
 to on hy/ pe plagis written
 in his boke/ & if ony ma shal
 do alwey of pe wordis of bok

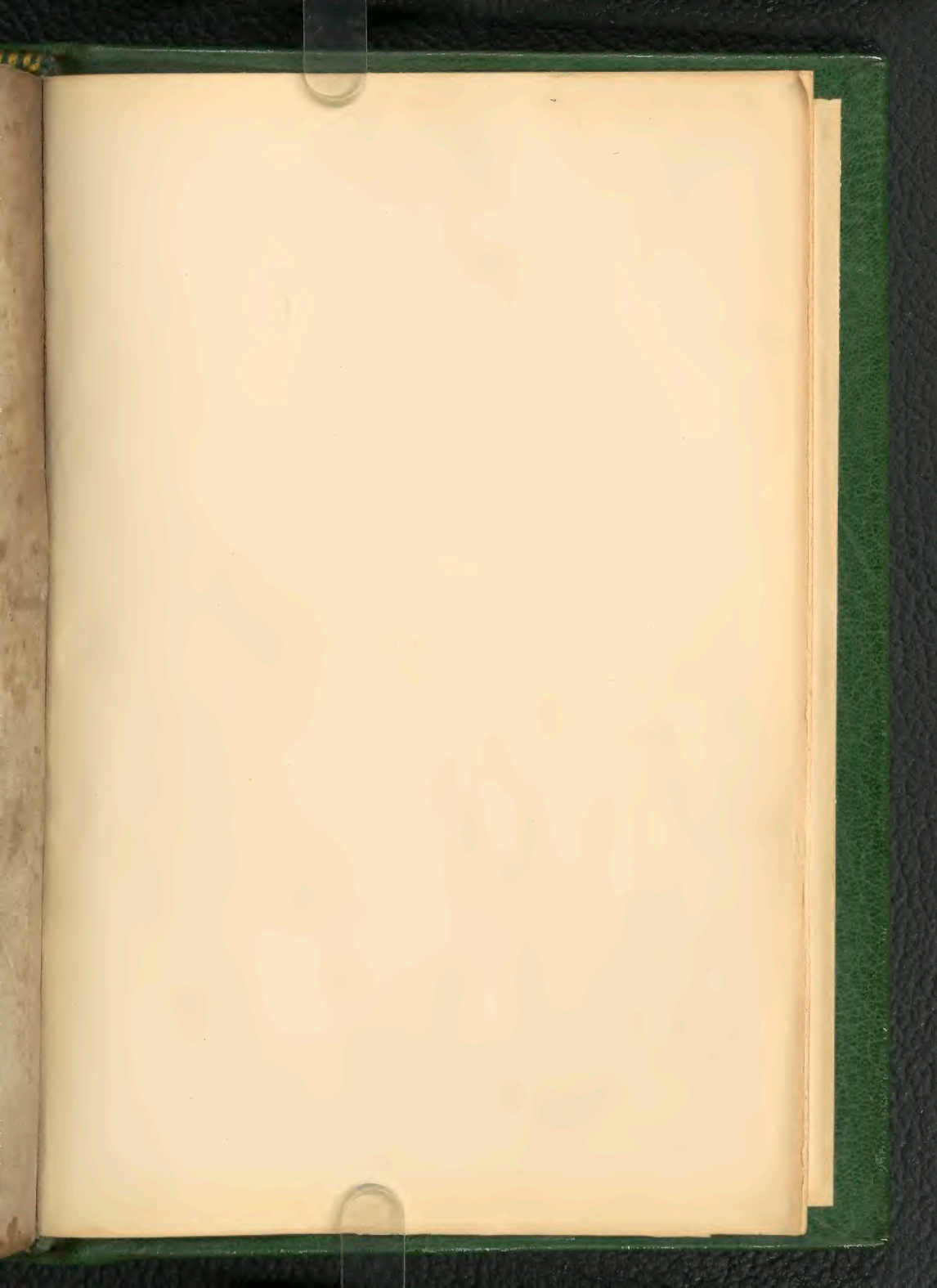
of p[ro]ph[et]e[n]ce god ihu x[rist]
 he alwey pe part of hy[m]
 fro pe boke of hy[m] & fro pe
 holy atee & fro yese ymages
 pat ben writen in his boke
 he seip pat herey witnessy
 ge of yese ymages zke amē
 I come soone amen come
 you lord ihu pe grace of oure
 lord ihu crist. My allezon
 A — m — C — A —

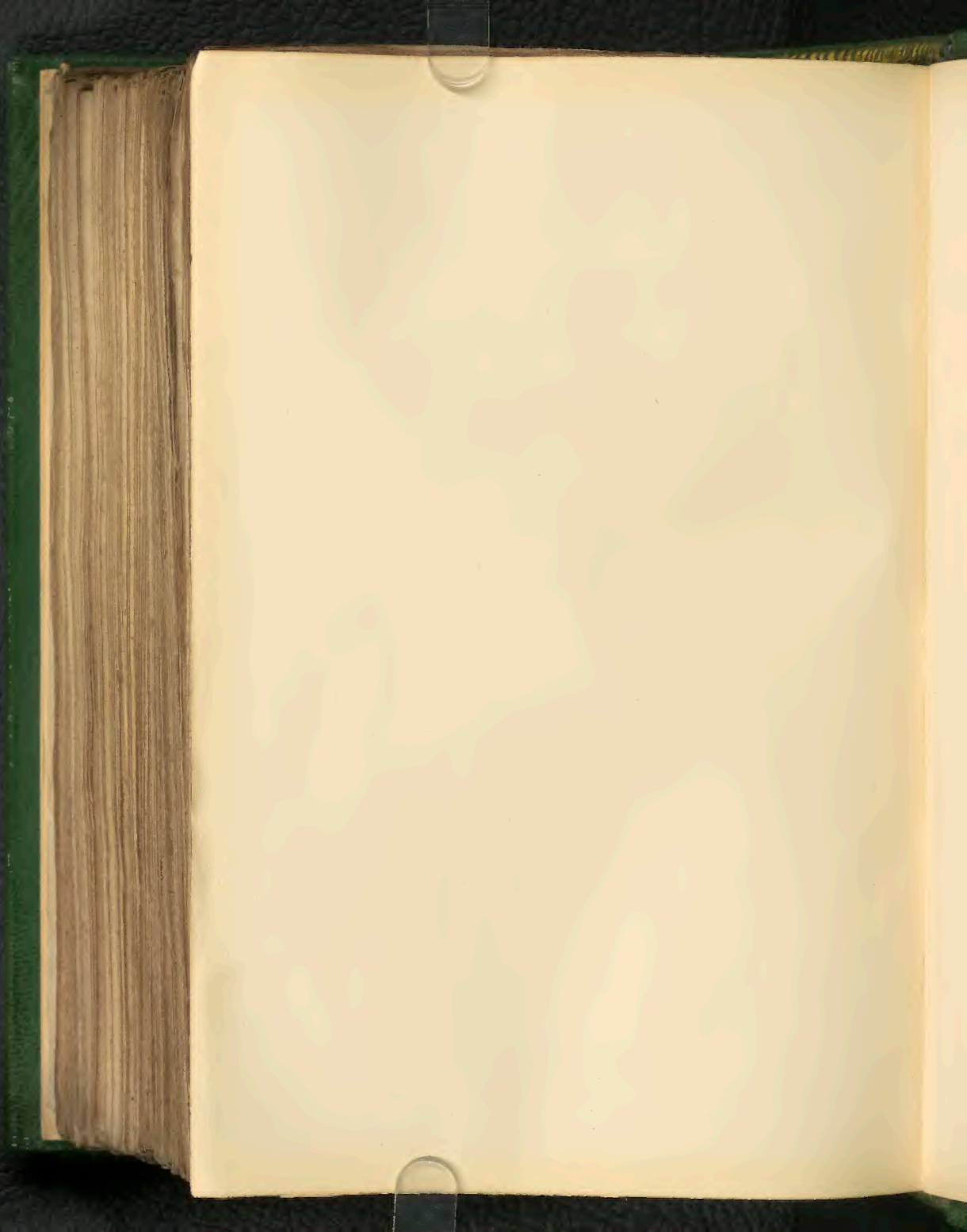
Here endey pe
 Apocalyps of
 oure lord ihu
 Crist. Amē



[Faint handwritten text, possibly "L. D." or similar, written vertically.]

212



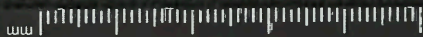












x-rite



ColorChecker CLASSIC

x-rite

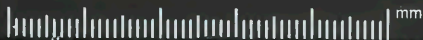


x-rite

colorchecker CLASSIC



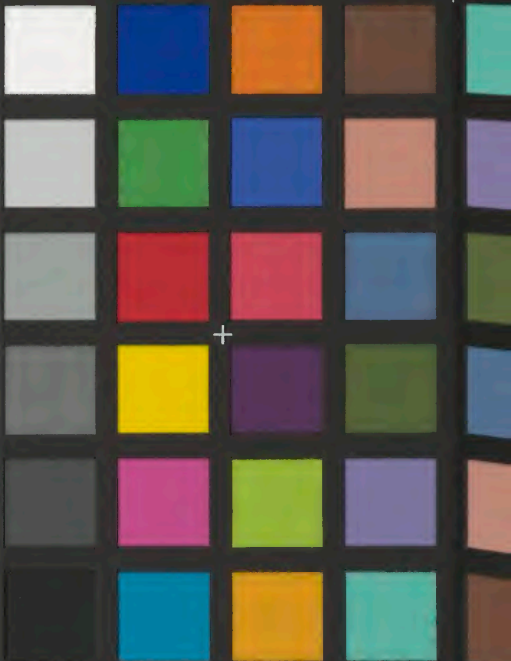
x-rite



mm



x-rite



colorchecker CLASSIC

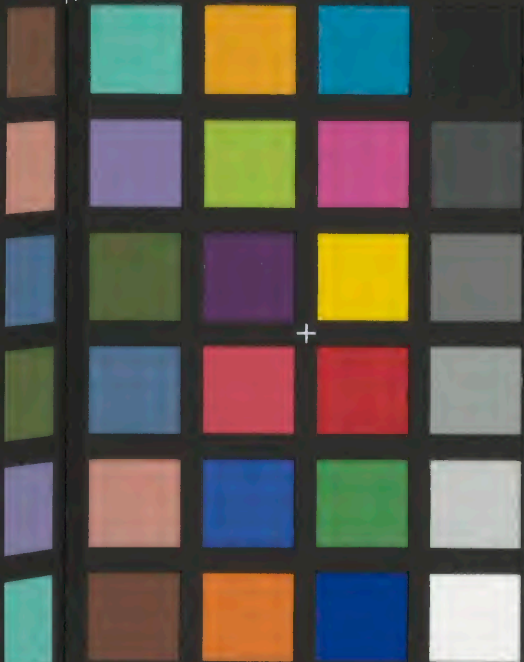
x-rite



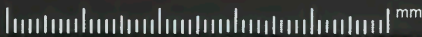


x-rite

colorchecker CLASSIC



x-rite



mm